KASHĪR

BEING A HISTORY OF KASHMĪR
From the Earliest Times to Our Own

BY

G. M. D. SUFI, M.A., D.LITT. (Sorbonne, Paris)
Sometime Visiting Student at Columbia University, New York
Central Provinces and Berar Educational Service (Retd.)
Formerly Registrar, University of Delhi

1974

LIGHT & LIFE PUBLISHERS
NEW DELHI JAMMU ROHTAK LUCKNOW
Note.—A.C. in "Kashir" represents After Christ, and stands for Anno Domini or A.D.
LIGHT & LIFE PUBLISHERS
C-132, Dayanand Colony, Lajpat Nagar-IV,
New Delhi-110024
Residency Road, Jammu Tawi (J & K)
Delhi Road, Rohtak (Haryana)
S/A, Murli Nagar, Lucknow (U. P.)

PRINTED IN INDIA
AT LAKSHMI PRINTING WORKS, DELHI-4
AND PUBLISHED BY LIGHT & LIFE PUBLISHERS
To the Memory of
SIR MUHAMMAD IQBAL

WHO SAID—

[In Kashmir's garden, in the heaven
Of Kashmir, was my body formed;
Hijāz the Holy gave my heart
Its life-beats, and Shirāz its songs.]
PREFACE

It is strange that the Valley of Kashmir has had so many to describe its hills, its dales and its lakes, its snows and streams and shades, but hardly any to narrate its history or tell the story of what the Valley has given to the world. Kalhana’s Rājatarangini, literally, “River of Kings,” certainly scans its history in Sanskrit verse from the earliest times up to 1149 A.C. But, at best, this “River of Kings” remained, as it were, the Shāh-nāma of Kashmir in the sense of a loose, versified narrative. It is to the industry and assiduity of the late Sir Aurel Stein that we owe the monumental annotated English translation which has clarified the contents of Kalhana’s “Chronicle of the Kings of Kashmir” for the serious student of the early history of Kashmir.

Kalhana’s chronicle was continued in Sanskrit verse till 1459 A.C. by Pandit Jonarāja in his Rājavalī; by his pupil Pandit Shrivara in his Jaina-Rājatarangini till 1486 A.C.; by Prājayabhatta in his Rājavalipatāka till 1512 A.C.; and by Shuka in his Rājatarangini up to the conquest of Kashmir by Akbar in 1586 A.C., and even a little further till 1596 A.C. These versified Sanskrit chronicles are available to the English reader in the Kings of Kashmir by the late Mr. Joresh Chunder Dutt. But this series too is far from satisfactory. My own view finds corroboration from the remarks of Sir Aurel Stein, when he says: “Jonarāja was a scholar of considerable attainments but apparently without any originality. Shrivara was a slavish imitator of Kalhana. The work of Prājayabhatta and Shuka is inferior in composition even to Shrivara’s chronicle.” (The Ancient Geography of Kashmir, page 42).

Besides, the Sanskrit text of Jonarāja used by Mr. Dutt, viz., the Calcutta edition of 1835, contained 980 shlokas, while Dr. Peterson’s Sanskrit text of Jonarāja, viz., the Bombay edition of 1806, contains 1334 shlokas. Moreover, the actual work of Prājayabhatta entitled Rājavalipatāka, has not yet been taken notice of And
Shuka's *Rājatarangini* has been mistaken for the joint work of Prājyabhatta and Shuka by Mr. Dutt, Dr. Peterson and Sir Aurel Stein, obviously on account of the confusion caused by the accession of Sultān Fath Shāh thrice to the throne of Kashmir. When Shrīvara closed his chronicle, Fath Shāh was ruling for the first time. When Shuka began his chronicle, Fath Shāh was again Sultān. As the same ruler was reigning for the second time, the link to these three scholars appeared to be continuous. But the fact is that the *Rajavaliyapataka* of Pandit Prājyabhatta deals with the intervening period of 25 years, from 1487 to 1512 A.C., when Sultān Fath Shāh and Sultān Muhammad Shāh deposed and succeeded each other twice.

There are several histories in Persian relating to pre-Mughul, Mughul and post-Mughul periods, a few in Urdu too, but there is no reliable, up-to-date record of the history of Kashmir available as a trustworthy guide for students interested in the subject.

Consequently I have made an attempt in this direction. In view, however, of Sir Aurel Stein's English translation of Kalhana's chronicle, a standard work on the ancient history of Kashmir, and in view of the great learning we find in the *River of Kings* by the late Ranjit Sītārām Pandit who brings out noteworthy contributions made during the Vedic, Buddhist and Brahmanical periods of the history of Kashmir, I have confined my task to a somewhat fuller treatment of the mediæval period, chronicling events, however, up to our own times. Rather than give a bare sketch of the doings of the kings of Kashmir during the particular period under review, it appeared to me to be more important to treat the subject from the cultural point of view. Therefore, though I am presenting a more or less continuous record of the political history of Kashmir from the earliest times till our own, some prominence has been given to the exposition of Muslim Polity in the Valley of Kashmir as this interesting and important aspect of the history of Kashmir has seldom had any special notice taken of it.

*Kashir*, the title of this book, is the name given to the Valley of Kashmir by the Kashmiri, who calls himself and his language—"Koshur." or "Kāshur." The use of the word Kashmir as Sir George Grierson points out in his
Dictionary of the Kashmiri Language, page 481, is more Hindustānī and Īrānian than properly Kashmirī.

The late Sir Aurel Stein worked at the Rājatarangīṇī while he was Registrar of the University of the Panjāb. It is a coincidence that it fell to my lot to undertake the writing of Kashīr, styling it Islamic Culture in Kashmir, while I was Registrar of the University of Delhi. And now this book is for the first time being published, in its present form and under its revised title, by the University of the Panjāb, the old University of Sir Aurel Stein, in two volumes like Sir Aurel's. At this time also, the revised edition by Sir Aurel of his English translation of Kalhāna's Chronicle of the Kings of Kashmir is reported to be under publication by the State of Jammu and Kashmir. But unfortunately Sir Aurel died in 1943 at Kābul in Afgānistān.

In Chapter I of Kashīr the reader will find a general description of Kashmir and observations on the character and condition of the Kashmirīs.

In Chapter II an attempt is made to epitomize the history of Kashmir from the earliest times to the advent of Islam in the land. The propagation of Islam on account of its outstanding mark on the Valley is discussed in Chapter III.

Chapters IV and V deal with the early Muslim rulers of the land. These two chapters cover a period of over 260 years from 1320 to 1586 A.C., roughly parallel in Indian history to the period from the accession of Muhammad Tughluq to about the middle of Akbar's reign, or in English history from the reign of Edward II to nearly the middle of that of Elizabeth. Sultān Shihāb-ud-Dīn, who ruled from 1354 to 1373 A.C., was the first Muslim ruler of Kashmir to extend his conquest to Kābul and Kāshghar, and to defeat the Jām of Sind. The greatness of Kashmir reached its zenith under Zain-ul-'Abīdīn, popularly known as Bad Shāh or the 'Great Sovereign,' who conquered Tibet and the Puniāb, and established his kingdom from Purshāwar, the modern Peshāwar, to Sind and Sarhind. His rule extending over 50 years, from 1420 to 1470 A.C., constituted the Golden Age of Kashmir in its mediaeval days. Zain-ul-'Abīdīn's reign was almost contemporaneous with
the times of the Sayyid ruler, Khizr Khān's son, Mu'izz-ud-Din Mubārak, his two successors—Muhammad and 'Alā-ud-Din 'Alam Shāh—and Buhīlūl Lodi. The enlightened rule of the Sultān of Kashmir presented a striking contrast to the chaos and confusion then prevailing in and around Delhi, the centre and symbol of the glory of Hindustān.

An effort has been made to straighten the puzzle, presented by Kashmiri chronology during the period of the later Sultāns of Kashmir, by means of coins, inscriptions, chronograms and a careful comparison of the records left by contemporary Hindu and Muslim chroniclers.

The conquest of Kashmir by the Mughuls and their rule, extending over a period of 164 years, is the subject of Chapter VI. Chapter VII treats of Kashmir under the Afghāns, who held it for 67 years till 1819 A.C., when Muslim rule in Kashmir came to a close after lasting for a period of about 500 years.

A chart of important contemporary events in politics and culture in the world, during the period of Muslim rule in Kashmir from 1320 A.C. to 1819 A.C., has been added. A glance at this chart will emphasize the importance of a viewpoint which, it is hoped, will be at once interesting and instructive. Here Volume I of Kashmir ends.

A broad general survey of Islamic culture in Kashmir is given in Chapters VIII, IX and X under the heads: (i) Letters and Litterateurs in Kashmir under Muslim Rule, (ii) Arts and Crafts in Kashmir under Muslim Rule, and (iii) Civil and Military Organization under Muslim Rule in Kashmir. In these Chapters, with which Volume II of Kashmir opens, the reader will find a summary of the important influences exercised by the impact of Muslim State and Society on the people of Kashmir.

Chapter XI, Kashmir under the Sikhs for 27 years from 1810 to 1846, is followed by Chapter XII, the last one, Kashmir under Dogrā rule, which carries the narrative down to the death of Mahārājā Pratāp Singh on 23rd September, 1925.

The system of transliteration adopted is mostly that used in the Cambridge History of India as far as the resources of the press have permitted, while variants in
English spelling are those which are preferred by the *Concise Oxford Dictionary*.

I must tell the reader beforehand that *Kashir* is intended as a source-book for workers in the subject, and therefore I have not hesitated to quote copiously from specialists and eye-witnesses who had an appeal on the point concerned. I have abstained from rehashing their observations or reproducing their accounts in my own words.

At times verses, couplets and short passages from Persian or Urdu have not been translated into English. They appear in original in *Kashir* for their exquisite expression in Persian or Urdu. In translation “the personal idiom, the music of the verse, and the ramification of the imagery involved” must necessarily be blurred. A prosaic and pedestrian translation is but “an opaque screen,” and consequently has not been attempted, for which the indulgence of the purely English-knowing reader is craved.

Several scholars, friends, acquaintances and others have read *Kashir* here and there, some complete, some in parts in which they were interested or were specialists. Some read the book to eliminate error in phrasing and punctuation. All these are too numerous to be mentioned individually. I am very grateful to them all.

GHULĀM MUHYI'D DĪN SŪFI.

*Now (1948) His Excellency the Hon’ble Dr. Dīn Muhammad, M.A., LL.D., Governor, Sind (Pakistan).*
## CONTENTS

### Volume I

**Dedication to the late Sir Muhammad Iqbal**  
The Opening Page

| Preface | .. | .. | i—vi |
| Contents | .. | .. | vii |
| Table of Contents | .. | .. | viii—xxviii |
| List of Maps and Illustrations in Kashmir | .. | .. | xxxix—xxxxiv |
| Note on Maps, Portraits and Illustrations | .. | .. | xxxv—xxxxviii |
| Bibliography—  
(i) Section I—Some Important Original Sources | xxxix—xlvi |
(ii) Section II—Manuscripts—Persian and Urdu | xlii—xlvi |
(iii) Section III—Published Works—English, Persian, Urdu, Hindi Kashmiri, Gurmukhi | 1—lxviii |
(iv) Section IV—Periodicals | lxix—lxxv |
| Kashmir Chronology | .. | .. | lxxvi |
| Errata—Volume I | .. | .. | lxxvii |

Chapter I.—Kashmir and the Köshur or Kashmir and the ..  
Kashmir  
Chapter II.—Early History, Buddhist and Brähmanical  
Chapter III.—The Spread of Islam in Kashmir  
Chapter IV.—The Sultâns of Kashmir  
Chapter V.—Kashmir under the Chaks  
Chapter VI.—Kashmir under the Mughuls  
Chapter VII.—Kashmir under the Afghan  

*Chart of Contemporary Events in Politics and Culture in the World during the period of Muslim Rule in Kashmir from 1324 A.C. to 1819 A.C.*  
1—82

Index to Volume I  
33—148

### Volume II

Chapter VIII.—Letters and Littérâteurs in Kashmir under Muslim Rule  
Chapter IX.—Arts and Crafts in Kashmir under Muslim Rule  
Chapter X.—Civil and Military Organization under Muslim Rule in Kashmir  
Chapter XI.—Kashmir under the Sikhs  
Chapter XII.—Kashmir under the Dogrâs  

Errata—Volume II  

839

Index to Volume II  
149—258

Some Opinions on Kashmir I, II, III.
# TABLE OF CONTENTS

## VOLUME I

## CHAPTER I

### KASHMIR AND THE KOSHUR OR KASHMIR AND THE KASHMIRI

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Title</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Kashmir and Switzerland</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kashmir and Greece</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Beauty of the Dal</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Other Attractions</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Climate</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Valley of Kashmir</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Area</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Population</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kashmir a Vast Lake in Prehistoric Times?</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Legend of the Lake</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Geological Evidence</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Name Kashmir</td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kashmir Made Known Abroad</td>
<td>13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Stone Age in Kashmir</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Aborigines as the First Settlers</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Aryans</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Jews</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Arabs</td>
<td>18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Character of the Kashmiri</td>
<td>19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Women of Kashmir</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Criticism of the Kashmirani</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Future of the Kashmiri</td>
<td>29</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Addenda to Chapter I                                                   73

## CHAPTER II

### THE PRE-ISLAMIC PERIOD

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Title</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Genealogical Table of the Kings of Kashmir during the Pre-Islamic Period</td>
<td>30-34</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(a) The earliest known Kings of Kashmir</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gonanda I</td>
<td>35</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Damodara I</td>
<td>36</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

viii
(b) The Pându Dynasty

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Kings</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>A gap of 35</td>
<td>36</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Râmadeva</td>
<td>37</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sundarasesa</td>
<td>37</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(c) The Maurya Dynasty

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Rulers</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Açoka</td>
<td>37</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jalauka</td>
<td>39</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dâmodara II</td>
<td>40</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>“Christ in Kashmir?&quot; Sañdhimaṭi</td>
<td>40</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(d) The Kushâna Dynasty

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Rulers</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Yueh-chi</td>
<td>41</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kadphises I</td>
<td>41</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kadphises II</td>
<td>41</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kanishka</td>
<td>41</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Huvishka</td>
<td>43</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vasudeva or Juskha</td>
<td>43</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abhimanyu I</td>
<td>43</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(e) The Gonanda Dynasty

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Rulers</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Gonanda III</td>
<td>43</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nâm</td>
<td>43</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(f) The White Huns

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Rulers</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Mihirakula</td>
<td>43</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kâlidâsa</td>
<td>46</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Yudhishtîra I</td>
<td>47</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vikramâditya</td>
<td>47</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pravarasena II</td>
<td>47</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[Srinagar]</td>
<td>47-49</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bãladitya</td>
<td>49</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(g) The Kârkota Dynasty

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Rulers</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Durlabhavardhana</td>
<td>49</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[The Nágas]</td>
<td>49-50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Durlabhaka</td>
<td>51</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[Excavations at Tápar]</td>
<td>51</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chandrâpîda</td>
<td>52</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Târâpîda</td>
<td>52</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lalitâditya-Muktâpîda</td>
<td>52</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vajrâditya</td>
<td>54</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jayâpîda</td>
<td>54</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Avantivarman</td>
<td>55</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Çâmkaravarman</td>
<td>57</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Yaçaskara A.C. 939—948 ... ... ... 58

(i) The First Lohara Dynasty

Kshemagupta A.C. 950—958 ... ... ... 58
Abhimanyu II A.C. 958—972 ... ... ... 58
Diddā A.C. 980—1003 ... ... ... 58
Sultan Mahmūd’s Invasion ... ... ... 59
Harirāja A.C. 1028, Ananta A.C. 1028—1063, Kalaga A.C. 1063—1089 ... ... ... 59
Abhinavagupta, the Čaiva Philosopher ... ... ... 59
Kahemendra ... ... ... ... ... 60
Bilhafia ... ... ... ... ... 61
Harsha A.C. 1089—1101 ... ... ... ... ... 61

(j) The Second Lohara Dynasty

Uchala A.C. 1101—1111 ... ... ... ... ... 62
Two Centuries of Misrule ... ... ... ... ... 63
Sussala A.C. 1112—20, Restoration A.C. 1121—28 ... ... ... ... ... 63
Jayasimha A.C. 1128—1155 ... ... ... ... ... 63
Mammatā and other Poets of the Period ... ... ... ... ... 63
Mallika ... ... ... ... ... 64
Kalhana (Kalyāṇa) ... ... ... ... ... 64
The Rājatarāgini ... ... ... ... ... 65
Jayasimha’s Successors ... ... ... ... ... 66
Sahadeva A.C. 1300—1 and 1319—20 ... ... ... ... ... 67

[The Valley of Kishtwār] ... ... ... ... ... 67—68
Rifchana A.C. 1320—23 ... ... ... ... ... 69
Udayanadeva A.C. 1323—38 ... ... ... ... ... 69
Keṭā Rānī A.C. 1338—39 ... ... ... ... ... 69
Shams-ud-Dīn Shāh Mir or Mirzā A.C. 1339—1392 ... ... ... ... ... 69
Causes of the Ruin of Hindu Rule in Kashmir ... ... ... ... ... 69
Brāhmans’ Cultural Contribution Summarized ... ... ... ... ... 70

[Çankara Āchārya] ... ... ... ... ... 71
Kashmir Čaivism ... ... ... ... ... 71

[Sir Mark Aurel Stein] ... ... ... ... ... 72—73

CHAPTER III

THE SPREAD OF ISLAM IN KASHMIR

Earliest Contact with Sind ... ... ... ... ... 75
Islam and Hinduism ... ... ... ... ... 78
Another Contrast of the Two ... ... ... ... ... 79
Beginning of Islam by Friars and Darvishes ..... 80
Bilul or Bulbul Shāh’s Conversion of Rīchana ..... 81
Conversions to Islam by Sayyids ..... 84
Mir Sayyid ‘Alt Hamadānī ..... 84
Mir Muhammad Hamadānī ..... 92
Conversion of Malik Sāhab-āṭṭa ..... 93
Revival of Interest in Religion under Calamities ..... 94
The Rishiyān-i-Kashmir ..... 96
Shaikh Nūr-ud-Din Rishi ..... 98
Sultan Sikandar’s Share in the Persecution of Hindus ..... 103
Shaikh Shams-ud-Din ‘Irāqi ..... 109
Shaikh Hamza Makhdūm ..... 112
Shāh Farid-ud-Dīn Qādirī ..... 115
After all, the Fuqārā’ Spread Islam in Kashmir ..... 116
Appendix to Chapter III—the Mausoleum of Mir Sayyid ‘Alī Hamadānī at Khatlān, now called Kolāb in Tājikistān, U.S.S.R., 116 a, b, c, d.

CHAPTER IV

THE SULTĀNS OF KASHMĪR

[A.C. 1320—1555]

The Last Phase of Hindu Rule in Kashmir before the Sultāns 117
Dulcha’s Invasion ..... 117
Rinchen, Rinchaṅa or Rintan ..... 119
Rinchaṅa becomes King of Kashmir ..... 120
Rinchaṅa’s Sense of Justice ..... 121
Rinchaṅa’s Conversion to Islam. Becomes Sadr-ud-Dīn ..... 123
Sultan Sadr-ud-Dīn’s Death ..... 126
Chaos in Kashmir. Islam suffers a Reverse ..... 127
Koṭa Rāṇī’s Religion ..... 127
Udyānadeva’s return: his reign from A.C. 1323—1338 ..... 128
Invasion by Achala or Urwan or Urdu. Udyānadeva’s Flight 128
Koṭa Rāṇī’s Appeal to her subjects: United Resistance and the Invader’s Retreat ..... 129
Udyānadeva Re-appears in Kashmir ..... 129
Koṭa Rāṇī Rules from A.C. 1338 to 1339 ..... 130
Shāh Mir’s Ancestry ..... 130
The End of Koṭa Rāṇī ..... 131
Sultan Shams-ud-Dīn I [A.H. 740—743 or A.C. 1339—1342] 132
The Genealogical Table of the First Muslim Dynasty of Kashmir 132A
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Page</th>
<th>Title</th>
<th>Authors</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>xii</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Sultan Jamshid [A.H. 743 or A.C. 1342]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>184</td>
<td>Sultān 'Alā'-ud-Dīn A.H. 743—755 or A.C. 1342—1354</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>134</td>
<td>The Sultanate</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>135</td>
<td>Sultān Shihāb-ud-Dīn [A.H. 755—775 or A.C. 1354—1373]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>136</td>
<td>Sultān Qutb-ud-Dīn [A.H. 775—794 or A.C. 1373—1389]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>141</td>
<td>Sultān Sikandar [A.H. 791—816 or A.C. 1389—1413]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>143</td>
<td>Timūr's Invasion of India. Exchange of Courtesy with Sikandar</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>144</td>
<td>Sikandar's Patronage of Learning</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>145</td>
<td>Sikandar's Zeal for Religion</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>146</td>
<td>Architecture of Sikandar's Time</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>146</td>
<td>Sikandar's Regard for Sayyid Muhammad Hamadānī</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>147</td>
<td>Sikandar's Death</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>147</td>
<td>Sikandar's Share in the Persecution of Hindus</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>148</td>
<td>Sultān 'Ali Shāh [A.H. 816—823 or A.C. 1413—1420]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>155</td>
<td>Sultān Zain-ul-‘Ābidīn [A.H. 823—874 or A.C. 1420—1470]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>157</td>
<td>Zain-ul-‘Ābidīn's Passion for Architecture</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>158</td>
<td>[The Wulur Lake]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>158-9</td>
<td>Zain-ul-‘Ābidīn’s Patronage of Arts and Crafts</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>161</td>
<td>Zain-ul-‘Ābidīn’s Patronage of Letters</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>162</td>
<td>Bād Shāh’s Army and His Conquests</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>170</td>
<td>His Statesmanship and Foreign Relations</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>170</td>
<td>Bād Shāh’s Attitude towards Hindus</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>172</td>
<td>Bād Shāh’s Suavity in effecting Reforms</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>174</td>
<td>Bād Shāh’s Sources of Income</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>175</td>
<td>Zain-ul-‘Ābidīn and Akbar Compared</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>175</td>
<td>The Family Lives of Bād Shāh and Akbar</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>177</td>
<td>Bād Shāh and Akbar in their General Habits</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>179</td>
<td>Bād Shāh’s Closing Days and Death</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>179</td>
<td>Sultān Haidar Shāh [A.H. 874—877 or A.C. 1470—1472]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>184</td>
<td>Sultān Hasan Shāh [A.H. 877—889 or A.C. 1472—1484]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>185</td>
<td>The Struggle Between Muhammad Shāh and his Father’s Cousin</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>187</td>
<td>Fath Shāh for the Throne of Kashmir</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>187</td>
<td>Sultān Muhammad Shāh (i) [A.H. 889—892 or A.C. 1484—1486]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>187</td>
<td>Sultān Fath Shāh (i) [A.H. 892—898 or A.C. 1486—1493]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>189</td>
<td>Sultān Muhammad Shāh (ii) [A.H. 898—911 or A.C. 1493—1505]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>190</td>
<td>Sultān Fath Shāh (ii) [A.H. 911—920 or A.C. 1505—1514]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>191</td>
<td>Sultān Muhammad Shāh (iii) [A.H. 920—921 or A.C. 1514—1515]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>193</td>
<td>Sultān Fath Shāh (iii) [A.H. 921—922 or A.C. 1515—1516]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>193</td>
<td>Sultān Muhammad Shāh (iv) [A.H. 922—934 or A.C. 1516—1528]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>194</td>
<td>Sultān Ibrāhīm Shāh I [A.H. 934—935 or A.C. 1528—1529]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>195</td>
<td>Sultān Nāzuk Shāh (i) [A.H. 935—936 or A.C. 1529—1530]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Sultan Muhammad Shah (v) [A.H. 936–943 or A.C. 1530–1537] 196
Sultan Shams-ud-Din II [A.H. 943–944 or A.C. 1537–1538] 198
Sultan Isma'il Shah I [A.H. 944–945 or A.C. 1538–1539] 199
Sultan Ibrahim Shah II [A.H. 945–946 or A.C. 1539–1540] 199
Mirza Haidar Dughlat .... 200
The Ta'rikh-i-Rashidi .... 203
Sultan Na'uzu Shah (ii) [A.H. 946–958 or A.C. 1540–1551] 204
Sultan Isma'il Shah II [A.H. 958–961 or A.C. 1551–1554] 210
Addenda to Chapter IV .... 212
Chronology and Genealogy of the Shah Miri Dynasty .... 213
Chronology and Genealogy of the Chak Dynasty .... 213
Dates of the Shah Miris and the Chaks according to the A'in-i-Akbari of Abu'l Fazl .... 214
Dates of the Shah Miris and Chaks according to Jonaraja, Crivara, Pratyabhitta and Cuka .... 215–216

CHAPTER V
KASHMIR UNDER THE CHAKS
[A.C. 1560–1586]

The Genealogical Table of the Chak Dynasty .... 216A
Origin of the Chaks .... 217
Ghazi Chak [A.H. 962–970 or A.C. 1555–1563] .... 219
Husain Shah Chak [A.H. 970–978 or A.C. 1563–1570] .... 221
Yusuf Shah Chak (i) [A.H. 987 or A.C. 1579] .... 227
Sayyid Mubarak Khan Baihaqi [A.H. 987 or A.C. 1579] .... 228
Lohur Shah Chak [A.H. 987–988 or A.C. 1579–1580] .... 228
Yusuf Shah Chak (ii) [A.H. 988–994 or A.C. 1580–1586] .... 233
Yaqub Shah Chak [A.H. 994 or A.C. 1586] [Pakhli] .... 228

CHAPTER VI
KASHMIR UNDER THE MUGHULS
[A.C. 1586–1752]

The Mughul Rulers concerned with the History of Kashmir [A.C. 1586–1752] .... .... 239
The last Effort of the last of the Chaks .... 241
The End of Yusuf Shah Chak .... 243
Akbar’s Reign in Kashmir
Three Well-known Qasidas on Kashmir
The Building of the Nāgar-Nagar
[Khwāja Nizām-ud-Din Ahmad]
Jahāngīr
[The Chinār]
Thomas Moore on Jahāngīr and Nūr Jahān in Kashmir
[Malik Haidar Chādura]
A Dutch Protestant’s View of Kashmir under Jahāngīr
Shāh Jahān
[Zafar Khān Ahsan]
A galaxy of famous Poets
Aurangzib ʿĀlamgīr
Lala Rookh
Later Mughuls
Muhammad Murād Kashmirī
Immigration of the Nehrūs
Muhammad Shāh
Mīr Ḥināyatullāh Khān Kashmirī
Beginning of the Transfer from Mughul to Afghān Rule
Summary of the Benefits of Mughul Rule

CHAPTER VII
KASHMIR UNDER THE AFGHĀNS
[A.C. 1752—1819]

The Genealogy of the Durrānī Dynasty of Ahmad Shāh
Ahmad Shāh Durrānī
Timūr Shāh
Zamān Shāh
The Genealogy of the Bāarakzāi Dynasty of Afghānistān
Shujā-ul-Mulk
The Afghān’s Bad Start in Kashmir
Rājā Sukh Jiwan Mal Khatri, Governor of Kashmir under the Afghāns. Other Afghān Governors
How Ranjit Singh was Interested in Kashmir
[The Kūh or Kōh-i-Nūr Diamond]
The End of Muslim Rule in the Valley of Kashmir
[Pandit Mohan Lāl Kashmirī alias Āghā Hasan Jān]
## LETTERS AND LITTERATEURS IN KASHMIR UNDER MUSLIM RULE

**Promotion of Learning in Kashmir**
- [Mufti Muhammad Shāh Sa‘ādat] Page 344
- Under Sultān Qutb-ud-Din Page 345
- Under Sultān Sikandar Page 346
- Under Bad Shāh Page 347
- Under Sultān Hasan Shāh Page 348
- Under Husain Shāh Chak Page 349
- Under the Mughuls Page 350

### SOME MEN OF LEARNING

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Shaikh Ya‘qūb Sarfī</td>
<td>358</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mullā Muhsin Fānī</td>
<td>365</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Dabistān &amp; its unsettled Authorship</td>
<td>367</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[Khwāja Muhammad A‘zam Kaul (?)] Mustaghnī</td>
<td>373</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[Pir Hasan Shāh]</td>
<td>374</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Akhund Mullā Kāmāl</td>
<td>375</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[‘Allāma ‘Abdul Hakīm Siālkotī]</td>
<td>377</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[Muṣāhi Muhammad-ud-Din Fauq]</td>
<td>377</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[Shaikh Ahmad Sarhindi]</td>
<td>379</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[‘Allāmā Sa‘dullāh Khān Chiniştī]</td>
<td>379</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Khwāja ‘Abdul Karīm</td>
<td>380</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Khān ‘Allāma Tafazzul Husain Khān of Lucknow</td>
<td>382</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Maulavi Sayyid Muhammad Anwar Shāh of Lolāb</td>
<td>383</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### SOME WOMEN OF NOTE

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Lalla ‘Arifa</td>
<td>383</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bibi Tāj Khātūn</td>
<td>387</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bibi Bāri’ā</td>
<td>387</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bibi Haurā</td>
<td>387</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bibi Bahat</td>
<td>388</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lachhīma Khātūn</td>
<td>388</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gul Khātūn</td>
<td>389</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Bibi Salihah .................................................. 389
Habba Khâtûn .................................................. 389
Hâfîza Maryam ............................................... 391
Hâfîza Khadija ................................................ 391
Begam Sumru .................................................. 391

THE KASHMIRI LANGUAGE

The Origin and Growth of the Kashmiri Language ........ 395
Kashmiri Literature ........................................ 398
A Dictionary of the Kashmiri Language ................... 399
Kashmiri Proverbs .......................................... 399
Kashmiri Riddles ........................................... 400
Kashmiri Folk-Tales ....................................... 401
Newspapers & Broadcasts in Kashmiri ...................... 401
The Kashmiri Script ....................................... 402

KASHMIRI POETRY

Some notable Kashmiri Poets and their Works .............. 404
Some Features of Kashmiri Poetry ........................ 414
The Akanandan .............................................. 417
Lalla 'Arifa ................................................ 423
Shaikh Nûr-ud-Din Rishi ................................ 423
Pârmatând .................................................. 423
Mrs. Bhawânidâs Kâchru .................................. 425
Lakhshman Bhaţ ............................................ 426
Wahhêb Khûr .............................................. 426
'Azîz Darvish ............................................... 427
Pirzâda Ghulâm Ahmad Mahjûr ............................ 427
Master 'Abdul Ahad ârâd ................................ 428
Master Zinda Kaul, B.A. .................................. 428
'Abdul Quddâs Rasûl Jâvidâni ........................... 429
Asadullah Mir ............................................. 429

The First Period of Kashmiri Poetry ........................ 430
Lalla 'Arifa ................................................. 430
Shaikh Nûr-ud-Din Rishi ................................ 430

The Second Period of Kashmiri Poetry ........................ 431
Habba Khâtûn .............................................. 431
Khwâja Habibullâh Naushahri ................................ 432
Mrs. Bhawânîl Dâs Kâchru ................................ 432
The Third Period of Kashmiri Poetry

Mahmūd Gāmi
Maqbul Shāh Kralawāri
Rasūl Mīr Shāhābūdī
‘Abdul Ahad Nāzīm
Swāmī Pārnānand
‘Abdul Wahhāb Parē
‘Azīzullāh Haqqānī

The Modern Period of Kashmiri Poetry

Pirzāda Ghulām Ahmad Mahjūr
Mirzā Ghulām Ḥasan Beg ‘Arīf, M.Sc.

Kashmir’s Contribution To Persian Poetry

Part I—By Muslims

The Advent of Persian Poetry into the Valley and its brief Evaluation

The Three Periods of Persian Poetry in Kashmir

Section—I. Poets during the Period of the Sultāns and Pādshāhs [A.C. 1324—1586]

Amin Mantiqī Bālhaqi Uwais or Wais
Anīn Mūstaghni
Shaikh Dā‘ūd Khāki
Shaikh Ya‘qūb Sarfī

Section—II. Poets during the Period of Mughul and Afghān Rule in Kashmir [A.C. 1586—1819]

Mazharī
Mullā Muḥsin Fānī
Mullā Tāhir Ghāni Ashābī
Hāji Aslām Sālim
Anjī Kashmirī
Fitratī
Furūgī
Najmī
Abdul Hakīm Sātī
Mullā Muḥammad Taufsīq
Khwāja Habībullāh Hubbī
‘Abdullāh Mizāhī Fārībī
### Section III—Poets during the period of Sikh and Dogra Rule in Kashmir (A.C. 1819–1925)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Poet</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Mullā Bāhā’-ud-Din Bahā</td>
<td>480</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mullā Hamidullāh Hamid</td>
<td>481</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mirzā Mujrim</td>
<td>481</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Khwāja Hasan Shi’rī</td>
<td>482</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mirzā Muḥdī</td>
<td>483</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sir Muhammad Iqbal</td>
<td>483</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Part II—By Kashmiri Pandits

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Topic</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Kashmiri Pandits’ Interest in Persian Poetry</td>
<td>485</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Proficiency in Persian paid the Pandit</td>
<td>487</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Extracts from the Persian Poetry of a few noted Kashmiri Pandits</td>
<td>488</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### MEDICINE IN KASHMIR

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Topic</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Introductory</td>
<td>492</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Under Baḏ Shāh</td>
<td>495</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Under the Mughuls</td>
<td>495</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Under the Afgāns</td>
<td>496</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Under the Sikhs</td>
<td>496</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Under the Dogrās</td>
<td>497</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### CHAPTER IX

#### ARTS AND CRAFTS IN KASHMIR UNDER MUSLIM RULE

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Topic</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Different Phases of Kashmiri Art</td>
<td>502</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ARCHITECTURE</td>
<td>505</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Tomb of Sultān Sikandar’s Queen</td>
<td>506</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sayyid Muhammad Madau’s Tomb</td>
<td>506</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Wooden Architecture of Kashmir</td>
<td>508</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Title</td>
<td>Page</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>----------------------------------------------------------------------</td>
<td>------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zain-ul-‘Abidin’s Palaces</td>
<td>509</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Mosque of Madani or Madyan Sāhib</td>
<td>511</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Jāmi‘ Masjid of Srinagar</td>
<td>512</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Shāh Hamadān Mosque</td>
<td>514</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Tomb of Shaikh Nūr-ud-Din Rishī</td>
<td>514</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Jāmi‘ Masjid of Shupiyan</td>
<td>515</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Mughul Architecture of Kashmir</td>
<td>515</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Nau (New) or Patthar (Sangin) or Shahi (Royal) Masjid</td>
<td>515</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Pari Mahall</td>
<td>516</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Hari Parbat Fort</td>
<td>517</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mughul Rest-Houses</td>
<td>520</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Hammām or the Turkish Bath</td>
<td>521</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bridges</td>
<td>521</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sculpture</td>
<td>522</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Lapidary’s Work</td>
<td>523</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gardens</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Shālāmār Garden</td>
<td>528</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Meaning of the Word “Shālāmār”</td>
<td>529</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Design of the Shālāmār</td>
<td>531</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Nashāt (commonly misspelt as Nishāt)</td>
<td>532</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Chashma-i-Shāhi</td>
<td>533</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Ver-Nāg Spring</td>
<td>535</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Archaeological Remains in Kashmir</td>
<td>535</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[The River Jhelum]</td>
<td>537</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Kukar-nāg Spring</td>
<td>539</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Achabal (Sāhib-ābād Spring)</td>
<td>539</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Other Mughul Gardens</td>
<td>542</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Alapathar</td>
<td>543</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Chinār’s Glamour</td>
<td>543</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[The Bulbul]</td>
<td>546</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Music</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Baḍ Shāh’s love of Music</td>
<td>546</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Črīvara’s description of Kashmiri Dances</td>
<td>549</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sultān Haidar Shāh’s interest in Music</td>
<td>551</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sultān Hasau Shāh’s encouragement of Music</td>
<td>551</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mirzā Haidar’s impetus to Music</td>
<td>553</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Akbar and Tān Sain</td>
<td>553</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Yūsuf Shāh Chak</td>
<td>553</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Painting</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Māni in Kashmir</td>
<td>555</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Title</td>
<td>Page</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>----------------------------------------------------------------------</td>
<td>------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'The Kashmiri Qalam</td>
<td>556</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Hāshiya or the Border</td>
<td>556</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Calligraphy</td>
<td>557</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muhammad Husain “Zarrín Qalam”</td>
<td>558</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Industries</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Shawls</td>
<td>560</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Shawls made of <em>kel-phamb</em></td>
<td>561</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Origin of the Shawl Industry</td>
<td>562</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Šuāh Hamadān’s initiative in the Shawl Industry</td>
<td>563</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Classes of Shawls</td>
<td>563</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Shawls under the Mughuls</td>
<td>563</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Shawls under the Afghāns</td>
<td>564</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prices of Shawls</td>
<td>565</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>How Shawls became fashionable in the West</td>
<td>565</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kashmir Shawl not successfully copied</td>
<td>567</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Embroidery</td>
<td>569</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The <em>Gabba</em></td>
<td>569</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[-Islāmābād]</td>
<td>570</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Carpets</td>
<td>571</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Silk</td>
<td>572</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Paper</td>
<td>576</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Papier Mâché</td>
<td>577</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Book-binding</td>
<td>579</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Lacquer-binding</td>
<td>580</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jewellery</td>
<td>581</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Silver-Work</td>
<td>583</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Copper-Work</td>
<td>584</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Enamels</td>
<td>585</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Woodwork</td>
<td>585</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The <em>Khatam-band</em></td>
<td>586</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Boat-Making, the House-boat and the Hānji</td>
<td>586</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mat-Making, etc.</td>
<td>589</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wicker-Work</td>
<td>589</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Kāngri</td>
<td>589</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Leather</td>
<td>591</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Furs</td>
<td>592</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Arms</td>
<td>592</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Transport of Arts and Crafts in Kashmir</td>
<td>593</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
CHAPTER X
CIVIL & MILITARY ORGANIZATION UNDER MUSLIM RULE IN KASHMIR

PART I—CIVIL ORGANIZATION

Supremacy of the Sharī'at .......................... 599
Head of the Islamic State Elected ..................... 600
The Vāzīr ........................................... 601
The Qāżi ............................................ 602
The Shaikh-ul-Islam in Kashmir ......................... 604
The Muhtasib ........................................ 605
The Vāzīr-i-Māl ..................................... 606
Regency in Kashmir .................................. 607
Islamic Law .......................................... 609
Islamic Law and the Swiss Civil Code ................. 612
The Condition of Women ............................... 613
The Seclusion of Women ................................ 614
Legal Education ...................................... 615

LL.B., LLM., and LL.D. Degrees in the Islamic System of Legal Education ........................................ 615
Administration of Law .................................. 616
Application of Islamic Law in Kashmir .................. 617
The Making of Laws .................................... 619
The Attitude of Islamic Law towards non-Muslims .......... 619
Five concrete cases of strict Justice in Muslim courts against Muslim monarchs and a Muslim Empress .......... 621
Muhammad Tughluq sued by two Hindu Complainants .......... 621
Sher Shāh Sār's drastic action against his own Son on a Hindu Plain ........................................... 622
Sultān Ghiyās-ud-Dīn of Bengāl sued by a Woman .......... 623
The Empress Nūr Jahān accused of Murder ................. 623
Administration of Hindu Law under Muslim Rule .......... 624
Under Baḍ Shāh in Kashmir ................................ 625
Under Akbar .......................................... 625
Under Jahāngīr ...................................... 626
Under Shāh Jahān .................................... 626
Under Aurangzīb 'Ālamgīr ................................ 626
No Capital Punishment under Aurangzīb 'Ālamgīr .......... 626
Captives of War—Women and Children exempted .......... 627
Suits against the State. Government Advocates .......... 627
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Administrative Units</th>
<th>...</th>
<th>...</th>
<th>628</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>The Revenue System of Kashmir</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>630</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Coinage of Kashmir</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>637</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coins of the Sultans and Bādshāhs of Kashmir</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>637</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mughal Coins</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>640</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Afghān Coins</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>640</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coins struck in the name of Shaikh Nūr-ud-Din Rishi</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>641</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sikh Coins</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>642</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dogrā Coins</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>643</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Value of Coins</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>643</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Weights and Measures</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>643</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Kharwār</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>644</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[The Bigah]</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>645</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Agriculture—Rice</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>645</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Saffron</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>646</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pure Honey from Saffron</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>649</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Floating Gardens. ‘Stealing Land’ in Kashmir</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>650</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fruits</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>651</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Arboriculture</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>651</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Willows for Human Limbs</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>652</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Irrigation</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>653</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Famines</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>653</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Roads</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>653</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Routes and Rāhdāri</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>654</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**PART II—MILITARY ORGANIZATION**

| Introductory | ... | ... | 657 |
| Filing of Armies in the Field | ... | ... | 658 |
| The Battle-ground and the War Council | ... | ... | 660 |
| The Army in Kashmir | ... | ... | 661 |
| Foreign Relations | ... | ... | 665 |
| The Rājā of Jammu a Refugee in Kashmir | ... | ... | 666 |
| Ibrāhīm Lodi a refugee in Kashmir | ... | ... | 666 |
| Local Militia under Mughul Rule | ... | ... | 668 |
| The Afghān method of Attack and Encampment | ... | ... | 668 |
| The Soldier's Pay | ... | ... | 670 |
| The number of Troops stationed in Kashmir | ... | ... | 670 |
| Vicissitudes in the Political Conditions of Kashmir | ... | ... | 671 |
| System of Government to blame for making people Cowardly | ... | ... | 672 |
Mughul Rule began to break the spirit
Afghan Rule rough and harsh
Sikh Rule tyrannical, brutal and barbarous
Heartlessness of early Dogra rule
Kashmiris concealing their Identity
The Dawn of Awakening
Need for Tawhid
Right Form of Education necessary
Hygiene and Sanitation
No Condemnation of one's own People
Existing signs of Awakening to be Utilized

CHAPTER XI

KASHMIR UNDER THE SIKHS

[A.C. 1819—1846]

A brief account of the earliest Sikh Contact with Kashmir.
Also the Sikh Gurus
The Lineal Order of the Sikh Gurus
[The Granth Sahib, Kabir, Farid, Bhikan and others' contributions to the Granth Sahib]
The Arrangement of the Granth Sahib
The Language of the Granth Sahib
A brief outline of the rise of Ranjit Singh till the end of his Dynasty
Ranjit Singh's Ancestors and Descendants
Sidelights on Ranjit Singh
The Last Days of Ranjit Singh
Kashmir under Maharaja Ranjit Singh
The Conquest of Kashmir extends Ranjit's Kingdom and increases his Revenues
Condition of Kashmir under Ranjit's Rule
The Administration of ten Governors under Sikh Rule in Kashmir
1. Misr Diwan Chaud
2. Diwan Moti Ram
[Genesis of Sikh-Muslim Misunderstanding]
The Departure of the Ancestor of the Nawabs of Ducca
3. Sardar Hari Singh Nalwa
4. Diwan Channi Lal
5. Diwan Kirpa Ram
G. T. Vigne on Kirpa Ram's régime
CHAPTER XII

KASHMIR UNDER THE DOGRÁS

[A. C. 1846—]

Guláb Singh enters Kashmir with a Sikh army nominally commanded by Prince Pratáb Singh, the son of Mahárájá Sher Singh, to restore order on Colonel Mehán Singh’s Murder in Srinagar

A Brief History of the Dográs

The origin of the term Dográs

Miyán the title of the Dográs

The descent of the Dográs royal line

The Beginning of the Dográs Rájás of Jammu

The Dográs Family of Jammu

Dográs in the time of Akbar, Jahángír and Sháh Jahan

The appearance of the Dográs

Ranjít Dev’s rule over the principality of Jammu
Gulāb Singh's claim to Jammu Rule
Gulāb Singh's start in Life
[Tīnch]
[Rajauri or Rājāpuri]
[Rāmnagar]
Gulāb Singh's Distinguished Appearance
An awkward time in Gulāb Singh's Life
Gulāb Singh's understanding with the English
Treaty (of 1846) with Mahārājā Gulāb Singh
The Receipt for Rs. 75,00,000
Fauq's comment on the Sale of Kashmir
The "Quit Kashmir" Movement of 1946
Reasons for the transfer of Kashmir
Observations on the Sale of Kashmir
Lord Hardinge's visit to Kashmir
The actual Possession of Kashmir by Gulāb Singh
Expansion of Gulāb Singh's Possessions
The Importance of the State of Jammu and Kashmir
Gulāb Singh's greed for Money
Gulāb Singh would not spare a Gurū
Complaints against Gulāb Singh
Gulāb Singh's Repression
Gulāb Singh's principle of personal Rule
Fowls, sheep and provisions cheap
Christian Mission Reconnoitring
The Trigonometrical Survey of the Valley and the First Map of Kashmir
Chief Officers of Gulāb Singh
Dr. Honigberg proposes Sugar-cane and Tea-plantations in the State in the year 1852
Gulāb Singh's Hospitality to Europeans
Estimates of Mahārājā Gulāb Singh's Character
Gulāb Singh quarrels with Jawāhir Singh
Gulāb Singh's Death
Concluding Remarks on Gulāb Singh's Career

Maharanja Sir Randhir Singh [A.C. 1857 to 1885]
Randhir Singh's Patronage of Sanskrit Learning
Maharajah Ranbir Singh a strict Hindu 793
Attempt on Ranbir's Life 794
Maharajah Ranbir Singh's Help to the British 794
Ranbir's Additions to his Father's Territory 795
Miserable condition of Kashmir under Ranbir 796
Taxation heavy and arbitrary 799
Severity of famine in 1877 800
The Advent of the Church Missionary Society in Kashmir 801
Ranbir's Gatherings on Akbar's Model 802
Diwan Kirpa Ram...
Maharajah Ranbir Singh's Appearance 803
Ranbir's application to his Duties 804
Maharajah Ranbir Singh's attitude toward the British Government...
Death of Maharajah Ranbir Singh 805

Maharaja Sir Pratap Singh [A.C. 1885 to 1925] 807

Maharajah Pratap Singh deprived of his Powers 808
Deplorable condition of Kashmir under Maharajah Pratap Singh 809
Natural calamities in Pratap's Reign 810
Pratap Singh President of the Council 810
Appointment of Lawrence for the Settlement of the Valley 810
The main feature of the Settlement of Kashmir 811
Persian as Court Language replaced by Urdu 812
Works of Public Utility under Pratap Singh 813
The British Residents' share in Reforms 815
Military Reforms 815
The Conquest of Hunza and Nagar. The Chitral War 815
Abolition of the Old Council in 1905 815
Miyan Hari Singh 816
A Sensational Episode in Miyan Hari Singh's Life 817
King George's visit as Prince of Wales 817
The State Darbars 818
The Beginnings of the first Newspaper in the State 818
Maharajah Pratap Singh's Orthodoxy 819
Pratap Singh's food and drink, and other habits 820
Pratap's Riverine Processions 821
Dogra rulers scrupulous about the honour of Women 821
| Pratāp's interest in Cricket | .. | .. | .. | 821 |
| Munshi Muhammad-ud-Din Fauq's remarks | .. | .. | .. | 822 |
| A patriotic Kashmiri Pandit Publicist's Observations on Dogra rule in Kashmir | .. | .. | .. | 823 |
| A Balanced Appraisal of Dogra rule | .. | .. | .. | 828 |
| The death of Mahārājā Pratāp Singh | .. | .. | .. | 829 |
| The Accession of Shri Mahārājā Sir Hari Singhji Bahādūr | .. | .. | .. | 831 |
| Birth of Shri Yuvrāj Karan Singhji | .. | .. | .. | 831 |
| Farewell to the Reader | .. | .. | .. | 832 |
# LIST OF MAPS AND ILLUSTRATIONS

## Frontispiece

1. The Dargah Asár-i-Sharif or the Shrine at Hazrat-bal, Srinagar (coloured)

## CHAPTER I

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Number</th>
<th>Illustration Description</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>Map of the Valley of Kashmir (coloured)</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>The Dal with its Clouds</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>The Çesha-nág Lake</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>The Glacier at Kolhai</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>Sonmarg</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>A Glimpse of Glorious Guréz</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8</td>
<td>Map of Bārāmūla (coloured)</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

## CHAPTER II

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Number</th>
<th>Illustration Description</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>9</td>
<td>Map of Ancient Kashmir (coloured)</td>
<td>35</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10</td>
<td>Buddhist Remains at Hárvan</td>
<td>42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11</td>
<td>Map of Ancient Srinagar (coloured)</td>
<td>47</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12</td>
<td>Map of Modern Srinagar (coloured)</td>
<td>48</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13</td>
<td>The Ruins of Tāpar, four miles from Paṭan, Bārāmūla-</td>
<td>51</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Srinagar Road</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14</td>
<td>Map of Parihāsapura and the Confluence of the Vitastā</td>
<td>52</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>and the Sindhu (coloured)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15</td>
<td>The Temple of Mārtānda</td>
<td>53</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16</td>
<td>The Ruins of the Temple at Avantipura or Vāntipōr</td>
<td>56</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17</td>
<td>Rātnavardhana’s Miniature Temple at Paṭan</td>
<td>57</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18</td>
<td>The Temple of Meruvardhanasvāmin at Pāndrethān,</td>
<td>58</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>near Srinagar</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

## CHAPTER III

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Number</th>
<th>Illustration Description</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>19</td>
<td>Map of Trans-Pákistān Lands and Localities in</td>
<td>75</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Kāshīr (coloured)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20</td>
<td>Mir Sayyid ‘Alī Hamadān or Shāh Hamadān (coloured)</td>
<td>84</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21</td>
<td>The Gunbad-i-‘Alaviyān, Hamadān, Irān (Interior)</td>
<td>85</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22</td>
<td>The Gunbad-i-‘Alaviyān, Hamadān, Irān (Exterior view)</td>
<td>85</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23</td>
<td>The Mausoleum of Mir Sayyid ‘Alī Hamadān (Shāh Hamadān) in</td>
<td>116a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Khāltān, or Khotl, now called Kolāb, in Tājikistān, U. S. S.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>R.—three different views, and the Mutawallis (or custodians)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>of the Mausoleum</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24</td>
<td>The Khā نقحāh-i-Mu’alla or the Mosque and Shrine of</td>
<td>88</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Shāh Hamadān, Srinagar</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

xxix
25. The Interior of the Šah Hamadān Mosque .......................... 89
26. A general view of the Khānqāh-i-Mu‘allā, Srinagar ............ 89
27. A distant View of the above ........................................... 89
28. Šah Hamadān’s Khānqāh-i-‘Āli at Trāl, 7 miles south-east of Avantipūra (Vāntipūr) ........................................... 92
29. The Tomb of Bibi Bāri’a known as Dīdāh Mūjī, wife of Mir Muhammad Hamadānī, Krālahpūr, near Srinagar (inset) ...... 93
30. Shaikh Nūr-ud-Din Rishi (coloured) ................................. 98
31. Chhrār (General view) ..................................................... 99
32. Map of Tsār (Chhrār) (coloured) ....................................... 99
33. The Chhrār Mosque ......................................................... 100
34. Coins struck in the name of Shaikh Nūr-ud-Din Rishi (inset) .... 101
35. The Ziyārat at ‘Aish Maqām—Tomb of Bābā Šāh Zain-ud- Din on the Islāmābād-Pahalgām Road ................................... 102
36. The Tomb of Shaikh Šams-ud-Din ‘Irāqi at Chādurā (inset) .... 112
37. Shaikh Hamza Makhdūm (coloured) .................................... 112
38. The Ziyārat of Makhdūm Sāhib .......................................... 113
39. Šah Farīd-ud-Din of Baghdād and his son (coloured) ............... 115

CHAPTER IV

40. Into the Zājī-Lā Pass (inset) ............................................ 119
41. The grave of Sultān Sadr-ud-Din at Bulbul Lānkār, ‘Ali Kadal, Srinagar ................................................................. 126
42. The Tomb of Šultān Šams-ud-Din Šah Mīr, Andarkot, near Sambal ................................................................. 134
43. The Tomb of Abdāl Rīnā, Šultān Shihāb-ud-Din’s Commander-in-Chief, near Chādurā, about 10 miles south of Srinagar (inset) .... 137
44. Map of the approximate Extent of the Kingdom of Kashmir under Šultān Shihāb-ud-Din (coloured) ......................... 138
45. The Tomb of Šultān Sikandar’s Queen, Zaina Kadal, Srinagar .... 148
46. The Grave of Šultān Ali Šāh at Chādurā (inset) ..................... 156
47. Map of the Wular Lake (coloured) ................................. 158
48. The Zaina-Lānk of Šultān Žain-ul-‘Abidīn in the Wular ........ 160
49. The Khānqāh at Saidapōr, Zainagīr, further up Sopōr, District Bārāmūla ................................................................. 165
50. Map of India at the time of Šultān Žain-ul-‘Abidīn (coloured) .... 169
51. Map of the World at the time of Šultān Žain-ul-‘Abidīn (coloured) ................................................................. 172
52. The Grave of Makhdūma Begam, the Queen of Šāh Šāh (inset) ................................................................................. 178
53. The Grave of Šultān Žain-ul-‘Abidīn, in the enclosure of the Māzār-us-Salātīn, Zaina Kadal, Srinagar ........... 181
xxx

54. The Grave of Mirzā Haidar Dughlāt, Zaina Kadal, Srinagar, and Dr. William Moorcroft's inscription in Persian on this grave

55. Camping on the Snows before entering Deosai on the way to Skārdū

56. A Waterfall on the way to Skārdū

57. An Apricot Garden in Skārdū

58. The Zakh used as a raft on the river Shīghar which joins the Indus near Skārdū

59. Map of Gulmarg (coloured)

60. A Beauty Spot in Gulmarg (coloured)

61. The Grave of Ya'qūb Shāh Chak in Kishtwār (inset)

62. A Saffron Field of Pāmpar (coloured)

63. The Jāmi' Masjid at Pāmpar on the Šrinagar-Islāmābād Road

64. The Mosque built by Jāhāngīr, at Bhimbar, on the old Mughul Road from the Punjāb to Kashmir

65. The Grave of Haidar Malik at Taśdūr or Chādūra (inset)

66. The Mughul Sarāi built by Nur Jābān at Chingas on the old Mughul route from the Punjāb to Kashmir

67. The Mughul Sarāi at Thanna in the Rajaurī Tahsīl

68. The Kōh or Kūh-i-Nūr or the 'Mountain of Light' (inset)

69. Ranjīt Singh making obeisance to Zāmān Shāh on the conferment of the rulership of Lāhore

70. Sardār Muhammad 'Azīm Khān, Nāzīm or Governor of Kashmir, 1813-19 (inset)

71. The Mazār-ush-Shu'arā on the Dal Gate, Šrinagar

72. The Parī Mahall, higher up the Royal Spring or the Chashma-i-Shāhi, Šrinagar

73. The Tomb of Shaikh Ya'qūb Sarfī, Mahalla Hazrat Ishān, Zaina Kadal, Šrinagar

74. The Grave of Mullā Muḥsin Fānī, Zaina Kadal, Šrinagar

75. The Grave of Mullā Tābir Ghanī, Zaina Kadal, Šrinagar

76. The supposed Site of Tābir Ghanī's Hut, Šrinagar

77. The Grave of Khwāja Muhammad A'zam Didamār, Šrinagar (inset)
78. A small group of Dards from Dras

79. Parmānand, a noted Kashmiri poet (inset)

80. 'Abdul Wahhāb Parē, another noted Kashmiri poet (inset)

CHAPTER IX

81. The Tomb of Madyan Sāhib, Jadi-bal, Srinagar (inset)

82. The Mosque of Madyan Sāhib, Jadi-bal, Srinagar (inset)

83. The Jāmi‘ Masjid of Srinagar

84. The Spire of the Jāmi‘ Masjid, Srinagar

85. The Cloisters of the Jāmi‘ Masjid, Srinagar (inset)

86. The Patthar (stone) Masjid or Nau (new) or Shāhī (Royal) Masjid of Nūr Jahān, Srinagar

87. The Kūh-i-Mārān or the Hari-parbat Fort built by Sardār ‘Atā Muhammad Khān, Nāzim or Governor of Kashmir, the lower wall, known as Nāgar-nagar, not visible in the photograph, was built by Akbar (inset)

88. The Mosque of Mullā Shāh Badakhshāni, Hari-parbat, Srinagar

89. The Kāthī Darwāza, the principal entrance to the Hari-parbat Fort

90. The Shālāmār, Srinagar

91. Two different Views of the Fountains of Shālāmār

92. The Entrance to the Nashāt, Srinagar

93. The Nashāt Bāgh, Āsaf Khān’s ‘Garden of Gladness,’ Srinagar

94. The Royal Spring or the Chashma-i-Shāhī, Srinagar

95. The Chashma-i-Shāhī Bāradāri, Srinagar

96. General View of the Vēr-nāg Spring

97. Jahāngīr’s first Inscription in Persian at Vēr-nāg

98. Jahāngīr’s second Inscription in Persian at Vēr-nāg

99. The Spring of Achabal, a general view

100. The Spring of Achabal, Bāradāri and the Fountains

101. Kashmiri Singers and a Dance (coloured)

102. Muhammad Husain Kashmīrī’s Specimen of Calligraphy

103. The Curve of the River Jhelum above Srinagar

104. Specimen of a Kashmiri Carpet in the Iranian design

105. Specimen of a Shawl prepared during Afghān rule in Kashmir

106. Specimen of the Gabba. The Kāng or the Kāŋgī

107. Map of Islāmābād (coloured)

108. How hand-made Paper is produced in a suburb of Srinagar. Also a design of modern Silver work

109. Specimen of Woodwork—a walnut screen of floral design

110. Coarse type of Silver Jewellery worn with the cap by small Kashmiri girls

111. Specimen of Kashmiri Copper work (Salvers)

112. A House-Boat and a Shikāra on the Dal or on the Jhelum in Srinagar
### Chapter X

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>No.</th>
<th>Description</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>113</td>
<td>Copper Coins of the Kings of Kashmir—Non-Muslim Rājās and Muslim Sultāns</td>
<td>637</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>114</td>
<td>Coins of the Sultāns, Pādshāhs, and Shāh-in-Shāhs of Kashmir</td>
<td>638</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>115</td>
<td>Mughul Coins found in Rehāri, Jammu Town</td>
<td>640</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>116</td>
<td>Miscellaneous Coins of Mughul, Afghān, Sikh, Dogrā Rulers and some old Non-Muslim Rājās of Kashmir</td>
<td>642</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>117</td>
<td>The Burzil Pass (inset)</td>
<td>655</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Chapter XI

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>No.</th>
<th>Description</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>118</td>
<td>Mahārājā Ranjit Singh</td>
<td>720</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>119</td>
<td>Mahārājā Sher Singh</td>
<td>737</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>120</td>
<td>Mahārājā Dalip Singh at the time of the conquest of the Punjab by the British</td>
<td>749</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Chapter XII

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>No.</th>
<th>Description</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>121</td>
<td>Mahārājā Gulāb Singh, Founder of Dogrā Rule in Kashmir</td>
<td>753</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>122</td>
<td>Facsimile of the Receipt of Rs. 75,00,000 (Nānak-shāhī), now estimated to be equivalent to Rs. 50,00,000, for the transfer of Kashmir</td>
<td>768</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>123</td>
<td>Shaikh Muhammad ‘Abdullāh who initiated the “Quit Kashmir” Movement in 1946</td>
<td>770</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>124</td>
<td>Map of the Jammu and Kashmir State (coloured)</td>
<td>777</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>125</td>
<td>Group Photograph of the Dogrā Rulers of Jammu and Kashmir</td>
<td>808</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
NOTE ON MAPS, PORTRAITS
AND
ILLUSTRATIONS IN "KASHIR"

The Frontispiece is the work of Lady Chenevix Trench who presented it to the late Khān Sāhib Munshi Sirāj-ud-Din Ahmad, Mir Munshi to the British Residency, Srinagar, and was obtained for the author by Nawāb Maulā Bakhsh, c.i.e., ex-Home Minister, Jammu and Kashmir State.

For the maps of (i) Ancient Kashmir (ii) Ancient Srinagar and (iii) Parihāsapura and the Confluence of the Vitastā and the Sindhu reproduced from the English Translation of Kalhana’s Rājatarangini I am grateful to the late Sir Aurel Stein.

The maps of (1) the Valley of Kashmir, (2) Bārāmūla, (3) Srinagar, (4) Tsār or Chhrār Sharif, (5) the Wulur, (6) Gulmarg, (7) Islāmābād and (8) Jammu and Kashmir State are reproduced with the permission of the Surveyor-General of the Union of India. The author is indebted to the Surveyor-General of the Union of India also for waiving all “royalty” charges for the publication of these eight maps.

The maps of (1) Trans-Pakistan Lands and Localities, (2) India at the time of Sultān Zain-ul-‘Ābidin, and (3) The World at the time of Sultān Zain-ul-‘Ābidin, were prepared under the author’s direction by Pandit Rām Narāin Lāl, Drawing Master, New English High School, Hoshangābād, C.P., who also prepared for the press six Survey of India maps, 2 to 7, given above.

The Map of the extent of Kashmir under Sultān Shihāb-ud-Din has been prepared from a modern production.

Muhammad Husain Kashmirī’s specimen of calligraphy was obtained from Mr. Ashfāq ‘Alī, ex-Curator, the Museum, Fort, Delhi.

The portrait of Shāikh Nūr-ud-Din Rishī was supplied to the author by the late Pandit Ānand Kaul Bāmzai, ex-President, Sṛinagar Municipality, and also a second copy by Pandit Bala Kāk Dar, Retired Wazīr-i-Ważārat, Srinagar, who sent his copy through the late Khān Sāhib Munshī Sirāj-ud-Din Ahmad, Mir Munshi, and Khān Sāhib Khurshid Ahmad, lately Political Assistant, Ladākh.

Copper Salvers are from the Journal of Indian Art, Volume IV, Nos. 33-37, January, 1892.

The photos of (1) the tomb of Mīr Shams-ud-Dīn ‘Irāqī, (2) the grave of Sultān ‘Alī Shāh, (3) the tomb of Ābdāl Rāina, (4) the grave of Haidar Malik Chādura, (5) the Mazār-ush-Shu’ārā, (6) the grave of Mullā Muḥsin Fānī, (7) the tomb of Shāikh Ya’qūb Sarfī, (8) the grave of Khwāja Muhammad ‘A’zam Dīdamārī, and (9) the tomb of Bibi Bār’a, called Didah Mōjī, the daughter-in-law of Shāh Hamadān,
were specially taken for the author by Pirzāda Muhammad Amin ibn Pirzāda Ghulām Ahmad Makhjūr, Tenkipór, Srinagar.

The photo of the grave of Ya’qūb Shāh Chak at Kishtwār was similarly specially taken for the author by Pandit Jagmohan Kaul, formerly of “Kashmir Blossoms,” Srinagar, in November, 1942.

The portrait of Sayyid Farīd-ud-Din Qidirī with his son Shāh Ahkīr-ud-Dīn was reproduced by Mr. Subu Tāgore from the original in a Pir family of Kishtwār in November, 1942.

The photo of the poet ‘Abdul Wahhāb Pare was secured by Khwaja Ghulām Muhī’id-Dīn, M.A., LL.B. (Alig.), Lecturer in Arabic, Gāndhi Memorial College, Jammu.

The portrait of the Kashmiri poet, Parmānand, was borrowed from Pandit Prem Nath Bazāz, B.A., Editor, The Hamdard, Srinagar.

Mr. Mohan Bhavanāṇi, Film producer of Bombay, gave me (i) two views of Shāh Hamadān (ii) two views of the Fountains of Shālāmār (iii) the Curve of the Jhelum (iv) the Dal with its clouds (v) the Česbaṇāg (vi) Entrance to the Nashāt (vii) the Chashmā-i-Shāhī and (viii) coarse type of Silver Jewellery worn with a cap by small girls in Kashmir.

Lālā Mulkraj Sarāf, B.A., Editor, the Ranbīr, Jammu, lent me his block of the Dogrā rulers of Kashmir.

Pandit Baldeo Prashād, B.A., Journalist, Jammu, gave me his photo of the Mughul coins found at Rehārī Jammu.

The Director-General of Archaeology in the Union of India has permitted through Dr. Muhammad Nāzīm, M.A., D.Ph.D. (Cambridge), Superintendent, Archaeology, Lāhore, the reproduction of the portraits of Mahārajas Ranjīt Singh, Sher Singh, Dalip Singh and Gulāb Singh from the Museum, Fort, Lāhore.

The coins struck in the name of Shaikh Nūr-ud-Dīn Ris’hī in Kashmir by ‘Atā Muhammad Khān, governor of the Valley under the Afghāns, are inserted with the permission of the ex-Curator, the Central Museum, Lāhore, Mr. Muhammad Ismā’īl Chaudhri, M.A.

(1) The Musicians’ Band and the Dance and (2) A Beauty Spot in Gulmarg are the work of Pandit Somnath of Srinagar, Artist, formerly in the “C. & M. Gazette” Ltd., Lāhore.

The late Munshi Muhammad-ud-Dīn Fauq kindly allowed me the use of three blocks of his Ta’rīkh-i-Bad Shāhī, viz. (1) the grave of Makhdūma Khātūn, Bad Shāh’s Queen (2) the Mosque of Mudyān Sāhib, and (3) the grave of Mudyān Sāhib.

The four photographs of the (i) Camping on the Snows before entering Deosai on the way to Skirdu (ii) Waterfall, (iii) the Apricot Garden and (iv) the Zakhir, used as a Raft, on the SHīghar river in Chapter V were taken by Mirzā ‘Abdul Hamīd Beg, M.Sc., Professor of Physics, Islamia College, Lāhore.
The two photos of the Gunbad-i-'Alaviyin, Hamadan, Iran, were obtained for the author by the Consul for Iran in Bombay, from the Ministry of Education, Iran, for which thanks are due to him.

Monsieur A. Semenov of the Academy of Sciences in Tadjikistan in Stalinabad, kindly took, in August 1947, the photo of the Mausoleum of Mir Sayyid 'Ali Hamadani (Shah Hamadan) in Khatlan, now called Kolab, in the Tadjik Soviet Socialist Republic, at the instance of Professor E. N. Pavlovsky, Membre de l' Academie des Sciences d' U. R. S. S., whom I saw at Bombay when he visited India for the Science Congress held at New Delhi in December, 1946.

The water colour of the saffron field is by Mr. J. Mukerji, F. R. S. A. (London), F. I. B. D., (Eng.), then Superintendent, Sir Amar Singh Technical Institute, Srinagar.

Miyän Muhammad Sa'dullah, M.A., Keeper of the West Punjab Government Records, secured permission for me of the Punjab Government for the reproduction of (i) the receipt of Rs. 75,00,000 (Nanak-shahi) for the transfer of Kashmir to Maharaja Gulab Singh by the representatives of the East India Company, and (ii) the painting of Maharaja Ranjit Singh making obeisance to King Zamàn Shâh of Kâbul on receiving the rulership of Lâhore.

The Proprietor of the Lion Press, Lâhore, Shaikh 'Abdul Latîf, was good enough to allow me the use of his block of the photograph of Shaikh Muhammad 'Abdullâh, who initiated the "Quit Kashmir" movement in 1946.

The reproduction of the Floating Gardens and the Aschâbul is from the album of Mr. M. A. Rashid, Under Secretary, Government of the West Punjab, Department of Public Works, Lâhore, by the courtesy of Messrs. Muhammad Nâzir, B.A. (London), Vice-Principal, Central Training College, and Mr. M. A. Bârî, M.A., Head Master, Central Model School, Lâhore.

I borrowed from Shaikh Muhammad Habibullâh, Divisional Audit Officer, N. W. Ry., his copy showing a part of the hâradarî of the Shâlamâr, Srinagar.

The house-boat (two photographs) are from Miyän Bashîr Ahammad, B.A. (Oxon), Barrister-at-Law, Editor, The Humâyûn, Al-Manzar, Lawrence Road, Lâhore. The third one is from the collection of Sayyid Hamîd 'All, of the Dâr-ul-Ishâ'at, Punjab, Railway Road, Lâhore.

The choice of Sir Muhammad Iqbal's photograph in the Dedication, I am glad to say, is by that great man's son, Shaikh Javid Iqbal, m.a., and was brought to me by Mr. Muhammad Shafi', m.a., who was Sir Muhammad Iqbal's Secretary, and is now on the reporting staff of the Pakistān Times, Lāhore, and Dawn, Karāchi. The photograph was taken by the scholarly Sardār Umrāo Singh Shergil when Sir Muhammad Iqbal was at Paris in 1933.

The remaining photos and portraits were purchased from the Superintendent, Archaeology, Museum and Research, Srinagar, and are reproduced with the permission of Khān Bahādur Mirzā Ja'far 'Ali Khān Asar, m.b.e. then Home Member, His Highness' Government, Jammu and Kashmir.

Caution.—It is very difficult to claim complete accuracy or perfect genuineness for the portraits of saints given in Kashīr. They may, at best, be looked upon as the artists' nearest approach to real likenesses.
BIBLIOGRAPHY

This Bibliography is divided into four Sections. Section I notes most of the known original sources, period by period. Section II gives a list of Manuscripts mostly Persian. Section III is a list of printed books on the subject in Urdu, Persian and English. Section IV is a list of periodicals relating to Kashmir published in and out of the Valley.

Section I

SOME OF THE MORE IMPORTANT ORIGINAL SOURCES

The Pre-Islamic Period
(From the Earliest Times to 1149-50 A.C.)

1. Sir Mark Aurel Stein's English Translation of Kalhana's Rājatarāṅgiṇī, Vols. I and II. (From the earliest times to the year 1150 A.C.). 18th May, 1900.


2. Rājatarāṅgiṇī—The Saga of the Kings of Kashmir. Translated from the original Sanskrit of Kalhana by Ranjit Sitā Rām Pandit. 18th July, 1934.

   Note.—There are brief references in Al-Biruni's Indhu, and in Mas'ūdi's Murūj-uz-Zahab (Meadows of Gold), translated from the Arabic by Aloys Sprenger, M. D. (John Murray, London, 1841). Volume I only is available.


The Early Muslim or the Pre-Mughul Period
(1150 to 1586 A.C.)

The Shah Mīris
(1150 to 1555 A.C.)

3. Pandit Jounārāja's Rājāvalī in continuation of Kalhana Rājatarāṅgiṇī (From 1150 to 1459 A.C.)

4. Pandit Črivara's Jaina-Rājatarāṅgiṇī (From 1459 to 1486 A.C.)
5. Pandit Prajyabhatta's Rājāvalīpatākā (From 1486 to 1512 A.C.)

6. Ta'rikh-i-Nādirī by Mullā Nādirī. MS. Written during Baḍ Shāh's reign. Referred to by Haidar Malik Chādurā, Khwāja Muhammad A'zam, and Pir Hasan Shāh. Also Ta'rikh-i-Waqā'in-Kashmīr by Mullā Ahmad Kashmīrī, written at this time, is not traceable.

7. Ta'rikh-i-Qalamraw-i-Kashmīr by Qāṣī Ḳibrāhm son of Qāṣī Hamīd, Mutawwalli, Khānqāh-i-Mu'allā, Srinagar. MS. Believed to have been written in Fath Shāh's second reign, viz., 1505-1514 A.C.

8. Ta'rikh-i-Rashidī—Asl (1544-5), and Mukhtasar (1541-2)—of Mirzā Haidar Dughlāt.

9. Ta'rikh-i-Kashmīr by Sayyid 'Alī bin Muhammad, Muta- walli, Khānqāh-i-Mu'allā, Srinagar. MS. Believed to have been written in Muhammad Shāh's fifth reign, viz., 1530-1537 A.C.

The Chaks
(1555 to 1586 A.C.)

10. Ta'rikh-i-Kashmīr by Mulla Husain Qārī. MS. Believed to have been written, during Chak rule, up to 1580 A.C.

The Mughul Period
(1586 A.C. to 1752 A.C.)

11. Pandit Cuka's Sanskrit Chronicle entitled the Rājatrayaṇī. (From 1512 to 1596 A.C.)

15. Gulzār-i-Ibrāhīmī or the Ta'rikh-i-Fīrishta of Muhammad Qāsim Fīrishta.
17. Tāzuk-i-Jahāngīrī.
18. Ta'rikh-i-Kashmīr written during 1027-30 A.H. 1617-20 A.C., by Ra'is-ul-Mulk Haidar Malik Chādurā. MS.
19. Bahāristān-i-Shāhī, author anonymous, but supposed to be Sayyid Muhammad Mahmūd, a Shi'a writer, on account of the special exposition of Shi'a tenets and the exploits of Shi'a heroes. MS. 1022 A.H. = 1613 A.C.
BIBLIOGRAPHY


22. Muntakhab-ut-Tawārikh by Narā'yan Kaul 'Ājīz. MS. 1122 A.H.=1710 A.C.

23. Navādir-ul-Akhbār by Raff'-ud-Dīn Ahmad Ghō lul, MS. 1136 A.H.=1723 A.C.

24. Wāqi‘-āt-i-Kashmīr or Ta’rikh-i-A’zamī by Khwāja Muhammād A’zam Kaul (?) Mustaghī Didamari, 1747 A.C.

25. Gauhar-i-‘Ālam by Ābū’l Qāsim Muḥammad Aslām Mu’īnī, son of Khwāja A’zam Didamari. MS.

The Afghan Period
(1752 to 1819 A.C.)


27. Bāgh-i-Sulaimān by Mīr Sā′dullāh Shāhābādī. MS. 1194 A.H.=1780 A.C.

28. Ta’rikh-i-Maulavi Hidayatlullāh Mattu or Takmilā-i-Ta’rikh-i-A’zamī by Shaikh-ul-Islām Mullā Hidayatlullāh Mattu. MS. 1206 A.H.=1791 A.C. Cf. No. 2 above. This author died in 1206 A.H.= 1791 A.C.

29. Waqā‘i-Nizāmī or Nizām-ul-Waqā‘ī by Nizām-ud-Dīn Muḥammad Shāh Muftī. 1240 A.H.=1824 A.C.


31. Ta’rikh-i-Kashmīr by Maulavi Khair-ud-Dīn.

32. Lubb-ut-Tawārikh by Bahā-ud-Dīn Khānwārī. MS. 1243 A.H.=1827 A.C.


The Sikh Period
(1819 to 1846 A.C.)

34. Amār Nāth Akbari's Zafar-nāma-i-Ranjīt Singh. MS.


37. Pandit Birbāl Kāchur's *Ta'rikh-i-Kashmir* called in a place *Mukhtasar-ut-Tawārikh*, in another *Majma'ut-Tawārikh*, and in yet another place *Majmu'ut Tawārikh*, commenced in 1251 A.H.=1835 A.C. MS.


40. Baron Charles Hügel's *Travels in Kashmir* (in 1835 A.C.) and the *Panjab*.


---

**The Dogra Period**

*(From 1846 to the present time.)*

42. *Khulāsat-ut-Tawārikh* by Mīrzā Saif-ud-Dīn Beg. MS. 1247 A.H.=1857 A.C.

43. *Ta'rikh-i-Kashmir* by Mullā Muhammad Khalil Marjānpūrī. MS.

44. *Ta'rikh-i-Kashmir* by Mīr 'Azizullāh Qalandar, during the time of Mahārājā Gulāb Singh.


46. *Where Three Empires Meet* by E. F. Knight, 1893.

47. *The Valley of Kashmir* by Walter R. Lawrence, 1895.

48. *Ta'rikh-i-Kashmir*, MS., by Pir Hasan Shāh (1832—1898) of Khuhāma (Bāndāpūr or Bāndipur) embraces the Hindu and Muslim periods. Deposited by the author at the Khānqāh-i-Mu'allā, Srinagar.


Also—Administration, Census and "Royal Commission" Reports, etc.

---

*Note.*—Nos. 1, 2, 21, 30, 36, 38, 39, 40, 41, 46, 47, 49, 51 and 52 are in English. Nos. 3, 4, 5 and 11 are in Sanskrit. No. 50 is in Urdu. The rest are in Persian.

Details of particular editions of some of the above works will be found in Section III.
### Section II

#### LIST OF MANUSCRIPTS ON THE HISTORY OF KASHMIR

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>No.</th>
<th>Author</th>
<th>Manuscript</th>
<th>Language</th>
<th>Obtainable from</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>'Abdul Wahhāb Shā’īq</td>
<td><em>Shāh-nāma-i-Kashmīr</em> (poetry)</td>
<td>Do.</td>
<td>The family of the late Khān Sāhīb Mīrzā Ghulām Mustafā, Retired Wazīr-i-Wizārat, Srinagar.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>Ahmad ibn As-Sābūr Kāshmīrī.</td>
<td><em>Ta’rīkh-i-Hādī.</em></td>
<td>Do.</td>
<td>Śrī Ranbīr Library, Jammu, [MS. No. 5698].</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---

<sup>1</sup>The *Hishmat-i-Kashmīr* by 'Abdul Qādir Khān bin Qāzīl-Quzāt Maulāvī Wāsīl 'Ali Khān was completed at Benares in A.H. 1243 A.C. 1830. The work, which contains an historical account of Kashmir and some neighbouring countries, is based upon an earlier account of Kashmir written about 1183 A.H. by Muḥammad Bāḍī-ud-Dīn Abūl Qāsim Aslām, poetically surnamed Mughnī, and entitled *Gauhar Tuhfa-i-‘Ālām Shiḥī*, to which the author
made considerable additions. It is divided into four books (Chaman) treating respectively of Kashmir, Tibet, Qalmāqistān, Badakhshān, and the highlands of Afghānistān. The author of the book ‘Abdul Qādir Khān, whose family had settled, for some generations, in the Sūbah of Ilāhābād, and was staying with John Lumsden when Saʿādat ‘Ali Khān succeeded to the regency of Oudh (A.H. 1212=A.C. 1796), named it after Mr. Wm. Aug. Brooke, the English Agent whose Persian title was Hishtmat-ud-Daula. Maulavi ‘Abdul Qādir Khān is mentioned in Col. Wm. Kirkpatrick’s account of Nepāl (pp. xi and 367), as a member of the mission sent to Khatmandū in A.C. 1793.—Abstracted from Rieu’s Catalogue of the Persian Manuscripts in the British Museum, Volume III, 1883, Or. 1748, pages 1015-16.

A copy of the MS., Hishtmat-i-Kashmir, was lent to me by Khān Sāhib Muhammad Jamil-ud-Dīn, B.A. (Alig.), Retired Deputy Collector, Mahalla Qāzī-tola, Badāūn, U.P., Ex-General Minister, Bharatpur State, 1943-45, and in active service in France during the World War I. This MS. is in the handwriting of Lachchmī Narāyān, and is dated Lūcknow, the beginning of Rabī-ul-Awwal, 1255 A.H.=1839 A.C. The full title of Mr. William Augustus Brooke is given as Hishtmat-ud-Daula Ihtīshām-ul-Mulk Firāz Jang, and he is represented as British Resident of Benares at the time. The MS., inside the border, is slightly over 7 inches long, and slightly over 31/2 inches broad, and has 15 lines a page. The number of folios is 100, including the Khātila, or the epilogue. ‘Abdul Qādir Khān, the author of the MS., utilized, as he notes in folio 5, the following works in the preparation of his Hishtmat-i-Kashmir:—(i) Khvāja ‘Azām Didamari’s Waqī‘at-i-Kashmir, (ii) History of Kalhaṇa Pandit, known as the Rājatarangini in the Sanskrit language, (iii) The Ta‘rikh-i-Mullā Husain Qādirī, (or Qārī?), (iv) The Ta‘rikh-i-Malik Haidar, (v) Miscellaneous Histories written by Chak Pādshāh, and known as the Nūr-nāma, (vi) The Ta‘rikh-i-Rashidi, (vii) The collected works of Mullā Ahmad, (viii) The Ta‘rikh Hasan Beg, (ix) The Ta‘rikh-i-Bābā Nasīb, (x) The Ta‘rikh-i-Asrār-ul-Abrār, (xi) The Risālah Shaikh Muhammad Murād Naqshbandī, (xii) The Iqbal-nāma-i-Jahāngīrī, (xiii) The Nawādir-ul-Akhbār, (xiv) The Majalis-ul-Muminīn, (xv) The Dastūr-ul-‘Amal of Sāyjīd Mubārak Khān, (xvi) The Rauzat-ush-Shifā—this last being a historical collection in Hindi, Persian, Arabic, Turkish and Kashmiri.” The Hishtmat-i-Kashmir closes with the end of Mughul rule in the Valley, and refers to Afghān rule and Sikh rule in but a line. Then follows a small chapter on “the wonders and enchantments” of Kashmir, another chapter treats of the trade of the Valley. Chaman II, III and IV deal with countries as noted by Rieu.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>No.</th>
<th>Author</th>
<th>Manuscript</th>
<th>Language</th>
<th>Obtainable from</th>
</tr>
</thead>
</table>

*Ghulām Muḥyī'd Dīn sur-named Buṭṭī Shāh 'Alavī Qādirī Ludhiyānavi wrote his Ta'rikh-i-Panjāb in A.H. 1258 = A.C. 1842 at the request of Captain Murray, Resident at Ludhiana, in whose office he was a Munshi.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>No</th>
<th>Author</th>
<th>Manuscript</th>
<th>Language</th>
<th>Obtainable from</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>13</td>
<td>Hasan Shahi-Khuyama, Pir</td>
<td>Tq’rikh-i-Kashmir commonly known as Tarikh-i-Hasan</td>
<td>Do.</td>
<td>Khanqah-i-Mu’alla, Srinagar.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15</td>
<td>Hasan bin Muhammad al-Khaki Shirazi</td>
<td>Muntakahb-ut-Tawarikh</td>
<td>Do.</td>
<td>M. Ghubar, c/o the Aryana, Jadhah Ibn Sina, Kabul, vide the Aryana, Number 23, Volume XI, Second Year, Awwal Qaus, 1323. This MS. was written in 1019 A.H. = 1610 A.C. during the reign of the Emperor Jahangir.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>No.</td>
<td>Author</td>
<td>Title</td>
<td>Language</td>
<td>Repository</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-----</td>
<td>---------</td>
<td>-------</td>
<td>----------</td>
<td>------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16</td>
<td>Mahādev Jān, Pandit, Translator of Pir Hasan Shāh’s</td>
<td>Tarārikh-i-Kashmīr</td>
<td>Urdu</td>
<td>Sri Partāp Singh Public Library, Srinagar.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17</td>
<td>Muhtasham, Mirzā</td>
<td>Ta’rikh-i-Tanwīr</td>
<td>Persian</td>
<td>Imam-i-Ma-jid, Bondūq Khār Mahalla, near Ra’nāwārī, Srinagar.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18</td>
<td>Mustafā</td>
<td>Zain-ud-Dīn Rishi’s Tarzīra or Biography</td>
<td>Kashmirī, 1307 A.H.</td>
<td>Sri Partāp Singh Public Library, Srinagar.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19</td>
<td>Nājī, Muhammad Zāmān</td>
<td>Ta’rikh-i-Nāfī</td>
<td>Persian</td>
<td>Mufti Muhammad Shāh Sa’ādat, Nauhatta, Srinagar.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

[This MS., in the handwriting of the author, has 288 pages, each page having 13 lines. The length of the page is 9", the breadth is 5¼", leaving the margin, the space used for writing is 6"×3½").]
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>No.</th>
<th>Author</th>
<th>Manuscript</th>
<th>Language</th>
<th>Obtainable from</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>22</td>
<td>Saif-ud-Din Beg, Mirzâ*</td>
<td><em>Khulâsat-ut-Tawârikh</em></td>
<td>Persian</td>
<td>Mirzâ Kamâl-ud-Din Shaidân, B.A., President, Municipal Committee, Jammu.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25</td>
<td>Sayyid Sa‘dullâh, Shâh-âbâdi, Mir</td>
<td><em>Bugh-i-Sulaimân</em> (poetry)</td>
<td>Do.</td>
<td>Khânqâh-i-Mu‘allâ, Srinagar. Also Pir Muhammad Shâh, Kalâlûri Mahalla, Srinagar. The latter has 252 folios.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26</td>
<td>Sohan Lâl, Ranjit Singh's Court Vâkîl and historian</td>
<td><em>'Umdu-ut-Tawârikh</em></td>
<td>Do.</td>
<td>Oriental Library, Bânkipur, Patna. The MS. closes at 1831 A.C. The copy printed in 1885 goes down to 1849.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*The *Khulâsat-ut-Tawârikh-i-Kashmir*, folios 71, 8 in. by 5 in., 13 lines, each 3 in. long; written in good nastâ‘îiq, dated A.H. 1278 (A.C. 1861). Author's name Mirzâ Saif-ud-Din, record-writer in Kashmir, who brought it down from the earliest times to 1277 A.H. (1860 A.C.). Mirzâ Muby’îd Din, the brother and successor in office of the author, continued it, and completed it on the 22nd October, 1861, at the request of General Courtland, then recently appointed British Agent in Kasbmir. The MS. is No. 234 in the *Catalogue of Arabic and Persian MSS.* in the University of Edinburgh, 1925, pp. 199-200.
The manuscripts on the history of Kashmir in the British Museum, London, are nine in number. They are according to Rieu's Catalogue, Volume III, page 1195, as follows:—

1. **Rājatarangī**, folios 131, written in 599 A.H. = 1586 A.C.
2. **Bahārīstān-ī-Shāhī**, folios 180, written in 1023 A.H. = 1614 A.C.
5. **Navādir-ul-Ākhbār**, folios 131, written in 1136 A.H. = 1723 A.C., by Abū Raft-ud-Dīn Ahmad and completed in Shāhjahānābād in the month of Safar 1136 A.H.
9. **Lubb-ul-Tawārīkh**, folios 123, written in 1262 A.H. = 1845 A.C., the author’s name is not given.

Vladimir Ivanow's Catalogue of the Persian Manuscripts in the collection of the Royal Asiatic Society of Bengal (No. 189, p. 59) calls No. 7 above, Gauhar-nāma-ī-‘Alam, and says that the copy in question is a history of Kashmir up to 1200 A.H. = 1786 A.C., or thereabout. The work is dedicated to Shāh ‘Alam (1173 A.H. = 1759 A.C. to 1221 A.H. = 1806 A.C.) and was originally composed in 1160 A.H. = 1747 A.C., but subsequently completed about 1200 A.H. = 1786 A.C. It is divided into a muqaddama (containing a general description of Kashmir), six tabaqas and a Khātimā, but the Khātimā is missing in the copy.

A copy of No. 8, of the above, viz., Hishtan-i-Kashmir, is in the Curzon Collection of the Royal Asiatic Society of Bengal, No. 42, page 21.

Persian Literature: A Bio-bibliographical Survey by Professor C.A. Storey, in Section II, Fasciculus 3, M. History of India, Luzac & Co., London, 1939, pages 678-87, gives the names of Manuscripts, almost all of which have been noted in this Bibliography, except the Shujā‘-i-Haidarī by Muhammad Haidar (See Catalogue of the Āsafiyyah Library, Hydarābād, Deccan, iii, p. 96, No. 1384 (A.C. 1840).


**LIST OF PUBLISHED WORKS**

**A**


**Abu'l Fazl** 〈Ā'in-i-Akbarī, edited by Blochmann, Calcutta, 1867. [Persian]〉


**Adams, A. L.** 〈Wanderings of a Naturalist in India. Edmondstone and Douglas. Edinburgh, 1867.〉

**Akbar Shāh Khān of Najībābād** 〈Maulānā Ghanī—Mullā Tāhir Ghanī, Poet of Kashmir. Publisher—Muhammad-ud-Dīn Fa'uy, Lāhore. [Urdu]〉

**'Alā'ud-Dīn Muhammad, Mufti, son of Mufti Nūr-ud-Dīn (Ghulām Shāh).** 〈Mukhtasār Ta'irīkh-i-Kashmīr, Matha' Gulshan-i-Rashidi, Lāhore, 1301 A.H. Price As. 3. Pp. 48. [Urdu]〉

**Al Birūnī, Abū Raihān** 〈India. Translated by Dr. Edward C. Sachau. Trübner, 1910.〉

A—contd.

Anand Kaul Bāmīzāl, Pandit


Archaeological and Research Department Reports, Kashmir, 1909 to date.

Archaeological Survey of India Reports.


A'zam Khwāja Muhammad  ..  Wāqī‘āt-i-Kashmir (Ta’rīkh-i-Kashmir A’zami), Muhammad Press, Lahore.


Badāyūnī, Mullā ‘Abdul Qādir  ..  Muntakhub-ut-Tawārīkh. Published by the Royal Asiatic Society of Bengal, Calcutta.


Bashir Ahmad  ..  The Administration of Justice in Medieval India. Published by the Aligarh Historical Research Institute for the Aligarh University, 1941. Printed at the Law Journal Press, Allahabad, U. P.


Bibliography

Blān, Dr. Rādhā Krīshn, M.A., Ph.D. (London).


Biscoe, Tyndale .. See under Tyndale Biscoe.


Budh Singh, Gyanū, Teacher, *Chūnāc Rattān* or Sikh History of State High School, Pūncch. Pūncch and Kashmīr, Part I, Price Rs. 5. [Gurmukhī]

C

Campion, Evelyn Russell .. *Daughter of the Dahl*.


Chirāgh Hasān Hasrat .. See under Hasrat
C—concl.


Do. . . Coins of Medieval India from the 7th century down to the Muhammadan conquests. Bernard Quaritch, London, 1894.


D—concl.


Doughty, Marion .. *Afoot through the Valleys of Kashmir*. Sands, London. 1902.


Do. .. *The Northern Barrier of India*. Edward Stanford, London, 1877. Abridged from the above work.

Duke, Col. .. *Kashmir and Jammu*.


East India (Kashmir) .. Parliamentary Paper No. C. 6072 of 1890. London, 1890.

Educational Problems of Muhammadans in Kashmir, All-India Muslim Educational Conference Bulletin No. 13. Aligarh, U. P.

Elliot and Dowson .. *History of India as told by its Historians*. Volumes II, VI and VII.

Elmslie, Dr. .. *Kashmiri English Dictionary*. 1876.

F

Fergusson, Dr. Jas. .. *Archaeology in India*. Trübner. 1884.

Firishta, Muhammad Qāsim (Gulzār-i-Ibrāhīmī or Taʾrīkh-i-Firishta) by Mullā Muhammad Qāsim Hindu Shīh. Newal Kishūr Press, Lucknow. I p. 420. Another edition, in two volumes, printed in Bombay in 1823, is in the Bombay University Library. It is in fine hand. Volume I was originally copied by Mīrzā Hasan Shīrāzī, and the Second Volume by Mīrzā Hamza Māzundānī. [Persian]
KASHIR
F—concl.


Forster, George .. Journey from Bengal to England, through the Northern Part of India, Kashmir, Afghanistan, and Persia, and into Russia by the Caspian Sea. Two Volumes. R. Faulder & Son, New Bond-Street, London, 1808.

G

Ganeshi Lāl, Munshi .. Tahfa-i-Kashmir. 1846. [Urdu]


Ghulām Ahmad Mahjūr, Pir Abū'l Amin .. Haiyat-i-Rāhīm. Rāvī Printing Works, Lāhore, 1840 A. H.=1921 A. C. [Urdu]


Grierson, Sir George .. Manual of the Kashmirī Language, 1911, 2 Vols.


Do. .. Grammar of the Kashmirī Language.

Girdlestone, Charles .. Memorandum on Kashmir.

Griffin, Sir L. H. .. Punjab Chiefs.

Do. .. Rajas of the Punjab.

Do. .. Ranjit Singh.


H

Haig, Sir T. Wolseley

““The Kingdom of Kashmir” in the Cambridge History of India, Vol. III, 1928. Also Volume IV of the same series.

Haidar Dughlat, Mirza Muhammad


Harcourt, Captain A.F.P.


Hargopal Kaul Khasta, Pandit, Pleader.

Guldasta-i-Kashmir. Farsi Arya Press, Lahore, 1883. [Urdu]

Hasrat, Chiragh Hasan


Havel, E. B.

History of Aryan Rule in India. Harrap, 1918.

Hedin, Dr. Sven


Hishmatullāh Khān, Maulavi Al-Hājj


Honigberger, Dr. John


Hervey, Mrs.


Hügel, Baron Charles,


Jervis


Do.


Do.


The Imperial Gazetteer of India, Volume containing ‘Kashmir‘.
KASHI R

I—concl.


Intelligence Reports concerning the Tribal Repercussions to the Events in the Punjab, Kashmir and India. Printed by the Superintendent, Government Printing, West Punjab, 1918, pp. 36 and Appx.


Jahangir . . The Tuzuk-i-Jahangiri.


Jalali, M.A., Jaya Lal . . Economics of Food Grains in Kashmir, Mercantile Press, Railway Road, Lahore, 1931.


K


Kak, Ram Chandra, M.A., Ancient Monuments of Kashmir. The Rai Bahadur, ex-Prime India Society, 3 Victoria Street, Minister, Jammu and London, S.W. 1., 1933.

Kashmir State.
BIBLIOGRAPHY

K—contd.

Kāk Rām Chandra, b.a., Handbook of the Archaeological and Numismatic Section of the Śri Partāp Singh Museum, Srinagar. 1923.

Kalhana, or Kalyāna Pandita Rājataṛaṅgiṇī: A Chronicle of the Kings of Kashmir; trans. by M. A. Stein. 1900, Two Vols. (Also see under Stein.)

Kanhaiyā Lāl .. Zafar-nāma-i-Ranjit Singh. Lāhore. [In Persian Poetry.]


Kaul, Jaya Lāl, m.a., LL.B. .. Kashmiri Lyrics, selected and translated into English by the author. Rinemisry, Lambert Lane, Srinagar, Kashmir. September 1945. Pp. 172. Price Rs. 3/8/-.


Khushī Muḥammad, Chaudhri, Khān Bahādūr .. Census Repor Kashmir for 1921. Parts I and I Mufid-i-ʾĀm Press, Lāhore.


K—concl.

Kreme r, von .. .. *The Orient under the Caliphs.* Translated by S. Khudā Bukhsh. Calcutta University, 1920.


L


Lātīf, Sayyid Muhammad .. *History of the Panjb.* Calcutta Central Press Company Ltd., Calcutta, 1891.


Leitner, Dr. G. W. .. .. Section 1, Linguistic Fragments discovered in 1870, 1872 and 1879, 1881.

Do. .. .. *Dardistān* in 1866, 1886, and 1893. Oriental University Institute, Woking, England.

Do. .. .. *Languages and Races of Dardistān.* Government Central Book Depôt, Lāhore, 1877.


M

Marco Polo .. .. *Travel, s,* 1904.

Massy, C. F. .. .. *Clans and Families of Note in the Punjab.* Allahabād, 1890.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

M—contd.

Mhaffe, A. De (?) .. *Road to Kashmir.* Ripon Press, Lāhore.


Do. .. .. "A Pārši High Priest, Āzar Kāwān." Proceedings of the Sixth Oriental Conference held at Patna in Dec., 1930. Note—For Dr. Modi’s collected papers on Kashmir, the reader is referred to *Asiatic Papers,* Part III, British India Press, Bombay, 1927, Section I, pp. 1-46.


**Do.** .. .. *Rahnumā-i-Kashmir.* Paisa Akhūr, Lāhore. 1923.

**Do.** .. .. *Safa-r-nama-i-Kashmir.* 1907.

**Do.** .. .. *Ta’rikh-i-Bad Shāhī.* Ittihād Press, Bull Road, Lāhore, 1944. Publishers: Zafar Brothers, Zafar Manzil, Outside Sherānwāla Gate, Lāhore.

**Do.** .. .. *Shālāmār Bāgh.* Paisa Akhūr, Lāhore 1924.

**Do.** .. .. *Ta’rikh-i-Aqvām-i-Kashmir.* Three Vols. Zafar Brothers, Zafar Manzil, Outside Gate, Lāhore.

**Do.** .. .. *Kalām-i-Fauq.* **Do.** .. .. *Khwātīn-i-Kashmir.* Outside **Do.** .. .. *Kashmir kī Rāniān.* Sherānwāla **Do.** .. .. *Lalla ‘Ārīfā.* Gate, Lāhore.


Do.  .. Highlands of India. London [1882-1887]. 2 Vols.


Parbury, Florence

The Emerald Set with Pearls.

Petrocokino, A.


Pirie, P., of Lucknow


Prinsep, V. C.


Rashidi, The Ta'rikh-i-

See under Haidar Düglät.

Ratan Devi (Compiler) & A. K. Coomaraswamy (Translator)


Risley, Sir Herbert Hope


Rodgers, C. J.


Do.


Rothfeld, Otto

With Pen and Rifle in Kishwar. Tārāporevala Sons, Bombay, 1918.

Royle, J. Forbes


8

Sa'ādat and Amir

Hayāt-i-Jālid, Pratāb Steam Press, Srinagar. [Urdu]

Sa'ādat, Mufti Muhammad Shāh

Rāyān-i-Wāgi. An account of the Jāmi' Masjid, Srinagar. Muslim Printing Press, Srinagar. 1351 A.H.

Do.

An Account of Sultan Sikandar and the Khānqāh-i-Mu'allā. Sābir Electric Press, Lāhore, 1355 A.H.

Do.

Sa'ādat, Mufti Muhammad Shāh


Do. .. .. Manaqib-us-Sa'dat. An account of the Indrābī Sayyids. Sābir Electric Press, Lāhore. 1356 A.H.


Do. .. .. Hayāt-i-Sarī. Account of Shaikh Ya'qūb Sarī. Sābir Electric Press, Lāhore, 1356 A.H.

Do. .. .. Bulbul Shāh Sāhib. An account of Sayyid 'Abdur Rahmān. Maqbool-i-'Ām Press, Lāhore, 1360 A.H.

Do. .. .. Kalām-i-'Āli. An account of the 'Āli Masjid and the 'Idgāh of Srinagar. Nashāt Electric Press, Srinagar, 1360-1, A.H.

Mufti Muhammad Shāh Sa'ādat's works noted above are in Urdu.


Sahni, Dayā Rām, and Francke, A. H.

References to the Bhoṭṭas or Bhaṭṭas in the Rājatarangini. The Indian Antiquary, Bombay, Vol. 37, July, 1908, pp. 181-192.


Do. .. .. The India of Aurangzeb. Bose Brothers, Calcutta, 1910.
Lxvi

S—contd.


Do. .. .. Mughal Administration. Sarkār & Sons, Calcutta, 1924.


Shahāmat Ali, Indian Secretary The Sikhs and Afghans. John Murray, with the Wade Mission of London, 1847.

1839


Do. .. .. Kashmiri Pandit. 1895. Jullundur. [Urdu].


Sohan Lāl .. .. 'Umdūt-ut-Tawārīkh, Lāhore. 1888.' [Persian]


Stein and Grierson .. Hātim's Tales. John Murray, 1919.
BIBLIOGRAPHY

S—concl.


Tavernier . . . Travels in India. Translation by Prof. V. Ball. 2 Vols. Macmillan, 1889.


Z


Note.—For Hijra and Christian years, Dr. O. Codrington's Table in *A Manual of Musalman Numismatics*, published by the Royal Asiatic Society, Monograph, Vol. VII, 1904, has been used. Also as a check, Lt.-Colonel Sir Wolseley Haig's *Comparative Tables of Muhammadan and Christian Dates*, Luzac & Co., London, 1932.
PERIODICALS

Miyān Muhammad 'Abdullāh Quraishi, B.A., known in Kashmiri circles as co-author, with the late Munshī Muhammad-ud-Dīn Fauq, of the Ta'rīkh-i-Aqwām-i-Kashmīr, Volume III, has kindly prepared the following list of Periodicals that have, from time to time, discussed the various aspects of life in the Valley of Kashmir and of the Kashmiris abroad. This literature is valuable as throwing light, from a point of view a little different from that of a book or a manuscript on Kashmir, and should be helpful to the student of latter-day history, political, social and cultural, of Kashmir. With certain additions and alterations this list is given below:

1. The Khair-Khwāh-i-Kashmīr. Urdu weekly, published from Lāhore and edited by Pandit Hargopāl Kaul Khasta during 1882-83. Critical of Mahārājā Ranbir's régime. Khasta was exiled by the Mahārājā and lived in Lāhore for some time. He ventilated his grievances through this paper. See page 348 and footnote 2 of Kashīr, Volume II.

2. The Rāvī, Lāhore. As above.


4. The Akhbār-i-'Ām, Lāhore.—Urdu weekly, established in 1881 by Pandit Mukand Rām Gurtū, subsequently edited by his son Pandit Gopi Nāth. It was, later on, converted into a daily. It stopped publication some ten years back.

5. The Murāsala-i-Kashmīr.—An organ of the Kashmirī Pandits, published weekly from Lāhore during 1880 and 1890.

6. The Kashmir Prakāsh.—A monthly magazine of Lāhore, edited by Pandit Maṅka Meshar. It began to be issued in 1898 and ceased publication in 1901. It worked for the social uplift of the Kashmirī Pandits.

7. The Kashmir Darpan, Allahābād.—It was a bi-lingual monthly magazine in Urdu and Hindi edited by Pandit (now Sir) Tej Bahādur Sapru, M. A., LL. D., during 1898-1904. Some of its files are available in the Kaīfī Collection of the Panjāb University Library, Lāhore.

8. The Shumīlī, Rāwalpindi.—It appeared from Rāwalpindi some fifty years ago, and stopped publication after two years.


13. *The Kashmirī Magazine*, Lāhore.—An Urdu monthly, established by Munshi Muhammad-ud-Din Faq in 1906. It was converted into a weekly in 1912. It was devoted to the historical, social and political movements that agitated the mind of the people of Kashmir in the time of Mahārājā Pratāp Singh. Its files are preserved by Zafar Brothers, Zafar Manzil, Outside Sherānwāla Gate, Lāhore.

14. *The Akhbār-i-Kashmir*, Lāhore.—This was the name given to the *Kashmirī Magazine* by Munshi Muhammad-ud-Din Faq in 1912 when converting it into a weekly. It ceased publication in 1935. It is a mine of information about Kashmir for about a quarter of a century from 1912 to 1935. Its files are available with Messrs. Zafar Brothers, Zafar Manzil, Outside Sherānwāla Gate, Lāhore.


17. *The Bahār-i-Kashmir*, Lāhore.—Bi-lingual, Urdu and Hindi, monthly of the Kashmirī Pandits’ Association. It was edited, from time to time, by some of the well-known scholars and poets among the Kashmirī Pandits. It continued till the Partition of India. Some of its files are available with Messrs. Zafar Brothers, Zafar Manzil, Outside Sherānwāla Gate, Lāhore.


20. *The Hamurd-i-Hind*, Lahore.—An anti-Pratāp paper, edited by Pandit Sarab Dayal during 1894. It condemned Maharajā Pratāp Singh and supported the rival party and the Council. It was the first paper issued from British India, which was proscribed in the State.

21. *The Rajput Gazette*, Lahore.—Urdu weekly, established by Thākār Sukhrām Chauhān in the beginning of this century. It continued till the Partition of India. During this long period, it discussed specially the affairs of Kashmir for many years when it was edited by Pandit Rāj Nārāin ARMān Dehlavi.


23. *The Kashmirī Musalman*, Lahore. The Daily Inqilāb,

24. *The Mulkām-i-Kashmir*, Lahore. The *Maktūb-i-Kashmir*, Lahore. wrote strong articles against the administration of Maharajā Hari Singh about 1929-31. When its entry into the State was banned, the *Kashmirī Musalman* was issued. When this paper was also banned in 1931, the *Mulkām-i-Kashmir* took its place. When this paper was also proscribed in the State, the *Maktūb-i-Kashmir* took up the work. This paper was also banned. The Glancy Commission and the Reforms following it may be said to be due to the powerful writings of these papers coupled with the Ahdrār Movement, the advice and assistance of the Kashmir Committee, and the agitation within the Valley of Kashmir under the leadership of Shaikh Muhammad ‘Abdullāh, Chaudhri Ghulām ‘Abbās, and others.

So far, efforts were made from outside for the uplift of the people of Kashmir. But now the Kashmirīs themselves began to issue periodicals from Srinagar, Jamīm, Muzaffarābād, Pūnch and Mātrpur. The following is the list of some of the papers which were issued during this period, viz., 1932-1948. These are important in respect of current topics and noteworthy events that took place from time to time.

26. *The Vatisā*, Srinagar.—The first Urdu weekly issued by Pandit Prēm Nāth Bazāz B.A., in 1931. After a suspension of many years, it has been converted into a Hindi monthly since 1947.


28. *The Daily Haqīqat*, Srinagar.—It was a successor of the *Sadāgat*, Srinagar, which was believed to be edited by Pandit Prēm Nāth Bazāz, B.A., under the assumed name of S. Q. Qalandar. It ceased publication in 1933-34.
29. The Märtand, Srinagar.—Urdu daily, published by the Sanätan Dharm Yuvāk Sahā, since 1931. In the beginning it was edited by Pandit Keshab Bandhu, but till recently by Pandit Prëm Nāth Kanah.

30. The Islām, Srinagar.—Urdu bi-weekly, belonging to the party of Maulāvi Yūsuf Shāh Mīr Wā‘īz. It was started in 1933 under the editorship of Muhammad Amin but did not survive long.

31. The Kashmiri-Jadīd, Srinagar.—Urdu daily edited by the late Munshī Muhammad-ud-Dīn Fauq during 1933-34.


33. The Bekār, Srinagar.—Urdu weekly, brought into being by Mr. Sadr-ud-Dīn Mujāhid in 1932-33.

34. The Khalīd, Srinagar.—Urdu weekly, a successor of the Bekār, Srinagar, edited by Mr. Sadr-ud-Dīn Mujāhid. It supports the cause of the Jammu & Kashmir National Conference.

35. The Hidāyat, Srinagar.—Urdu weekly, published under the guidance of Mir Wā‘īz Hamadānī.

36. The Kesārī, Srinagar.—Leaving the editorship of the Daily Märtand, Srinagar, Pandit Keshab Bandhu issued the weekly Kesārī till 1938, when he was imprisoned, and the paper was stopped. This paper used to write against Capitalism.

37. The Desh, Srinagar.—Urdu weekly, a successor of the weekly Kesārī, Srinagar, edited by Pandit Keshab Bandhu since 1940. It generally advocates Communist ideas.

38. The Rahbar, Srinagar.—Urdu daily, established by M. Ghulām Muḥyī’ī’d Din in 1933, now a weekly, edited by Pandit Dinā Nāth Māst.

39. The Daily Hamdard, Srinagar.—Edited and owned by Pandit Prën Nāth Bazāz, B.A., since 1933. It is a strong supporter of Roy’s Radical Democratic Party, and is anti-‘Abdūllāh politics. It is well-edited and popular among Muslims. Its illustrated weekly issues have been informative regarding the history, sociology and literature of Kashmir. Pandit Prën Nāth Bazāz is now imprisoned (1948).

40. The Daily Khidmat, Srinagar.—Being edited since 1939 by Maulāvi Muhammad Sa’īd Masūdī, Maulāvi Fāzīl, lately lecturer in Arabic, Prince of Wales College, now (1948) named Gandhi Memorial College, Jammu. It is an organ of the Jammu & Kashmir National Conference. It is now edited by Maulāvi Ghulām Ahmad Mīr, Kashif, Maulāvi Fāzīl.

41. The Dehāti Dunyā.—Urdu organ of the Rural Development Department, Jammu & Kashmir Government. It is edited by Shaikh Ghulām Qādir. It is devoted to Dehāti Sudhār or rural uplift, adult education, and the formation of Panchāyats throughout the State.

43. *The Kashmir Guardian*, Srinagar.—Urdu weekly, under the editorship of Pandit Baldeo Prashâd Sharma, B.A., now in the State Publicity Department.

44. *The Islâm*, Srinagar.—Urdu weekly edited by Chaudhri 'Abdul Wahid and Maulavi 'Abdul Ghaffâr, Maulavi Fâzîl, who are now refugees in the West Punjâb. It has been a strong supporter of the Muslim cause and is anti-'Abdullâh. It was started in 1934 under the auspices of the Ahmadiyya Movement of Qâdîsh, East Punjâb.


47. *The Ittihâd-i-Jâgîrdârân*, Srinagar.—Urdu weekly started by the Jâgîrâtars of the State but was shortlived.


49. *The Kashmir Times*, Srinagar.—English weekly, owned by Sardar 'Abdur Rahmân Miththâ of Bombay, and edited by Mr. G.K. Reddi coming from the Madras Presidency. It had to stop publication on the recent change of administration in Kashmir. It advocated the views of the Communist Party and was anti-'Abdullâh. At one time owned by a Kashmiri Pandit, and edited by Mr. J. N. Zutshi, B.A., LL.B., who subsequently edited the *Kashmir Sentinel*.


52. *The Mirror*, Srinagar.—English weekly, owned by Pandit Prâm Nâth Bazâz, B.A. It is now defunct.

53. *The Nûr*, Srinagar.—Urdu weekly, being issued since 1939 by Mr. M. D. Nûr.

54. *The Ranbîr*, Jammu.—Urdu weekly, began to be published in 1923 by Lâla Mulk Râj Sarâf, B.A. It was subsequently converted into a bi-weekly. Some of its ‘special numbers’ have proved very interesting. It was the first paper in the State. See pp. 820-1, Vol. II, of *Kashmir*. It generally wrote in favour of H. H. Government and its high officials, and was generally favoured by them and was believed to be subsidized.

55. *The Amar*, Jammu.—Urdu weekly, representative of the Dogrâs, and the Mahâsabhâists, and was edited by Lâla Sheo Râm Gupta.
56. The Chand, Jammu.—Weekly Urdu, was edited by Diwan brothers. It advocated moderate views, tried to uplift the poor and rural population and labourers though the editors themselves were reported to be capitalists. Instructive stories published in this paper were read with great interest. Now it is a daily in Urdu.

57. The Desh Sewak, Jammu.—No longer in existence.

58. The Sudarshan, Jammu.—Weekly, writes in favour of Nationalism and Hindu-Muslim unity.

59. The Dipak, Jammu.—Bi-lingual, Hindi and English. It discusses political affairs in English and social affairs in Hindi.


61. The Pashan, Jammu.—Urdu weekly, a successor of the Karn Kashmir, and a supporter of the policy of the All-Jammu and Kashmir Muslim Conference. It is edited by Mi’râj-ud-Dîn Ahmad since 1932. He is now (July 1948) a refugee in Siâlkot.

62. The Ratan, Jammu.—Urdu weekly owned by Lâlâ Mulk Râj Sarâf, editor The Ranbir. It is sanctioned by the State for use in Schools. The Kisan was also issued by Lâlâ Mulk Râj Sarâf from Jammu and is now defunct.

63. The Jambur, Jammu.—Urdu weekly, owned and edited by ‘Abdul Majid Qarshi.

64. The Khurshid, Jammu.—Urdu weekly, edited by Qais Shirwâni.

65. The Inkishaf, Jammu.—Now defunct.

66. The Naqjawân, Jammu.—Urdu weekly issued by Munshi Muhammad Husain Ghâzi in 1933.

67. The Watan, Jammu.—It was a fearless critic. Its security was forfeited by the State and it ceased publication. It was edited by a patriotic Sikh.

68. The Sâdiq, Pâncch.—It is edited by Ziyâ-ul-Hasan Ziyâ and upholds the cause of the Muslims of Pâncch.

69. The Parbhât, Pâncch.—Its aim was to support the cause of Hindus and Sikhs. It was edited by Lâlâ Dyâ Nand Kapûr.

70. Al-Mujâhid, Pâncch.—Urdu weekly, edited by Shaikh Naib Bakhsh Nizâmi since 1933; it is now defunct.

71. The Aftâb, Pâncch.—Urdu weekly published by Hakim Sarvan Nath Aftâb since 1937.

72. The Zamindâr, Muzaffarabâd.—A Sikh organ, but soon disappeared.

73. The Tebh or Sher Babar, Muzaffarabâd.—As above.

74. The Sudâqa, Mirpur.—Published by Lâlâ Gyan Chand. It is an advocate of the rights of the Hindus.
75. *The Himmat*, Mirpur.—It was issued by the late Rājā Muhammad Akbar, who was, in the beginning, a supporter of the Muslim Conference, but subsequently changed over to the Kashmir National Conference.

76. *The Jāvid*, Urdu weekly, Jammu.—Very ably edited by Mr. Allāh Rakhba Sāghir. Well got-up. Followed the Anjuman-i-Taraqqi-i-Urdu in its style of writing Urdu. Mr. Sāghir is imprisoned now (1947-8). The *Jāvid* has ceased publication.


78. *Kashmīr*, weekly, Srinagar.—Edited by Pandit Prēm Nāth Kanah. Mouthpiece of a party of State’s Peoples.

79. *The Nau-Yug*, Urdu daily, Srinagar.—Supports the Kashmir National Conference. Edited by Pandit Nand Lal Wātal, B.A. It was owned formerly by the Ārya Samāj, Huzūrī Bāgh, Srinagar.

80. Mention must be made of the *Gāsh*, the *Prātīp* and the *Lāla Rukh*, that publish contributions in Kashmiri. For them the reader is referred to page 401 of *Kashīr*, Volume II.
KASHIR CHRONOLOGY

The Pre-Muslim Period of the History of Kashmir embracing Vedic, Buddhist and Bráhmanical Times

From the earliest times to 1320 A.C.

The Sultans of Kashmir beginning with Sultán Sadr-ud-Dín (Rinchana) to Sultán Habib Shāh

1320 to 1560 A.C. or 240 Years.

[From 1323 to 1338 A.C. the interval of 15 years is taken up by Udayanadeva's and Koṭa Rāni's rule.]

The Chaks

1560 to 1586 A.C. or 26 Years.

The Mughuls

1586 to 1752 A.C. or 166 Years.

The Afghans

1752 to 1819 A.C. or 67 Years.

The total length of Muslim Rule in Kashmir

240 + 26 + 166 + 67 = 499 Years.

The Sikhs

1819 to 1846 A.C. or 27 Years.

The Dográs—From Mahārāja Gulāb Singh to Mahārāja Pratāp Singh excluding the present ruler Mahārāja Hari Singh.

1846 to 1925 A.C. or 79 Years.

In 1946 Dogrā rule in Kashmir completed its century.
Facsimile; 3rd line, read Nashāṭ for Nishāṭ.
Page 15, 2nd line, read Honigberger for Höningberger.

26, below the verses, read نشاط for نشاط.

35, read the heading as Early History, Buddhist and Brahmanical, instead of the Pre-Islamic Period.

37, line 3, in paragraph 3, read Samdhimatnagar for Samdhimatnagar.

44, line 5, from above, read Shaikhupura for Sheikhupura.

53, last para, in two places, read 753 for 751.

65, line 8, from the bottom, read shall for sh Il.

69, read Udayanadeva for Udyanadeva in three places in the second paragraph; also on page 128 in paras. first and second; and pages 129, in paras. first, second and third.

92, No é but e in Rieu and Blochct. Also pp. 164, 242, and 250 in Rieu.

112, line 14, from the bottom, read 1494 for 1394.

124, in لب the pesh has jumped to the next hemistich, where it is not required at all.

135, space is required between by and Sir in the footnote No. 2.

141, line 3, from below, accent on the I in Ghazni.

147, the comma, after appraised, is thrown away further than it should be.

171, lines 4 & 21, read Gujarāt for Gujrāt.

173, footnote No. 4, the f is broken, and the i is to be accented i and not I in the name of the book.

178, line 2, below the inset, read Bad for Bād.

205, delete the comma after first in line 8 from the bottom:

207, line 11 from above, read Nazr for Nazar.

222, read Qāzīl-quzāt for Qāzī-ul-Quzzāt.

224, i in Akbari is to be accented, and so also in jāgīr.

225, line 7, from the bottom, I in Irān is wrongfont.

236, line 2, from the bottom of the text, read 1587 for 1887.

237, read صادم for صدام in the last hemistich.

250, read 1594 for 1894 in the date of Nizām-ud-Din’s death, line 18 from above.

251, lines 6, 7, 8, from above, Kashmir was included in the Sūba of Kābul, and not Kābul in Kashmir.

257, line 19, from the top, the hyphen is superfluous between B.A. and P.B.

263, line 8 from above, read Gujarātī for Gujrātī.

298 Zulfiqar and Zulfaqar are both permissible, although some people vehemently insist on Zulfaqar.

300, read temper for emper in the last line of the top paragraph.

312, read آن in the first line of the Persian couplet for ان.
Errata—Volume I (continued)

Page xxx, the Map of India at the time of Sultān Zain-ul-Ābidin should face page 170, and not page 169.

,, xxxi, the order of the illustrations Nos. 62 and 63 may be inverted, and pages 244 and 245 be presumed instead of 245 in both places.

,, 28, in the last line in the second paragraph, the Arabic word for the undergarment referred to is التان (Al qutān) or cotton, anglicized as acton.

,, 42, the photograph of Buddhist remains in old Hārvan, near Srinagar, should have been here, i.e., facing page 42, and not facing page 44. The photograph itself is inverted.

,, 115, in the coloured portrait of Sayyid Muhammad Farid-ud-Dīn Qadiri, the young man with the black beard is his son.

,, 124, in the 6th line of the Urdu couplet, read ٌ for ٌ.

,, 134, in the photograph of Sultān Shams-ud-Dīn Shāh Mīr facing this page, delete the at the end of the first line of the letterpress.

,, 178, in the 2nd line of the letterpress, read Bad for Bād.

,, 268, in the 2nd line of the first couplet, read همّلت for همّالت.

BIBLIOGRAPHY (addenda, etc.)

lvi, at the top, add—


,, lx, first line at the top, add a comma after Kāk.

,, lxiv, add before the letter R—

Puri, Dr. G. S., Department of Botany and Geology, Lucknow University. *The Flora of the Karewa Series of Kashmir and its Phylogeographical Affinities with Chapters on the Methods used in Identification. The Indian Forester, Dehra Dun, U. P., India, March, 1948, Vol. 74 No. 3 pages 105-122,*
The Dargāh Asār-i-Sharif, Hazrat-bal, Srinagar.

The Dargāh is credited with the Sacred Hair of the Prophet brought to Srinagar by Khwāja Nūr-ud-Din of the Ishbar village on the opposite bank of the Dal, half a mile to the north of the Nishat Bāgh. Nūr-ud-Din then owned a Commercial House at Shāhjahānābād (Delhi). The Hair was acquired by him in about 1042 A.H.=1632 A.C. during Shāh Jahān’s rule, from Sayyid ‘Abdullāh who came to India and represented himself as the ex-Mutawalli of the Prophet’s Tomb at Madina.
CHAPTER I

KASHĪR AND THE KŌSHUR

OR

Kashmir and the Kashmīrī

Many a writer has attempted to describe Kashmir, some even at length, yet Kashmir still defies description. "The praises of Kashmir cannot be contained within the narrows of language," said Abu’l Fazl. And so says Hafiz—

کہنِجا  تصویرکا لا ہے بُروہ شیرکا

—ابوالاثر حفیظ (تصویر کشمیر)

[Portraying the picture is like drawing a stream of milk—by Farhād for his beloved Shirīn from the Mount Bisútūn.]

Kashmir, verily an emerald of verdure enclosed in a radiant amphitheatre of virgin snow, is such a beautiful country, blest with a fertile soil, glorious climate, grand mountains, fine rivers and lovely lakes, and with such charming flowers and delicious fruits, singing birds and sweet odours, that it "once enjoyed a great fame as the seat of the original paradise of the human race." It is, therefore, significant to learn from Dr. Terra that Kashmir and the adjoining plains contain all the essential data for a study of early man in Southern Asia. And it is from Kashmir that the first evidence of a Himalayan Ice Age has been forthcoming. Even though Kashmir may not be the original Paradise, it is certainly regarded as one of the most blessed spots upon the earth. In fact, it forms an isolated world by itself wherein one is inclined to think each spot the most beautiful of all, perhaps because each, in some particular, excels the rest. The country with which Kashmir is apt to be compared, says Sir Francis Younghusband, is Switzerland.

1. In the Kashmiri language, an inhabitant of Kashmir is called Kōshur, and so also his language.
3. In the older sense of 'constructing and directing a ditch or canal from one point to another.'—Murray’s English Dictionary.
5. Studies on the Ice Age in India and Associated Human Cultures by Dr. H. De Terra and T. T. Paterson, Washington, D. C., 1939, page 1.
6. Ibid., page 1.
Kashmir and Switzerland.

Switzerland indeed has many charms and a combination of lake and mountain scenery, in which it excels Kashmir, but it is built on a smaller scale, and has not the same wide sweep of snow-clad mountains. To Vigne, however, the glens, glades, forests and streams of Kashmir are truly Alpine. Moreover, there is no place where one can see a complete circle of snowy mountains surrounding a plain of about 1,900 square miles, everywhere over 5,000 feet above sea level, of anything like the length—about 84 miles—and breadth—about 20 to 25 miles—of the Kashmir Valley. From snowfield to snowfield, the Valley has a width of 25 to 30 miles. The main valleys of Switzerland are like the side-valleys of Kashmir. Many of the peaks of the uninterrupted wall of Kashmir hills out-top Mont Blanc by thousands of feet and far exceed the loftiest summits of the Caucasus. There is not behind Switzerland what there is at the back of Kashmir, and visible in glimpses from the southern side—a region of magnificent mountains surpassing every other in the world. On account of its position in the higher Himalaya, Kashmir is the Indian Piedmont.

Kashmir and Greece.

Poets have sung of beautiful Greece with its purple hills and varied contour, its dancing seas and clear blue sky. But Kashmir is more beautiful than Greece. Sir Francis Younghusband writes: “It has the same blue sky and brilliant sunshine, but its purple hills are on a far grander scale, and if it has no sea, it has lake and river, and the still more impressive snowy mountains. It has, too, greater variety of natural scenery, of field and forest, of rugged mountains and open valley.” “And to me,” continues Younghusband, who has seen both countries, “Kashmir seems much the more likely to impress by its natural beauty.” My own visits to Switzerland and Greece confirm Younghusband’s observations. Sir Muhammad Iqbal does not exaggerate when he says:

The Dal with its clouds.
The Beauty of the Dal.

It has happened not infrequently that people have been unimpressed with the Tāj at first sight, but when they looked at it closer, they realized the charm of Shāh Jahān’s ‘dream in marble.’ The same sometimes happens when the sceptical visitor goes to Kashmir. Let such a one first of all go up the Takht-i-Sulaimān in the early morning. He will feel what conversion the Dal immediately brings about—the sight is grand, too grand for words to describe. The water is so clear that the reflections of the surrounding mountains are perfect. “Chenars and willows, picturesque chalets, dark cypresses, blue distance, and snowy mountains make a picture hard to equal anywhere.”


[

[Nāzir and Ahsan were both governors of Kashmir, the one under the Dogrās and the other under the Mughuls.]
The late Justice Miyān Muhammad Shāh Dīn then aptly wished:

مر جابی نو ذل کے کہارے مزار هو!  

[And dying let my grave be on the Đal!]  

The sceptic can no longer remain sceptical: he must soon be vanquished by the graceful charms of the lovely lake. It is not one big sheet of water, but is all the more attractive for that reason. Little canals intersect the floating gardens and small islands, while villages and orchards are dotted about its banks, which enclose an area of about five miles in length and two in breadth.

Pages have been written in praise of the beautiful milky waters of Gāndarbal,¹ the gushing springs of Achabal,² Kukar-nāg³ and Ver-nāg,⁴ the “peculiar neutral tinted” tarn of Česha-nāg⁵ 12,000 feet high up in the lovely Liddar valley of which pastoral Pahalgām, ‘The Shepherd’s Village’ (about 60 miles from Srinagar) is a pleasant resort (about 7,000 feet above the sea level), the fresh water lakes of “secluded, profound and silent” Mānasbal⁶ and the lily-embroidered Wular, the heights of Trāgabal,⁷ the glacier valley of Sonamarg, the glen of Gangabal, the charm of Gulmarg ‘The Meadow of Flowers,’ and the transcendental joys of the deep jade spring that lies below Affarwat⁸ on the

---

1. The Gāndarbal village, 13 miles from Srinagar, is on the left bank of the Sind river, a tributary of the Jhelum.
2. The Achabal village is about 6 miles south-east of Islāmābād, and contains the shrine of Sayyid Shihāb-ud-Dīn of Baghdad. Achabal is called Sāhibbābūd on account of Jahān Ārā Begām known as Begam Sāhība.
3-4. The Kukar-nāg spring is a few miles from Ver-nāg, the reputed source of the river Jhelum. Ver-nāg, the nāg or spring of Vēr also known as Nila-nāga derives its name from the pargana of Vēr now called Shāhābād.
5. Česha-nāg is the name of the serpent on which the earth is believed to stand.
6. The Mānasbal lake about two miles in diameter and considered to be the loveliest of all Kashmir lakes is about 16 miles north-west of Srinagar. It is surrounded by majestic hills. Mānas refers to a ‘mountain’ and bal a lake. Hence a mountain lake. It is the deepest lake in the Valley with a maximum depth of 12.8 meters. “The little lake,” wrote Andrew Wilson in 1875, “is not much larger than Grasmere . . . . . but its shores are singularly suggestive of peacefulness and solitude ”. (The Abode of Snow, page 421.) The ruins of a fine Mughal garden are situated on one of its banks.
7. Trāgabal (with its Chowki and Rest House), 9,160 feet high, is over 10 miles north of Bandipōr which is on the Wular.
8. Affarwat is a hill above Gulmarg.
Peak. It lies on the way from Ramaul to Amarnath.

Sheha-naga is the popular name of Sushira-nag Lake at the north foot of a Great Glacier descending from the Kohenur.
The Kolhai Glacier reached by way of Pahlgam. Dr. Sufi sitting to the left.
Sonamarg

A glimpse of glorious Gurus
fringe of the forest, yet words have ever proved hopelessly inadequate to describe beauties that defy description.

Sweet interchange
Of hill and valley, rivers, woods and plains,
Now land, now lake, and banks1 with forest crowned
Rocks, dens and caves!
—Paradise Lost, Book IX, 115-118.

To Abu'l Fazl,2 Kashmir is so enchanting as to be fittingly called a garden of perpetual spring surrounding a citadel terraced to the skies, and deservedly appropriate to be either the delight of the worldling or the retired abode of the recluse. His brother Faizi says:

به حیرتم که چه آثار قدیرت ازیست
بهر نظاره بازد نظر به صنف قدیر

Fāizi

Other Attractions.

To put it in other words, to the holiday-maker Kashmir is the chief garden of Asia. "For the lover of sport, a wide range of game is available. The botanist and the zoologist have here a great wealth of flora and fauna. The lovely glens and the shaded mountain spurs in their picturesque settings provide an inexhaustible theme to the genius of the poet and a background for the contemplation of the philosopher. For the linguist, Kashmir with its surroundings has a variety of dialects belonging to different branches of the human family. For the geologist, it offers an interesting study of soils and rocks with chronological data unobtainable elsewhere in India. For the archaeologist, there are numerous monuments of different ages and traces of cultural influences showing the interplay of civilizations. The scholar has an extensive field for research in systems of (Hindu) philosophy peculiar to Kashmir," and for research in Muslim history, culture, poetry and sociology. "The explorer has mysterious lands on the boundaries and the lofty mountains to merit his attention."3

1. The text has 'sea and shores.'
And then—living in Kashmir is cheaper than in most other countries of the world. Srinagar, the Venice in the heart of Switzerland, offers fascinating living in gorgeous house-boats and gondolas. And the countryside and the hills have camping grounds for a free and healthy life under canvas. Kolahai is the Matterhorn of Kashmir towering at 17,800 feet in beautiful surroundings of mountains and glaciers. Lolab reminds one of Scotland and Wales. The coniferous forests of Kashmir are the finest in Northern India.

Climate.

Though the Valley is about 5,000 feet above the level of the sea, it is not so cold as might be expected at such an altitude.

[Heat there is, but hot 'tis not; Cold there is, but cold 'tis not.]

The reason is the surrounding high hills, which save the Valley from the cold blasts of the north and scorching winds from the south. And yet, as large a variety in temperature or humidity can be obtained in different parts of Kashmir as in the whole of Europe, from the shores of the Mediterranean to the North Cape, points out Dr. Arthur Neve. From January to the middle of February, the mean temperature of Srinagar is 35 degree F., and from July to the middle of August, it is 80 degrees; the extremes in the shade being, in the first case, 15 to 45 degrees, and in the second case 55 to 96 degrees and in some years 98 or 99.

The climate of the Valley proper until quite the end of May is very similar to that of Switzerland. As the summer advances, it becomes somewhat relaxing. But the heat scarcely, if at all, exceeds that of South Italy. The autumn months are the pleasantest in the whole year with clear, bright, but fairly cool days. The rainfall is much less than that of any of the other Himālayan hill-stations. At Srinagar the yearly amount seldom exceeds 27 inches. At Gulmarg, it is very much more, but even then not more than two-thirds of that of Murree. For two months, however, even the lower parts of the Valley are seldom free from snow, which formerly lay, eight inches or a foot deep though not quite so much now. Kashmir is indeed a centre for winter sports. According to Dr. Arthur Neve, the climate of Kashmir is more suitable than that of England for chest cases.*

The American will find in Kashmir the cold of Canada, and the warmth of Northern Mexico, or the vigour of San Francisco and the moderation of Los Angeles in climate.

[How exceedingly hospitable is the land of Kashmir! E’en the wayside stones offered me water to drink!]

The Valley of Kashmir.

The Valley of Kashmir, with which this book deals, consists of two districts of the present State of Jammu and Kashmir, viz. the Anantnāg district and the Bārāmūla district. The Anantnāg district has four tahsils: (1) Srinagar (2) Islāmābād or Anantnāg (3) Kulgām, (4) Pulwāma, formerly Awantipōr. The Bārāmūla district has: (1) Bārāmūla, (2) Badgām or Srīpratāpsinghpōr and (3) Handwāra or Uttarmāchīlpōr. These seven tahsils constitute the Kashmir Valley proper. An old tradition puts the number of villages in Kashmir at 66,063. But information, collected in 1400 A.C., and believed by Stein to be accurate, puts the number of villages at 100,000 in plains and mountains together. The census of 1891 A.C. states the number of villages in Kashmir to be 2,870.* The census of 1931 gives 3,557 as the number of inhabited towns and villages in the Kashmir Province and that of 1941 as 3,733, or an increase of 863 villages in fifty years. Apparently the information of 1400 A.C. giving the number of villages as 100,000 may have included either the entire territory then under the Sultān of Kashmir or the entire Kashmiri-speaking area in and around the Valley viz. the Valley of the Vitasta, the Valley of the Sind, Kīshtwār, Pādār, Riāsī, Rajauri, Ürī, Pūnch, Kārnāh, the Northern and Western banks of the Chenāb, Rāmban, Batōt, and part of Dardistān.

From early times the Valley has been divided into two great parts known by their modern names Kama-rāj and

These terms, Sir Aurel Stein says, are derived from the Sanskrit Kramarājya and Maḍavarājya. Marāj or Marāz comprises the districts on both sides of the Jhelum above Srinagar, and Kamrāj or Kamrāz those below. Abu'l Fazl also notes likewise. During Muslim rule, it appears that Srinagar was the chief city of Marāj and Sopūr the headquarters of Kamrāj.

**Area.**

The area of the Valley of Kashmir is 6,131 square miles which is over four times that of the Cochin State (1,418 square miles), almost double that of the Alwar State (3,158), bigger than Patiala (5,932), slightly smaller than Bhopāl (6,902), about half the size of Holland (12,582), more than half of Turkey in Europe (10,882), and more than one-third of Switzerland (15,975). In latitude, Kashmir corresponds to Damascus in Syria, to Fēz in Morocco and to South Carolina in the United States of America.

Though not greatly significant in area, the beauty and variability of the Valley are unique for soil and picturesque landscape. It is said of the Valley that “every hundred feet of its elevation brings some new phase of climate and vegetation, and, in a short ride of thirty miles, one can pass from overpowering heat to a climate delightfully cool, or can escape from wearisome wet weather to a dry and sunny atmosphere.”

To the Mughuls it was known as “the terrestrial paradise of the Indies,” and Jahāngīr who first brought it into prominence declared—as Bernier states—that he would rather be deprived of every other province of his mighty empire than lose Kashmir. It appears from Badāoni’s account that Akbar called Kashmir his Bāgh-i-Khāss or his “Special Garden.”

**Population.**

The population of the Valley of Kashmir, according to the census of 1931, was 1,331,771, of which 1,256,274 were Muslims, 64,806 were Hindus, 10,257 were Sikhs and the rest Christians, Buddhists, Pārsīs and others. On March 1, 1941, the total figure for the Valley was 1,464,034.

1. The Valley of Kashmir by Walter R. Lawrence, Oxford University Press, 1895, pages 13-14.
The shape of the Valley is that of an elliptical saucer, or more precisely a boot-shaped bowl. From the foot of the Kishangangā water-shed to the southeast corner beyond Islāmābād, the floor of the Valley is built of little-consolidated lake beds and alluvial soils. The greatest portion of this area, which is over 2,000 square miles, exhibits silts and sands into which the Jhelum and its tributaries have carved a relief of varying character.

Travellers have commented on the terraces that form conspicuous features of the Valley. Indeed, without these terraces the Valley would be 'a forlorn sight.' "Their green cultivated fields contrast with the bleak, rocky slopes and lend to the scenery a definite air of human planning. On them villages and smaller towns are nestled again the talus-strewn valley flanks, protected, as it were, from the ravaging spring and summer floods. Temple ruins testify to the great antiquity of some of these settlements, which date back to the first millennium of our era."

**Kashmir a Vast Lake in Prehistoric Times?**

Geological evidence and mythological tradition agree that the Valley of Kashmir was once, perhaps a hundred million years ago, one vast lake hundreds of feet deep. Kashmir legends say that a Çakti manifestation of Çiva (one of the gods of the Hindu Triad) called Sati, appeared in the form of water; this Çakti is also named Pārvati and the place, where it appeared, came to be known as Satisaras, the place where Çakti Sati took the shape of a tarn or lake.

**The Legend of the Lake.**

The legend runs that Kāçyapa, the grandson of Brahmā, found, when he reached Jalandhara (Jullundur) in the Punjāb, on a pilgrimage from the south, that all the country to the north-west had been laid waste by a rākṣas a (demon) Jalodbhava (water-born), who lived in the immense Satisiras. Distressed at the havoc caused by Jalodbhava and his imps,

1. Studies on the Ice Age in India and Associated Human Cultures by Dr. H. De Terra and T. T. Paterson, Washington, D. C., 1939, page 182.
2. Sati was the daughter of Dakṣa and the spouse of Çiva. She consumed herself in the sacrificial fire of Dakṣa's sacrifice, as he refused to invite Çiva to take his share of the offerings.
Kācyapa devoted himself to religious exercises, in consequence of which the Hindu Triad, Brahmā, Viśnu and Čiva, appeared to aid him. They found that Indra (the thunder god) and other gods had attempted to annihilate the demons on several previous occasions and had succeeded in destroying not a few, but the majority of the demons had escaped by hiding under water. Viśnu, assuming the form of Varāha (boar), struck the mountains at Varāhāmūla (modern Bārāmūla¹) with his tail and cut up the remaining obstacles with his teeth. The waters of the lake rushed out, but the demon took refuge in the low ground, where Srinagar now stands. He baffled pursuit for a time, but was finally caught and crushed to death by the gods. When Jalodbhava was destroyed, the smaller demons lost heart, and the drained basin gradually became inhabited in summer. In winter, however, the people retreated to the drier and warmer regions of the south, leaving Kashmir to the demons. One winter, an aged Brāhman remained behind, taking up his quarters in a cave. He was seized by the demons and carried off to a place now known as Nilanāga² (the Lord of Serpents), where he was thrown into the lake. He sank to the bottom, but to his amazement he found it to be really a palace in which the king, Nila Nāga (Kācyapa’s son), was

---

1. Bārāmūla town is situated on both sides of the river Jhelum which are connected by a bridge. The distance between Bārāmūla and Srinagar is 34 miles. The height of the town above sea level is 5,100 feet. The population of Bārāmūla, according to the census of 1931, was 6,886 of whom 5,839 were Musalmāns. In 1941 the population has almost doubled and is 12,722.

Beyond the town, begins the road to Srinagar. This fine road is bordered with tall, erect, white poplar trees.

Huśkapura founded by Huśka, a Kushāna king, in the second century A.C., now reduced to and corrupted into the modern village Uskara or (Wuśkur), is about two miles to the south-east of the modern town.

2. Nila-nāga (Blue Spring) is an oval sheet of water, about 100 yards long 20 yards wide about 40 feet deep, lying in a hollow on the slopes of the hills on the south side of the Kashmir Valley, in Gogji Pathar village about 4 miles west of Chrār Sharif which is 20 miles from Srinagar. Nila-nāga is considered holy by the Hindus. Less than 3 miles north-west of Nila-nāga, the Dūlhgangā leaves the mountains to enter the Karewa Hills.

Abū’l Fazl wrote: “Its waters are exquisitely clear ... and many perish by fire about its border. Strange to relate, omens are taken by its means. A nut is divided into four parts and thrown in, and if an odd number floats, the augury is favourable, if otherwise, the reverse.”—English Translation of the Aʾin-i-Akbarī, Vol. II, page 363. But Steinsays it refers to the legends of the famous Nilanāga at Vārnāg.
sitting on his throne. He sought audience of this king and laid a complaint before him of the rough treatment which he had received. The king was most gracious and gave him the *Nilamata-Purāṇa* for his guidance, assuring him that, if he obeyed the precepts of that book and made the offerings therein prescribed, the demons would cease to molest him. In the spring, he was restored to the dry land. He carried out his instructions and imparted them to others. The result was that, from that time, people were able to remain in Kashmir during the winter and the demons ceased to trouble them.

**Geological Evidence.**

The above story, legendary as it is, corresponds with the results of early geological observations. In prehistoric times, the basin of Kashmir contained a lake much larger than that of today. The sand-stone rock at the western corner of the basin, according to these earlier observations, seems to have been rent by some cataclysm followed by attrition; and the lake was drained by the deepening of the Bārāmūla gorge, which was the result of the slow process of erosion by water, and which must have taken hundreds of years to accomplish. At that period, the climate was so cold, and the winter snows were so heavy and lasted so long, that the country could be inhabited only in summer by nomads who migrated southward in winter. In time, however, the climate became temperate, and Kashmir came to be the abode of a permanent and prosperous agricultural community. These earlier observations are, however, now contested.

[The alluvial deposits filling up the basin of Kashmir were held by the earlier geologists to have been formed from the waste of the surrounding mountains, and to have been laid down at the bottom of a great lake. It has been stated that these deposits once covered the whole Valley to a height of one thousand feet above its present level, and that the greater portion has been carried away by the Jhelum to the plains of the Punjab. The Wular lake which now measures 10 miles in length and 5 in breadth, was regarded by Montgomerie as a last relic of the great

---

*The Nilamata or Teachings of the Sage Nila, the chief of the Nāgas, is the oldest extant written record which deals with the holy legends regarding the origin of Kashmir and its sacred places. Moreover, it is one of the main sources of information used by Kalhana when writing his *Rājatarangini*. Kalhana refers to it also as the book of rites and festivals prescribed by Nila for Kashmirians. *Nilamata*, or the Teachings of Nila, Sanskrit text with critical notes, edited by Dr. K. De Vrees,—pages xxi.—151, was published at Leiden (Holland) by E. J. Brill in 1938.
of water which once covered all Kashmir. But this idea, of a
great prehistoric lake has been abandoned by Mr. R.D. Oldham. Mr. 
Oldham studied the Karewas or plateaus and the present lakes of the 
Kashmir valley in 1903, and came to the conclusions that the Karewas 
are of fluviatile and not of lacustrine origin, and that there was never 
at any time a materially larger lake than at the present day.—A Sketch 
of the Geography and Geology of the Himalaya Mountains and Tibet by Col. 

The Name Kashmir.

The old name Satīsaras was replaced by Ka-samīra, 
that may be taken to mean (land) from which water (Ka) 
has been drained off by wind (Samīra). According to an-
other interpretation, Kashmir is a Prakrit compound 
with its components: kas, meaning a channel and mir, 
meaning a mountain. Kas-mir could thus mean a rock 
trough. In its configuration, Kashmir is a deep trough 
(84 × 20 to 25 miles) with rocky walls. This is one theory.

The other theory—that Kashmir, or Kashir as 
named by its inhabitants, was so called on account of the 
settlement of a race of men called Kash,1 who were a Semitic 
tribe and founded what are now called the cities of Kash,2 
Kāshān3 and Kāshghar4—has yet to be properly investi-

1. See Sir Lucas King’s revised edition of the English Translation 
of Bābur’s Memoirs, Vol. I, page lxi. The acceptance of this theory would 
lead us to discard that which connects Kash with the Khaças of the 
Himalayan hills, and opens up quite a new field of research. Sir George 
Grierson has discussed the origin of Khaças in his Linguistic Survey of 
India, Vol. IX, Part IV, pages 2-8. One conjecture is that Kash is the 
same as the Semitic Cush, Kosh or Kash and not the Āryan-speaking 
Khaças.

2. Kash is a town in Bukhārā district on the trade-route between 
Samargand and Balkh. Kash is now called Shahr-i-Sahz or ‘green town’, 
on account of the fertility of its surroundings. Shahr-i-Sabz is sur-
rounded by hills on the north, east and south. The present town was 
built at the beginning of the seventh century A.C.

3. Kāshān is a town in the small province of Kāshān in Irāq-i-
‘Ajam, Iran. It has a population of 30,000 and is one of the hottest 
towns of Iran, lying in a fertile plain, 90 miles N E. of Isfahān and 150 
miles from Teherān. The province is divided into the two districts of 
‘garm sir’ the warm, and ‘sard sir’ the cold. Great quantities of 
silk stuffs from raw material imported from Gilān and copper utensils 
are manufactured at Kāshān, and sent to all parts of Iran. Kāshān also 
exports rose-water and is the only place in Iran where coal can be 
obtained. Jewellery and carpets are also manufactured. At the foot of 
hills, four miles west of the city, are the beautiful gardens of Fin.

4. Kāshghar is an important city in the district of Kāshgaria in 
the extreme west of China in the province of Chinese Turkistān. At 
present, Kāshghar consists of two towns, Kuhna Shahr, or ‘old city,’
gated. In that case, the origin of the word Kashmir from Kash, the race, and ‘ir’ a suffix like ‘ān’ and ‘ghar’ will permit the belief that the Kasia Regio and the Kasii Montes of Ptolemy, beyond Mount Imaus, were inhabited by this same race of Kash whose domination at some period probably extended from Kashgar to Kashmir, in both of which they have left their name.

But the fact is that the name Kashmir is ancient and, in the words of Stein, linguistic science can furnish no clue to its origin nor even analyse its formation. The earliest Chinese reference to Kashmir is dated 541 A.C., which calls the Valley Ku-shih-mi. The name Kashmir has been used as the sole designation of the country throughout its known history. It has uniformly been applied both by the inhabitants and by foreigners. “We can trace back its continued use through an unbroken chain of documents for more than twenty-three centuries, while the name itself is undoubtedly far more ancient.” The inhabitants pronounce it as Kashir which, according to Stein, is the direct phonetic derivative of Kashmir with the loss of m. In Kashur or Köshur—the inhabitant of Kashir and the language of Kashir,—u replaces i.

Kashmir made known abroad.

There is no notice in the accounts of Alexander’s expedition which can be shown to imply even a hearsay knowledge of the Kashmir Valley, says Stein. “The first authentic information concerning Kashmir which appears to have reached Europe,” says Baron Hügel, “was through the Portuguese, whose religious zeal prompted them to promulgate Christianity among the natives; for we attach little credit to the tales we are told of their king marching to the relief of Porus, when he was attacked by Alexander the Great,

Kashmir made known abroad.

built in 1513 A.C., and Yangi Shahr or ‘new city,’ built in 1838 A.C., about 5 miles apart and separated by the Kizil-Su. Kashgar stands at the meeting-place of several important and ancient routes, and thus has considerable strategical, commercial and social importance. Culturally, it is superior to Yarkand. Kashgar manufactures silks, carpets, and jewellery and the population is estimated at 62,000.

3. Ibid., p. 8.
although the later Greek authors mention a country they call Kaspatyrus, which would seem to be Kashmir. Setting aside such unsatisfactory accounts, we may repeat that to Europe Kashmir was, in a measure, unknown till the subjects of Portugal first trod its valleys." Jerome Xavier, a Navarese of high birth, is supposed to be the first European who ever had the glory or the courage to penetrate to this remote region. Another of the same family, Francis Xavier, "animated with like fervent zeal to diffuse the light of Christian truth throughout the East, had already gained, and not undeservedly, the glorious title of the Apostle of the Indies." Jerome Xavier appeared at the court of Akbar the Great at Agra and accompanied the Emperor to Kashmir. Xavier's remarks on Kashmir were published in his work, *Hajus de Rebus Japonicis, Indicis*, etc. (Antwerp, 1605).

The next noted traveller who acquainted the West with Kashmir is Francis Bernier, M.D. of the Faculty of Montpellier, Southern France. Bernier left France in 1654, when twenty-nine, in his desire to see the world. In 1657, during the reign of Shâh Jahân, he came to Surat, after having been to Syria and Egypt, at the very period when Shâh Jahân's sons were contending for the Mughul throne, and Aurangzîb ultimately ascended the throne of Delhi. Bernier arrived at Delhi towards the end of 1659. "When in Delhi, as he had accidentally lost his property and was in a helpless condition, he tried to get some employment." Having failed in his attempt, he secured a monthly allowance from the State Charity Fund through the intervention of Dânishmand Khân, a noble of Aurangzîb's court. After twelve years' abode in India, Bernier returned to France. He fixed himself at Paris where his *Travels* were published in 1670.

Father Desideri, a Jesuit, was the other important visitor to Kashmir. His observations on Kashmir are contained in a letter entitled *Les Lettres Edifiantes from Lhassa* in 1716.

Then, in the year 1783, came George Forster, a civil servant in the East India Company's Presidency of Madras. Kashmir had already been annexed to Afghanistân by Ahmad Shâh Durrânî. In fact, Timûr Shâh, the son and successor of Ahmad Shâh, had been ten years on the throne enjoying the fruits of his father's conquests. Āzâd Khân governed Kashmir.
Other noted visitors are: William Moorcroft, G. T. Vigne, Baron Hügel, Dr. Hönigberger, Victor Jacquemont and the Baron Eric von Shönberg. All of them visited Kashmir during Sikh rule. The reader will find brief references to these visitors as also relevant extracts from their accounts in due course in the Kashir.

The Stone Age in Kashmir.

Hitherto it has been held that there was no Stone Age in Kashmir. Recent finds, however, of agricultural implements, a tomahawk, tunuli, standing megaliths and prone monoliths, made after careful search at Pándrēthān, Takht-i-Sulaimān, Vendrahōm, Rangyil, Nāran Nāg and Arhōm in Kashmir seem to establish the existence of such an Age.¹

The Aborigines as the First Settlers.

The wide prevalence of Nāga-worship before and even after the Buddhist period indicates that the first settlers in the Kashmir Valley must have been the people, known as aborigines, who had spread over the whole of India before the advent of the Āryans. Nothing is known as to the stage of civilization these early inhabitants had attained when they entered Kashmir.

The Āryans.

Then came the wave of Āryan invasion from the northwest of India, though this is not accepted by scholars like Keith. As in the Punjāb and Northern India, they mixed with the aborigines and formed one people. They must have come in numbers large enough to put their own racial stamp on the people here.

An attempt has been made to show that Kashmir was once a Zoroastrian² country, but the references quoted in support of this view are more or less of a legendary nature.

The Jews.

The physical and ethnic characteristics which so sharply mark off the Kashmirī from all surrounding races have

---

1. The Stone Age in Kashmir by Mr. G. E. L. Carter, I.C.S.
   The collection of stone implements on which Mr. Carter has based his Note may be seen in the Prince of Wales' Museum, Bombay.
   See also Dr. Terra's Studies on the Ice Age in India, page 2. Dr. Terra began the geologic survey of the Kashmir Valley in 1932 A.C.

always struck observant visitors to the Valley, and have led to several conjectures as to their origin. One such strong conjecture connects the Kashmiris with the Jews or rather one of the Hebraic peoples.

The 'Jewish' cast of feature of many of the inhabitants of Kashmir has been noticed by scores of modern travellers. Two leading authorities on Kashmir in recent times, whose profound knowledge of the land and its people can hardly be questioned, namely Sir Walter Lawrence and Sir Francis Younghusband, have admitted the decided ‘Jewish’ cast of faces among men, women and children. The late Sir Walter Lawrence says⁴ that the hooked nose is a prominent feature and the prevailing type is distinctly Hebraic. Sir Francis says⁵ that “here may be seen fine old patriarchal types, just as we picture to ourselves the Israelitish heroes of old. Some, indeed, say, though I must admit without much authority, that these Kashmiris are of the lost tribes of Israel . . . . and certainly, as I have said, there are real Biblical types to be seen everywhere in Kashmir, and especially among the upland villages. Here the Israelitish shepherd tending his flocks and herds may any day be seen.” Bernard was hardly less definite. He said³: “On entering the kingdom after crossing the Pir-panjal mountains, inhabitants in the frontier villages struck me as resembling Jews. Their countenance and manner and that indescribable peculiarity which enables a traveller to distinguish the inhabitants of different nations, all seemed to belong to that ancient people. You are not to ascribe what I say to mere fancy, the Jewish appearance of these villagers having been remarked by our Jesuit Fathers and by several other Europeans, long before I visited Kashmir.”

Shāh Hamadān, the great saint, visited Kashmir in the fourteenth century A.C. He also named the Valley Bāgh-i-Sulaimān or the “Garden of Solomon,”⁴ seemingly supporting the settlement of Israelites in Kashmir.

Abū Raiḥān al-Bīrūnī (973—1048 A.C.) ‘accompanied⁵ the expedition’ of Mahmūd against Kashmir, probably in

1. The Valley of Kashmir, Oxford University Press, 1895, page 318.
3. Travels (Smith’s Edition), page 430.
1021 A.C., the expedition being unsuccessful on account of the valorous defence by Kashmirians and heavy snowfall. Al-Biruni, however, utilized every opportunity during his long stay at Ghazna and in the Punjab (1017-30) for collecting information on Kashmir. Writing more than a century before Kalhana, about the inhabitants of Kashmir, al-Biruni says¹:—"They are particularly anxious about the natural strength² of their country, and therefore take always much care to keep a strong hold upon the entrances and roads leading into it. In consequence, it is very difficult to have any commerce with them. In former times, they used to allow one or two foreigners to enter their country, particularly Jews, but at present do not allow any Hindu whom they do not know personally to enter, much less other people."

The possibility of 'Jewish' admixture in Afghan blood has been suspected. The researches of Sir George Grierson prove that the Kashmiri language belongs to the Dardic, and not to the Sanskrit group, though it must be admitted that Sanskrit has considerably influenced the present Kashmiri language. It is now definitely known that Pushtu is a member of the eastern branch of the Iranian family, and that Kashmiri too belongs to the Iranian group, or, to be more precise, to the Indo-Iranian group. Hence, there must be some affinity between Pushtu and Kashmiri. As already noted, the language as spoken in Kashmir is not called Kashmiri by the inhabitants but Koshur and the land, Kashir.

It should, however, be admitted that, beyond al-Biruni's statement, there is no authentic recorded evidence available to establish the existence of any large Jewish or rather Hebraic element in Kashmir.

[Perhaps the following will be read with interest in this connexion:—

Dr. Jill Cosseley Batt, B.A., D.Sc., authoress and explorer, collaborate with Dr. Irvine Baird, says the Montreal Gazette, in meeting mysterious


2. Abu'l Fazl writes: "The roads of the country are of such a nature that if the ruler get news a few days before of the approach of strangers and seize the passes, it would be difficult, or rather impossible, for an army adorned with thousands of Rustams to get possession of the country."—The Akbar-nama (English Translation by Beveridge, 1906, Vol. II, page 198.) Abu'l Fazl, however, could not be expected to foresee the invention of the aeroplane in our day!
people, high up in the Himalayas within the borders of Tibet, dwelling in caves, retaining characteristics of an ancient civilization, to whom the name of ‘Lost Tribe’ has been attributed. The lost tribe is believed to be of Chaldean origin. The theories of Batt and Baird are expected to be outlined in a book entitled ‘The Lost Tribe.’ The expedition of Dr. Batt and Dr. Baird in 1930-31 A.C. was supported by the Prime Ministers of Canada, Australia, Newfoundland, and forty-two leading British and American firms.—Extracted from the article on the subject in the Montreal Gazette, reproduced in the Bombay Chronicle, Bombay, dated December 17, 1933, page 13.]

The Arabs.

“The first rush of Arab invasion in the Indus Valley during the eighth century had carried Muhammadan arms at times close enough to the confines of Kashmir.” But no permanent conquest was effected even in the Punjab. The notices of Muslim geographers like al-Mas‘ūdī, al-Qazwīnī, al-Idrīsī are restricted to a brief statement only.¹

The Bambas, living on the right bank of the Jhelum, in Kashmir, however, claim descent from the Banū Umayya,² a section of whom is stated to have migrated to Badakhshān, stayed there for some generations, and to have come to Kashmir with Dulcha in 1322 A.C.

Here reference to a similar people may perhaps help us in appreciating the claim of the Bambas. The Russian Orientalist of Bombay, Mr. W. Ivanow, furnishes me with the translation of a paragraph from a Russian work,³ which I should like to reproduce:—“Arabs: (Census, 1924—54,318 individuals). Live as continuous population in the Bukhārā district, and in the Qatāqurghān and Samarqand districts of the Samarqand province. In isolated groups live in many other places of the Uzbek and the Turkmān republics, amongst Uzbek or Tājik population, and chiefly occupied in agriculture. Language:—The majority has lost the original language and speak Uzbek, Turkish or Tājiki, as the population amongst which they live. The Arabs inhabiting a few villages of the Qarāqul ta‘luqa of the Bukhārā district have preserved their original Arabic. In some places they still preserve

---

1. The Ancient Geography of Kashmir by Dr. Stein, page 20.
2. The Imperial Gazetteer of India (Vol. XV., 1903 Edition, page 101), says Banū Hāshim but Banū Umayyā appears to be more probable. The Bambas, however, are now classed as Rājputs.
tribal divisions, although the majority are already entirely assimilated with the population around them. *Religion:*—Sunnís.”

There is, however, a strong admixture of the Indo-Áryan type, and the extent of this influence can be gauged from the magnitude of the change wrought on the Kashmirí language by Sanskrit. We have reason to assume that, even in Hindu times, Kashmir was under foreign rule and the reign of those foreign dynasties was accompanied by settlements of immigrants of the same nationality, though it is not likely that these colonies were extensive.

It can, therefore, be maintained that the present population of Kashmir is an admixture of aborigines with slight ‘Jewish,’ large Áryan and some other foreign elements. So much for the origin of the Kashmirí. Let us turn to his character.

*The Character of the Kashmirí.*

That the Kashmirí is essentially mystical and imaginative, those who have known him intimately and studied him closely will readily admit. His environment has made him so. Huge snowy peaks, flowing silvery streams and sublime solitudes have induced this frame of mind. The cult of Buddha from the third century B.C. to the fourth century A.D., *viz.* for seven hundred years, the teaching of the Vedánta, the mysticism of Islam percolating through Persian sources have, one after another, found a congenial home in Kashmir. The Pandit and the Pir have striven hard to make him superstitious as well. The result is that mysticism and superstition are now ingrained in the very nature of the Kashmirí. In fact, he breathes that very atmosphere. He almost fully justifies to this day the observations recorded by Mirzá Haidar Dughlát about 1550 A.C. The Mirzá said* that so many heresies have been legitimatized in Kashmir that people know nothing of what is lawful or unlawful. The so-called ‘pirs’ (spiritual guides) and ‘sufís’ (mystics) are “for ever interpreting dreams, displaying miracles and obtaining from the unseen, information, regarding either the future or the past . . . . consider the Holy Law (Shari'át) second in importance to the True ‘Way’ (Tariqát) and that, in consequence, the people of the ‘Way’ have nothing to do with the Holy Law.” The observations

---

*The Ta'rikh-i-Rashidi, English Translation by Elias and Ross, 1895, page 436.*
of Mirzâ Haidar close with the following prayer:—"May the Most High God defend all the people of Islam from such misfortunes and calamities as this, and turn them all into the true path of righteousness." The need of such a prayer must be equally felt even now, and all that tends to 'pir parasti' or saint-worship must be eradicated as completely and as quickly as may be practicable if the Musalmâns of Kashmir are to make any real advance in the world.

What a strange contrast does this state of affairs present to the real teachings of Islam whose Prophet disclaims "every power of wonder-working," and "ever rests the truth of his divine commission entirely upon his Teachings. He never resorts to the miraculous to assert his influence or to enforce his warnings. He invariably appeals to the familiar phenomena of nature as signs of the divine presence. He unswervingly addresses himself to the inner consciousness of man, to his reason and not to his weakness or his credulity."

The imagination of the Kashmiri has given some fine poetry to the world, which, however, has never been fully appreciated for lack of presentation in a suitable form. In intellect, he is perhaps the superior of any other Indian and is very quick in argument. The commonest Kashmiri 'can talk intelligently on most subjects, and has a great aptitude for sarcasm, but, like other artistic people, he is emotional and fond of exaggeration.' He is fond of singing and song-birds too. Some of the songs sung in the rice-fields are full of poetical thought and the airs are sweet and plaintive. Though very loud, voluble and persistent, the Kashmiri is extremely quiet under calamities such as earthquake and cholera.

The Kashmiri can turn his hand to anything. He is an excellent cultivator and a fine gardener, and has a considerable knowledge of horticulture. He can weave excellent woolen cloth and can make first-rate baskets. He is a fine wood-carver, silver and goldsmith. He perfectly understands the art of varnishing and is eminently skillful in closely imitating the beautiful veins of a certain wood by inlaying gold thread. He can build his own house, and make his own ropes. In fact, there is scarcely a thing, says Lawrence, which he cannot do. As a fine craftsman, he

may have a few equals in the world, but probably none superior to him. The boatman of Kashmir, says Pirie, is as clever as the gondolier of Venice, and would emerge safely from the riskiest of situations. The Wāza is an excellent cook and could prepare perhaps fifty dainty dishes of meat alone. His way of serving food, however, leaves much to be desired, though he is modifying his mode of service. That the cuisine of the Punjabi has been largely influenced by the Wāza admits of no question. The Wa'ìn or Woin or Wōhu—not a distinct class apart—is the Bani or the petty trader and perhaps occasionally the money-lender. The Kashmiri understands his own business, and does not often make a bad bargain though sometimes the village Kashmiri would be foolish enough to conceal his goods or fruits from the outside visitor. Normally the city vendor in and around Amir Kadal has three rates, the cheapest for his own people, the dearer for Indian visitors to the Valley and the dearest for the European or the American. There may be some logic in these rates so far as the Kashmiri vendor is concerned, but it is unfair to the purchaser who gets the same commodity for which he pays the cheap, dear or the dearest rate.

Conservative the Kashmiri is, but not altogether impregnable to new ideas. He is kind to his wife and children, and divorce scandals or cases of immorality among villagers, says Younghusband, are rarely heard of. He is hospitable and entertains his guests most cheerfully. The Kashmiri is neither a murderer nor a marauder, and crimes against person or property seldom occur. The Kashmiri's dog will not bite, though it may bark. Even his snakes have no poison except the viper in Dachigam rakh, etc. His rivers and lakes are free from dangerous animals. The Ḥāpit, or the bear, the stray wolf, the leopard, the panther and the hyena are the only rare terrors of his forests. The Kashmiri is no drunkard or opium-eater. Except that he is an inveterate snuff-taker, he may be said to be remarkably abstemious. "The Kashmiris," wrote Bernier, "are celebrated for wit, and considered much more intelligent and ingenious than the Indians. In poetry and science, they are not inferior to Persians. They are also very active and industrious." The traveller, G. T. Vigne, calls the Kashmiri 'the Neapolitan of the East.'* But—

* Travels, Vol., I page 325.
"The Kashmirians are gay and lively people, with strong propensities to pleasure," wrote George Forster* in 1783 A.C. "None are more eager in the pursuit of wealth, have more inventive faculties in acquiring it, or who devise more modes of luxurious expense. When a Kashmirian, even of the lowest order, finds himself in possession of ten shillings, he loses no time in assembling his party and, launching into the lake, solaces himself till the last farthing is spent."

In many respects, the Kashmiri cultivator resembles an Irishman, says Sir Walter Lawrence; he certainly possesses the quick wit which is so characteristic of the Irish, and has the same deep-rooted objection to paying rent. There are many points of resemblance between Ireland and Kashmir. Both are small countries which have been subject to the rule and protection of more powerful nations, and yet have never welcomed any change or improvement. Both the Kashmiri and the Irish love a joke, are fond of harmless deception, and are masters of good-humoured blarney. Both are kind to their children and to old folk and, continues Sir Walter, both have the same disregard for the first principles of sanitation, though "the interior of a Kashmiri hut is probably cleaner than that of a similar class of dwelling in Ireland."

Women of Kashmir.

Many an outsider has given his impressions about the women of Kashmir. Two very divergent views, one expressed by an Englishman and the other by a Frenchman, are indeed striking. Colonel Alexander Dow in his History of Hindostan published in 1772 A.C. writes:—

"The inhabitants are astonishingly handsome and the women especially enchantingly beautiful" (Vol. I, p. 41). And Andrew Wilson refers to the legend of the two angels Harût and Marût having been ensnared by the beauty of Kashmiri women (The Abode of Snow, p. 420). Victor Jacque-mont, a French Naturalist, writes in his Letters from India (Vol. II, p. 65): "Know that I have never seen anywhere such hideous witches as in Cashmere. The female race is remarkably ugly." Eastern poets, on the other hand, are one in their appreciation of the beauty of the women of Kashmir, and a typical case is that of the poet

Zuhūrī who says:—

Foreign visitors very often err in generalizing before they have seen enough to form an accurate estimate of the real state of affairs. Oriental historians of the medieval period, and particularly the class amongst them gifted with the art of rhyme, are notorious for their tendency to exaggerate. The French writer, whom we have quoted above, must have been repelled by the dirt which is the lot of some classes of the women of Kashmir. In the Ā'īna-i-Kashmir of the late K. B. Pirzāda Muhammad Husain Ārif, M.A., C.I.E., ex-Chief Justice, Kashmir, this fact is accordingly brought out in the following lines:—

Once when a Zenana missionary was impelled to say, "O dear Kashmīrī women, why won't you wash?" they looked at her wondering and replied, "We have been so oppressed that we don't care to be clean."* Perhaps this answer

explains the fact that under oppressive rule during Afghān and Sikh times, cleanliness involved imposition or abduction, and thus the habit of uncleanliness was forced on women.

George Forster, who visited Kashmir in 1783 a.c., likens the women of the Valley to the women of the south of France who are noted for their beauty, adding that women of Kashmir “would be called brunettes in the south of France or Spain.” To an Indian eye the women of Kashmir are of a make different from their own. Kashmiri women are fairer in complexion, not uncommonly blue-eyed, supple and attractive in appearance, as compared to the wheat-coloured, hard-boned peasant women of the Punjāb, or the dark-complexioned women of other parts of India. The Panditānī appears to be more delicately featured very often, but the Musālmān-ni is more vigorous and seems to possess a stronger stamina. Apparently one may consider this to be due to caste restrictions in one case and a wider field in the other. But under identical conditions of life there is, perhaps, no such difference at all, though a State survey, 25 years ago, revealed a large incidence of tuberculosis among the Panditānīs. The Kashmiri woman’s large lustrous siyāh chashm (black eye) is on a par with that of a Turkish, Irānian or Afghān beauty, though Khwāja Hāfīz of Shīrāz singles out only Kashmiris and Turks when he says in his Diwān—

It is indeed a compliment from the great Hāfīz and from Zuhūrī, the famous court-poet of Bijāpur, that the Kashmiri should be bracketed with the Turk in the comeliness of his person, for the Turk is admittedly the handsomest of all the races of the Orient. The great Sa’dī gives but an expression to the universal acclamation of the beauty of the Turk when he says:—

There is, however, no doubt that poverty and ignorance and the political vicissitudes of this unhappy Valley have considerably marred the feminine charm of its womenfolk, and made a visitor to the Valley exclaim:—
But given the chances of freedom and decent living enjoyed by the women of the West, there will be an entirely different outlook. And the women of Kashmir would rank amongst the best of their kind in the world, as some of those gone out to live in the Punjāb, and the United Provinces, etc., tend to show. The health and enlightenment of the women of Kashmir should, therefore, be of supreme importance in the programme of social uplift. Kashmirī children are most winsome, wrote Mrs. Ashley Carus-Wilson. Indeed they can compare favourably with children in the West in the evident innocence of their enchanting charm, but the appalling illiteracy of the mother and the surrounding squalor and poverty will not let them grow up winsome.

_Criticism of the Kashmirī._

The Kashmirī has been classed with the Kambūh and the Afghān as being a scoundrel in the saying very frequently quoted both for amusement and for satire:—

اکر فتحت آلرجال ًافتاد از ایتان انس کمگیر

یکی ایتان، درم کم‌بوده، سوم به ذات کم‌پیر

which in Colonel Torrens' _Travels_ (p. 299) is translated:

"Should fate decree a dearth of men,
Then, friend of mine, beware ye

Of Afghān—Kambūh, scoundrel too,
But, worst of all, do thou eschew
That ill-bred knave Kashmirī."

Here, too, the Kashmirī is singled out as the worst of the three notorious knaves of Northern India! A clever Kashmirī, however, once turned the tables on his satirist stating that this saying really means that all Afghāns are bad, all Kambūhs are bad too, but it is the ill-bred Kashmirī alone, who should be shunned and not every Kashmirī.

The average Kashmirī or, in any case, the Hānjī or the boatman, is considered to be rather prolific. This may be due to the usual reason of the poverty of the Kashmirī in general. Some, however, believe it is due to river and other water containing large quantities of fish, but on that it would not be discreet to hazard judgment. It would indeed be an interesting investigation.
It has been asserted that the Kashmiri "is a coward, a liar and a dirty fellow."

He is a coward because long oppression has made him so. His cowardice is extraordinary. Under the slightest threat of danger, the poor stay-at-home Kashmiri used to tremble and quake, weep and howl. Not very long ago, it was commonly remarked in the Punjab that a Kashmiri would not dare use a gun, but would throw it down in fear and say that "it would go off of itself."

Natives of certain hilly tracts in Northern India have been found to be somewhat cowardly, but those who have observed coolies from Kashmir and coolies from other hill districts, working together in Simla or Dalhousie, must have noticed that the Kashmiri coolie is decidedly the more cowardly though definitely more civil, and according to Aldous Huxley "wonderfully cheerful." In fact, the former very often lords it over the latter, and assigns to him the dirtier or the more irksome part of the job.

[Poverty being always pitiably acute, the poor can hardly be blamed for leaving—after the first mild dose of danger—homes where social conditions provide them with so little. Truly the dearth of possessions confers a certain freedom too. Here, it is to leave home and hearth!—Unknown]

Though it is so, it seems strange that the Kashmiri professional wrestler should be the terror of his
opponents in the akhārās or wrestling pits of India. No doubt, therefore, that William Moorcroft¹ should have said, about 1820 A.C., that amongst the peasantry are found figures of robust and muscular make, such as might have served for models of the Farnesan Hercules.² The Kashmiri is indeed a bundle of contradictions.

Again, "he is a liar because of the peculiar system of government which encouraged a most elaborate scheme of espionage." And in the words of Sir W. H. Beveridge, "in a land, on which terror has once lain like a poisonous mist, truth does not grow easily." Cowardice and lying have, in turn, bred in him envy and malice, self-praise (thekun), and condemnation of others. There is an apparent lack of sympathy though a good deal of lip-service. Like the lower type Anglo-Indian who often uses the curse 'bloody' or the Britisher who repeats 'damn it,' the Kashmiri curses by invoking 'tapail' and 'tāwan.' 'Trath' and 'zaharbād' are frequently on the lips of women, as the Punjabi women use suāh and siyāpa. Again, the Kashmiri plays havoc with his oaths. BaYād-i-Qur'ān he would repeat fifty times a day, like the lower class Lāhaurī or any such Punjabi who has abuse on the tip of his tongue.

Pessimism, want of education and poverty have made the Kashmiri dirty.

Jan z āhīl xeṭāl sūrāz jhūn sībā dīz āz dīl nālāsī mī dīrī
dārī-

To my mind, his dirtiness is the cause of his degradation in the eyes of an outsider. Aldous Huxley goes to the length of saying that the Kashmiri has a genius for filthiness. A regular jiḥād (crusade) against his dirty habits is the one imperative necessity, though it must be remarked, in passing, that this habit of dirtiness is shared, in some cases, by the European in his own native land; where he puts on clean clothes but does not keep the body equally clean, and dreads the bath either from the expense involved or the severity of the climate to which he finds himself, like the Kashmiri, exposed. Such a European is not ashamed to call the

². The Farnesian Hercules is a marble statue of the first century B.C., and represents Hercules with exaggerated muscles. The statue was in the Farnese palace. Farnese is the name of an Italian ducal house, the ruling dynasty of Parma, Italy, in the 15th to 17th centuries A. C.
Kashmiri—"that athletic bearded disgrace to the human race."¹

“And do not sneer at the lack of sanitation. Remember the Chinese are desperately poor and have already suffered terribly in this War.” This is the advice contained in the handbook for American troops in China in February, 1943. Should the high-browed foreigner forget it when meeting the desperately poor Kashmiri?

This type of Westerner who despises the Kashmiri should remember that he too, at one time, evoked such remarks and was the butt of similar ridicule from the Easterner. “To these Saracens we are indebted for many of our comforts. Religiously clean, it was not possible for them to clothe themselves according to the fashion of the natives of Europe, in a garment unchanged till it dropped to pieces of itself, a loathsome mass of vermin, stench and rags [like the humble Hatō’s head cover?]. They taught us the use of the often-changed and often-washed undergarment of linen and cotton, which still passes among ladies under its old Arabic name.”²

It is, however, an undeniable fact that much of the evil reputation of the Kashmiri in the eyes of the visitor to the Valley is due to the contact of the latter mostly with the low class Kashmiri, the Hānji or the boatman and the hawker, and in some cases the half-educated Kashmiri Pandit who has been acting as a Bābu or Munshi, or tutor to the visitor from the West, and who according to Aldous Huxley has more than Spanish objection to manual labour. And, therefore, most of the usual criticism of the character of the Kashmiri is unjust and unjustified. The common Kashmiri provokes laughter at his accents in Urdu and is thus a source

¹ Magic Ladakh by Major M. L. A. Gompertz,—Seely, Service & Co., Limited, London, 1928, page 26,—repeating E. F. Knight, author of Where Three Empires Meet, Longmans, London, 1893, p. 111. The poor Kashmiri is, at least, innocent of crime like that referred to by Lieutenant-Colonel Arthur Osburn, D.S.O.—“Not long ago it was stated that thirty per cent. of all cases in which young English girls had been seduced were cases of incest between father and daughter.”—Must England Lose India? Alfred A. Knopf, London, 1930, second edition June 1930, page 106, lines 16-19.

of merriment to the outsider. His accent in English too is slightly peculiar.

The Future.

To sum up, it may be said: "though superstition has made the average stay-at-home Kashmiri timid, tyranny has made him a craven-spirited liar, and physical disasters have made him selfish and pessimistic, and, up to recent times, the cultivator lived under a system of begār (carrier service, or forced labour) and having no security of property, he had no incentive to effort, and with no security of life he lost the independence of a free man"; yet it is evident that changes are happily taking place, the impact of modern life is having its effect, and the influx of visitors and outside agencies are bringing about gradual awakening. The future is, therefore, not without hope, for the Kashmiri has in him the qualities that can make a great nation. Among its numerous great sons, the Kashmiri can number a learned jurist and an eminent politician in the United Provinces, a poet and philosopher in the Punjāb, a territorial magnate in Dacca, and, in other places, a great reformer, an able administrator, and a leading merchant-prince. The Kashmiri has also taken part in the Great European or World Wars. He has shown his mettle in July 1924 by withstanding, quite unarmed, charges of State cavalry at Srīnagar, and in 1932 during the disturbances in the Valley. And he has won, at considerable sacrifice, a constitution by which the Prajā Sabhā or the Legislative Assembly was inaugurated on 18th October, 1934. This Assembly, however, is but a recommendationary body subject to the Council of Ministers.

The educated Kashmiri of the Punjāb, Lucknow, Patna or Dacca holds his own against the most advanced Indian in intellect, culture and refinement, as well as in general appearance, physique and manly qualities.
KINGS OF KASHMIR DURING THE PRE MUSLIM PERIOD

[AS GIVEN BY KALHANA.]

Gonanda I. Accession assumed Kali Samvat 653 (Laukika S. 628).
Dāmodara I.
Yaçovati
Gonanda II.
Thirty-five kings 'lost'
Lava
Kuça
Khagendra
Surendra
Godhara
Suvarṇa
Janaka
Shachinara
Açoka
Jalauka
Dāmodara II.
Hushka, Jushka, Kanishka.
Abhimanyu I.

Aggregate length of reigns 1266 years (Laukika S. 628—1894).

[The above is according to the English Translation of the Rājatarangini by Sir Aurel Stein—Vol. I, pp. 134-5.]

KINGS OF THE GONANDA DYNASTY—GROUP I.

B. C. reigned for Ys. Ms. Ds.
1184 1. Gonanda III ,, .. 35 .. ..
1149 2. Bibhīshana I ,, .. 53 6 ..
1095 3. Indrajit ,, .. 35 .. ..
1060 4. Rāvana ,, .. 30 6 ..
1030 5. Bibhīshana II ,, .. 35 6 ..
994 6. Nara I alias Kinnara ,, .. 39 9 ..
955 7. Siddha ,, .. 60 .. ..
895 8. Utpalāksha ,, .. 30 .. ..
864 9. Hiraṇyāksha ,, .. 37 7 ..
827 10. Hiraṇyakula ,, .. 60 .. ..
767 11. Vasukula ,, .. 60 .. ..
707 12. Miharakula nicknamed Trikoṭihā (killer of three crores of people) ,, .. 70 .. ..
637 13. Baka ,, .. 63 .. ..

30
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>B.C.</th>
<th>Reigned For</th>
<th>Yrs. Ms. Ds.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>574</td>
<td>Kshitinanda</td>
<td>30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>544</td>
<td>Vasunanda</td>
<td>52</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>491</td>
<td>Nara II</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>431</td>
<td>Aksha</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>371</td>
<td>Gopāditya</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>311</td>
<td>Gokarna</td>
<td>57</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>253</td>
<td>Narendra I alias Khinkhila</td>
<td>36 3 10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>217</td>
<td>Yudhishtīra I</td>
<td>No period is mentioned</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Total Gonandas, Group I: 1014 9 9

**THE VIKRAMĀDITYA DYNASTY—GROUP 2**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>B.C.</th>
<th>Reigned For</th>
<th>Yrs. Ms. Ds.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>169</td>
<td>Pratāpāditya I</td>
<td>32</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>137</td>
<td>Jalanka</td>
<td>32</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>105</td>
<td>Tuñjina I</td>
<td>36</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Change of dynasty (“Anyakulajā Rājā”)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>B.C.</th>
<th>Reigned For</th>
<th>Yrs. Ms. Ds.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>69</td>
<td>Vijaya</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>61</td>
<td>Jayendra (dynasty ends)</td>
<td>37</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24</td>
<td>Samdhimati alias Āryarāja (Jayendra’s minister)</td>
<td>47</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Total: Vikramādityas and others, Group 2: 192

**THE GONANDAS RESTORED—GROUP 3**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>B.C.</th>
<th>Reigned For</th>
<th>Yrs. Ms. Ds.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>24</td>
<td>Meghavāhana</td>
<td>34</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>58</td>
<td>Pravarasena I alias Tuñjina II</td>
<td>30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>88</td>
<td>Hiranya and Toramāna (dynasty interrupted)</td>
<td>30 2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>118</td>
<td>Mātrigupta, the poet, (Protège of the great Vikramāditya of Ujjain, defeater of the Shakas)</td>
<td>4 9 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>123</td>
<td>Pravarasena II</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>183</td>
<td>Yuddhishtīra II</td>
<td>21 3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>204</td>
<td>Narendra II alias Lakhana</td>
<td>13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>217</td>
<td>Rāṇāditya alias Tuñjina III</td>
<td>300</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>517</td>
<td>Vikramāditya</td>
<td>42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>559</td>
<td>Bālāditya</td>
<td>37</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Total Gonandas after the first restoration, Group 3: 572 6 1
THE KĀRKŌTA OR NĀGA DYNASTY—GROUP 4

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>B.C.</th>
<th>reigned for</th>
<th>Ys. Ms. Ds.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>396</td>
<td>38. Durlabhavardhana <em>alias</em> Prajñāditya</td>
<td>36 7 11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>632</td>
<td>39. Durlabhaka <em>alias</em> Pratāpāditya II</td>
<td>50 13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>682</td>
<td>40. Chandrāpiḍa</td>
<td>8 8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>691</td>
<td>41. Tārāpiḍa</td>
<td>4 24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Total Kārkotas up to the end of Tārāpiḍa</td>
<td>98 8 24</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Grand total up to the end of Tārāpiḍa .. 1,878 .. 4

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>A.D.</th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>695</td>
<td>42. Muktāpiḍa <em>alias</em> Lalitāditya</td>
<td>36 7 11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>732</td>
<td>43. Kuvalayāpiḍa</td>
<td>1 15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>733</td>
<td>44. Vajrāditya Bappiyaka <em>alias</em> Lalitāditya II</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>740</td>
<td>45. Prithivyāpiḍa</td>
<td>4 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>744</td>
<td>46. Sangrāmāpiḍa</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>751</td>
<td>47. Jayāpiḍa</td>
<td>31</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>48. Jajja (brother-in-law and minister of Jayāpiḍa * usurper*)</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>785</td>
<td>49. Lalitāpiḍa</td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>797</td>
<td>50. Prithivyāpiḍa II, <em>alias</em> Sangrāmāpiḍa II</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>804</td>
<td>51. Chippatajayaśipīḍa <em>alias</em> Brihaspati (son of Lalitāpiḍa by a concubine)</td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>816</td>
<td>52. Ajitāpiḍa, son of Chippaṭa’s brother, deposed and succeeded by</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>53. Anaṅgāpiḍa (son of Sangrāmāpiḍa)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>54. Utpalāpiḍa (son of Ajitāpiḍa)</td>
<td>41</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Total up to the end of the fourth Taraṅga 260 5 20

CHANGE OF DYNASTY—GROUP 5

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>A.D.</th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>857</td>
<td>55. Avantivarman (son of Sukhavarman, son of Utpala, brother of the concubine above referred to), from Phālg. kr. 1 of 31 to Āshāḍh. sh. 3 of 59</td>
<td>27 4 18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>884</td>
<td>56. Shamkaravarman, up to Phālg. kr. 7 of 77</td>
<td>18 7 19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>903</td>
<td>57. Gopālavarmman</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>58. Samkatavarman</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>05</td>
<td>59. Sugandhā, queen</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

DYNASTY CHANGED

60. Nirjitavarman *alias* Paṅgu (grandson of Shūravarman)
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>A.D.</th>
<th>reigned for</th>
<th>Ys. Ms. Ds.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>907</td>
<td>Pārtha, up to Paush. kr. 1 of 97, i.e., for 19 yrs., 9 mas., 23 ds., less by 4 yrs. 0' ms., 10 dys. of Gopāta Saṃkṣa, and Sugandhā</td>
<td>15 9 13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>923</td>
<td>Nirjītavaṃraṇa or Paṅgu again up to Māgha. kr. 1 of 98</td>
<td>1 1 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>924</td>
<td>Chakravaṃraṇa, up to Māgha. kr. 1 of 9.</td>
<td>11 1 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>935</td>
<td>Sūravaṃraṇa, up to Āśādh. kr. 1 of 10</td>
<td>1 1 5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>936</td>
<td>Pārtha again, up to Āśādh. kr. 1 of 11</td>
<td>1 1 23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>938</td>
<td>Chakravaṃraṇa again up to Jyesṭha. č. 8 of 13</td>
<td>1 1 7</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Total years, Group 5, end of the 5th Taraṅga .. 33 4 0

**DYNASTY CHANGED—GROUP 6**

| 940  | Yaḍaskara, up to Bhād. kr. 3 of 24, including Varnāṭa who reigned a few days before Yaḍaskara’s death | 6 8 |
| 948  | Samgrāmadeva, up to Phālgh. kr. 10 or 24 | 1 4 4 |
| 950  | Parvagupta, up to Āśādh. kr. 13 of 26 | 8 6 3 |
| 951  | Kāhemagupta, up to Paṃgh. č. 1 of 34 | 13 10 3 |
| 960  | Abhimanyu, up to Kārt. č. 3 of 48 | 1 1 9 |
| 973  | Nandigupta, up to Mārga. č. 12 of 49 | 1 1 23 |
| 975  | Tribhuvana, up to Mārga. č. 5 of 51 | 5  |
| 976  | Bhimagupta | 22 9 3 |
| 981  | Diddā, Queen, up to Bhād. č. 8 of 79 |  |

Total years, Group 6, end of the 6th Taraṅga .. 64 23

**DYNASTY CHANGED—GROUP 7**

| 1004 | Samgrāmurāja, up to Āśādh. kr. 1 of 4 | 24 9 8 |
| 1029 | Harirāja, up to Āśādh. č. 8 | 35 3 23 |
| 1029 | Ananta, up to Kārt. č. 6 of 39, when he crowned his son Kalaça | 26 1 |
| 1064 | Kalaça, up to Mārga. č. 6 of 65 |  |
| 1090 | Utkarṣa and Harsha, up to Bhād. č. 5 of 77 | 11 8 29 |

Total years Group 7, end of the 7th Taraṅga .. 97 11 27

**DYNASTY CHANGED—GROUP 8**

| 1102 | Uchchala, up to Pausha. č. 6 of 87 | 10 4 1 |
| 1113 | Radda alīāṣ Shaṅkha | 8 26 |
| 1113 | Salhaṇa, up to Vaṣ. č. 3 of 88 | 8 26 |
DYNASTY CHANGED

A.D. 1113 83. Sussala up to Phālg. new moon of 3 including 6 ms., 12 ds. of ..

1129 85. Vijayasimha, still reigning in the 25th year or A.D., 1151, i.e., Shake 1072 .. 22 ...

Total to end of Shaka 1072, or A.D. 1151, i.e. 48 5 25

[The above is according to the English Translation of the River of Kings by the late Mr. R. S. Pandit, pp. 581-582 and 585-586.]

[AS GIVEN BY JONARAJA]

A.D. Period of reign Ys. Ms. Ds.

1127 Jayasimha (same as Simhadeva of Kalhana) .. 26 11 27
1154 Pramānuka .. .. .. 9 6 10
1164 Vārtyadeva .. .. .. 9 6 ..
1171 Vopyadeva .. .. .. 9 4 2
1180 Jassaka .. .. .. 18 .. 10
1198 Jagadeva .. .. .. 14 6 3
1213 Rājadeva .. .. .. 23 3 27
1236 Saṅgrāmadeva .. .. .. 16 .. 10
1252 Rāmadeva .. .. .. 21 1 13
1273 Lakshmanadeva .. .. .. 13 3 12
1286 Simhadeva .. .. .. 14 5 27
1301 Sahadeva alias Rāmachandra .. .. .. 19 3 25
1320 Rīchana .. .. .. 3 1 19
1323 Udayanadeva .. .. .. .. ..
1338 Koṭā .. .. .. .. ..

[The above is according to the English Translation by Jogesh Chander Dutt of Jonarāja's Rājāvali—Vol. III, p. XXI at the end.]
CHAPTER II

THE PRE-ISLAMIC PERIOD

(a) The earliest known kings of Kashmir.

As this Chapter deals with the history of Kashmir during the period when Hindus—Brāhmans and non-Brāhmans—and Buddhists, etc., ruled the Valley we call it the Pre-Islamic Period of the history of Kashmir. In view of the exhaustive exposition of this period by the late Sir Mark Aurel Stein in his English Translation of the Rājatarangini, only a brief outline of the period is presented to the reader of Kashmir.

Gonanda I.

Gonanda I is the first ruler from whose reign some semblance of a chronological history of Kashmir begins. His reign is dated 20 years before the Mahabhārata war. Gonanda I went to war with Krishna on behalf of his relative

1. Tradition takes us as far back as the times of Rāmachandra, the hero of the Rāmāyana, who is said to have conquered and visited Kashmir, but of whom nothing more is related. The tradition says that, when the country became permanently inhabited, it was split up into numerous little Kuttarāja's or kingdoms founded by Brāhmans, which began in course of time to fight among themselves with the result that they called in a Rājput named Dayā Karan from the Jammu territory to restore order and rule in the country. [The Gulāb-nāma, p. 52.] Dayā Karan was the son of Pūran Karan and grandson of Jambu Lochan, the founder of Jammu town and of the Jamwal dynasty of Rājputs. Some historians connect him with the line of the Rājās of Mathurā. Dayā Karan and 35 Rājās of his line are said to have ruled here. This latter part of the tradition, Sir Aurel Stein says, has been added by a Kashmiri Pandit to please the present rulers of Kashmir hailing from Jammu—Introduction to the Rājatarangini, Vol. I, page 73. Also Gulab Singh by K. M. Pannikar, page 14.

2. Kalhana takes, as the starting point of his chronological calculations, the traditional date indicated by Varāhamihira's Byhatsamhitā for the coronation of Yudhiṣṭhira, the Pāṇḍava hero of the Epics. The date of this legendary event is accepted by him also for the accession of Gonanda I, the first of the “lost” kings of Kashmir, whose name, as we are told, was recovered by the chronicler (or his predecessors) from the Nilamata Purāṇa. The exact reason for the equation of these dates is nowhere given. But it appears that the story as contained in the earlier version of the Nilamata, which Kalhana had before him, represented Gonanda I in a general way as a contemporary of the Kauravas and Pāṇḍavas.—Stein’s Introduction to his English Translation of Kalhana’s Rājatarangini, Vol. I, page 59.
Jarāsandha, king of Magadha, and laid siege to the town of Mathurā, but was killed in the battle.

Dāmodara I.

He was succeeded by his son, Dāmodara I, who, impelled by the desire to avenge his father's death, attacked Krishnā at a svayamvara which was held by the king of Gandhāra, the corridor of India, a territory lying on the banks of the Indus. Dāmodara was killed, whereupon Krishnā installed the late king's pregnant widow, Yaçovatī, on the throne.

The queen bore a son who was placed on the throne as Gonanda II while yet an infant. The Mahābhārata war occurred soon after; but as the king of Kashmir was yet an infant, his alliance was sought for neither by the Kurus nor by the Pāṇḍus.

(b) The Pāṇdu Dynasty.

A Gap of 35 Kings.

Then came thirty-five kings one after the other, whose names and deeds, according to Kalhana, have been lost through the destruction of records. Pir Hasan Shāh,* a noted local Muslim historian, however, fills up the gap by allotting a rule of one thousand years to twenty-two kings of the Pāṇḍu dynasty. If we give credence to the traditions prevailing among the present-day Kashmiris—who ascribe every old monument to the Pāṇḍus calling it Pāṇḍavārīkī or Pāṇḍu edifice—Pir Hasan Shāh's statement may be given a value comparable to that which attaches to the account of Kalhana up to the middle of the 8th century of the Christian era. Himāl and Lōlarē, two noted heroines, in two love stories so popular in Kashmiri folk-lore, belonged to this period. Himāl's lover was Nāgrāī. Lōlarē's lover was Bōmbur.

*Zain-ul-'Abidin (1420-70 A.C.) is said to have instituted a search for ancient manuscripts, and copies of certain chronicles were found. Of these, Kalhana's chronicles were by far the most important. But the history of thirty-five of the early Hindu kings was still missing. Subsequently, an old manuscript was discovered written on birch-bark. This was called the Ratnākara Purāṇa and was of especial interest, as it contained a record of those kings whose reigns were omitted from Kalhana's history. Zain-ul-'Abidin had a Persian translation made, but both this and the original have disappeared, though the historian, Pir Hasan Shāh, is said to have obtained a copy of the translation. It is, however, impossible to vouch for this story.
According to this account of Pir Hasan Shâh, Haranâdeva, a scion of the Pândus, is said to have taken service with Gonanda II, and risen to the office of minister to the king. As often happened in those days, Haranâdeva killed the old Râjâ, usurped the throne, and founded a dynasty of his own.

Râmadeva.

The second ruler of this dynasty, Râmadeva, is said to have been a conqueror, having vanquished as many as 500 kings, and brought under his sway the whole of India from the Arabian Sea to the Bay of Bengal. He assessed land revenue at one-tenth of the gross produce, which was raised to one-fifth by one of his successors.

Sundarasena.

In the reign of Sundarasena, twenty-second in the line, a great earthquake clove open the earth in the middle of the capital Samdhimatnnagar, and the whole city was submerged along with its king and inhabitants. The site of the city is now occupied by the Volur (Wular) lake. Lava, chief of Laulaha or Lôlauv (modern Lôlâb), the beautiful and fertile valley, oval in shape and situated on the north-east side of Kashmir, was then elected King.

(c) The Maurya Dynasty.

Açoka.

We may pass over the next twenty kings whose names, but no deeds, have been preserved, and come down to Açoka. In spite of a number of surmises to the contrary, there is a consensus of opinion among historians that Açoka of Kashmir history was the Emperor Açoka of Magadha, who reigned from 272 B.C. to 231 B.C., and whose dominions extended eastward to Bengal and westward to the Hindûkush.* Açoka was a Buddhist who erected many vihâras or monasteries, and stûpas or sacred cupolas. He acted on the policy of religious toleration and patronized all religions.

* The chronological position and genealogical relations of Açoka of Kashmir as stated by Kalhana show him to have been different from the Açoka of India and to have existed about a thousand years before the latter. But Kalhana's chronology before the ninth century of the Christian era is absolutely unreliable, while his genealogical connexions are mere attempts at arranging kings in one line of descent—Stein's Introduction to his English Translation of Kalhana's Râjatarangini, Vol. 1, page 64.
One of the greatest lessons that he taught to his people was to "overcome all lassitude," and he never spared himself any pains. This description of the Emperor Açoka agrees entirely with that given by Kalhana, though the latter's chronology was so vague that he dates the Kashmir Açoka a thousand years before the great Indian emperor of the same name.

The Emperor Açoka's rule in Kashmir is the first great landmark in the history of this country which was then governed through a deputy who had his seat of government at Taxilā (Pāli—Takkaśilā or Takshaçañā). This is about the time when Rome and Carthage were beginning to grapple together in the Punic Wars. Açoka built the original town of Srinagar, at a site about four miles above the existing capital and which is now occupied by a small village called Purāṇādhiṣṭhāna (old capital) or Pāndrēthaṇa. "He had broken through the fetter of Brāhmanism and established friendly intercourse with Greece and Egypt, and it is to this connexion that the introduction of stone architecture and sculpture in Kashmir is due." Buddhism, offering a higher morality and persuasive argument at the same time, disarmed Brāhman opposition and spread rapidly. It very deeply affected the Kashmirī character. The extraordinary patience that the Kashmirī shows under the severest visitations of nature such as cholera and earthquake is clearly traceable to this early Buddhist influence. The outside appearance of most of the present-day Muslim shrines is not unlike that of Buddhist pagoda: though all details are entirely Saracenic as we shall see under the section on architecture. Buddhism lingered on in the Valley right up to the times of Kalhana who was himself an admirer of Buddha though he

1. In the time of Jalauka, the alleged son and successor of Açoka, Buddhists are stated by Kalhana to have been "powerful and flushed with success." History tells us that it was Açoka who raised Buddhism from the status of a local sect to one of the great religions of the world, and it was he who sent missionaries to Kashmir. If we accept the chronology of Kalhana, we shall have to place Açoka of Kashmir at least a thousand years before the date of the Emperor Açoka, and we also stand a fair chance of falling into the ridiculous anachronism of introducing Buddhism into Kashmir fully eight centuries before its founder was born.—Stein's Introduction to his English Translation of Rājatarāṅgini, Vol. I, page 64.


was a Çivaite. The pond in which the temple of Pândrê-than was erected has now been drained and the plinth excavated. The domed roof is a fine piece of sculpture. The temple is about 18 feet square with projecting porticos. It was erected in 921 A.C. by King Pârtha whom we shall know later.

Jalauka.

Âcoka was succeeded by Jaloka or Jalauka, whom, perhaps, from the phonetic similarity of names or from the close succession of one by the other, Kalhaña states to be the son of the former. His name, however, is quite unknown to Indian history. He may have been a native king of Kashmir. He may have come to the throne by a coup de main, similar to that by which Chandragupta Maurya, took advantage of the utter confusion and anarchy that prevailed in western India on the return of Alexander the Great, and established the Maurya empire on the ruins of the small states shattered by the great Macedonian conqueror. During Añoka's later years the country was harassed by Mlecchas, probably the restless Mongolian hordes from the steppes of Central Asia who were always on the move in search of new pastures and new homes. The strong hand of the Emperor was soon after removed by death. The difficult nature of the surrounding country and the cares of an already unwieldy empire may have kept his successor from any attempt at its recovery. At any rate, there was anarchy and confusion in Kashmir, and the time was ripe for the native adventurer, Jaloka or Jalauka, to try conclusions with the foreign depredators, in which he was successful. Jalauka was a popular hero and a worshipper of Çiva. The first religious edifice on the isolated hill, rising to about 1,000 feet above the plains, and known as Takht-i-Sulaimân and called by Hindus Çankarâchârya, was built by Jaloka about 200 B.C. The temple is supposed to have been rebuilt in the 6th century A.C. by Râjâ Gopâditya. At first an opponent of Buddhists, Jaloka finally became friendly to them. He is said to have conquered Qannauj and Gandhâra and brought lawyers and other people from those parts to settle in the country. Kalhaña gives useful information concerning the administration of the country. It appears that up to the time of Jaloka, government

2. Old name Gopâlri 'the Gopa-hill'.
consisted of seven main state officials—the Premier, the Judge, the Revenue Superintendent, the Treasurer, the Commander of the army, the Purohita (Ecclesiastical Minister) and the Astrologer. Jalauka increased this number to eighteen of whom no details, however, are given. Dāmodara.

Jalauka was succeeded by Dāmodara II, whose stories cluster round the Dāmodara Īḍar, an arid alluvial plateau some eight miles south of Srinagar that served as a dam to bring water to his town of Gudasuth, now a small village of 476 souls, situated on the plateau. There is an aerodrome at Dāmodara Īḍar.

"Christ in Kashmir?" Samdhimati.

At this stage of Kashmir, though our chronology differs from that of Kalhana, yet the period being the same, we cannot help referring to an event of extraordinary interest. In Tarangā second of the Rājatarāngini of Kalhana, there is a cloka (No. 90) which refers to a certain minister Samdhimati-Āryarāja "the greatest of sages," and minister to Jayendra (61 B.C. to 24 A.C.). Both Sir Aurel Stein and Mr. R. S. Pandit, in their translations, speak of him as having led a life of poverty, suffered a long imprisonment, and "death at the stake," and then coming to life again, and having consented to the prayers of the citizens" ruled Kashmir for forty-seven years. Finally, this Samdhimati turned Sanyāsi, but whither he went we know not, neither does Kalhana’s chronicle throw any light on this point. This man is not mythical. He seems to have an historical individuality.

There is a tradition, rather persistent, occasionally reinforced by casual accidental occurrences which are given prominence by a certain class of writers, namely, that Christ was buried in Srinagar, some go to the length of calling him Hazrat Yūz Āsaf, and point to his grave at Khānayār in Srinagar. But Yūz Āsaf, supposed to be the descendant of Moses, was sent as an ambassador to the court of Bad Shāh by the ruler of Egypt. Yūz Āsaf, written in Arabic characters, can be also read as Bodhisattva. There is no substantive proof for the visit of Christ to India, but it is

---

1. These eighteen officers evidently correspond to the eighteen "Tirthas" or court officials, mentioned in the Mahābhārata II, V. 38.—Stein’s Rājatarāngini, First Book, verse 120, footnote 120, pages 22, 23.

2. The Dāmodara Kārewa (Dāmodara Īḍar) is called by Kalhana Dāmodarasuda. Īḍar is the Kashmiri word for the Persian term Kārewa (plateau).
indeed a strange coincidence in world history that Christ should have had resurrection somewhat similar to that of Samdhimati though certainly not exactly so. The dates of Samdhimati and Christ are also almost identical. To say that Samdhimati is no less a person than Christ himself would be far too bold an assertion. But the fact remains that the great Prophet of Galilee and the minister of Kashmir have certain strong resemblances and both the personalities live in the same age though so far apart as Palestine and Kashmir. It is a mystery indeed to the writer as it must be to the reader. And we leave it at that.

(d) The Kushāna Dynasty.

Yueh-chi.

We may now come to the Yueh-chi, a Turkish race, who had established themselves in the valley of the Oxus, and overturned the Greek kingdom of Bactria in the second century before Christ. The vanquished people moved southward and conquered the whole of Northern India, which they retained until they were extinguished by the Kushāna section of the Yueh-chi.

Kadphises I, A.C. 15.

In about 15 A.C. Kadphises I, chieftain of the Kushāna clan of the Yueh-chi, welded together all the sections of the Yueh-chi nation, and conquered Afghānistān.

Kadphises II, A.C. 45.

He was succeeded about A.C. 45, by his son Kadphises II, who sent an army to conquer Eastern Turkistān. The expedition ended in disaster, and he was compelled to pay tribute to China.* He subsequently conquered Northern India as far as Benares.

Kanishka, A.C. 78.

Kanishka succeeded Kadphises II in 78 A.C., and extended his empire as far south as the Vindhayas and upper Sind. He annexed Kashmir, and with this we reach once more the terra firma of historical record in the annals of this country. He was a Buddhist by faith, and had his capital at Peshāwar where the remains of some of his monuments have been exhumed. He erected numerous monuments in Kashmir,

*Vincent A. Smith presumes that it was Kanishka and not Kadphises II, whose armies fought against China.—Early History of India, 3rd Edition, 1914, page 253.
and built the town of Kanishkapura, the modern village of Kānispōr,\(^1\) about six miles from Bārāmūla. Under his patronage the third council of the Buddhist church was held, which carried on its deliberations in the Khandelvan Vihār, near Hārvan in Kashmir, about 100 A.C., under the presidency of Nāgārjuna and drew up the Northern Canon or "Greater Vehicle of the Law."

The Great Bodhisattva, Nāgārjuna, lived in his time at Hārvan,\(^2\) higher up the Shālimār. Nāgārjuna was a Buddhist alchemist of great fame. He was born in the land of Vidarbha (Berar)\(^3\) as the son of a wealthy Brāhman who had remained childless for many years. Astrologers were called in and they found that the child could only have a span of seven years. Before the end of the seventh year, his parents, in order to be spared the painful sight of the child's predicted death, sent him on a journey to other places till he arrived at Nālandā and met Āchārya Rāhula. At Nālandā he became a monk, and devoted himself to religious studies. He contradicted the doctrines of the Brāhmans and taught the monks at Nālandā. The Nāgas used to attend his sermons in the guise of young boys. On invitation from the Nāgas, he resided three months in their dwelling place. On account of his connexions with the Nāgas, he received the name of Nāgārjuna. One statement is that his mother gave birth to him under a tree called Arjuna. Hence Nāga and Arjuna combined became Nāgārjuna. In course of time, Nāgārjuna became the head of the whole Buddhist church. Most authorities agree that Nāgārjuna flourished in the first century of the Christian era. He is one of the celebrated teachers elevated to Bodhisattva-ship and is the alleged founder of the Mahāyāna system

2. According to some Buddhist records, Menander, the Bactrian king of Northern India (155 B.C.), delighted in controversies with Nāgārjuna (Ancient India by R. C. Dutt, p. 119); but local historians are silent about Menander.
3. Recent excavations have revealed one of the oldest monuments at Hārvan, containing the only remains of its kind in India. A temple and some tablets have been unearthed, which date the monument as belonging to the Kushāna period, when Kashmir was closely connected with Central Asia. The remains are situated only a few furlongs below the water reservoir at Hārvan," Srinagar.—Jammu and Kashmir Annual Administration Report for 1940-41, published in 1942, page 9 m.
Buddhist Remains in old Harvan, near Srinagar.
which he is said to have introduced into Tibet. He is represented as at once a poet, a philosopher, a physician and an author of great ability. Perhaps, different Nāgārjunas have been mixed up in one.

Kanishka conquered Kāshghar, Yārqand and Khutan, then dependencies of China.

_Huvishka_, 123 A.C.

It is probable that Vasishka and Huvishka, who were the sons of Kanishka, acted in succession as viceroys, but it appears that Vasishka predeceased* his father who was succeeded in his whole empire by Huvishka in 123 A.C.

Huvishka founded Hushkapura, the modern Ushkārā, a small village near Vārāhamūla or the modern Bārāmūla. His rule lasted till about 140 A.C.

_Vasudeva or Jushka_, 140 A.C.

He was succeeded by Vasudeva, also called Jushka, who died in about 178 A.C., when Kushāna rule came to an end in Kashmir. The dynasty, however, lasted in Kābul and the Punjāb till they were swept away by the Hun invasion in the 5th century A.C. The Kushāna chronology, it may be noted, is not yet quite definite.

_Abhimanyu I._

Jushka was succeeded by Abhimanyu I in whose reign Buddhism received a check in Kashmir.

(e) The Gonanda Dynasty.

_Gonanda III._

Abhimanyu I, was followed by Gonanda III, the founder of the Gonanda dynasty.

_Nara._

Gonanda III, revived Brāhmanism and a reaction against Buddhism began. King Nara, the sixth in the line, is said to have burnt down "thousands of vihāras (monasteries)." From this time onward, Buddhism in Kashmir declined steadily.

(f) The White Huns.

_Mihirakula_, 528 A.C.

We may pass over the next four kings and come down to Mihirakula, the White Hun, who seized the throne of Kashmir in 528 A.C. Under his father, Toramāna, the

---

Hun empire had been established in the latter half of the fifth century in Afghanistān and Western India.¹ Mihirakula succeeded in 510 A.C., his capital being Çakala in the Punjāb, which may be identified with Siālkoṭ, according to Fleet, or with Sangala Hill in the Sheikhūpurā district or, according to Anspach, Janjīlā in the Amritsar district of the Punjāb.² He was “a man of violent acts and resembling death,” whose approach the people knew “by noticing the vultures, crows, and other birds which were flying ahead eager to feed on those who were to be slain.” His revolting acts of cruelty became so abhorrent that the native princes formed a confederacy, and, under the leadership of Bālāditya of Magadha and Yaçovarman of Central India, inflicted a decisive defeat on him. Mihirakula fled to Kashmir where he was kindly received by the king and placed in charge of a small territory. He repaid the king’s kindness by seizing his throne and putting him to death. Then issuing from Kashmir, Mihirakula attacked and conquered Gandhāra and drowned multitudes of people in the Indus. Kalhana depicts him in the blackest colours of cruelty as being surrounded day and night by thousands of murdered human beings. Mihirakula delighted in acts of cruelty and people still point to a ridge (Hastivanj—from hastī, elephant, and vanj, to go—the passage for elephants) on the Pir Pāntsāl (Pir Panjāl) range, near ‘Aliābād Sarāī,³ where the king, to amuse himself, drove one hundred elephants over the precipice, enjoying their cries of agony. He favoured Brāhmaṇas, and hated Buddhism. He committed suicide about the middle of the fifth century, overpowered probably by the sense of his own misdeeds.

[The Pir Panjāl Pass is 11,400 feet above sea level, and the neighbouring peaks are upwards of 16,000 feet high. Gulmarg is but one of the many mountain meadows found at different elevations on the northern slopes of the Pir Panjāl. The Kausar-nāg—the largest mountain lake of Kashmir 13,000 feet above sea level, and over two miles long is on the Pir Panjāl range. The lake is surrounded by some of the most picturesque of the Himalayan peaks. Three of these peaks each about

1. The White Huns or Ephthalites came originally from Eastern Turkestan.—Early History of India by V. A. Smith, 3rd Edition, 1914, pages 315-16.
2. Chakla (or modern Chaklāla, near Rāwalpindi) appears, perhaps, more probable on account of its geographical and phonetic similarity.
3. ‘Aliābād Sarāī, about half a mile above Hastivanj and 46 miles from Srinagar, is a halting place to the north of the Pir Panjāl Pass. The sarāī which offers some accommodation to travellers, and stands in wild and dreary solitude was a Mughul hospice. During the wintry portion of the year, it is buried in snow and unvisited.
The Jāmi' Masjid at Pampar which is noted for saffron and lies on the Jhelum, about 9 miles from Srinagar.
15,500 feet high tower over the Kausar-nâg. G. T. Vigne, in his Travels, Vol. I, page 265, writes: "Panjâl is a Persian word, signifying a range of mountains. The Kashmirians call it Pansal, which more properly signifies a station where water is provided for passengers." Reference to half a dozen standard dictionaries of the Persian language furnishes no clue to the meaning given to it by Vigne. Grierson's Dictionary of the Kashmiri Language does not also give the meaning noted by Vigne. Stein says that the Pañcûla is the original of the modern Pûntsal. (Râj., Vol. II, p. 396.)

Habîb Kaifwâ of Jammu evokes patriotic sentiments in the Kashmiri by his lines on the Pîr Panjâl:

The Pâdhsâh-nâma has the following on the Pîr Panjâl:

[Poem in Devani script]
It is said that, on clear days, the minarets of Lahore, 130 miles distant as the crow flies, can be seen from the top of the Pir Panjal Pass—V. A. Smith's edition of Bernier's Travels, 1914, footnote on page 407.]

Kālidāsa.

It was during these troublous times of the Huns, it is believed, that Kālidāsa, one of the greatest poets of India, was born in Kashmir. He flourished during the latter half of the 5th or the first half of the 6th century a.c. This date is assigned to Kālidāsa on the basis of his reference to the Huns in Kashmir in the Raghuvamsa. It is pointed out that Kālidāsa left his home in Kashmir during the unsettled days of its occupation by the Huns, and travelled throughout the length and breadth of the country, halting perhaps much longer at Ujjain than at other places.

[The following points, according to Pandit Lachhmidhar, raise a strong presumption in favour of the view that Kālidāsa was a native of Kashmir:—

(1) His affectionate description of the rice-fields and the songs associated with the rice-fields.

(2) His description of a living saffron plant which is grown in Kashmir and which no non-Kashmirian writer is known to have described. The practice of painting the ladies' breasts with the saffron paste so frequently mentioned by Kālidāsa was also a real practice in ancient Kashmir.

(3) His description of the Devadaru forests, lakes, tarns, glades, caves with lions, musk-deer on the higher altitude of the mountains all point in the direction of Kashmir as the home of Kālidāsa.

The following arguments give a strong indication that Kālidāsa was a Kashmiri by birth:—

(1) Kālidāsa refers to some sites of minor importance in Kashmir which have till recently been considered as imaginary; but modern research has identified these sites with their ancient names. The sites are only of local importance and could not be known to one who was not in close touch with Kashmir. They are in the Sind Valley.

(2) Kālidāsa, in his description of Kashmir in the Çakuntalā, refers to the lacustrine origin of Kashmir, which is commonly known to Kashmiris. He shows his partiality for Kashmir.

(3) Reference is made to certain Kashmirian legends such as that of Nikumbha which are known only to Kashmirian writers.

(4) The personal religion of Kālidāsa was the Kashmiri Çavism based on the doctrine of the Pratyabhijña philosophy unknown outside Kashmir. It is remarkable discovery, it is pointed out, that the drama of Çakuntalā is an allegory of the tenets of the Pratyabhijña philosophy of Kashmir. Recently a view has been expressed that there is no evidence in Çakuntalā that there ever existed anywhere Pratyabhijña philosophy during the period that Kālidāsa lived, as this philosophy originated in
ANCIENT SRINAGAR.
GROUND-MAP REPRODUCED FROM SURVEY, 1880-80.
ANCIENT SITES AND NAMES
BY
M. A. STEIN, PH. D.
MDCCCLXVII.
Kashmir in the first half of the 9th century A.C., * Somānanda being the originator of the system. There is, however, no doubt that this tendency of thought may have been developing before it was systematized by Somānanda.

(5) The argument of the Meghadūta points to Kashmir as the home of Kālidāsa.—Mahāmohāpādhyāya Pandit Lachmidhar, M.A., M.O.L., Shāstri, Head of the Department of Sanskrit, University of Delhi, in his University lectures during the month of March, 1925, on "The Birth-place of Kālidāsa." These lectures were printed in book form in 1926 by the University.

**Yudhishthira I.**

The last of the Gonanda line, Yudhishthira I, was a worthless ruler, and was turned out by his own subjects who called in a foreign king, and subsequently Kashmir went under the suzerainty of Vikramāditya Harsha of Ujjayini (Ujjain).

**Vikramāditya.**

There is, however, no indisputable proof in the shape of inscriptions and coins, of the existence of Vikramāditya in the first century B.C. The era of which he is held to be the founder was not called by his name till the tenth century A.C.

**Pravarasena II, 580 A.C.**

On the death of King Harsha, about the third quarter of the sixth century, Kashmir was conquered by Pravarasena II, a prince of Mālavā who ruled in 580 A.C. Pravarasena-Čreshthasena, alias Tunina II, who is said to have ruled for 30 years, from 88 to 58 B.C., is Pravarasena I. The present city of Srinagar called after him Pravarapura and subsequently Pāndrēthan, was founded by him. According to verse 354 of the third Taranga of Kalhana, this king had “the Great Bridge” constructed of boats for the first time in Kashmir.

[Srinagar, the City Royal, is the ancient and present name of the city. During Muslim rule, it was called Kashmir, or locally Kashir, and Biruni accordingly notes that “the city of Kashmir covers a space of four farsakhs.” (Sachau, Vol. I, page 207). But when the Sikhs took Kashmir in 1819 A.C., they restored the old name Srinagar, which was originally Shrinagara or Shrinagar, and according to Kalhana, founded by Aṣoka, on a site near the present city. The site of the present city was selected by Pravarasena II, who called it Pravarsenapura shortened to Pravarapura. Nāgarā means the city

---

* * The Doctrine of Recognition (MS.) by Mr. R. K. Kaw, M.A.
and Shri is the name of the goddess Lakshmi and may be taken to mean wealth, or beauty or sovereignty. Shri here does not mean Surya or the sun, and it is a mistake to call Srinagar the 'City of the Sun.'

Srinagar has an area 4 miles in length and 2 miles in breadth. It is situated somewhat in the centre of the Valley of Kashmir, and extends along both banks of the Jhelum which is spanned by seven bridges. The river winds its way through the city with an average width of 80 yards. The greater part of the city lies on the right bank. It is strange to note that no two buildings are alike. The city is 5,250 feet above the sea level. In spite of this elevation, July and August are hot and somewhat humid. But the spring and autumn are very pleasant. The mean temperature is 35° in January and 80° in July. The annual rainfall seldom exceeds 27 inches.

The population of Srinagar, according to the census of 1931, was 1,73,573 of which 1,38,764 are Muslims and 33,670 are Hindus, 870 Sikhs, 257 Christians, 4 Buddhists, 4 Zoroastrians and 3 Jains. The Census of 1941 gives the population of Srinagar as 2,07,787, which means an increase of 34,214 or 19.71 per cent. during the last ten years. Srinagar is the terminal of one of the Central Asian trade-routes. Like most ancient capitals, it has been built and re-built at different times and on different sites.

"The suburbs of Sreenuggur call up reminiscences of those of Constantinople with their turbaned tombs of departed Moslems—their green luxuriance of nature and squalid penury of art—but the fancied resemblance grows less and less as you approach the city. To enter it you pass no imperial walls or massive gateways, but little by little the houses huddle themselves closer together, and at last form a street, narrow and dirty and stony enough to induce a relapse into your dreamy memories of Stamboul, while here and there a high-featured face and stately form, in ample turban and flowing robe, stalks by and helps to keep up the delusion. But now a gap in the wall of houses on your right lets in a stream of warm light on the dark, foul footway and through it you see close by you, not the broad bosom of the breezy Bosphorus or the crowded waters of the Golden Horn, but a sluggish stream glittering in the sunlight and covered with boats of all sizes; some heavily laden barges are being slowly putted up stream, while others of lighter build glide past merrily, propelled by the rapid strokes of half a dozen paddles—it is a busy scene. And on the opposite side of the river, you see reproduced as in a mirror a facsimile of the bank you stand on—the same houses, the same landing-places, the same people—for it is the Jhelum that you look on; and on his right bank and on his left stand the crowded dwellings of the capital of Kashmir—Sreenuggur." (Col. Torrens' Travels, pp. 246-47.) But the modern visitor will find a great deal of difference between Istanbul and Srinagar now. Istanbul has dwindled while Srinagar has considerably expanded. Istanbul is Europeanized. Srinagar too has changed but is still essentially Asiatic.
Mayasum is the island formed by the Tsunt-i-Kol canal. It was called, at one time, the European quarter, on account of the Residency, the hotel, the club, and the Post and Telegraph offices and some European shops and banks in Srinagar.

Bālādityya.

This dynasty of the White Huns lasted for about half a century, the last of the line, Bālādityya, dying without male issue.

(g) The Kārkoṭa Dynasty.

Durlabhavardhana, 627—663 A.C.

The throne devolved upon Bālādityya’s son-in-law, Durlabhavardhana, who was of humble origin stated to have been the son of a Nāga. His family was given to ophiolatory or serpent-worship which had been the prevailing religion of Kashmir from time immemorial. [The Ancient Geography of India by Alexander Cunningham, p. 92.] He was the founder of the Nāga or Kārkoṭa dynasty.

[The word Kārkoṭa as an appellative indicate different plants; it also occurs as the name of a presumably un-Āryan tribe. There is probably some connexion between the Nāga name ‘Kārkoṭa’ and the word Carkota, which in the Atharva-Veda is used to indicate some kind of poisonous snake. In the lists of principal Nāgas found in epic literature, the Nāgarāja Kārkoṭa (ka) takes an honourable place. He is the procreator of this royal house. In the kingdom of Nepāl, Kārkoṭa takes a prominent position in popular worship and legend, and is considered to be foremost among the Nāgas of Nepāl. The country round Mathurā must once have been a great centre of Nāga worship. Bastar, the feudatory state in the south-east corner of the Central Provinces, is ruled by a Nāga dynasty. Most Gond chiefs in this same Province pretend to be descended from the Nāgavanḍa. A caste of the Kāyasthas of Bengāl derive their origin from a serpent king. The Nāga Hills is the name of a district in the Surma Valley of Assam. In further India, we meet with royal clans which are believed to descend from a Nāgi ancestress. The story of the Nāgi ancestress is widely spread in the Far East in China and Japan. Nāga is the name of the capital of the province of Camarines Sur, Luzon, Philippine Islands.

1. Like great royal families who trace their origin to the sun or the moon. The Mikado of Japan is a modern example.
2. Indian Serpent-Lore or the Nāgas in Hindu Legend and Art, by J. P. H. Vögel, Ph.D., Professor of Sanskrit and Indian Archaeology in the University of Leyden, Holland, late Superintendent, Archaeological Survey of India.—Arthur Probsthain, London, 1926, pp. 214-16,
The great importance of the Nāgas both in Buddhist and in Brāhmanical lore is reflected in plastic and pictorial art. Among the frescoes of the Ajanta there are several representations of Nāgas.

Regarding the origin and significance of Nāga worship, there prevails a very marked diversity of opinion. According to James Fergusson, the Nāgas were not originally serpents but serpent-worshippers—an aboriginal race of the Turānian stock inhabiting Northern India, who were conquered by Āryans. Dr. C. F. Oldham is of the opinion that the Nāgas claimed descent from the sun and had the hooded serpent for a totem. Takshaqilā (Taxila), he says, was the chief city of the Nāga people, and Takshaka was one of their chiefs.

The Nāga somehow or other is mixed up with the cult of Shaivaism. Shiva is imagined to have depended for his ornaments on the Nāgas (serpents). And it is claimed that South Indian Shaivaism migrated to Northern India, leaving in the south its remnants in the Nāgaras, or Nāyars. The tribe of Nāgas had powerful kingdoms in different parts of India as testified to by the names of important cities called Nāgpur, in many parts of India. (The Origin of Shaivaism, by K. R. Subramanian, M.A., University of Madras, 1929.)

Durlabhavardhana of Kashmir is believed to have been really the offspring of the Nāga Kārkoṭa mentioned in the opening paragraph.

With the establishment of the Kārkoṭa dynasty, we reach the firm ground of comparatively authentic history. Durlabhavardhana reigned from 627 to 663 A.C. The visit of the Chinese pilgrim Yüan Chhwāng (Hiuen Tsiang) to Kashmir (631-633 A.C.) occurred during the time of this king who accorded a hospitable reception to the pilgrim. Hiouen Thsang “resided in the Valley as an honoured guest for fully two years. The two full years represent a longer halt than any which the pious traveller allowed himself during his sixteen years’ wanderings through the whole of India and Central Asia. The records of this great Chinese pilgrim contain by far the fullest and most accurate description of Kashmir that has come down to us from a foreign pen during the period.”4 Hhusen K’wan’s description of the people of Kashmir is:—“Light and frivolous, and of a weak, pusillanimous disposition. The people are handsome in appearance, but they are given to cunning. They love learning and are well-instructed.”

1. Tree and Serpent Worship, 1873.
2. The Sun and the Serpent, 1905.
3. This name has more than half a dozen forms.
4. The Ancient Geography of Kashmir by Dr. Stein, page 14.
Recent excavations at Tāpar, 22 miles from Srinagar, or 4 miles below Paśaṇ, on the Srinagar-Bārāmūla road. Tāpar is ancient Pratāpura built by Pratāpāditya II, 663-713 A.C., the father of Lalitāditya-Muktāpiḍa.
Kashmir is one of the most important and most famous lands in the history of the spread and development of Buddhism.* In the literature of this religion we find frequent reference to the capital, and the country generally, in terms of praise and admiration. But H-üan Chwang found that “this kingdom is not much given to faith, and the temples of the heretics are their sole thought.”

The country was prosperous and peaceful. The political power of Kashmir extended to all the adjacent territories on the west and south including Râjapuri (Rajauri), Parâotsa (Pûnch), Bhimbar, Uraçâ (Hazâra), Taxila (Takkasilâ or Takshaçila) and Simhapura, which seems to have included the Salt Range.

_Durlabhaka, 663—713 A.C._

Durlabhavardhana’s son and successor was Durlabhaka or Pratâpâditya II. _En passant_ Pratâpâditya I (169—137 B.C.) was a relative of King Vikramâditya and is said to have been brought from abroad by discontented ministers of Kashmir. Durlabhaka ruled for fifty years from 663 to 713 A.C. This was the time of Chinese aggression towards the west, during which Turkistan and Western Tibet were conquered and annexed to the ‘Celestial’ empire.

(Excavations in September, 1942, were undertaken and are continued by the Archaeological Department of Jammu and Kashmir State at Täpar, ancient Pratâpapura, built by Pratâpâditya II. The village Täpar is situated at a distance of 22 miles from Srinagar, or 4 miles below Patan. The ruins have been discovered of the base of a temple, its gateway, its courtyard and the plinth of the enclosure wall. The material used is blocks of stone of such dimensions as are generally found in the case of other temples of the period. The temple is sacred to Vishnu. From the perusal of fragments of the Sanskrit inscription found engraved in the Çâradâ script on some stones built perhaps in the cornice course of the gateway, it is evident that the construction is somehow connected with a certain Brähman, son of Gâghha, and the architect is named Lakshmana. The date is ascertainable from the reference given in the inscription to the reign of Mándadeva (Paramândadeva) or Pârmanudeva (son of Jayasimha) of later chronicles.

“The temple as well as the outer enclosure is square in plan both externally and internally. It resembles all other temples of Kashmir in point of massiveness of the stone material, simplicity of style and finish of the dressing.” Kalhana does not say anything about the construction of a temple by Pratâpâditya, when describing the foundation of the town Pratâpapura.—Note by Pandit Madhusûdan Kaul, Supdt., Archaeology, Srinagar.

Chandrāpīda, 713–721 A.C.

Durlabhadaka's son, Chandrāpīda, who came to the throne in 713 A.C., sent an embassy to the emperor of China, from whom he received the investiture of kingship, becoming a feudatory of the emperor.

Tārāpīda, 721–725 A.C.

He was succeeded in 721 A.C., by his younger brother, Tārāpīda, who ended his days in 725 A.C., after a cruel rule of 4 years.

Lalitāditya-Muktāpīda, 725–753 A.C.

Then came the glorious rule of Lalitāditya-Muktāpīda, the youngest son of Pratāpāditya. He is the hero of vast conquests. Kalhana shows him to be the universal monarch, moving round the earth like the sun. He certainly subdued parts of the Punjab and defeated and dethroned Yaçovarman of Kānyakuiba (Qannauj) in 740 A.C. He also brought the well-known poet Bhavabhūti, who hailed from Vidarbha (Berar) to his court. Before this, he had led a successful expedition against the Bhauṭṭas of Baltistān, whom he defeated on the banks of the Indus. In 733 A.C., he sent an embassy to the Chinese emperor, Hūsan-tsuang (713-755 A.C.), to report his victories over the Tibetans, and also to solicit the establishment of a camp of Chinese troops by the banks of the Volur (Wular) Lake. Muktāpīda also applied to the Chinese emperor for aid against the Arabs who were advancing from their base in Sind and Multān and of whom we hear for the first time in connexion with the history of Kashmir. [733 of the Christian era is 115 of the Hijra.] But the "Divine Khān" contented himself with merely ordering a sumptuous entertainment for the ambassador and with investing Muktāpīda with the title of king. The chiefs of Jullundur, Kāngrā and Punct were among Muktāpīda's feudatories. He is the most conspicuous figure in Kashmir history. He raised his country to a pitch of glory it had never reached before. The ruins of the temple of Mārtaṇḍa, about 5 miles from Anantnāg or Islāmābād, and of his city, Parihāsapura, fourteen miles from Srinagar, bear eloquent testimony to his greatness.

References:
2. Ancient India by R. C. Dutt, pages 149-150.
A view of the ruins of the city of Maranga, which was the capital of the Monoceros Kingdom. The city was founded in the 8th century BC and was ruled by the Monoceros dynasty. The ruins include several temples and palaces, including the famous Temple of the Sun, which is located on a hill overlooking the city. The ruins are an important historical site and are visited by tourists and archaeologists alike.
The celebrated temple of Mārtanda possesses far more imposing dimensions than any other existing temple, being 63 feet long. The pillared quadrangle round the temple is 220 feet by 142 feet. The stone carving is very fine indeed. G. T. Vigne, the traveller, says: "As an isolated ruin this deserves on account of its solitary and massive grandeur to be ranked, not only as the first ruin of the kind in Kashmir but as one of the noblest amongst the architectural relics of antiquity that are to be seen in any country." Another view* is that there is something of the rigidity and strength of the Egyptian temple and something of the grace of Greece. Though Hindu, it differs from the usual Hindu types, and is known distinctively as Kashmirian and owes much to the influence of Gandhāra. It is, however, decidedly Hindu and not either Buddhist or Jain, while, the sculptures show, according to Marshall, a close connexion with the typical Hindu work of the late Gupta period. This great temple of the sun at Mārtanda became the model for all subsequent Brāhmanical temples in Kashmir.

Extensive drainage works were also carried out under Muktāpida's orders, and vast areas were reclaimed and made fit for cultivation. Muktāpida raised the number of court offices from 18—under Jalauka—to 23, the five new offices being those of High Chamberlain, Minister of Foreign Affairs, Master of the Horse, Keeper of the Treasury, and Chief Executive Officer. His end is enveloped in mystery. He died probably during an expedition towards the north.

When engaged in his last expedition, Muktāpida sent out a sort of instrument of instruction on the art of governance. He warned his Kashmiri subjects against internal dissension, and against neglecting the forts in respect of repair and provisions. Dwellers in mountains, he said, should be occasionally punished to prevent their becoming strong and troublesome. "Every care should be taken that there should not be left with the villagers more food supply than required for one year's consumption, nor more oxen than were wanted for the tillage of their fields. Because if they should keep more wealth, they would become in a single year very formidable Dāmaras or feudal lords and strong enough to neglect the commands of the king." The cultivator's style of living must be lower than that of the city.

people. Offices should not be held by family cliques, and troops should not be raised from a single district. Lalitāditya’s rule ended in 753 A.C., and was followed by four short reigns.

Vajrāditya.

The history of Kashmir mentions Muslims a second time when Kalhana represents the younger son and the second successor of Lalitāditya-Muktāpīda, viz., Vajrāditya—also known by the name of Bappiyaka—as selling many men to the Mlechhas or Muslims and introducing into the country practices which befitted Mlechhas or Muslims.

[The term Dāmara is one of common occurrence in Kalhana’s Chronicle, and the persons whom it designated play a prominent part in the latter portions of the narrative, says Stein. The word Dāmara, in the sense in which it is used in the Rājatarāṅgini and the later Chronicles has not yet been traced outside Kashmir. In the Hindu period of the history of Kashmir, Dāmara means the well-to-do landed gentry or feudal barons. Ranjit S. Pandit adds: The barons or the rustic aristocracy of Kashmir were not equal to the Rājputras in the social scale, yet Kalhana mentions instances of inter-marriage between them and between the Dāmaras and the ruling family of Kashmir. Any one could become a Dāmara who apparently began as a prosperous cultivator. He could wax strong in course of time as a powerful feudal baron capable of being “a thorn in the side of the king.” Kalhana also uses the term Lavanya to designate them. Harsha’s efforts to suppress the Dāmaras ended in his own rule and life. In present-day Kashmir, Dārs claim their decent from the Dāmaras.]

Jayāpīda, 751—782 A.C.

Here follows the 31 years’ powerful rule of Jayāpīda, a grandson of Lalitāditya-Muktāpīda, who came to the throne in 751 A.C. He went on a conquering expedition to the valley of the Ganges where he defeated the king of Qanaaj. He had, however, to return soon as his throne had been usurped in his absence by his brother-in-law. The king was a liberal patron of learning, and many poets and scholars flocked to his court. He founded the town of Jayapura-Andarkōth near modern Sumbal. Towards the

2. Ibid., Book IV, verse 397, page 158.
end of his reign, he became a cruel and rapacious tyrant. The reason for this is not given by Stein, but Pandit Birbal Kachru’s account of the Rani’s love for a Brahman youth and the meeting and ultimate immolation for fear of sin in the absence of her lord, and of Jayapida’s rage which impelled him to avenge his Rani’s tragedy by killing Brah- mans, fits in with the gap unexplained by Sir Aurel. Jayapida was followed in 795 A.C., by an indolent and extravagant prince who, in a twelve years’ rule, squandered away the riches amassed by his father.

Avantivarman, 855—883 A.C.

The history of the next half century is a record of the installation and dethronement of puppet kings, and of the jealousies and intrigues of rival factions at the court till we come to the reign of Avantivarman (855-883 A.C.) the founder of the Utpala dynasty. During the concluding years of the Karkota dynasty, the country towards the south of the Panjhal range had thrown off its allegiance to the Kashmir throne, and small independent principalities had sprung up at Rajauri and other places. The kingdom of Kashmir was restricted to its natural boundaries, extending only to four marches below Baramula. Avantivarman wisely refrained from undertaking foreign conquest, and bestowed his whole attention on the internal consolidation and development of the country which had greatly suffered—economically and politically—from the disorders of the preceding reigns, from the feuds of powerful barons and the rapacious administration of the Kayasthas or clerks.

The country had been liable to heavy floods and famines. The Kashmir Valley was in a water-logged condition. Cultivation was poor. Avantivarman’s able engineer, Suyya, undertook to drain the Valley. He saw, as have modern engineers in our own day, that floods in the Valley were due to the fact that the passage of the Jhelum through the Baramula gorge had been blocked by silt and boulders brought down into it from a neighbouring nullah or stream. This obstruction was removed by Suyya, and the result was a large increase of land available for cultivation and increased protection against floods. He then carried out other extensive drainage and irrigation

1. The Mukhtasar-ut-Tawarih by Pandit Birbal Kachru, written in the time of Colonel Mehan Singh, a Sikh Governor of Kashmir, MS. folios 42-44.
works under the orders of the king; and it is no wonder that the native historian exults over the economic prosperity of the land which was the direct result of these engineering schemes. The modern village Sopōr (old Suuyapura) commemorates the name of this great engineer. It was founded by him at the point where the Jhelum leaves the Wular Lake. The memory of the king is also preserved to this day in the village of Avantipura (Vāntipōr) which lies one march above Srinagar. The ruins of the ancient temples at Avantipura are, according to Stein, among the most imposing monuments of ancient Kashmirī architecture and sufficiently testify to the resources of the builder. Of the two temples dedicated to Vishṇu and Čiva respectively—Avanti śvāmin and Avantiçvara—the first was built before his accession and the second subsequently by Avantivarman.

The medieval development of Brahmanical architecture in Kashmir is represented by two golden periods, or, to be more precise, rose to its greatest heights under two prominent building rulers, Lalitāditya who brought the style into being in the middle of the eighth century and Avantivarman under whom it attained its most refined form in the latter half of the ninth century.

The reign of Avantivarman also witnessed a remarkable revival of Śanskrit learning in Kashmir. Čivāsvāmin was one of the geniuses of Avantivarman’s court. Some of the others were: (i) Rātnākara, who wrote the Haravijaya in fifty cantos and lived under two kings, viz., Jayāpida and Avantivarman; (ii) Ānandavardhana, the author of Dhvanyāloka; (iii) Ḫallati, the great pupil of Vasugupta, the originator of the Spandaçāstra division of Kashmir. Čiva-

1. Sōpur (Sopōr) had a population of 10,982 in 1931, 11,770 in 1941. Zain-ul-Abidin here built a bridge over the Jhelum in 1460 A.C. Čivara refers to the building of a new royal residence at Suuyapura by Sultan Hasan Shāh. The present town which stands on both banks of the river, is one day’s journey by boat from Srinagar. It is a great centre of trade, but not a Municipality, having a Town Area Committee only.

2. Avantipur is now a village situated at a distance of 18 miles from Srinagar. It has the ruins of several temples two of which are conspicuous and have been described in detail by Rāi Bahādur Rām Chandra Kāk, B.A., in his Ancient Monuments of Kashmir, 1933. The population in 1941 was 1,487.

The ruins of the Temple at Vāntipōr or Avanṭipura on the Srinagar-Islāmābād road.
King Cankaravarman's (883–902 A.D.) minister, Ratnavardhana, built this miniature temple at Pašan on the Srinagar-Bārāmūla road.
svāmin is credited with the authorship of seven Mahākāvyas, several dramas, prose works and other writings. But the Kapphinābhudyadaya and a few stray verses make up all that is left to the student to read and admire. Āivasvāmin’s work “assumes an importance in the history of Sanskrit literature in general and the literary history of Kashmir in particular, inasmuch as it helps to show the development of Kāvya in Kashmir and the influence of Ratnākara on his contemporaries.” Its theme is neither Paurānic, nor epic, nor historical, but it deals with the Buddhistic legend of King Kapphina, one of the twelve great disciples of the Buddha. The Kapphinābhudyadaya, which remained in obscurity for the last millennium or so, is now made available by the University of the Pañjab; it has been, for the first time, critically edited by Pandit Gauri Shankar.*

Čāmkaravarman, 883—902 A.C.

Avantivarman’s son and successor, Čāmkaravarman (883-902 A.C.), scandalized his subjects by introducing an ingenious scheme of fiscal oppression. He plundered the treasures of temples and was guilty of unlimited and ruthless extortion. To perpetuate his memory, he built the town of Čāmkarapura, the present Pañtan (now having a population of 3,032) and its temples, from the materials he had obtained by the plunder of the town and temples of Parīhāsapura. But the town did not flourish. The ruins of two temples still stand today at Pañtan, 17 miles from Srinagar, on the Bārāmūla road. One was erected by the king and the other by his queen, Sugandhā. Čāmkaravarman invaded the territories of Rajauri, Gujrat, Kāngra, and Hazāra, but without any permanent effect, as his kingdom, after all, remained restricted within its natural boundaries. He died during his expedition to Hazāra.

“From this reign onward, the record is one long succession of struggles between the rulers and usurping uncles, cousins, brothers, ministers, nobles and soldiers.” During the century following 902 A.C., the rulership of the kingdom changed hands as many as eighteen times. One claimant dethroned another several times like Pārtha and Chakravarman. Chakravarman was assassinated in the chamber

*Āivasvāmin’s Kapphinābhudyadaya or Exaltation of King Kapphina by Pandit Gauri Shankar, M.A., B. Litt. (Oxon.), Lecturer, Government College, Lahore, 1937.
of a Domba girl, and such was the degradation of court morality that the murderers were freely urged on by the king’s own wives to crush his knees with a large stone as he lay dying in the embrace of the Domba girl (937 A.C.).

Yaçaśkara, 939—948 A.C.

The country was harrassed by the oppressions of the nobles and ministers, and save for a short respite that the country enjoyed under Yaçaśkara’s mild rule of nine years (939-948), utter confusion and anarchy prevailed. Two Kings then come and go in two years.

(i) The First Lohara Dynasty.

Kśemagupta, 950—958 A.C.

Kśemagupta’s rule lasted from 950 to 958 A.C. He married Diddā who belonged, on her mother’s side, to the Čāhi of Udabhāṇḍa (Ohind).

Abhimanyu II, 958—972 A.C.

Queen Diddā (980—1003 A.C.) was a woman of unscrupulous but forceful character. She misgoverned the unhappy country for half a century. She was Queen Consort from 950 to 958. She was Regent from 959 to 980 for Abhimanyu, the infant son of Kśemagupta. Abhimanyu’s reign is shown as from 958 A.C. to 972 A.C., during which time a terrible conflagration destroyed a great many buildings from the market-place to the shrine of Vishṇu.

Diddā, 980—1003 A.C.

Diddā ultimately reigned as sovereign for 23 years. She ruthlessly put down all rival parties executing captured rebels and exterminating their families. The result was that the throne passed without opposition to Sāmgrāmārāja (1003-28), a nephew of Diddā, whom she had nominated in her own lifetime and who became the founder of the Lohara dynasty. He was, however, a weak ruler.

1. Outline of Ancient Indian History and Civilization by Dr. R. C. Majumdar, 1927, pages 438-39.
3. Modern Loharin is a valley in Pūnc. Queen Diddā was on her mother’s side a granddaughter of King Bhima Čāhi of Udabhāṇḍa, who is mentioned in al-Biruni’s list of the Hindu Čāhiyas of Kābul. The Čāhi kingdom was destroyed by Mahmūd of Ghazna—Stein’s Introduction to his English Translation of Rājatarāṅgini, Vol. I, p. 104.
Old Capital, and so it was at one time in the history of Kashmir.

The name Pandershian is derived from the appellation Purandershiana which means "The Kingdom of Purandershiny" (506-321 B.C.). The village Pandershian lies 34 miles to the south-east of Srinagar on the road to Islamabad.

This temple of Meruvardhanshiana at Pandershian, dedicated to Vishnu, was built by Meruvardhana, the prime minister of the

King Purandesh (801-721 A.D.). The village Pandershian lies 34 miles to the south-east of Srinagar on the road to Islamabad.
Sultan Mahmud’s invasion.

The Raja’s reign is noticeable only for an invasion of Kashmir by Hammira (Kalhana’s name for Sultan Mahmud of Ghazna, apparently an adaptation of the title of Amir-ul-Muminiin) in 1015. The Kashmiri troops were defeated by the invader, but Hammira had to retire owing to inclement weather and the inaccessibility of the mountain barriers. Though Mahmud never entered Kashmir, perhaps Abu’l Hasan ‘Ali Farrukhi (d. 429 A.H. = 1037 A.C.) his contemporary, who accompanied him in his expeditions to Qannauj, Somanatha and probably to Kashmir, gives expression to Mahmud’s desire disappointed:

ما را ره کشمير هي آروزو آبد  ما زاروزتو خوش نايم يك موعه
غاه است كيه بکاره به کشمیر خرامس از دست بکان يه په گنیم از سر بکرت کر

To Amir Muhammad, Mahmud’s son, and the twin brother of Mas‘ud, Farrukhi says:

باش تا يا یا ادر خوش بکشمر شوى  لنتکر ساخت خوش بکشمر برى

Hariraja, 1028 A.C.; Ananta, 1028—1063 A.C.; Kalaça, 1063—1089 A.C.

Samgramaraja was succeeded by Hariraja who, after a reign of 22 days, was succeeded by Ananta. A rebellion of the Damaras, or feudal lords, was bravely put down by the king. He scored a victory over the Raja of Chamba, but his expedition against the hill state of Hazara proved an ignominious failure. He was personally weak; and much of his success in government was due to his pious and vigorous queen, Suryamati. She wanted the government of the country to be in stronger hands. So, on her advice, Ananta abdicated in favour of his son Kalaça. But Kalaça (1063-1089) was given to the company of depraved and dissolute associates. Although the people suffered much from his cruelty, he was able to make his power felt by the surrounding states from Hazara to Chamba. His successor enjoyed the regal state only for 22 days, and was succeeded by Harsha (1089—1101).

Abhinavagupta, the Čaiva Philosopher.

The great Abhinavagupta, the Kashmir Čaiva philosopher and literary critic, was born between 950 and 960 A.C. in a Brähman family that had migrated from Qannauj to
Kashmir during the reign of King Lalitāditya. Abhinavagupta was a voluminous writer on several subjects—Dramaturgy, Rhetoric, Philosophy and the Philosophy of Poetry. His contribution to ācāra philosophy is indeed very great both in volume and importance. Dr. Kānti Chandra Pandeśya¹ says that, according to the tradition current in certain old Pandit families and some old Muslim houses, Abhinavagupta walked with twelve hundred disciples into the Bhairava cave, about five miles from Māgām, midway between Srinagar and Gulmarg, and was never seen again.

[Note.—Dr. V. Raghavan details A.’s works in the Journal of the Oriental Research, Madras, October—December, 1940].

Kshemendra.

Kshemendra,² the ornament of the Sanskrit poets of Kashmir, was born on the Dal in the locality where the Nishāt Bāgh now stands, in the days of Ananta. Kshemendra’s father was Prakāṣendra, a rich, charitably disposed and learned Brāhman. The exact date of Kshemendra’s birth is not known, but his literary career runs from 1037 to 1066 A.C. He was one of the three sons of his father. Kshemendra studied under several teachers, but the most noted was Ganga. Kshemendra’s studies were wide extending to Hindu law, Sanskrit grammar, Ayurveda, politics, music and painting. He underwent a course of manual training, too, and knew carpentry and smithy as well, by the time he was 25 years of age. Then Kshemendra married and had a son called Somendra. Ananta engaged him to teach his son Kalaça.

Kshemendra was noted for his learning and wealth, his sagacity and generosity in maintaining boarding schools and for his humility. He enjoyed life, too. His book Darpadalana (Pride has a fall) Desha Upadesha (Advice about the country for foreign students) are well known. He is reputed to be the author of many books, of which thirty-four believed to be obtainable have mostly been printed at the Nirṇayasāgara Press, Bombay. Kalhaṇa has criticized his Nīpāvali for his classical error. He also charges him with “consistent carelessness.”³ Keith has discussed Kshemendra’s Brhatkathāmaṇjarī and other works at some length.

¹. Author of a Ph.D. dissertation on Abhinavagupta at the University of Lucknow in 1935, page 18.
². The Hamdard, Srinagar, 19th, 26th October, and 2nd November, 1941—Pandit Kavirāja’s contribution.
³. The Dynastic Chronicles of Kashmir, Dr. U. N. Ghoshal, The Indian Historical Quarterly, September 1942, page 198.
Bilhañña.

Bilhañña,¹ a great poet, senior to Kalhañña in point of age, was born in Khunamûsh or Khunamûh, 6 miles from Srinagar. His father was Jyêṣṭha Kalasha, a learned Brâhman noted specially for his studies in Sanskrit grammar. Bilhañña was the third son of Jyêṣṭha. On completing his education and finding no scope for his talents, on account of the oppressive rule of Kalaçä, Bilhañña, at the age of 16, is stated to have left Kashmir by way of Pûnch and entered the Punjáb, visited Lâhore and Jullundur. Then he moved to Mathurâ, Qannauj, and halted at Kâshî, where his fame as a grammarian attracted notice. He also appears to have been to Chhattarakotâ, Prayâg, Ânîhilvâd and Nâsik. At Kal-yâña, in the Deccan, there seems to have been a little romance² with the Râjâ’s daughter whom Bilhañña had been engaged to teach. A Kashmirî Pandit and, as such, no doubt, a handsome youth, accomplished, scholarly, he could not fail to win the heart of the princess, and the assent of the Râjâ, and thus Bilhañña’s marriage took place. Ultimately Bilhañña succeeded to the gaddi. But Keith is silent on this romance.

Bilhañña is the author of (1) Vikramâṅkadevacharita. (2) Karna-Sundari Mâlâ (3) Chaurapanchâsikâ. General Cunningham traced the first and Dr. Bûhler the second of these works.

When Bilhañña revived his desire to return to Kashmir, Harsha deposed Kalaçä. Tradition has it that he returned to his village Khunamûsh and died there at the age of 80. But there is no effective evidence to substantiate this claim.

Bilhañña is not much good at history. He is a poet whose language is simple and clear. He gives a beautiful glimpse of the Srinagar of his days in the clôkäs of the 8th chapter of his Vikramâṅkadevacharita on the adventures of Vikramâ.

Harsha, 1089—1101 A.C.

In person, Harsha was of powerful frame, great personal beauty, courageous and fond of display. He was well-versed in various sciences and a lover of music and art. But his mind was rather demented and his character was a jumble of contrasts. “Cruelty and kind-heartedness,

¹. The Hamdard, Srinagar, 14th and 21st September, 1941. Also Keith’s History of Sanskrit Literature, 1928, pages 153—158.
². The theme has been treated by Sir Edwin Arnold in his Chaurapanchâsikâ and retold by Professor P. Seshadri in his narrative poem, of about 800 lines, entitled Bilhañña.
liberality and greed, violent self-will and reckless supineness, cunning and want of thought—these and other apparently irreconcilable features in turn display themselves in Harsha’s chequered life.”1 His early rule, however, was characterized by prudence, and his munificence towards men of learning attracted many scholars from other countries. From Kalhana’s account it appears that Harsha supported Turushka (Muslim) captains of hundreds with money, or in the words of Sir Aurel Stein,2 Harsha had “Muhammadan troop leaders” in his service. Harsha’s elaborate fashions in dress and ornaments and his multifarious extravagances, however, soon involved him heavily in debt, to rescue himself from which he took to the spoliation of temples.3 He robbed them of their treasures. But he did not stop there. His tendencies led him on to the confiscation of cult images in order to possess himself of the valuable metal of which they were made. He was further reduced to the necessity of levying new and oppressive imposts. Even night-soil became the object of taxation. Harsha abandoned himself more and more to excesses and follies of all kinds. The country was visited by many calamities. Plague reduced the population, robber bands infested the roads, and floods occurred which brought famine and universal distress. But the fiscal exactions of the king continued unabated. The result was that his armies were humiliated abroad, and he was surrounded by conspiracies at home. When Harsha’s nephews, Ucchala and Sussala, raised the standard of revolt, all flocked to it. The palace was given to flames. The queens were burnt to death, the heir-apparent was killed. The king was hunted down and mercilessly slain in 1101. And his body, “naked like that of a pauper,” was cremated by a compassionate wood-dealer.

(j) The Second Lohara Dynasty.

Ucchala, 1101—1111 A.C.

Ucchala, Harsha’s eldest nephew, succeeded him. He broke down the power of the Damaaras or feudal lords by turning one against the other, and finally crushed them one by one. There was again a conspiracy against the king, and he was killed in 1111.

2. Ibid., verse 1149, Book VII, and footnote No. 1149, Volume I, page 357.
Two Centuries of Misrule.

The history of the two succeeding centuries is a sordid record of short reigns, murders, suicides, plots, conspiracies, rebellions, oppressions and fiscal exactions. To quote Sir Francis Younghusband, "we may accept, then, as authentic that the normal state of Kashmir for many centuries, except in the intervals when a strong, firm ruler came to the front, was a state of perpetual intrigue and assassination, of struggles with brothers, cousins, uncles, before a chief even came to the throne; of fights for power with ministers, with the military, with the 'nobles' when he was on it; of constant fear of poisoning and assassination; of wearying, petty internecine 'wars,' of general discomfort, uncertainty and unrest." Uchhala's successor reigned only for a night, and his half-brother for four months.

Sussala, 1112–20 A.C. Restoration, 1121–28 A.C.

The rule of his brother, Sussala (1112-20), was a succession of internal troubles caused by rebellious feudal lords, the Damaras. In 1120, he had to flee to Pûnch in the face of a rebellion. He was, however, restored to the throne and power by pretenders and nobles in 1121, and reigned till he was murdered in 1128. The king tried hard to break the power of the Damaras by cunning diplomacy but without much effect.

Jayasimha, 1128–1155 A.C.

Jayasimha, his eldest son, succeeded Sussala. Jayasimha reigned from 1128 to 1155. In this reign we read of Sanjapāla, the Senapati (Commander-in-chief), "going into camp with Yavanas (Muslims)" [Stein, Vol. 2, p. 175] who have already been referred to in Harsha's reign as "captains of hundreds."

Mammata and other Poets of the Period.

Mammata and his two brothers occupy a high position in the literary firmament of Kashmir during the beginning of the 12th century A.C. Mammata, the second son of the scholar Jaiyāta Bhaṭṭa, hails from Gālandar, near Pāmpar noted for saffron. Jaiyāta is the elder and Uvvāta the younger brother of Mammata. Although all the three were noted littérateurs, Mammata was the most distinguished of all. His book Kāvya-Prakāśa on prosody
is often set for the higher examinations of the Sanskrit language. Eighty-seven commentaries are known to have been written on the काव्याव्रत-प्राकृत of which 25 are available. Mammāta is supposed to be the maternal uncle of Harsha, the great poet-king of Qanrauj. The चाब्दा-व्यापारा-विचार in which the usage of words has been discussed is another well-known book of Mammāta. Māmalladevi was the mother of Harsha. Thus Harsha naturally visited Kashmir for contact with Sanskrit scholars of Srinagar.

Maṅkha.

Maṅkha* was another poet of this age. He was the fourth son of his father, Veshovrata, the son of Pandit Mammāta. Maṅkha was a pupil of Ruuyaka, the celebrated author of Alankārasarasvata. Maṅkha rose to the post of Director of Dharmārtha and Foreign Minister. Rājā Sussala looked upon him as a philosopher. Maṅkha wrote his first book Çrikantahcharita when 25 years of age, probably in 1039 A.C. It consists of fourteen chapters, and has 2,500 couplets. In Jayasimha’s time Maṅkha was the head of a college. Like Mulla Tāhir Ghanī he hated flattering others and had quite an independent mind.

Kalhana

Kalhana Pandit, the author of the celebrated saga of Kashmir called the Rājatarāṅgīni was the contemporary of Rājā Jayasimha. This was the time when, in England, Matilda was a fugitive, and the barons were at war with one another. Kalhana's metrical history of the rājās of Kashmir, written in Çaka 1070 or 1148-49 A.C. or 543-44 A.H., is a well-known work in the Sanskrit language. Kalhana was the son of Chanpaka, the minister of King Harsha of Kashmir (1079—1101 A.C.). Kalhana claimed to be a poet and historian and was, no doubt, skilled in both capacities. He attempted to give his readers a complete history of Kashmir, and, though, like most of the medieval historians, he combined fact with fiction, he “sincerely endeavoured to consult the varied sources of history.” He was well-versed in the literary and historical traditions of ancient India, and was likewise an erudite scholar. Kalhana's earlier chapters are “a medley of confused traditions and fanciful imaginations,” but he exercised “independence of

*The Hamdard, 28th September, 1941, Pandit Kavirāja's contribution.
judgment combined with strict impartiality and unsparing criticism in regard to contemporary events and persons including kings, officials and priests." In spite of all this, says Sir Aurel Stein, Kalhana must be treated with critical caution, as "his chronology is unreliable, his sources of information discrepant, and his frame of mind didactic." To sum up, though the Rājatarāṅgini avowedly belongs both in form and in substance to the literature of artificial poetry, its merits as an historical composition are many and undoubted, says Dr. Ghoshal.* Kalhana was a Brāhman by caste. He was a worshipper of Īśvara and an admirer of Buddha. The name Kalhana is derived through Prakrit Kallāna from Sanskrit Kalyāna, meaning 'happiness,' 'blessedness.'

The Rājatarāṅgini.

The Rājatarāṅgini was begun by Pandit Kalhana in 1148-49 A.C., and completed sometime in the following year. As R. S. Pandit says it was written about half a century before the defeat of Prithvi Rāj Chauhān and nearly two centuries before the advent of the Shāh Mīrīs. It comprises eight cantos. Each canto is called a Tārāṅga or Wave. The number of verses in each canto or Tārāṅga is—(i) 373, (ii) 171, (iii) 530, (iv) 720, (v) 483, (vi) 368, (vii) 1,732, (viii) 3,449.

The first translation of a portion of the Rājatarāṅgini was in Persian, made by order of Sultān Zain-ul-Abīdin who named the version Bahr-ul-Asmār, or "The Sea of Tales." Akbar ordered Mullā 'Abdul Qādir Badaōni to revise this version and to complete the translation. An abridged edition of the Rājatarāṅgini, in Persian, was brought out by Haidar Malik Chādurā during the reign of Jahāngīr. In 1835 A.C., an edition of the Rājatarāṅgini was published by the Royal Asiatic Society of Bengal in Calcutta. This edition was based on the transcript obtained by William Moorcroft, a noted traveller of whom we shall hear later and who reached Srinagar in 1823, by permission of Mahārājā Ranjīt Singh, a part of whose dominion Kashmir then was. The first complete translation from the original Sanskrit appeared in French in 1852, under the auspices of Société Asiatique at Paris. This translation by Captain A. Troyer, then Principal of the Calcutta Sanskrit College, was made from the 1835 text in Sanskrit. The 1835 text is stated to

---

*The Dynastic Chronicles of Kashmir, The Indian Historical Quarterly, September 1942, page 201.
be defective. The late Sir Aurel Stein, accordingly published, at Bombay, a critical edition of the Rājatarangini in 1892.

Sir Aurel Stein's English translation of the Rājatarangini was published in 1904, though he completed it on the 18th May, 1900. Sir Aurel Stein's method of translation, says the Mahārāṣṭa Brāhman scholar, the late Ranjit Sitārām Pandit, does not give an adequate conception of the Rājatarangini as a literary composition to readers unable to study the original. Sir Aurel Stein also omitted to translate verses which he thought to be in "Kāvyā style," and others which are "unconnected with the narrative proper." Ranjit Pandit, therefore, brought out a complete translation of the Rājatarangini in October, 1935, following Sir Aurel's critical Bombay edition of 1892. This translation of Ranjit Pandit is an attempt to represent poetry in prose, is literal, and claims to preserve the original construction, as far as possible. It is, above all, a tremendous labour of love performed, by an irony of fate, in a jail during a sentence of imprisonment, courted under a burning sense of nationalism. No non-Kashmiri son-in-law has ever made to his Kashmiri father-in-law a more affectionate, a more beautiful, a more appropriate, and a more enduring present than the late Ranjit Pandit to the late Pandit Motilal Nehru. But it is sad, indeed poignant, that Motilal should not have lived to read Ranjit's English rendering of Kalhana's cantos of the River of Kings, the great saga of Motilal's own motherland!

Jayasimha's Successors.

The six reigns following Jayasimha cover a period of about a century and a half. It was a period of decay, and the power of Kashmir steadily declined owing to political confusion, internecine strife, civil war and the depredations of robber bands. The century and a half which passed from the accession of the Lohara dynasty to the date of Kalhana's Chronicle (Books VII, 1003-1150 A.C.), says Stein, represents a period filled for the greatest part by a succession of rebellions and internal disturbances of all kinds.

Jonarājā's record shows that, for nearly two centuries after Kalhana's time, Hindu rule maintained itself in Kashmir. The princes were weak and helpless. Rājadeva (1213-1236 A.C.), he says, insulted the Brāhmans, plundered them and made them cry: 'I am not a Brāhman,' 'I am not a Brāhman.' The material prosperity of the Valley was fading.
In the time of Simhadeva (1286-1300 A.C.) and his brother Sahadeva (1300-1 to 1319-20 A.C.), Kashmir was a country of "drunkards, gamblers and profligate women." In the last reign Dulcha—written in Persian histories of Kashmir as Zulchu—the commander of the army of the great King Karmasena invaded the country. Instead of facing him manfully, the Rājā fled to Kashṭavār (Kishtwār).

[The Valley of Kāştḥavāṭa, the present Kashtavār or more commonly Kishtwār, lies on the Upper Chenāb river, between Kashmir and Chamba on the way to Simla. It is mentioned by Kalhana as a separate hill-state. Possibly it was founded in the beginning of the 10th century A.C. Its rājās were Hindus till Aurangzib's time, and embraced Islam through the influence of Sayyid Farīd-ud-Dīn who came to Kishtwār from Baghdād in the reign of Shāh Jahān. The rājās retained their independence until the conquest of their territory by Mahārājā Gulāb Singh. Ya'qūb Shāh Chak, the last ruler of the Chak dynasty of Kashmir, came to Kishtwār for shelter when harrassed by Akbar's forces in 1586 A.C., and lies buried at Sirkōt on the Chaugān, the heath of Kishtwār.

The scenery of Kishtwār is almost unique, its inhabitants are peculiar; its remains are undeciphered and its sport is exceptional, says Mr. Otto Rothfeld.*

The flat plateau of Kishtwār is rather oval in shape than circular, resembling Bārāmūla. The plain is surrounded by towering mountains covered with oaks and hollies, the summits white with snow and densely wooded with pine trees:

\[
\text{The surface of the plateau extends to six miles from east to west and from north to south. Its soil is fertile and its tillage is rich. The plain is dotted with villages each hidden in its own grove of chinārs and poplars.}
\]

The Wardwan river flows through the Wardwan valley into the Chandrabhāgā which passing by Multān empties itself into the Indus.

In Kishtwar and down Wardwan way,
Each mountain in wintry grandeur towers,
And whitens with eternal sleet,
While summer in a vale of flowers,

Is sleeping rosy at its feet.
—Mary Petrie: In the Land of Lalla Rookh, page 196.

Was it, perhaps, therefore, that Jahāṅɡīr considered the saffron of Kishṭwār superior to that of Kashmir? (Beveridge, English Translation of Jahāṅɡīr’s Memoirs, Vol. 2, page 138).

The biggest of the villages, just referred to above, is the small town of Kishṭwār, 5,100 feet above the sea level and having a population of 3,235. It is about 74 miles south-east of Islāmābād by way of the Mārbal pass.

There are two ziyārāt or shrines: one of the saint Sayyid Farīd-ud-Dīn of Baghdaḍ and the other that of his son Sayyid Isrā‘īl-ud-Dīn, and hence the poet calls it the second Baghdaḍ—

ثاني بغداد يَا خلدت، بر يا كشتور
١٢٩
١٢٩
جاهزرا جگ وا کشتور دلکش جنت اللاء ای است این

In the following hill distich, the Köshur ridicules the poverty of Kishṭwār:

کشتور، کشت کا بنیاد، دن کر پھوکا رات کر لھتا
جھوکا آئے بھی کے جالس ہو ہو ساتیا کا جھندتا

[Kishṭwār is the causeway of distress, where people are hungry by day and cold by night.

Whoever comes there, when he goes away is as meagre as the flagstaff of a gosā‘īn or a recluse.]

A sketch of the history of Kishṭwār will be found in the Panjāb Historical Journal, Vol. IV, No. 1.]

Dulcha plundered the people, took slaves and set fire to the city of Srinagar. After impoverishing the Valley, during a stay of eight months, the invaders, when they found that provisions were scarce, tried to get out by the southern passes; but snow overtook them and the whole army perished along with their leader. Then, Gaddis (Hindu Bakarwāns) from Kishṭwār entered the Valley on a raiding expedition, but were driven back by Rāmachandra, Sahadeva’s commander-in-chief. Henceforth Sahadeva disappears. Bhoṭṭa or Bahuṭṭa Riṇchana or Riṇchan—or, to give his full name, Lhachen rGyalbu Riṇchen or Prince Riṇchen, the Great God, the son of Lha-chen dNgosgrub’s [or, according to Jonarāja—Vakatanya, Tibetan Vaka (?)], king of Western Tibet or Ladākh comes to the
scene. Rinchna fell out with Ramachandra and killed him. He then married Kotā Rānī, Ramachandra’s daughter, and proclaimed himself king in 1320 A.C., with Shāh Mir who had been loyal to him, as his vazir or minister.

Rinchen or Rinchna or Rinchan, 1320-23 A.C.

Rinchna eventually became a convert to Islam and assumed the title of Sultān Sadr-ud-Dīn.

Udyānadeva, 1323—1338 A.C.

After a short period of two years and a half, this Musal-mān king died on Friday, 25th November, 1323, A.C., when Udyānadeva, brother of Simhadeva, succeeded him, and married his widow. At that time, Kashmir was invaded by Achala whom to use Jonarāja’s words “the lord of Magadhapura had supplied with soldiers.” The king, Udyānadeva, like his brother, fled away before this invasion. Shāh Mir, his vazir, defended the kingdom successfully in his absence. The Rājā returned and reigned in Kashmir but as a mere cypher, Shāh Mir being all powerful.

Lalla, the noted hermitess, was born in 735 A.H. or 1335 A.C., during Udyāna’s rule.

Kota Rānī, 1338-39. A.C.

On Udyāna’s death in 1338 A.C., Kota Rānī, the queen, assumed power, but only for over five months.

Shams-ud-Dīn Shāh Mir or Mirzā, 1339—1392 A.C.

The vazir, Shāh Mir or Mirzā deposed the Rānī and himself ascended the throne with the title of Sultān Shams-ud-Dīn in 1339 A.C.

Causes of the ruin of Hindu rule in Kashmir.

It will be appropriate, here, to sum up the causes that made for the ruin of Hindu rule in Kashmir. The clashes between Buddhism and Brāhmanism, wicked rājās and vicious rānis, and the lack of character among officials appear to be the most noticeable. The disruptive factors of debauchery and intrigue were paramount. To these have to be added the neglect of the army owing to a sense of security from the natural barriers of the country. Intrigues and rebellions were common and rulers were puppets in the hands of powerful ministers who thought of self rather than the weal and welfare of the land of their birth.
Brähman's cultural contribution summarized.

Though Hindu rule came to an end through causes discussed above, we must not fail to pay tribute to the learning and culture that Kashmir enjoyed during the period covered in this chapter. Kashmiri Brähmans acquired great proficiency in Persian under Muslim rule, as we shall see later, and distinguished themselves as great poets and prose-writers. Such people naturally did great service to Sanskrit literature, and Kashmir was one of the most notable seats of learning in ancient India. Scholars came from far and near to complete their studies. We have already referred to the great names of Nāgārjuna, Kālidāsa, Kshemendra, Bilhana, Mammaṭa and his brothers, and Maṅkha and Kalhana. The philosophy of poetry has, in fact, originated in Kashmir. As a matter of fact, Bilhana asserts that saffron is the seed of poetry and, as no other province of India produced saffron, Kashmir alone is the true home of poetry. Apart from Sanskrit poetry and prose, the branches of learning that received most valuable contributions from the early forefathers of the Kashmīris were prosody, grammar, Čaiva philosophy, Buddhist philosophy, history, fairy tales, biographies, tantras or scriptures of Čaivism, Ayurveda or medical science and commentaries.

Out of the sixteen most famous rhetoricians of India, Kashmir has produced fourteen and the rest of India only two. Vāmana (750—800 A.C.) the founder of the Riti School, Udbhata (774—813) the teacher of the theory of three Vr̥ttis, Abhinavagupta the great expounder of the theory of Rasadhvani, and Mammaṭa (1100 A.C.) the upholder of the Rasa theory were all Kashmīrians.

In fact, Bhaṭṭa in modern Kashmīr is Baṭa, a Brähman, or a Kashmīri Pandit. Bhaṭṭa is derived from the Sanskrit word bhartar which in Prakrit form gave Bhaṭṭa which has been retained by Sanskritists and appended to proper names at the beginning or at the end. It was used in the sense of learned, and signifies a learned Brähman or a great teacher.

Prince Guṇavarman, a painter-missionary from Kashmir, was probably a pioneer* in the Southern Asiatic route to China, Korea and Japan. The Kashmīr of his age (400 B.C.) was also the seat of the University of the Buddhist

*India and the Pacific World by Dr. Kālidāsa Nāg—Book Company Limited, College Square, Calcutta, 1941, p. 173.
Kumārajīva, who came all the way from Tukhāristān of Kucha (near Khutan),—which corresponds roughly to the present Badakhshān,—to Kashmir to learn Sanskrit and various Indian sciences which he later took over to China.

Tradition has it that the great Čaṇkarāchārya (788—820 A.C.), visited Kashmir early in the 9th century A.C., after his blows to Buddhism in the rest of India, and that he was forced to accept the superiority of Kashmir Čaivism over his Vedāntic thought although there exists no internal evidence in any of his main works to this effect. Possibly it was someone else, his namesake.

[Shaṅkara, who—there are reasons to hold—was influenced by contact with early preachers of Islam in the South, gives definite indication of such influence in his emphasis on monism, his insistence on action rather than mere devotion, on purity of purpose rather than mere rituals. It may be that each element in Shaṅkara's thought was separately derived from Upanishadic sources but the peculiar composition of these elements and the shifts in emphasis of thought and action can be most easily explained by these new contacts with Islamic preachers down South where in Kaladi or Kelatī in Kerala the birth-place of Shaṅkara, the ruler had embraced Islam.]

Kashmir Shaivism.

Kashmir Shaivism, known as Trika-Shāsana, Trika-Shāstra or simply Trika, is a type of idealistic monism (advaita). It made its first appearance in Kashmir at the beginning of the ninth or perhaps towards the end of the eight century of the Christian era, says Mr. Jagadis Chandra Chatterji in his Kashmir Shaivism (Part 1, Srinagar, 1914, page 3).

Kashmir Shaivism has two branches—(i) the Spandācāstra and (ii) the Pratyabhijñācāstra. The authorship of the first, says Sir Rāmakrishna G. Bhandākar² is attributed to Vasugupta and his pupil Kaliṭa who lived in the reign of Avantivarman (855-883 A.C.). The two principal works of this system are the Shivasūtram or Shivasūtrāni and the Spandanārikās, which are fifty-one verses only. The founder of the Pratyabhijñā school of Kashmir Shaivism was Somānanda, who also wrote the work called Shivādrṣṭi. But the principal treatise of the school was composed by his pupil Udayakara, and contains verses which are called Sūtras. The pupil of the pupil of Somānanda was the well-known Abhinavagupta whom we have

1. Influence of Islam on Indian Culture, by Dr. Tara Chand, Indian Press, Allahabad, 1936, pp. 107-111.
mentioned on pages 59-60. The followers of the Spandaçāstra branch deny the necessity of God’s having a prompting cause or a material cause for the creation of the world. Neither do they admit that he is himself the material cause, nor do they think some principle of allusion generates appearances which are false. God is, according to them, independent and creates merely by the force of his will all that comes into existence. He makes the world appear in himself, as if it were distinct from himself, though not so really, as houses or even towns appear in a mirror, and is as unaffected in it as the mirror is by the images reflected in it. Nor does he exist only as realized in the world which is the conclusion that follows from the doctrine that he is the material cause.

The Pratyabhijñā school of Kashmir Shaivism accepts the doctrines of the creation of the world and of the relations between the individual and the supreme soul, as set forth by the Spandaçāstra school. But the way of the perception of the identity is recognition according to this Pratyabhijñā system. The Spanda school mentions the dawning of the form or vision of God on the mind in the course of meditation and thereby the clearing away of the impurities as the way to realization of identity with God. The Pratyabhijñā school maintains that recognition of oneself as God is the way.

These two systems do not enjoin restraint of the breath, concentration, and in the words of Sir Rāmakrishna Bhandārkar, all that “course of fantastic external and internal conduct or discipline” which the schools of Shaivism in India “prescribe as essential.” (page 131). In this respect, Kashmir Shaivism is very near to Islam, as Islam condemns self-mortification as a way to Realization. The Islamic way to Realization is simple, virtuous living, communion with God and service to humanity by sacrifice of one’s self for others, if need be by shedding his blood.

Kashmir Shaivism has another similarity. As an instance, the case of the celebrated Muslim mystic Abu’l Mughith al-Husain Mansūr al-Hallāj (244 A.H. = 858 A.C. to 309 A.H. = 922 A.C.) may be cited. He said An’l-Haqq, “I am Creative Truth.” Sir Muhammad Iqbal also has repeatedly emphasized understanding the secrets of the self for Realization.

Sir Mark Aurel Stein.

In closing this brief narrative of the Hindu period, it is fitting that a brief sketch should be given of the life of the late Sir Mark Aurel Stein who translated the Rājatarāṅgīni and to whom we are indebted in more than one way.

The late Sir Mark Aurel Stein, K.C.I.E., F. B. A., Correspondant de L’Institut de France; Ph.D.; D. Litt. (Hon. Oxon.); D. Sc. (Hon. Camb.), D.O.L. (Hon. Panjâb), retired as officer on special duty to the Indian Archaeological Survey, in 1929. He was born at Budapest on 26th November, 1862. Sir Aurel was educated in
Budapest and Dresden public schools and studied Oriental languages and antiquities in Vienna and Tubingen Universities and in England. While Principal, Oriental College, Lahore, and Registrar of the Panjab University (1888-99), Sir Aurel carried on antiquarian researches in Kashmir and edited and translated Kalhana's *Rājarājaśīvakīrī* which he recently revised. The new edition will contain "but a small number of additional notes." But it is not yet printed. Sir Aurel was appointed to the Indian Educational Service as Principal of the Calcutta Madrasah in 1899. He carried out archaeological explorations for the Government of India in Chinese Turkestan in 1900-1. After administrative work in the Punjab and as Inspector-General of Education, N.-W.F.P. and Baluchistān, Sir Aurel was engaged during 1906-8 in archaeological and geographical explorations in Central Asia and W. China when he was awarded the Royal Geographical Society's Gold Medal (1909). Sir Aurel was transferred to the Archaeological Survey in 1910, and carried out geographical and archaeological explorations in Central Asia and Iran during 1913-16, and was awarded the Gold Medals of the Geographical Societies of France and Sweden. For explorations in Upper Swāt, Baluchistān, Makrān during 1926-28, he was awarded the Petrie Medal in 1928. He died in Kābul in October, 1943. Sir Aurel Stein was created K.C.I.E. in 1912. As a reviewer remarks, Sir Aurel has written more than his size, that is to say, his works, if piled one upon another, would exceed his stature. Mohand Marg, above Gāndarbal, was his favourite resort. Here most of his writing was done.

See the Addenda to Chapter I on the following page.
Addenda to Chapter I

In Chapter I, on page 2 (1st para.), Piedmont is mentioned. Here is a short note on it. Piedmont is a territorial division of North Italy, enclosed on all sides, except towards the Lombard plain, by the vast semicircle of the Pennine, Graian, Cottian, Maritime and Ligurian Alps. The population of Piedmont in 1921 was 3,527,847. It has an area of 11,340 square miles. Reeling and throwing of silk, manufacture of cotton, woollens and clothing occupy a large part of the population. The Piedmontese dialect has been rather strongly influenced by French.—Extracted from the Encyclopaedia Britannica, Vol. 17, p. 915.

In the top para. on page 6, in Chapter I, there is a reference to Matterhorn. Here is a short note on it. Matterhorn is the famous peak, 14,782 feet high, in the mountaineering centre of Zermatt, in the Swiss Alps on the frontier between Switzerland and Italy. Many intrepid pilots have lost their lives in attempts to circle this peak, although more than one successful attempt has been recorded, the first one on July 14, 1865, the second three days later, both on the Italian side. Nowadays it is frequently ascended in summer, especially from Zermatt.—Extracted from the Encyclopaedia Britannica, Vol. 15, pages 94-5.
CHAPTER III

THE SPREAD OF ISLAM IN KASHMIR

In the preceding Chapter, we came across references to Arabs at the time of Muktāpida, and to the employment of Muslim captains of troops under Harsha. Later, we met Riñichana and noted his conversion to Islam to become Sultān Sadr-ud-Din. We saw the appointment of Shāh Mīr as Vazīr, and also saw him as sovereign of Kashmir on the discomfiture of Koṭā Rānī. Before we take up Shāh Mīr as Sultān Shams-ud-Dīn, and deal with the Shāh Mīri dynasty he founded, it is necessary for us to know how Islam entered the Valley of Kashmir, and spread itself to an extent only second to Egypt, Írān, Afgānistān or Central Asia.

Islam made its way into Kashmir, says Stein,1 not by forcible conquest but by gradual conversion, for which the influx of foreign adventurers both from the south and from Central Asia had prepared the ground. The adoption of Islam by the great mass of the population began towards the close of Hindu rule, and became an accomplished fact during the latter half of the fourteenth century.

Earliest Contact with Sind.

Let us now turn to Sind for a moment, as it is Sind that received the first Muslims from Arabia. According to the Chach-nāma,2 which, in Mountstuart Elphinstone's estimate, "contains a minute and consistent account of the transactions" during the invasion of 'Imād-ud-Dīn Muhammad bin Qāsim bin Abī 'Aqīl Saqafī and "some of the preceding Hindu reigns." Chach Brāhman, the son of Silāij, and the father of Rāja Dāhir, usurped the kingdom of Sāhasī, the son of Siharas who was the son of Dīwāij. The boundaries of the dominions of Sāhasī extended on the east to Kashmir, on the west to Makrān, on the south to the shores of the ocean and to Daibal, and on the north to the mountains of Kardān or Karwān and to Qaiqān. He had established

---

2. The Chach-nāma is the Persian translation of the extinct Arabic Futūh-us-Sind by 'Alī bin Hāmid bin Abī Bakr Küffi. The Persian translation was made in 613 A.H. = 1216 A.C., during the time of the ruler of Sind, Amīr Qubācha, the rival and contemporary of Iltutmish of Delhi.
four maliks, or governors, in his territory. The fourth of these governors was "at the great city of Multān and Sikka, and Brahmapur, and Karūr, and Ashahār and Kumba, as far as the borders of Kashmir, were under his government." Sāhasī Rāi, the sovereign of all this dominion, died and was succeeded by Chach Brāhman who had entered service as a chamberlain to this sovereign. Dāhir ultimately succeeded Chach.

Dāhir was slain by Muhammad bin Qāsim on Thursday, the 10th of Ramazān in the year 93 A.H., or June 712 A.C. Dāhir's son, Jaisiya, went to wait on the Rāi of Kashmir. A person bearing the name Hamīm, the son of Sāma, a Syrian, accompanied Jaisiya to Kashmir. The Rāi of Kashmir ordered that, from among the dependencies of Kashmir, a place called Shākalhā should be assigned to Jaisiya. According to General Cunningham, this place may possibly be Kuller-Kahar in the Salt range which, at that time, belonged to Kashmir. Jaisiya died in Shākalhā and was succeeded by Hamīm son of Sāma. Hamīm "founded masjids there, and obtained great honour and regard. He was much respected by the king of Kashmir."

No light is thrown on the origin and mission to India of Hamīm the Syrian. But we read, in another place, of Muhammad ‘Allāfī or ‘Allānī, called an Arab mercenary. He was an "Arab of the Banu Usāma, who had killed ‘Abdur Rahmān son of Ash‘ab, for having run away from battle, and came to join Dāhir, with five hundred Arabs." Subsequently ‘Allāfī was dismissed by Dāhir, and Muhammad bin Qāsim granted ‘Allāfī a safe passage. It is not improbable that Hamīm was one of the attendants of ‘Allāfī. This Hamīm, the Syrian, is ostensibly the first Muslim to enter Kashmir.

We have also to note that Muhammad bin Qāsim, after the conquest of Sind, came to Multān. Here "he erected a Jāmi‘ Masjid and minarets." He appointed Amir Dā‘ūd Nasr, son of Walid ‘Ummānī, its governor. Then ibn Qāsim proceeded to the boundary of Kashmir called the Panj Māhiyat, at the upper course of the Jhelum, just after it debouches into the plains. This is about the time of the caliphate of Walid I* (86-96 A.H. = 705-715 A.C.).

---

THE SPREAD OF ISLAM IN KASHMIR

In the course of our brief outline of the pre-Islamic period of the history of Kashmir, we meet with Lalitāditya-Muktāpīda, who ruled from 725 to 753 A.C., applying to the Chinese Emperor for aid against the Arabs who were advancing from their bases in Sind and Multan, and of whom we hear for the first time in connexion with the history of Kashmir from the Rājataranginī. Lalitāditya-Muktāpīda, as Stein1 says, is misspelt in the Arabic characters as Muttapir. His reign according to the Islamic era dated from 107 to 136 A.H. We may in passing note that the Arabs won a victory over the Chinese in 751 A.C. or 134 A.H., and acquired Gilgit and other possessions.2 Muktāpīda’s younger son and second successor, Vajrāditya-Bappiyaka, ruled between 754 to 761 A.C. During his reign, viz. 137 to 144 A.H., we note that this ruler “sold many men to the Mlechhas” (or Muslims), and “introduced into Kashmir practices which befitted Mlechhas” (or Muslims). In Harsha’s time, thereafter, we hear of Turushkas, or Muslims, as troop-leaders in Kashmir or in Kalhana’s words “as captains of hundreds.” Harsha’s rule lasted from 1089 to 1101 A.C., or 482 to 496 A.H. Marco Polo,3 the Venetian traveller, also refers to the presence of Muslims in Kashmir about 1277 A.C. or 676 A.H. Following Kalhana and Jonarāja in their chronology, we reach Rinchan or Rīchana during 1320-1323 A.C., or 720 to 724 A.H., which is the terra firma of the advent of Islam as a state religion in Kashmir. In the twelfth century of the Christian era, Stein4 tells us, the conversion of the Dard tribes on the Indus from Buddhism to Islam had already made great progress. This is about two centuries before Rinchan who becomes Sultān Sadr-ud-Dīn and the first Muslim ruler of Kashmir.

Islam neither affected the independence of Kashmir nor, at first, materially changed its political and cultural conditions. The administration, to resume quotation from Stein, remained, as before, in the hands of the traditional official class, the Brāhmans, for whom a change of religion presented no advantage, and the retention of their old creed apparently involved no loss of inherited status. This appears from the frequent references, made in Jonarāja’s

---

2. The Indian Antiquary, July 1908, page 181.
and Črivara's Chronicles, to Brāhmans holding high official posts under the early Sultāns. Sanskrit continued to be, for a considerable period, the language of official communication and record in Kashmir even after the end of Hindu rule. The various forms of official documents, reports, etc., which are contained in the Lokaparakāsha, a handbook of Kashmirian administrative routine, are drawn up "in a curious Sanskrit jargon, full of Persian and Arabic words which must have become current in Kashmir soon after the introduction of Islam." The use of Sanskrit, even among Musalmāns, is borne out by the Sanskrit inscription on a tomb in the cemetery of Hazrat Bahā-ud-Dīn Ganj Bakhsh, at the foot of the Hari-parbat in Srinagar. This inscription was put up in the reign of Sultān Muhammad Shāh, sometime in 1484 A.C. or 889 A.H. Brief Sanskrit inscriptions, without dates, have been found by Stein1 on a number of old Muslim tombs at Srinagar, near Mātaṇḍ and elsewhere. Even in certain proper names the reader will notice non-Muslim influences.

Islam and Hinduism.

"Islam is a force of volcanic sort, a burning and integrating force, which, under favourable conditions may even make a nation," wrote the late Sir Herbert Risley.2 "It melts and fuses together a whole series of tribes, and reduces their internal structure to one uniform pattern, in which no survivals of pre-existing usages can be detected. The separate strata disappear; their characteristic fossils are crushed out of recognition; and a solid mass of law and tradition occupies their place. Hinduism, transfused as it is by mysticism and ecstatic devotion, and resting ultimately on the esoteric teachings of transcendental philosophy, knows nothing of open proselytism or forcible conversion, and attains its ends in a different and more subtle fashion, for which no precise analogue can be found in the physical world. It leaves existing aggregates very much as they were, and so far from welding them together, after the manner of Islam, into larger cohesive aggregates tends rather to create an indefinite number of fresh groups; but every tribe that passes within the charmed circle of Hinduism inclines sooner or later to abandon its more primitive usages or to clothe them in some Brahmanical disguise.

Infant marriage: with all its attendant horrors is introduced: widows are forbidden to marry again: and divorce, which plays a great, and on the whole, a useful part in tribal society, is summarily abolished."

Sir Herbert discusses the motives assigned in various cases of conversion to Islam and suggests: "(1) Genuine religious conviction of the purity and simplicity of Islam, derived from the study of the Muhammadan scriptures or from the preaching of the Maulavis who go round the villages. The conversion of high-caste Hindus, Brahmans, Rajputs, Kayasths and the like is commonly ascribed to this cause. (2) The growing desire on the part of the lower Hindu castes to improve their social position leads individuals among them to embrace a creed which seems to offer them a fair chance in life. (3) The proverb "Love laughs at caste" accounts for a large number of conversions. (4) Causes connected with taboos on food and drink and with various caste misdemeanours have also to be taken into account. Hindus in sickness or distress are tended by Muhammadans and take food and water from their hands; the caste ex-communicates them and they join the ranks of a more merciful faith."

In Kashmir there is not much difference in food between the Muslim and the Hindu, for both enjoy mutton, fish and flying birds, though certain restrictions among the latter are, at times, vexatious. The orthodox Pandit, for instance, would not take tomato, onion, egg and fowl, reminding us of the tradition which allows a dog to be starved or beaten but never to be kicked as it accompanied Yudhishthira to heaven.

Another Contrast.

A piquant contrast between Hinduism and Islam, not by a Hindu, nor by a Muslim, but by a Christian from the West, is not quite irrelevant to the subject under discussion. Writes Mr. Guy Wint in India and Democracy: "Breathing from infancy the axioms of caste, Hindus accepted human inequality as a permanent and inexpugnable fact; Islam was a levelling religion with a passion for equality by which even its monarchs were periodically humbled. Hinduism,

1. The People of India, pages 247-248.
if in its purest form neither idolatrous nor polytheist, permitted among its rank and file the crudest forms of worship; Islam has always been iconoclast. In spite of the worldly display of India, Hinduism honoured the ascetic and was awed by the other-worldly; Islam, in spite of its puritan sects, was a voluptuous religion. The emotional impulse of Hinduism was the quest for tranquillity; of Islam (in spite of Kismet) the lust for action. Hinduism was subtle, elaborate, luxuriant; Islam plain and unadorned.

"That the two cultures interacted and modified one another goes without saying. For example, where Islam flourished, the caste system weakened; and under Hindu influence Islam lost something of its asperity. In the centuries when Turks, Afghans and Moghuls dominated North India the upper classes of both communities came closer together, and from their fraternization emerged for a brief period what may be termed the Urdu culture, a civilization of the court circles which was a genuine blend of the best in the life of both peoples and by means of which it appeared that they might be reconciled. Among the masses the contact was even closer, since the great bulk of Moslems of the lower class were converts from the depressed castes of Hindus, and these at least in part retained caste observance, conserved something of the Hindu ritualism which in theory was so abhorrent to their new faith, and refused to be turned from the age-old superstitions of their race."

This last remark is particularly fitly applicable to the Kashmiri Muslim. Five hundred years of Muslim rule were not sufficient to root out the superstitions of about fifteen hundred years of Buddhist and Brähmanical permeation. Mr. Wint closes with this last sentence: "On both sides there remained solid blocks of the orthodox—ultra-montane uninfluenced, intransigent, and capable of developing within themselves fierce proselytising movements in favour of a return to the strictest exclusiveness." This is the bigoted Kashmiri Pandit and the antiquated Mullā in the case of Kashmir.

_Begiining of Islam by Friars and Darwishes._

The population of the Valley of Kashmir in 1931 was over thirteen lakhs, of which over twelve and a half lakhs were Muslims. In the census of 1941 the Muslims numbered 13,69,620 out of 14,64,034. One must deplore, with the late Sir Thomas Arnold, that definite historical facts which might help us in clearly accounting
for the existence of such an extraordinary overwhelming majority of Musalmāns among the population of Kashmir are somewhat scanty. The same view was expressed to me by Sir Aurel Stein once. Whatever evidence is available leads us, however, to attribute the spread of Islam in the Valley, on the whole, to a long continued missionary movement inaugurated and carried out mainly by faqirs or friars or darvishes and the ‘ulamā’ or theologians, among whom were Ismā‘īlian preachers from Alamūt,¹ a hill fort in the province of Dailam in Iran. In addition to this, (i) the compactness of the area of the Valley and (ii) the unusually imitative habits of its people were also reasons for this mass conversion.

Islam is essentially a missionary religion like Buddhism and Christianity, and the Muslim missionary, be he a pir, i.e., a spiritual guide, or a preacher, carries with him the message of Islam to the people of the land into which he penetrates. “The spirit of truth in the heart of the missionary cannot rest till it manifests itself in thought, word and deed.” It is in this spirit that the Muslim missionary entered the Valley of Kashmir to influence its people by his example, his personal methods of preaching and persuasion at a time when, in the words of Lawrence,² Kashmir in the reign of Suhadeva (1300—1319-20 A.C.)—that is, previous to the advent of Islam—“was a country of drunkards and gamblers,” and where “women were no better than they should be.”

Bilāl or Bulbul Shāh’s Conversion of Rīnchan.

Sultan Sadr-ud-Dīn, Rīnchan or Rīnchana, the first Muslim ruler of Kashmir, a contemporary of Edward III of England, was originally a Ladākhī, also called a Tibetan, from Western Tibet. He was well-disposed towards Islam on account of his contact with Shāh Mīr, then in the Kashmir state service. Rīnchan is believed to have actually owed his conversion to Sayyid Bilāl (popularized to Bulbul) in the beginning of the fourteenth century.

٠١

2. The Valley of Kashmir, page 189.
Bilha Shāh or Bulbul Shāh is stated to have visited Kashmir first in the time of Rāja Suhadeva, the predecessor of Rinchan. The original name of Bulbul Shāh is said to have been Sayyid ‘Abdur Rahmān, though some believe it to be Sayyid Sharaf-ud-Dīn, while others call him Sharaf-ud-Dīn Sayyid ‘Abdur Rahmān Turkistānī. This much is certain that he was a widely travelled Mūsavi Sayyid from Turkistān having enjoyed a long stay at Baghdad. Bulbul Shāh was the spiritual disciple of Shāh Ni‘matullāh Wali Fārsī, a Khalīfa of the Suhrawardī tariq or school of Sāfīs founded by Shaikh-ush-Shuyūkh Shaikh Shihāb-ud-Dīn Suhrawardī.1 Khwāja Muhammad A‘zām in his History has copied the following about Kashmir from the great Shaikh, but the couplet is from Shihāb-ud-Dīn Sindi of Kashmir, according to Hasan:—

Hāji Miskīn2 is of the opinion that Bulbul Shāh was a disciple of Mullā Ahmad ‘Allāma, who is stated to have accompanied Bulbul Shāh when he visited Kashmir on the first occasion, in the time of Rāja Suhadeva. The same writer mentions Mullā Ahmad ‘Allāma as the Shaikh-ul-Islam in the reign of Sultān Shams-ud-Dīn (740-743 A.H.). I am afraid, however, that this cannot be accepted, as it is very hard to believe that Bulbul Shāh should have taken the lead in the conversion of Rinchan, in the presence of his own pīr or spiritual guide, who would thus be relegated to a secondary position on an occasion of such transcendent importance. Available evidence appears to establish that Bulbul Shāh was a spiritual disciple of Shāh Ni‘matullāh

1. Suhraward with its Kūردish population was a large, walled, well-fortified town lying to the south of Žanjān, on the road to Hamadān, Iran, in the 4th century a.C. (10th a.H.). It was of some importance during the 8th century a.C.(14th a.H.). The site of the town cannot now be located with absolute certainty.

2. Hāji Muhyī’īd Din Miskīn, the Ta‘rikh-i-Kabīr, page 289.
Wali Fārsī. Mullā Ahmad was a lieutenant of Bulbul Shāh, died in the reign of Sultān Shihāb-ud-Dīn, and is buried next to Bulbul Shāh. The Mullā was made the first Shaikh-ul-Islam and was the author of two books, Fatāwa-i-Shihābī and Shihāb-i-Sāqib.

The circumstances that led to the conversion of Rînchān appear to have been the impression created on him by the simplicity of Bulbul Shāh’s faith coupled with his own dissatisfaction with what was then professed by the people around him. Different people have attributed different motives to Rînchān for adopting Islam, into the details of which motives we need not enter. Suffice it to say that Rînchān embraced Islam at the hands of Bulbul Shāh and assumed the name of Sultān Sadr-ud-Dīn, and claims our attention as the first Muslim ruler of Kashmir. Muslim historians write his name as Rînchān.

After the conversion of Rînchān, his brother-in-law and commander-in-chief, and several others—according to one tradition ten thousand—embraced the creed of Bulbul Shāh. A place of gathering for the new converts was set up on the bank of the Vitastā and is known as Bulbul Lānkar—(Lānkar is apparently a corruption of ‘Langar’ meaning a hospice) and also the first mosque in Kashmir now unfortunately reduced to ruins. The Bulbul Lānkar is a three-storied decayed wooden building on the right bank of the Jhelum, about 200 yards below ‘Ālī Kadāl, the fifth bridge, in Mahalla Bulbul Lānkar, Srinagar. Bulbul Shāh died in 727 A.H., corresponding to 1327 A.C.

This chronogram, it appears, was composed, for the first time, by Khwāja Muhammad ʿAẓam.

1. Bulbul Shāh Sāḥib by Muftī Muhammad Shāh Saʿādat, pp. 36-37.
2. For instance, it is alleged by some, like Kīrpa Rām and ʿNārāin Kaul, that Brahmans rejected his offer of conversion to Hinduism, but this is not accepted by others like Malik Haidar and Khwāja ʿAẓam.
4. Sir Wolseley Haig, in Chapter XII of the Cambridge History of India, Vol. III, p. 277, makes no reference to Bulbul Shāh and assigns 1346 A.C. as the date of the accession of Shams-ud-Dīn whom he calls Shāh Mīrzā instead of the better known form Shāh Mir. Shams-ud-Dīn’s accession took place in 1339 A.C. (740 A.H.)
Conversions to Islam by Sayyids.

The conversion of the people of Kashmir to Islam was further encouraged by the arrival of a host of Sayyids. Prominent among these were: (1) Sayyid Jalāl-ud-Dīn of Bukhārā, who was known as Makhdiun Jahāniyān Jahāngashī, the disciple of Shaikh Rukn-ud-Dīn 'Ālam and arrived in 748 A.H., and left Kashmir after a short stay. (2) Sayyid Tāj-ud-Dīn (the cousin of Mir Sayyid 'Alī Hamadānī or Shāh Hamadān), who arrived in 760 A.H., in the reign of Sultān Shihāb-ud-Dīn and was accompanied by Sayyid Mas'ūd and Sayyid Yūsuf, his disciples, who lie buried near his tomb in Mahalla Shihāmpūr, a quarter of Srinagar. (3) Sayyid Husain Simnānī,* who was the younger brother of Sayyid Tāj-ud-Dīn, a disciple of Shaikh Rukn-ud-Dīn 'Ālam, and came in 773 A.H.

It appears that the two brothers Sayyid Tāj-ud-Dīn and Sayyid Husain Simnānī were sent to Kashmir by Sayyid 'Alī Hamadānī, revered for sanctity and eminent virtues, probably to survey the field for the propagation of Islam, and also to find means of escape from Timūr, who was suspected of contemplating, from political motives, the massacre of this powerful Sayyid family. Sayyid Husain lies buried in a beautiful shrine in Kulgām, a tāhsil of Islāmābād. The other brother is buried just close to the road to Islāmābād near Avantipūr.

*Mir Sayyid 'Alī Hamadānī.

In view of the extraordinary influence that his personality wielded in the spread of Islam in Kashmir, I think a somewhat fuller notice of Sayyid 'Alī Hamadānī, "the Apostle of Kashmir" is needed. We shall call him "Shāh Hamadān" as he is best known in Kashmir by that appellation. Sir Muhammad Iqbal has an invocation to him beginning with—

* In the centre of a wide plain, like an island, stands the village of Simnān, 145 miles east of Teherān, Iran. It appears to be a conglomeration of deserted gardens: an uninhabited village within mud walls, with, here and there, a stream or a pool banked up with earth, and in the centre like a jewel, a tiny turquoise dome. The modern town had a weaving factory (Karīkhān-i-Bāşāndāqī) and a hospital (Bimāristān), when I passed it towards the end of 1936.
Iran

The Gundad-I-Alaviyan (intertor), Hamadan

descendants meditated.

Iran, where Shah Hamadan his forbears and

The Gundad-I-Alaviyan (exterior), Hamadan.
The great Sayyid, 'Ali Hamadānī, or Shāh-i-Hamadān, also known as Amir-i-Kabīr or the great Amīr, or 'Ali-i-Sani, the second 'Ali, was born on Monday, 12th Rajab 714 A.H. (1314 A.C.) at Hamadān4 in Irān. The chronogram Rahmatullah Ali š, gives the date of his birth, viz. 714 A.H., and should be taken as his chronographic name. His mother’s name was Fātimā and his father's was Sayyid Shihāb-ud-Din bin Mir Sayyid Muhammad Husainī. His genealogy, according to the treatise Khulāsat’ul Manāqib, can be traced to Hazrat 'Ali through Imam Husain; he being sixteenth in direct descent from 'Ali b. Abī Tālib. Sayyid 'Ali Hamadānī became Hāfiz-i-Qur‘ān (one who knows the Qur‘ān by heart) in his very early boyhood. He studied Islamic theology, acquired knowledge, and learnt tasawwuf or the mysticism of the Sūfis under the tuition of Sayyid Alā-ud-Din Simnānī, who was his maternal uncle. He became, in the first instance, a disciple of Shaikh Abu’l Barakāt Taqi-ud-Din ‘Ali Dūstī and, after his death, of Shaikh Sharaf-ud-Din Mahmūd Muzdaqānī in Ray. The spiritual pedigree

1. In view of the importance of Shāh Hamadān in Kashmir, a brief description of Hamadān, his native place, is perhaps necessary.

Hamadān is the name of a town and of a province in Irān. The town is 260 miles north-west of Isfahān. It is situated 188 miles south-west of Teherān, at an elevation of 5,930 feet, about 700 feet higher than Srinagar, near the foot of Mount Alvand, whose peak rises west of it to an altitude of 11,900 feet. It has been a seat of Muslim learning and culture.

Hamadān is a busy trade centre with about 70,000 inhabitants, comprising 4,000 Jews and 300 Armenians, has extensive and well-stocked bazaars, and a number of large and small caravanserais. Tanneries turn out leather which is much esteemed throughout the country and exported to other provinces in great quantities. Saddles, harnesses, trunks, and other leather goods are manufactured. Industries like carpets, woolens, cotton stuffs, felts and copper utensils flourish. This perhaps explains how Shāh Hamadān gave an impetus to arts and crafts in Kashmir. The climate of Hamadān is pleasant but the winters are long and severe with heavy falls of snow.

Hamadān is supposed to stand on the site of the ancient Ecbatana. Among its tombs, the Jews still show the reputed burial places of Esther and Mordecai, a former Jewish Queen and Prince, in an insignificant looking domed building in the centre of the town. Hamadān has also the grave of Abū ‘Ali bin Sīna (Avicenna), who died in 1036 A.C. Shāh Hamadān has written on questions relating to the name of Hamadān. In 1936, at Hamadān, I was shown the dilapidated Gunbad-i-’Alavīyān, associated with the meditations of Shāh Hamadān, his forbears and his descendants.

of Shaikh Muzdaqānī has been recorded by Shāh Hamadān. Muzdaqānī desired him to complete his education by extensive travel in the world, which Shāh Hamadān undertook and consequently visited several countries. He journeyed for about twenty-one years, and thus came in contact with several Sūfis (mystics) and ‘ulamā’ (divines) of the age, and profited by association with them. According to Amin Ahmad Rāzī’s *Haft Iqlim*¹ [written in 1002 A.H. = 1593-94 A.C., or according to another account 1028 A.H. = 1619 A.C.], Shāh Hamadān travelled three times over the whole world and met 1,400 saints. After the completion of his travels, Shāh Hamadān returned to his native place. It was after his return that the rise of Timūr forced him to leave for Kashmir. Seven hundred Sayyids are said to have accompanied him to the Valley in the reign of Sultān Shihāb-ud-Dīn in 774 A.H.² (1372 A.C.). Shihāb-ud-Dīn, the reigning monarch of Kashmir, had gone out on an expedition against the ruler of Ohind³ (or Und, 16 miles above Attock). Qutb-ud-Dīn, the Sultān’s brother, who subsequently succeeded him, was then acting for him. After four months’ stay, Shāh Hamadān left for the scene of battle, and persuaded the belligerents to come to peace. Shāh Hamadān then proceeded to Mecca, and came back to the Valley in 781 A.H.⁴ (1379 A.C.) in the time of Sultān Qutb-ud-Dīn. After a stay of about two and a half years, he went to Ladākh in 783 A.H. en route for Turkistān. The third visit of Shāh Hamadān took place in 785 A.H. (1383 A.C.). But he had to leave Kashmir on account of

---

¹. Professor ‘Abdul Qādir’s *Catalogue* of MSS. in the Library of the University of Bombay, page 71. Amin Ahmad was the first cousin of Nawwāb I’timād-ud-Daula, the father of Nūr Jahān.

². And not 782 A.H., as stated by Boale in his *Oriental Biographical Dictionary*, 1881 edition, page 238, because the following chronogram gives 774 A.H.—

```plaintext
سال تاريخ مقدم أو را كفت از مقدم شرف، بحري
```

³. Some historians have mistaken Ohind for Hind, even Col. Haig (p. 278, Vol. III).

⁴. According to the chronogram—

```plaintext
هاتف غرف سال مقدم أو آمد اينشا علي تال كفت
```

This and the previous chronograms are by Sayyid Muhammad Khāwari who was the contemporary of Sayyid Muhammad Hamadānī son of Shāh Hamadān, vide *Tawrikh-i-Kabir*, page 12 and page 28.
ill-health, and stayed at Pakhli\(^1\) for ten days at the request of the ruler of that place whose name was Sultan Muhammad.

From Pakhli, Shāh Hamadān repaired to the vicinity of Kûnār (or Kûnār-with-Nūr-gal in Kafiristān) where, after a short stay, he had a relapse on the 1st of Zilhijja 786 A.H. (1384 A.C.) and ate nothing for five days. On Tuesday, the 5th of Zilhijja, he drank water several times, and on the night of the same day he breathed his last at the age of 72. On his death-bed Bismillāh-ir-Rahmān-ir-Rahīm was on his lips, and this, strangely enough, gives the date of his demise.

1. Pakhli was an ancient district of the Punjāb, now included in the Hazāra District of the North-West Frontier Province. In Bābur's time, the tract was held by the Khakha and Bamba tribes, whose chiefs had been rulers of the country to the east of the Indus, but had been driven out by the Gibari Sultāns of Bāija and Swāṭ. Its inhabitants still speak Pushtū—King's Edition of Bābur's Memoirs, Vol. II, note on page 201.

The Sarkār of Swāṭ or Swād, according to Abu'l Fazl (Jarrett's A'īn-i-Akbari, Vol. II, p. 391), comprised of three districts of Bhimbar, Swāṭ, and Bāja. Swāṭ is 40 kāś in length, and 5 to 15 in breadth. Kashghar is to its north. Swāṭ was the residence of the Governor.

After crossing the Sind river (eastwards), there are countries, in the northern mountains . . . appertaining to Kashmir and once included in it, although most of them, as for example, Paklı . . . do not now obey it.—Beveridge's Bābur-nāma, 1921, Vol. II, p. 484.

Paklı, according to Abu'l Fazl, was a Sarkār in Akbar's time, its length being 35 and breadth 25 kāś. Timūr left a few troops to hold this tract and their descendants remain there to this day. The rulers of this district pay tribute to Kashmir.—Colonel Jarrett's Translation of the A'īn-i-Akbari, 1891, Vol. II, pages 390-1.

2. The state or province of Khatlān, Khutlān or Khotl was located in 1872 by Sir H. Yule, somewhat north of the present Kolāb and west of Darwāz (in Turkistān immediately beyond the north-eastern border of Afghānistān), but Mr. Mayef who travelled in this region three years later, believes Kurgān-Tube (i.e., Kurghān Tipa) on the lower Surchāb (or Waḵsh) and a short distance west of Kolāb, to have been the centre of the ancient Khutlān . . . . Khatlān existed at least down to the end of the fifteenth century, for, in 1498, we find Khusru Shāh of Quduz, bestowing the governorship of it on his brother Wali.
The Khazinatu'l Asfiya (ii, 293) explains how it came about that Shih Hamadân was buried in Khutlân: "He died in Hazâra (Pakli) and there the Pakli Sultan wished to have him buried, but his disciples, for some unspecified reason, wished to bury him in Khutlân. In order to decide the matter they invited the Sultan to remove the bier with the corpse upon it. It could not be stirred from its place. When, however, a single one of the disciples tried to move it, he alone was able to lift it, and to bear it away on his head. Hence the burial in Khutlân. The death occurred in 786 A.H." (1384 A.C.). A monument to the Sayyid stands at Pakhli, which is now a part of Tahsil Mansihra, District Hazâra, N. W. F. Province.

Abu'l Fazl says (The A'in-i-Akbari, Jarrett, Vol. II, p. 392) that "Amîr Sayyid 'Ali Hamadânî died here (Bâjaur near Swât) and his dead body was conveyed to Khatlân by his last testament." But Bûbar writes: "Mîr Sayyid 'Ali Hamadânî (God's mercy on him!) coming here (Kûnâr-with-Nûr-gal in Kâfîristân) as he journeyed, died two miles (one shâr'i) above Kûnâr. His disciples carried his body to Khutlân. A shrine was erected at the honoured place of his death of which I made the circuit (tawâf) when I came and took Chaghân-Sarâî in 920 A.H." (1514 A.C.)—The Bûbar-nâma, A.S. Beveridge's English Translation, Vol. I, p. 211.

The name Khutl or Khutlân was applied in the time of Bûbar, and as far back as the age of Ibn Hauqal, to the country lying between the upper branch of the Amu, called Harat or Panj, which divided it from Badakhshân on the south—Bûbar's Memoirs, King's Edition, 1921, Vol. I, pages lxviii and lxix.

The great mountainous tract lying in the angle between the Wakhsh-âb (the largest affluent of the Oxus) and the Oxus was known as Khuttal, a name that was also vaguely applied to all the infidel lands east and north of Kûrâsân. Khuttal was included in the country along the Wakhsh, lying in its north, where the Wakhsh-âb took its rise. It was, Istakhri writes, very fertile, and famous for its fine horses and sumpter beasts: having many great towns on the banks of its numerous streams, where corn lands and fruit orchards gave abundant crops. In the 10th century A.C. or the 4th A.H., the capital of Khuttal was Hulbuk.

There is much confusion in the naming of this country: we have indifferently Khuttal and Khutlân or Khuttalan. According, however, to Qazvini (ii, 352), Khuttalan was the name of a town of the Turks, lying in a gorge between the mountains, the position of which he does not indicate. 'Alli of Yazd (i. 464 and elsewhere) in describing the campaigns of Timûr, generally writes Khutlân.—G. Le Strange, The Lands of the Eastern Caliphate, Cambridge University Press, 1905, reprinted 1930, page 438.
Shāh Hamadān belonged to the Kubrawi order of Sufis founded by Shaikh Najm-ud-Din Kubrā of Khwārizm who died in 618 A.H. = 1221 A.C. The Kubrawis are a branch of the Suhrawardī Sufis.

That the conversion of the Valley to Islam was furthered by the presence of Shāh Hamadān is undoubted. His prominent co-workers were:—1. Mīr Sayyid Haidar, 2. Sayyid Jamāl-ud-Dīn, 3. Sayyid Kamāl-i-Sānī, 4. Sayyid Jamāl-ud-Dīn Alāī, 5. Sayyid Rukn-ud-Dīn, 6. Sayyid Muhammad, 7. Sayyid ‘Azīzullāh. They established hospices all over the country which served as centres for the propagation of their religion in every nook and corner of Kashmir, and by their influence definitely furthered the acceptance of the faith of the Prophet of Arabia. The newly converted people, of their own accord, converted temples into mosques in consequence of their change of faith. Two well-known incidents, in which two of the leading Sanyāsīs or Hindu ascetics of the time, together with their followers, accepted Islam at the hands of Shāh Hamadān after a trial of their ‘supernatural’ powers, apparently convinced the priest-ridden Kashmirī of the greatness of the Sayyid’s creed. The present ziyyārat or shrine of Shāh Hamadān on the Vītastā is said to have been erected in 798 A.H. = 1395 A.C. on the spot where one of these trials took place. This ziyyārat first built by Sultān Qutb-ud-Dīn, therefore, really represents the great Sayyid’s chillah-khāna or the place of retreat and devotion, and not his tomb, which is in Khatlān. It is constructed chiefly of the wood of the deodār pine, and is equipped with a pyramidal steeple of timber capped with brass, and altogether is quite fine to look at. The mosque of Shāh Hamadān evokes the following couplet:

جبس ہے میرا سلم میں ہو رہے عقفان
کہ در خشائہ مبی اگست کلام یومن
عنانہ دل کو گنا بخشی جیسے ایک
جہال کشمیر از پنڈت بابو رام شریف

That Sultān Qutb-ud-Dīn himself acknowledged the greatness of the Sayyid is apparent from the fact that the Sultān, who had married two sisters contrary to the shari‘at or the law of Islam, had to divorce one of his wives at the
instance of Shāh Hamadān. The Sultan also adopted the
dress then prevalent in Islamic countries, and had such a
great regard for the cap given to him by the Sayyid that he
always wore it under his crown. This cap was passed on
to succeeding Sultāns, and was buried with the dead body
of Sultan Fath Shāh at his special request before his death.
It is said that some one prophesied that the burial of the
cap would be an indication of the burial of the dynasty,
and it is a curious coincidence that the dynasty actually
came to an end, with the rise of the Chaks.

Shāh Hamadān was not only a saint but an author too.
He wrote the Zakhīrāt-ul-Mulūk, a treatise on political
ethics and the rules of good government, in the Persian
language. The British Museum Manuscript of the book
[Add. 7618, Vol II, p. 447] has 250 folios, 10\(\frac{2}{3}\)" × 9",
15 lines, 3 inches long, written in neat Nasta’liq.\(^1\) The
Zakhīrāt-ul-Mulūk consists of ten chapters as follows:

1. Faith. 2. Duties of Man. 3. Virtue. 4. Rights
and duties of parents, wives, husbands, children, etc.
5. Rules of government, rights and duties of subjects.
6. Spiritual kingdom. 7. Execution of the lawful and
abstinence from the unlawful. 8. Gratitude and content-
ment. 9. Patience under visitations. 10. Condemnation
of conceit and anger and the excellence of humility and
forgiveness. The Zakhīrāt-ul-Mulūk was translated into
Latin by Ernest Friedrich Carl Rosenmueller in 1825 A.C.,
and into French by C. Solvent in 1829 A.C. It was a
favourite book with scholars during the early Pre-Mughul
réime of India.\(^2\)

Among other works of Shāh Hamadān in Persian
and Arabic, رِسَالَة مَكْتُوبات, رِسَالَة تُورِيه, contains Amīr-i-Kabīr’s letters. در معرَفُ مُوصِت و سیرت انسان
discusses the bodily and moral features of man. در حَقَاق تُورِه
deals with the real nature of penitence. حل النصوص على النصوص
is a commentary on Ibn-ul-‘Arabi’s شرح فصیدة خربة فارضی نصوص الحكم.

---

\(^1\) This book was lithographed by Niyāz ‘Ali Khān, Amritsar. Urdu
translation published at Lahore in 1334 A.H. under the title of
نیا لوک

\(^2\) The Administration of Justice in Medieval India by Muhammad
Basbir Ahmad, M.A., M. Litt., I.C.S., Aligarh University Studies in
History, 1941, page 39.
THE SPREAD OF ISLAM IN KASHMIR

is a commentary on the winc-qasidah of 'Umar ibn ul-Fāriz who died in 786 A.H. = 1385 A.C. is a treatise on Sufic terms and expressions. is on physiognomy. gives ten rules of contemplative life. كُتَاب الْمُودَةُ فِي الْقَرْئِي كُتَاب السنين في فضائل امیر المؤمنین gives the seventy virtues of Hazrat 'Alî. ارسین امریه is forty Traditions on man's future life. روضة التردوس is an extract of a larger work entitled فِردوس الاعمار by Shujâ'ud-Din Shīrūyah. مَازِل الالکین is on Sufi-ism.

اوراد الفتحی gives a conception of the unity of God and His attributes.

غُلَامة الشاب is a mystical treatise on various Sufic questions, illustrated by verses of the Qur'ān and Traditions and an exposition of the virtues of the life of Shâh Hamadān. It is by Maulānā Nūr-ud-Din Ja'far al-Badakhshi, Shâh Hamadān's pupil.

Shâh Hamadān was also a poet. His ghazals or odes are naturally Sufistic. The جهل أسرار is a small collection of religious and mystical poems. It begins with—

ای گرفتن عشق توقر از مال و مال
والمان حضرت را از خود و جنت ملال
مُفتان کَری شوافت را علّامی کرده جهان
سمَکان را وصل را گر در عالم پاشال

One cannot sum up Shâh Hamadān's life and work better than Sir Muhammad Iqbal in the following lines:

سِیادَت سالار عالم دست أور مماس نقدی ام
ذکر رکاروی رودمان اورکرت

غزالی درس الله گرخت ذکر رکاروی رودمان اورکرت

[...]
Mir Muhammad Hamadání.


Mir Muhammad Hamadání was born in 774 A.H. = 1372 A.C. and was twelve years old when his father died. It is said that, before his death in 1384, Sháh Hamadán had handed over to Maulānā Saráí* for transmission to two of his prominent Khalífas—Khwája Is-háq of Khátlán and Maulāná Nūr-ud-Dín Ja'far of Badakhshán—certain documents which contained his Wasiyat-náma (parting advice or bequest) and Khiláfat-náma (or document conveying succession). Khwája Is-háq and Maulāná Nūr-ud-Dín, in turn, delivered the documents to Mir Muhammad with the exception of the Khiláfat-náma, the document conveying succession, which the former retained himself, saying that it could only be made over to one who proved worthy of it. This was apparently a hint for Mir Muhammad that he should exert himself to follow in the footsteps of his great father. Mir Muhammad accordingly studied under these prominent admirers of his father, and in course of time acquired succession to his father's

*Of Saráí, a town in Khurásán, Irá. 
The Khānqāh-i-'Alā or the 'exalted shrine' at Trāl which is about 7 miles south-east of Avantipura (Vāntipār). This Khānqāh was built in memory of Shāh Hamadān by his son, Mir Muḥammad Hamadāni, on the site purchased by him from Sultān Sikandar. It is said for three rubies and hence the name Trāl derived from 'tre-lā' in Kashmiri. The colony was laid out for the residence of the Sayyids who came with, or followed, Shāh Hamadān from Irān to Kashmir in the latter part of the 14th century A.C.
position of spiritual pre-eminence. He was the author of a treatise on Sufi-ism and wrote a commentary on the Shamsiyah, a well-known book in Arabic on logic.

Conversion of Malik Suhabatta.

When 22 years of age, Mir Muhammad arrived in the Valley in 796 A.H. = 1393 A.C. On his arrival in Kashmir, Mir Muhammad was received with great honour by Sikandar. At this time, Sikandar’s prime minister and commander of the military forces was Malik Suhabatta (Sinhabatta), a Brahman, who appears to have been impressed with the personality of Mir Muhammad, the simplicity of his faith, life and teachings, and to have embraced Islam with the whole of his family. Mir Muhammad, whose first wife, Bibi Taj Khattun, had died, was offered by Suhabatta, after his conversion, the hand of his own daughter, re-named Bibi Bari’a. Suhabatta adopted the Islamic name of Saif-ud-Din and was consequently known as Malik Saif-ud-Din. The Suhyar Masjid, the Suhyar-bal, and the Suhyar Mahalla, near ‘Ali Kadal, keep his memory green.

The tomb of Bibi Bari’a known as Didah Moji, wife of Mir Muhammad Hamadani, at Kotar, Krailapur, 5 miles from Srinagar, on the road to Charar Sharif.

At the instance of Mir Muhammad, distillation and the sale and use of wine were prohibited. Sati (self-immolation by a widow on the funeral pyre of her husband)
was forbidden. Gambling and nāch (dancing by girls) were prohibited. Mīr Muhammad had a Badakhshān ruby which he gave over to Sikandar. The Sultān, in return, presented three big villages, namely: (i) Wachi from pargana Shāvara, (ii) Nūnawānī from pargana Mārtanda and (iii) Trāl from pargana Ullar—as jāgīr or permanent holding, which the Sayyid declared as waqf for his langar-khāna or hospice. This Waqf-nāma or endowment deed, with the endorsement of the Sultān, has been copied by Pir Hasan Shāh in his Ta’rikh-i-Hasan.

Mīr Muhammad stayed for about twenty-two years in Kashmir, and then left for Hajj in 817 A.H. On his return from Mecca, he went back to Khatlān, where he died on 17th Rabi’-ul-Awwal, 854 A.H. (1450 A.C.), and was buried near his father. Mīr Muhammad, on entering the Valley, was accompanied by three hundred Sayyids; Shāh Hamadān, his father, having, as already noted, brought seven hundred of them. Kashmir had, therefore, a total influx of one thousand Sayyids from Turkistān. Shāh Hamadān, it is said, converted thirty-seven thousand to Islam, Bulbul Shāh having already made ten thousand converts. Mostly these were mass conversions.

Revival of Interest in Religion under Calamities.

Before proceeding further, it would appear necessary to realize the magnitude of the change brought about by the advent of such a large number of Sayyids into the Valley. Deeply imbued with the Sūfī-ism of the age and country from which they emigrated, these Sayyids and their followers seem to have stimulated the tendency to mysticism for which Vedāntism and Buddhism had already paved the way. It may here be remarked in passing that Islam does not countenance the enervating type of Tasawwuf which Iqbal too condemned in the first edition of his Asrār-i-Khudi when he said:

Perhaps also, shocked at the tyranny and self-assertion of Timūr, these Sayyids and others ‘may have sought refuge in the regions of abstract thought as a solace for the worldly repression under which their country then laboured.’

1. The Ta’rikh-i-Kabīr, page 25.
cannot forget," says Col. Newall, "that the human mind has ever tended towards mysticism and solitude at times when tyrants flourished." A striking parallel is provided by the present age we are passing through. The well-known psychologist, C. E. M. Joad, writes discussing the changing mind of Britain: "There is a renewed interest in questions of religion and philosophy touching the nature of the universe and the status and destiny of man within it. Inevitably when a man’s spirit is troubled, his thoughts turn to fundamental questions. How, he wants to know, is the mass suffering and wickedness of the world compatible with its Government by an Almighty and Benevolent Being? Did God will the War? Did He create Hitler? That a realization of the fact and prevalence of evil and suffering in the world should bring a revival of man’s interest in religion is understandable.

“What is surprising is that it should renew belief. Yet there is in many Englishmen today, and especially in young people newly come to maturity, a renewed interest in the religious view of the world and a disposition to examine afresh in the light of it the traditional answers to fundamental questions, which Christianity has provided, but which most of us have for a generation ignored or derided. Supposing, for example, that the war is the result neither of inept politicians, nor of an out-of-date capitalist system, but of the wickedness in the heart of man? Suppose that it is a punishment for that wickedness?

“The renewed interest in these questions has not yet succeeded in filling the churches. It may be doubted whether it ever will. The new wine which is now fermenting may refuse to pour itself into the old bottles, but that the seeds of a spiritual revival are germinating in the minds of the people of this country, I for one do not doubt.”

“Today,” on June 18, 1942, cries General Smuts: “We witness on a worldwide scale the failure of political nationalism and materialism to satisfy the deeper needs of man’s spirit. This failure, with the nameless sufferings of our generation, will lead to the revival of religious faith. The crisis of religion is coming. The Man of Galilee is, and remains, our one and only leader.”

1. Journal of the Bengal Asiatic Society, 1870, page 266.
It is also significant to note that Fitzgerald’s *Rubā‘iyāt of ‘Umar Khayyām* has again become a best-seller under the stress of the present war.

Perhaps, the wrath of Timūr had been aroused against these Sayyids and Sūfis who may have attempted to adopt an independence of act and speech or preached peace displeasing to the great conqueror, as Mirzā Akmal-ud-Din Kāmil Beg Khān Badakhshī refers to it:

\[ \text{کہ نہ تیمور نہور و نبرکیدے} \]

*The Risheyan-i-Kashmir.*

The presence of this type of Sayyid naturally influenced the more pronounced Muslim mystics of Kashmir. These Muslim mystics, well-known as Rishis\(^2\) or Bābās, or hermits, considerably furthered the spread of Islam by their extreme piety and utter self-abnegation which influenced the people to a change of creed. Abū’l Fazl records his meeting with Wāhid Sūfi. Faizī had informed Abū’l Fazl of the presence of the saint in the following words: “Here an enlightened anchorite has come to my view. For thirty years he has, in an unnoticed corner, been gathering happiness on an old mat. Affectation and self-advertisement have not touched the hem of his garment . . .” Abū’l Fazl mentioned this to Akbar, who asked him to go and inquire. “By great good fortune,” wrote Abū’l Fazl, “I met with the saint and the old sore of the divine longing opened afresh. For a long time, he had lived, like Uwais\(^3\) and Karkhī\(^4\) in a ruined habitation. He lived apart from joy and sorrow, and took nothing from anybody except broken bread. Though I did not know the Kashmiri language, yet I gathered much edification through an interpreter, and a new vision dawned on me. As his heart was

---


2. Rishi is referred to here were Muslim saints. Rom Rishi, Rish Bābā, Mir Husain Rishi, Sabūr Rishi, Sulaimān Rishi are well-known. Kashmiris pronounce the word as Rishi, the plural is Risheyan.

3. See page 100n.

4. Abū Mahfūz Ma’rūf Karkhī was a Magus at first. With his father Fīrūz or Firūzān he accepted Islam at the hands of ‘Ali bin Mūsā ar-Riṣā and became a celebrated ascetic and mystic. He died on the 2nd or 8th of Muharram in 200 A.H. or 815 A.C., in the time of Māmūn. Ma’rūf was venerated as a saint and is buried in Baghdād.
much alienated from the people, he could not come out from his cell. His Majesty was delighted with this news and resolved that he would go in person.”¹

Jahāṅgīr in his Memoirs² says that “though they (the Muslim Rishīs) have not religious knowledge or learning of any sort, yet they possess simplicity and are without pretence. They abuse no one. They restrain the tongue of desire and the foot of seeking. They eat no flesh, they have no wives, and always plant fruit-bearing trees in the fields so that men may benefit by them, themselves desiring no advantage. There are about 2,000 of these people.” Firishta and Abu’l Fazl have also described them in words of high praise as abstaining from luxury, living on berries and the wild fruits of the mountains. In remote corners of the Valley, many of them had taken up their abodes for purposes of meditation and seclusion. G. T. Vigne, the traveller, during Sikh rule, met Bābā Sa’īd who refused to call even on the Governor of the time. Mahārajā Pratāp Singh called on Shāh ‘Abdur Rahim Safāpūrī. When the Mahārajā asked if he could do anything for the saint, the saint replied that he need not be re-visited by the Mahārajā, a reply reminding one of Diogenes (Diōjēnēs al-Kalbi) who, when Alexander asked him if he could do any service, told the Conqueror to let him enjoy the sun.

In some instances, these Muslim Rishīs constructed ziyārat or shrines, many of which remain to this day. The shrines attest to their founders’ austerities and virtues and in their traditions form centres for local orders of holy men or priests whose influence must necessarily be beneficial to the people as promulgating the principles of humanity and the moral virtues. “Associated, as they are, with acts of piety and self-denial, the ziyārat are pleasant places of meeting at fair time, and the natural beauty of their position and surroundings affords additional attraction. Noble brotherhoods of venerable trees of chenār, elms, and the Kābuli poplar with its white bark and shimmer of silver leaves,” says Lawrence, “gives a pleasant shade, and there is always some spring of water for the thirsty” (pp. 287-8).

². Translated by Rogers and Beveridge, Vol. II, pages 149-150
Saints and Rishis like Shaikh Nūr-ud-Dīn, Bābā Nasr-ud-Dīn, Bābā Bām-ud-Dīn, Shaikh Hamza Makhdūm, Sayyid Ahmad Kirmānī, Sayyid Muhammad Hisārī, Bābā Zain-ud-Dīn, Bābā Latīf-ud-Dīn, Shukr-ud-Dīn (popularly known as Shukr-ud-Dīn), Hanīf-ud-Dīn (erroneously called Hanaf-ud-Dīn), Shaikh Valī Bukhārī, Sa‘īd Bābā, Khwāja Hasan Kari, by their example and precept, smoothed the path of Islam in its slow, steady and systematic conversion of practically the whole Valley. Shaikh Nūr-ud-Dīn—The Light of the Faith—is the great national saint of Kashmir. Some account of his life, therefore, would not be out of place here.

Shaikh Nūr-ud-Dīn.

Shaikh Nūr-ud-Dīn was born in a village called Kaimūh (old name Katīmusha), two miles to the west of Bijbihāra which is 28 miles south-east of Srinagar, in 779 A.H.=1377 A.C., on the day of the ‘Īd-ul-Azhā. His father’s name was Shaikh Sālār-ud-Dīn. His mother, Sadra, was called Sadra Māj or Sadra Deddi. In Kashmiri, Māj means ‘mother’, and Deddi denotes ‘elderly.’ Both the parents were well-known for their piety. Shaikh Sālār-ud-Dīn, whose pre-Islamic name was Sālār-Sanz and who belonged to the family of the rājās of Kishtwar, embraced Islam at the hands of Yāsman Rishi, the younger brother of Palāsman and Khalāsman Rishis. Of Yāsman Rishi, it is said that he travelled far and wide. Later, he lived mostly in forests. At times, he used to ride a tiger; which reminds us of the story in Sa‘dī’s Būstān:

His daily food was a cup of wild goat’s milk. Sadra came of a high Rājput family, but her parents having died very early, she was brought up by her wet-nurse: and, in course of time, was married to a person of humble origin by whom she had two sons—Shush (Shishu) and Gundar (Gandharva). Her husband died after some years and she was left alone. By nature of a religious bent of mind, she came under the influence of Yāsman Rishi and embraced Islam and was re-married, at the instance of her foster-father, and under the direction of Yāsman Rishi, to Sālār-ud-Dīn. Sadra Deddi, on her death, was buried at Kaimūh where there is now a famous shrine. Sālār-ud-Dīn whose turban is preserved at this shrine, and Haidar-ud-Dīn, the son, Zai Ded,
To face page 99 of Dr. Sufi's 'Kashir'.
Shaikh Nur-ud-Din Vali, the Patron Saint of the Valley of Kashmir. He was born at Kaimoh in the Islamabad district in 779 A.H. 1377 A.C. on the 'Id-ul-Ba'ar day and died at Chrar, 20 miles south-west of Srinagar, at the age of 63 in 842 A.H. 1438 A.C., in the reign of Sultan Zain-ul-Abidin, who accompanied his bier. Chrar Sharif attracts thousands of visitors on the Saint's anniversary.
A general view of Chrār-i-Sharif perched on a dry bare hill, 20 miles south-west of Srinagar.
the wife, and Zūn Ded the daughter of Nūr-ud-Dīn, are also buried at Kaimūh.

Once when Yāsman Rīshī was ill, Sālār-ud-Dīn and Sadra went to visit him. Lalla ‘Ārīfa was already there with a present of a bouquet of flowers for the Rīshī. The Rīshī, on Sadra’s arrival, gave Lalla’s bouquet to her. It is said that, when Nūr-ud-Dīn was born and subsequently would not take his own mother’s milk, Lalla was called in, and strangely enough Nūr-ud-Dīn went to her and had milk from her breast. To Lalla the child was thus attached. This was the time when Sayyid Husain Simnānī was in Kashmir. Through Lalla, the child was brought to the notice of the Sayyid. Shāh Hamadān also came in later. Thus Nūr-ud-Dīn was brought up amidst happy surroundings which led to his future greatness as the Patron Saint of the Valley. When Nūr-ud-Dīn grew up, his step-brothers began to trouble him. They were rogues while he was saintly. Once or twice he accompanied them to find work but felt that he could not be happy with them. He was then apprenticed to a couple of traders, one after the other. There, too, he felt disgusted with the ways of the world, and, deciding upon renunciation, retired to caves for meditation at the age of thirty. It is said that he lived for twelve years in the wilderness. Hence, perhaps, Kaimūh is given the derivation of Kai-wan (or ban, a forest) in rustic belief. The actual cave of contemplation is shown in Kaimūh and is about 10 feet deep. In his last days, the saint sustained life on one cup of milk daily. Finally, he reduced himself to water alone, and died at the age of 63, in the reign of Sultān Zain-ul-‘Ābidīn, in 842 A.H. = 1438 A.C. Shams-ul-‘Ārifīn or ‘The Sun of the Pious’ is the chronogram which gives the date of his death. The Sultān accompanied his bier to the grave. The burial prayers were led by a great divine or ‘Ālim of the age, Makhdūm Bābā ‘Usmān Uchchap Ganāī. The tomb of Shaikh Nūr-ud-Dīn at Charār Sharīf,* a small town perched on a dry bare hill, 20 miles south-west of Srinagar, is visited by thousands of people to the present day.

*Charār Sharīf (or Tarār) town had a population of 3,784 in 1931. In 1941 it had 4,037. It is built somewhat in the form of the letter X, and stands on a bare sandy ridge, 13 miles north-east of Shupiān by path. Charār is now connected with Srinagar by road.
Sheikh Nūr-ud-Dīn, the preceptor of all Rishis, was a great devotee and had deep communion with God.

In addition to leading a retired and solitary life, he was also one of those who continually fast. He had given up eating flesh, onions, milk, and honey for many years.

He was a man with intuition, had spiritual powers and had a fine mode of speech. He was like Uwais* (in that he had no known spiritual guide), as an eloquent narrator has stated.

—The Qasīda-i-Lāmiyyah or the Rīshī-nāma (984 A.H. = 1576 A.C.) of Bābā Dā‘ūd Khāki.

Hindus call the saint Nunda Rishi or Sahajananda. His sayings are preserved in the Nur-nāma, commonly available in Kashmir. The Nur-nāma also gives the life of the saint. It was written by Bābā Nasib-ud-Dīn Ghāzi in Persian about two centuries after the death of Shaikh Nūr-ud-Dīn. It will be noticed under Persian Poetry in Chapter VIII.

Shaikh Nūr-ud-Dīn appears to have married Zai Ded and had two sons and one daughter. On the death of the children, Zai Ded also renounced the world, and became a hermitess. She was buried at Kaimūh on her death.

---

*Uwais al-Qarani was a saint who had given up the world. He was a contemporary of the Prophet of Islam. Uwais was an inhabitant of Yemen and belonged to the Qaran tribe. He used to say to those that sought him: "Do you seek God? If you do, why do you come to me? and if you do not seek God, what business can I have with you?" Hazrat 'Umar and Hazrat 'Ali visited Uwais at his request, and gave him the cloak of the Prophet. Uwais died between 32 and 39 A.H. = 653 and 659 A.C.
The Mosque at Unrār Sharīf
The simplicity and purity of Shaikh Nūr-ud-Din’s life have deeply impressed the Kashmiri who entertains the highest veneration for the saint. In fact, the Afghān Governor, ‘Atā Muhammad Khān, gave, as it were, expression to public sentiment when coins were struck by him in the name of Shaikh Nūr-ud-Din in 1223-25 A.H. =1808-10 A.C. No other saint perhaps in human history has ever had coins struck in his honour.

Anecdotes of the life of this ‘Chief of the Rishis’ are on the lips of the people throughout the Valley. Shaikh Nūr-ud-Din was in the habit of visiting gardens frequently. Once, on his way to a garden, accompanied by a disciple, he stopped and would not move. On his disciple requesting him to proceed, he made the following reply: “Every minute that I spend there, will be deducted from my stay in Heaven.”

On another occasion, when invited to a feast, Nūr-ud-Din went in ragged dress, earlier than the appointed time. The servants, not recognizing him, would not permit him to enter, and he had to go back to take his food at home. When all had sat for the sumptuous dinner, the Shaikh was specially sent for. He came, this time, in a flowing chugha (cloak) and was given the seat of honour. But the Shaikh, instead of partaking of the food, stretched forth his sleeves and put them on to the plates. The people were astonished at the sight and asked him the reason. He replied: “The feast was not really for Nūr-ud-Din but for the long sleeves!”
The saint's attack on hypocrisy is interesting. Says he—

"By bowing down, thou shalt not become a Rishi; The pounder in the rice-mill did not ever raise up its head."

"By entering a cave, God cannot be attained: The mongoose and the rat seldom come out of their holes."

"By bathing, the mind will not be cleansed: The fish and the otter never ascend the bank."

"If God were pleased by fasting, the indigent rarely cook food in pots."

Shaikh Nūr-ud-Din had four disciples: Nasr-ud-Din, Bābā Nasr-ud-Din, Zain-ud-Din, and Latif-ud-Din. Bābā Nasr-ud-Din is to be seen behind Shaikh Nūr-ud-Din in the portrait opposite page 98. Kashmiris remember him as Bābā Nasr. Shaikh Nūr-ud-Din used to address him by his pet name Nasro. Bābā Nasr came of a rich family. In his early life he was robust, but on account of a stomach disease suffered a great deal. When his life was almost despaired of, he came in contact with Nūr-ud-Din and gave up a life of ease and became his faithful disciple. Bābā Nasr died in 855 A.H. =1451 A.C., and is buried near his spiritual guide in Charār Sharīf. Local legend has it that Bābā Bām-ud-Dīn was originally a Hindu by the name of Bhima Sādhi in which Dr. Stein sees a corruption of Bhima Čāhī. Bābā Latif-ud-Dīn, it is said, was a Hindu and an official of Marvā-WISEDN and accepted Islam after a long discussion with Shaikh Nūr-ud-Dīn. Bābā Zain-ud-Dīn was known as Ziya Singh and hailed from Kishtwār. His father was killed by his enemies, so that Ziya Singh became an orphan. Subsequently he came under the influence of Shaikh Nūr-ud-Dīn and became a Muslim. The Fatahāt-i-Kubrawiyah gives the order of Shaikh Nūr-ud-Dīn's disciples or Khalīfas as follows:—(1) Bābā Bām-ud-Dīn (2) Bābā Zain-ud-Dīn (3) Bābā Latif-ud-Dīn and (4) Bābā Nasr-ud-Dīn (Folios 326-350).

1. Maru-WARDWAN or MaḍĪVĀDVAN is the name of the valley lying to the east of the eastern frontier of Kashmir running from the ŽOJĪ-LĀ almost due south towards Kishtwār.

2. The Fatahāt-i-Kubrawiyah by Shaikh 'Abdul Wahhāb Nūrī ibn Rashid-ud-Dīn al-Kashmirī (died in 1182 A.H.=1768 A.C. at Srinagar), MS., folio 345. This manuscript is in the possession of Shaikh Ghalām Muhammad, M.A., M.O.L. (Panjāb), Retired Registrar, Co-operative Societies, Jammu and Kashmir.
The Ziyārat at 'Aish-maqqām, near Maṭan, on the Islāmābād-Pahalgām Road. Bābā Zain-ud-Din, one of the four leading disciples of Shaikh Nūr-ud-Din, is buried here.
The propagation of Islam in Kashmir received a strong impetus in the time of Sultān Sikandar when Wyclif in the West was inaugurating the Lollard movement in England. Sikandar has, however, been blamed for his "bigotry in the persecution of the Hindus of the Valley," and is called by them But-shikan or the iconoclast.

The allegation, that the wholesale destruction of temples in Kashmir was carried out by Sikandar, is based, apparently, on considerable misrepresentation, more fiction than fact, and a number of non-Muslim writers, one after the other, have contributed their share of abuse to condemning this Sultān. The calumny has been perpetuated to such an extent that we now find Sikandar as an abominable personification of ruthless destruction of all noble edifices erected to Hindu deities. This misrepresentation has grown so enormous that we have completely lost sight of his real character. We are, consequently, not infrequently reminded of Akbar and Aurangzib in the praise of Zain-ul-ʿAbidīn and the condemnation of Sikandar. And it has become the wont of every casual visitor to Kashmir, who is anxious to give his impressions of the Happy Valley to the world, to single out the Akbar and the Aurangzib of Kashmir for praise and blame. I hold no brief for Sikandar. He is undoubtedly responsible for what he actually did, but not for more than that.

Any one who visits old or ruined temples anywhere in India down the Jhelum, is very often told by the unlettered guide or the illiterate priest that the idols therein were broken by Aurangzib. Similarly, any one, who visits such places up the Jhelum, is summarily informed that the havoc to the images was wrought by Sikandar, and every conceivable wrong is attributed to him. The continuance of such baseless stories must be steadily and strongly discouraged as forming one distinct factor in the cleavage that is being wrought in the relation of the great communities that inhabit India. This is no digression into politics, but a warning against the continual masquerade of myth as true and trustworthy history.

"Much harm has been done by this misreading of history," writes Pandit Prēm Nāth Bazāz. "Many young men have been misled in the past by absurd views about the political and economic conditions during the period when Kashmir was under Muslim kings. Unfortunately these
views continue to be held even now and, what is still worse is that, on the assumption that Muslims maltreated Hindus in the past, it is believed that the two communities cannot unite now or in the future. This has brought about a reaction in the Muslim mind, and so mistrust and mutual enmity continue and even wax more and more. It is in the interest of our motherland that the past history should be analysed correctly and read scientifically, without prejudice or malice, sentimental make-believe or so-called patriotic whitewashing. Most of the histories were written by men who worked under the influence of the upper classes. Although their intentions were good, it is difficult to believe that they could judge the events dispassionately. We must therefore sift the facts according to the principles of scientific interpretation available to us now. We must look at facts from a comprehensive and a synthetic point of view and try to find how the masses and not only the classes fared during those days.” (Inside Kashmir, pp. 19-20).

Let us examine the story of Sikandar in some detail.

Even if Sikandar in his zeal for his own religion has transgressed the limits of moderation, it is unquestionably a false charge against him that he broke down all Hindu temples in Kashmir and cruelly persecuted every Pandit. What happened long before Sikandar was born? Did not the struggle between Buddhism and Brāhmanism spell ruin to many a fane? Ou-k’ong or Wu-k’ung,² a well-known Chinese pilgrim, who followed in the footsteps of Hsüan Tsang, reached Kashmir in 759 A.C., and spent no less than four years engaged in the study of Sanskrit, and in pilgrimages to sacred sites in the Valley. He found more than three hundred "monasteries or Vihāras in the kingdom of Kashmir." Ou-k’ong, in Stein’s words, is "trustworthy and accurate.” Where are these Vihāras? Is there any trace whatsoever left of them? And who demolished them? Were they mere mud structures?

---

1. Even the Rev. C. E. Tyndale-Biscoe, who ought to have shown greater regard for truth, writing in 1922, says in his Kashmir in Sunlight and Shade, page 71: "Sikandar destroyed all their (the Hindus') sacred places." The Reverend gentleman is merely gramophoning hearsay and making no investigation of his own.
2. Notes on Ou-k’ong’s account of Kaśmir by M. A. Stein, Ph.D., Principal, Oriental College, Lahore,—Wien, 1896.
3. Ibid., page 3.
4. Ibid., page 25.
Jayapida (764-795 A.C.) made "a hundred Brähmans less one seek death in water."1 Caṅkaraṇaraman (883-902 A.C.), as already stated (vide page 57) plundered the treasures of temples. To perpetuate his memory, he built the town of Paṭan and its temple from the material he had obtained by the plunder of the town and temples of Parihasapura. But, strange to say, the destruction of its temples is popularly attributed to Sikandar. A copper tablet with Sanskrit inscription has been discovered which predicts the destruction of the temple "after the lapse of eleven hundred years by one Sikandar." This prophecy post factum, points out Sir Aurel Stein,2 shows that its author, whoever he might have been "was rather weak in historical chronology. Parihasapura had been founded only about six and a half centuries before Sikandar But-shikan's time. At the beginning of the eighteenth century, the ruins seem still to have been in a somewhat better condition than now." Did not Aḥhimanyu II (958-972 A.C.) set fire to his capital and destroy all the noble buildings from the temple of Vardhana Swāmī as far as Bhikshukipāraka" (or the asylum of mendicants)? The escape of this limestone temple is attributed by Cunningham3 to its fortunate situation in the midst of tank water. Harsha (1089-1101 A.C.) took to the spoilation of temples and confiscated the cult images in order to possess himself of the valuable metals of which they were made. The exact words of Pandit Kalhana4 are: "There was not one temple in a village, town, or in the City which was not despoiled of its images by that Turushka, King Harsha." Not only this. One shudders when one reads verses 1091-4, Book VII. "He appointed Udayarāja 'prefect for the overthrow of divine images' (devotpātanamāyaka). In order to defile the statues of gods he had excrements and urine poured over their faces by naked mendicants whose noses, feet and hands had rotted away. Divine images....were covered with night-soil as if they were logs of wood....Images of the gods were dragged along by ropes round their ankles, with spottings instead of flowers."5 Jonarāja also refers to Rājadeva (1213-1236 A.C.)

who insulted the Bhaṭṭaś and plundered them. "And then was heard from among them the cry, 'I am not a Bhaṭṭa,' (meaning Brāhman), 'I am not a Bhaṭṭa.'" Again, Dulča's invasion in the beginning of the fourteenth century wrought havoc to "innumerable gods." Dulča slaughtered the people and set fire to the city of Srinagar. This is not my language. This is not my translation. It is not my interpretation either. It is the language of Kalhaṇa and of Jonarāja. It is the translation of Štein and of J. C. Dutt. Now, does any one utter a word about these monstrous rājās like Jayāpiḍā, Çāṁkravārman or Abhimanyu or Harsha, or Rājādeva? But almost every Hindu child learns to heap curses on Sikandar!

Malik Sūhabhaṭṭa, Sikandar's minister, appears to be responsible for the destruction of a few temples that took place in Sikandar's reign as Sikandar himself was an infant at his accession. In the words of Sir T. W. Arnold, Sūhabhaṭṭa set on foot a fierce persecution of the adherents of his old faith: this, he did, probably, in order to show his zeal for his new religion. Ranjit Sītārām Pandit has also said the same thing. "Sikandar," writes Ranjit, "had married a Hindu lady named Çriṣobhā and was at first tolerant in religion like his predecessors but his powerful Hindu minister, Sūhabhaṭṭa who became an apostate hated his former co-religionists with the hatred of a new convert." Perhaps, these temples may have also been used as places of conspiracies against the State as pointed out by a local historian. But it must be distinctly remembered that this sort of religious zeal is deplored by Islam. In fact, it positively prohibits it. It is on record that Mir Muhammad Hamadānī warned Sūhabhaṭṭa against such action, and pointed out to him the well-known verse of the Qur'ān (II, 256) which runs: 'Let there be no compulsion in religion.' It is true that Sikandar cannot be exonerated from his share of the blame that rightly falls to Sūhabhaṭṭa, but it is absolutely untrue that it was Sikandar who was

2. The Valley of Kashmir, page 189.
3. Sūhabhaṭṭa is the correct Kashmiri pronunciation of Sinhabhaṭ or Simhabhaṭ or Baṭ.
responsible for the relentless persecution of every Hindu and the ruthless destruction of every temple.

It would, perhaps, be pertinent to the discussion if we took into account the weighty evidence of personages like Mirzā Haidar Dughlāt and Jahāngir who have written about temples in Kashmir and whose testimony is unimpeachable. Mirzā Haidar Dughlāt who invaded Kashmir in 1531 A.C., long after the death of Sikandar in 1414 A.C., gives a considerable amount of detail about temples in Kashmir in his Ta’rikh-i-Rashīdī. Perhaps, a long quotation from him may be excused.

"First and foremost among the wonders of Kashmir stand her idol temples. In and around Kashmir, therre are more than one hundred and fifty temples which are built of blocks of hewn stone, fitted so accurately one upon the other, that there is absolutely no cement used. These stones have been so carefully placed in position, without plaster or mortar, that a sheet of paper could not be passed between the joints. The blocks are from three to twenty gaz (literally, a yard) in length: one gaz in depth, and one to five gaz in breadth. The marvel is how these stones were transported and erected. The temples are nearly all built on the same plan. There is a square enclosure which in some places reaches the height of thirty gaz, while each side is about three hundred gaz long. Inside this enclosure, there are pillars, and on the top of the pillars there are square capitals; on the top of these, separate parts are made out of one block of stone. On the pillars are fixed supports of the arches, and each arch is three or four gaz in width. Under the arch are a hall and a doorway. On the outside and inside of the arch are pillars of forty or fifty gaz in height having bases and capitals of stone. On the top of this are placed four pillars of one or two pieces of stone.

"The inside and the outside of the halls have the appearance of two porticos, and these are covered with one or two stones. The capitals, the ornamentation in relief, the cornices, the ‘dog tooth’ work, the inside covering and the outside, are all crowded with pictures and paintings which I am incapable of describing. Some represent laughing and weeping figures, which astound the beholder. In the middle is a lofty throne of hewn stone, over that a
dome made entirely of stone, which I cannot describe. In the rest of the world, there is not to be seen, or heard of, one building like this. How wonderful that there should here be a hundred and fifty of them.” Mirzâ Haidar may have made mistakes in the course of the narrative of his version of the history of Kashmir, but what he saw with his own eyes cannot be imaginary.

Jahângîr (1605-1627 a.c.) speaks in no unmistakable terms when he says¹: “The lofty idol temples which were built before the manifestation of Islam are still in existence, and are all built of stones which from foundation to roof are large and weigh 30 or 40 maunds placed one on the other.” As Jonârâja says, Sikandar urged by Sûhâbâta “broke the images of Mûrtañû, Vishaya, Içâna, Chakrabhîrî, Tripureçvara, Çësha, Sureçvari, Varâha and others.”² Note the word ‘images’ only.

For the destruction of temples we have, therefore, to attach the blame not to Sikandar but to the real destroyers—time and the elements, and defects of construction, which are so often the cause of ruin of dry masonry. “Earthquakes³ and the imperfect fitting of the stones, observable in all Kashmirian temples,” remarks Stein,⁴ “are sufficient to explain the complete ruin notwithstanding the massive character of the materials!” “Sikandar was brave and cultured,” says Lawrence, “and attracted learned Musalmans to his court.” In the face of all this evidence, it is surprising that a number of writers should revel in holding up Sikandar to ignominy. Facts belie the charge.

The conversion to Islam of the Khakha and Hatmâl tribes of Râjputs inhabiting the area to the left bank of the Jhelum between Bârâmûla and Kohâla is said to have taken place in the reign of Sultân Zain-ul-‘Abidîn. Khakhu and Hâtû, their leaders, were named Khakhu Khân and Hâtîm Khân. They took service at the court of the Sultân who granted them jâgîrs.⁵ “The country between Muzaffarâbâd and Bârâmûla was “in the possession of the Râjâs of

2. Kings of Kashmir, page 60.
4. The Valley of Kashmir, footnote, page 190.
5. The Ta’rikh-i-Hasan MS.
Kuhkuh and Bubnah before the visit of Mir 'Izzatullāh in 1812-13 A.C. The area was then known as "Kūhistān or the Highlands of Kashmir," he adds.

Shaikh Shams-ud-Dīn 'Irāqī.

Fresh impetus to conversion was given towards the close of the fifteenth century by the arrival in 1487 A.C. and not 1450 A.C., as Lawrence wrongly puts it, of Shaikh Shams-ud-Dīn Muhammad al-Isfahānī commonly known as Mir Shams-ud-Dīn 'Irāqī who was a preacher from Tālish, on the shores of the Caspian. Shams's father was Ibrāhīm. His mother came from a Mūsavī Sayyid family of Qazvin. With the aid of his disciples, Mir Shams-ud-Dīn won over a large number of converts. According to Mīrzā Haidar Dughlāt, Shams-ud-Dīn arrived from 'Irāq in the first reign of Sultān Fath Shāh and converted many thousands of people. After this, he was crowned in the name of the Twelve Imāms. The Shī'as of Kashmir contend that he was a true Shī'a, and that the 'Ahwat, or 'Most Comprehensive,' a book in Arabic, containing the tenets of the Nūr Bakhshī sect,—prevalent


2. Tālish, a district and people in the north of the Irānian province of Gilān, has belonged to Russia since 1813 A.C. The narrow strip of shore and mountain slope running north from the south-west corner of the Caspian and facing east over that sea is the Tālish country. The village Tālish is six farsaks from Ardabil. Under Irānian rule and even now, Lenkoran is the capital. The people call themselves Tālish and speak a local dialect. The number of Tālish living on Russian territory is 75,824 according to the census of 1922. Like the people of Gilān, the Tālish are Shī'as. Their dialect differs very little from that of Gilān.


5. The Nūr Bakhshī sect is an attempt to find a via media between Shī'a and Sunni doctrines. In winter, the Nūr Bakhshīs pray with folded arms like the Sunnis; in summer with the hands hanging down like the Shi'as. Like the Sunnis, they pray together and observe Friday prayers, but they do not wash their feet before praying and only perform mas-h like the Shi'as. The chief cause of quarrel arises in Muharram, as the Nūr Bakhshīs maintain that mourning should take place in the mosque, but the Shi'as do not allow this to be proper. For a fuller account of the Nūr Bakhshī sect, the article of Khān Bahādūr Maulavi Muhammad Shafi', M.A. (Cantab), in the *Oriental College Magazine* for February and May, 1925, may be consulted. Nūr Bakhsh literally means 'enlightening.'
at present in Baltistān—is not his composition. Fīrishtā says that Mir Shams-ud-Dīn was a disciple of Sayyid Mu‘īn-ud-Dīn ‘Alī known as Shāh Qāsim Zar-bakhsh, the son of Sayyid Muhammad Nūr Bakhsh of Khurāsān,* Sayyid Muhammad being a disciple of Khwāja Is-hāq Khatlānī (Supra 92).

Sir Wolseley Haig says that Shams-ud-Dīn professed to be an orthodox Sunni, but the doctrines set forth by him in the Ahwat are described as a mass of infidelity and heresy conforming neither to the Sunni nor to the Shi‘a creed. Shams-ud-Dīn insisted on cursing the first three Caliphs and ‘A‘ishā. Consequently, Mirzā Haidar, on a religious pronouncement by Sunni doctors of law in India, went about extirpating the heresy.—Cambridge History of India, Vol. III, page 286. Haig misspells as Ahwatāh.

*Khurāsān, literally, ‘the place of the sunrise,’ is one of the five great provinces of Irān.

In that delightful Province of the Sun,
The first of Persian lands he shines upon,
Where all the loveliest children of his beam,
Flow’rets, and fruits, blush over every stream.—Thomas Moore’s Lalla Rookh.
Sultan Fath Shah made over to Mir Shams-ud-Din all the confiscated lands which had fallen to the crown, and in a short time, Chaks were converted by him. The Shi'a doctrine, however, did not gain much support from the people of the Valley. Mir Shams-ud-Din 'Iraqi was buried at Jadi-bal, a quarter in Srinagar, near which Kajji Chak built a large Imambara in the reign of Sultan Muhammad Shah. The grave of Shaikh 'Iraqi is held in great veneration by the pro-'Iraqi party of Shi'as of Kashmir as the pro-'Iraqi party of Shi'as do not believe in his being a Sayyid. Malik Haidar Chaudur, himself a noted Shi'a, also calls him Shaikh Shams-ud-Din 'Iraqi, in his Ta'rikh. There is a report that the dead body of Mir Shams-ud-Din 'Iraqi was removed to Chaudur to avoid desecration by non-Shi'as.
The tomb of Shaikh Shams-ud-Din 'Irāqi at Tsōdur or Chādur, also named Nūrpūr after Nūr-ud-Din Jahāngir and Nūr Jahān.

Shaikh Hamza Makhdūm.

The spread of Shi'ism by Mīr Shams-ud-Din 'Irāqi alarmed the Sunnis. Shaikh Hamza Makhdūm by his influence and teaching exercised a considerable check on Shi'ism. Shaikh Hamza Makhdūm was the son of Bābā 'Usmān and was born in 900 A.H. (1394 A.D.) The family was originally Chandravanḍī Ṛājпут. The name of Shaikh Hamza's Khalīfa is Bābā 'Āli Ṛīna.

After elementary study of the Qur'ān in Tījr, his village, Shaikh Hamza was sent to Bābā Ismā'īl Kubrawī, a well-known scholar of his time, who enrolled him in the college known as the Dār-ush-Shīfā' at the foot of the Kūh-i-Mārān. Besides the Qur'ān, its exegesis, Traditions and the Fiqh, Shaikh Hamza studied Sūfī-ism and allied sciences. One of his noted teachers was Akhund Mullā Lutfullāh. Another was Mullā Fathullāh Haqqānī, the son of Bābā Ismā'īl Kubrawī.

When Shaikh Hamza was a force in the land, he was deported by Ghāzī Shāh Chak, the Shī'ā ruler of the time,
Shaikh Hamza Makhdom, Scholar and Saint, born in 900 A.H. = 1494 A.C. and died in 984 A.H. 1576 A.C. at the age of 84, during Chak rule in Kashmir. People crowd his tomb at the blossoming of the almond trees below the Hari-narbal, Srinagar.
The Ziarat of Shabbh Hama Mulkbar at the foot of the Kuh-I-Nur (Haripur), Khyber.
from the city of Srinagar to a village called Biru (about 20 miles from Srinagar, via Māgām in Tahsil Badgām). The Shaikh returned to the city only after Ghāzi Shāh’s death.

A co-worker of Shaikh Hamza Makhdūm was Khwāja Tāhir Rafiğ Asha’i Suhrawardī of Srinagar. Khwāja Tāhir in his earlier days was a trader in cloth. He gave up trade after a period of 12 years and betook himself to the service of his religion. Pir Hasan Shāh says that Ya’qūb Shāh Chak wanted to get rid of him but felt afraid to carry out his intention. Like Shaikh Hamza, Khwāja Tāhir Rafiğ left Srinagar and passed nine years of his life in the hills of Mar-rāj. Subsequently he stayed with Ādar Sūh, a leading Brāhman of the Pargana Ver-nāg. Ādar Sūh embraced Islam. It was here in consultation with Khwāja Tāhir Rafiğ that Shaikh Ya’qūb Sarfī, Bābā Dā’ūd Khāki and others left for India to invite Akbar to invade Kashmir to relieve its people from the oppressive Shi’ism of the Chaks.

Shaikh Hamza was instrumental in setting up a large number of masjids in the Valley. He had also acquired control over his breath which he could hold pretty long. This particularly enabled him to enjoy cold baths during snows, which relieved his headaches due to long hours of devotional meditation.

Shaikh Hamza died at the age of 84, in 984 A.H. (1576 A.C.), during the reign of ‘Ali Shāh Chak. Khwāja Tāhir Rafiğ led the jināza prayer.

The Shaikh was buried in his favourite resort for meditation on a slope of the Kūh-i-Mārān. Nawwāb ‘Ināyatullāh Khān, Sūbadār during Mughul rule, built the mausoleum in 1125 A.H. (1713 A.C.). It became dilapidated. Shaikh Ghulām Muhī’ī’d Dīn, Governor during Sikh rule, re-built it, and is himself buried in the eastern side of the enclosure. At the blossoming of almond trees, below the Kūh-i-Mārān, every year people crowd the tomb of the saint, witness the flowers in bloom, and offer Fātiha to Shaikh Hamza Makhdūm in memory of his great work in spreading Islam by his tours over, and trips into,
the remotest corners of the Valley.* Mirzā Kamāl-ud-Din Shaidā expresses the Kashmiri's veneration for Shaikh Hamza Makhdūm in his poem:

KASHĪR

Corrigenda — Read "صحسن" for "صحسن" in the first line, and "فاران" for "فاران" in the fourth, of the Urdu poem.

* The Tuhfa-i-Mahbubi, or the Life of Hazrat Shaikh Hamza Makhdum, in Urdu, by Khwaja Ghulam Muhyyi'd-Din, editor, Kashmir, Barqi Press, Amritsar, 1931, is the principal basis of the above note.
At the age of 15 to preach Islam and converted the Fayauls, ruler of the Valley of Kishwar, to Islam.

Sayed Muhammad Firdaus bin Qahtan of Baghdad, born in 1000 A.H. (1590 C.E.), arrived in Kishwar.
Under the Mughuls, Islamic influence was still further strengthened by many men of learning who came into the Valley. In the reign of Aurangzib, Raja Jaya Singh, the Raja of Kishtwar, is said to have been converted by the miracles* of Sayyid Shah Farid-ud-Din Qadiri of Baghdad, and was given the name of Bakhtyar Khan. His conversion seems to have been followed by that of the majority of his subjects, though Islam had already crossed over in Jahangir’s and Shah Jahan’s times. The journeys of Mughul Emperors to Kashmir also appear to have effected peaceful conversions along the route, as we still find rajás, the descendants of Rajputs, who adopted Islam.

**Shah Farid-ud-Din Qadiri.**

Sayyid Muhammad Farid-ud-Din Qadiri, the son of Sayyid Mustafá, a descendant of Shaikh ‘Abdul Qadir Jilani of Baghdad, was born in 1000 A.H. (1551 A.C.). After his education, his extensive travels, his Hajj, his contact with Shaikh Jalal-ud-Din Al-Maghribi in Mecca, and with Shaikh Muhiy’ud-Din Qadiri in Egypt, he left Baghdad to reach Sind. From Sind he went to Agra and then to Delhi towards the end of Shah Jahans reign. When Raja Jaya Singh, who ascended the gaddi of Kishtwar in 1674 A.C., was the ruler, Farid-ud-Din with his four companions Darwish Muhammad, Shah Abdal, Sayyid Bahá-ud-Din Samání, and Yar Muhammad arrived in 1075 A.H. at the age of 75 to preach and propagate Islam in the Valley of Kashmír. Jaya Singh’s successor in 1681, Kirat Singh, also became Muslim and was given the name of Sa’adat Yar Khan by Aurangzib in 1687. Hafiz Abu’l Qasim Qureshi Akbarabádi, son of Ghiyás-ud-Din, was appointed Shaikh-ul-Islam and Chief Justice of Kishtwar. Kirat Singh’s example was a further stimulus to his subjects. In 1717, Bhup Dei, Kirat’s sister, was married to Farrukh Siyar, Emperor of Delhi. Kirat’s younger brother was Miyáu Muhammad Khan.

The chief temple of Kishtwar in the centre of the town was converted into a mosque, and now has the tomb of Shah Farid-ud-Din along with his youngest child Anwar-ud-Din, who died in infancy. In the second chamber, lies Akhyár-ud-Din. The tomb of Asrâr-ud-Din, the eldest son of Farid-ud-Din, stands at the other end of the town towards the Chaugan, the extensive open heath of Kashmír. Asrâr-ud-Din died at the early age of 18 in 1097 A.H.

---

Akhýár-ud-Dín, the second son, survived his father. Akhýár had his early education at Batála, in Gurdáspur, Punjab, under Sayyid Badr-ud-Dín, Díwán of Masáníyán, the well-known saintly scholar of that place, and later benefited by contact with several teachers at Láhore, Slákkót, Delhi, etc. On his return to Kishhtwâr, he helped in the spread of Islam. Akhýár died on the 7th Zulhajj, 1138 A.H. (1725 A.C.).

Afghan rule also tended to increase the number of converts to Islam. A Brâhman originally of Rajwâr and latterly of Soóarah near Srinagar, accepted Islam at the hands of Mîr ‘Abdur Rashûd Baihaqi (d. 1180 A.H. = 1766 A.C.), and was named Shaikh ‘Abdullâh who is the great great-grandfather of Shaikh Muhammad ‘Abdullâh, a well-known leader of the day. Even during Dogrâ rule, there is a notable instance of conversion. Sârdâr Wâryâm Singh, a tâhsildâr of Kashmir, became a Muslim under the influence of Shâh ‘Abdur Rahîm Safâpûrî.

After all the Fugârâ’ Spread Islam in Kashmir.

Such has been, in brief, the history of the propagation of Islam in the Valley of Kashmir. From first to last, the spread of Islam has been, on the whole, generally peaceful. At any rate, Islam was never introduced into the Valley by a conqueror like Mâhmûd, nor by a warrior like Shîhâb-ud-Dîn, nor by a general like Muhammad bin Qâsim. In fact, the process was reversed. Islam was introduced by a simple faqîr or friar, named Bulbul Shâh, whose simplicity and piety impressed the reigning sovereign of the time, Rînchan or Rînchana. The work was taken up and continued by faqîrs; and, though occasionally stimulated by the zeal of a convert like Malik Saif-ud-Dîn under a Sultan like Sikandar, its widespread, peaceful penetration was due to the piety, purity and simplicity of the Muslim rîshîs and saints who denied pleasures to themselves and worked for others. Thus the great Prophet who took pride in faqr or poverty, found Fugârâ’ (faqîrs or friars) to propagate his faith in the Valley of Kashmir.


2. The Hayât-i-Rahîm by Abûl ‘Amin Pit Ghulâm Ahmad Mahjur, Râvi Printing Works, Lahore, 1340 A.H. = 1921 A.C., page 120.
The Mausoleum of Mir Sayyid 'Ali Hamadānī in Khatlān, now called Kolāb, in Tājikistān, U.S.S.R.

View from the South-East.

View from the East.
The Mausoleum of Mir Sayyid 'Ali Hamadānī in Khatlān, now called Kolāb, in Tājikistān, U.S.S.R.

View from the North-West.

Mutawallis of the Mausoleum of Mir Sayyid 'Ali Hamadānī at Kolāb.
Appendix to Chapter III


The foot-note No. 2, on page 87 of Kashti, describes the location of Khatlan where Mir Sayyid 'Ali Hamadani or Shâh Hamadân was buried. But, at first, my attempts at obtaining photographs of his tomb were unsuccessful. It was at the Taj Hotel, Bombay, early in the year, 1947, that I met Mr. Sultân 'Umarov, Rector, Central Asian University of Tashkent (Tâshqand), who introduced me to Professor E. N. Pavlovsky, Membre de l'Académie des Sciences d'U. R. S. S., both of whom came to India to attend the Science Congress at New Delhi in December, 1946. Professor Pavlovsky divides his year officially between Moscow, Leningrad and Stalinâbâd. It is through his goodness that I got the photographs for which I am grateful to him. The information he has supplied will, I hope, be delightfully shared by the reader. Extracts from two of his letters are followed by Mr. Kolpakoff's descriptive note on the Mausoleum at Kolâb, the present name of Khatlân or Khotl.

In 920 A.H.=1514 A.C. the Emperor Zâbur circumambulated the tomb of Shâh Hamadân, near which were groves of orange and citron.

Letter dated Leningrad, 10th September, 1947.

Dear Dr. Suffi,

I received a portion of the photographs which you required. These were taken by an employé of the Branch of the Academy of Sciences in Tajikistan in Stalinâbad, A. Semenov. He, in company with another Orientalist, visited Kolâb where he took the photographs. So far, I have received only the photographs of the Mausoleum of Mir Sayyid Ali Hamadani, seven of which I herewith enclose. I am sorry their quality is not particularly high, but I hope you will find some of them suitable for the preparation of blocks. If I receive more of these I shall certainly dispatch them to you at once. When printing subscription to the illustrations, kindly mention that these photographs were taken by Mr. A. Semenov. Khatlan is now generally known under the name of Kolab (in Russian it is pronounced as Kolyâb). Its capital is a town of the Tajik Soviet Socialist Republic, the crest of which you may see on one of the postal stamps on the envelope.

I am going to Tajikistan and, while at Stalinâbad, I shall find more about the Mausolea which interest you, and shall write to you.

Yours Sincerely,

E. PAVLOVSKY

Dear Dr. Sufi,

As written to you, I am, at present, in Stalinabad (Tajikistan) where is situated the ancient town of Kolab in which you are interested. I sent you by air some photos of the Mausoleum which interests you. In Kolab there exists only this Mausoleum. It comprises 11 rooms and a row of tombs. I succeeded in obtaining here some photo negatives which I sent to Moscow for enlargement. I shall dispatch them on receipt from Moscow to you.

As regards the description of the actual condition of the Mausoleum wanted by you, I am forwarding to you, under cover of this letter, a cutting out of a local newspaper, *The Kolab Truth*, containing an article of my collaborator, Mr. Kolpakoff, who visited Kolab with the object of inspecting the Mausoleum, and of taking its photographs. This article, of course, is not very exhaustive, but, any how, it will give you at least some idea of the Mausoleum. Mr. Kolpakoff is busy at present in compiling a more detailed scholarly work, which will be sent to you when printed.

There is in the Tajik Branch of the Academy of Sciences of the U. S. S. R. a special Institute of History, Languages and Literature. Its collaborators are extremely interested in the literature of the East and, particularly, of India. I shall be very grateful to you if you could kindly send me all the books written by you as well as by other scholars who would be prepared to let us have their works not only in English but also in Oriental languages. If there is any possibility of sending us anything concerning history or literature, and there is no inconvenience to you to lend us your assistance in this matter, please address us your messages as follows:—

Leningrad, Avenue of K. Marx, House No. 5, Apartment No. 5, E. N. Pavlovsky, Member of the Academy of Sciences.

Please accept our best regards and our wishes for success in your scholarly endeavours.

With respect.

Sd. E. PAVLOVSKY,
Academy Member.

The contribution of Mr. Kolpakoff to the newspaper "The Kolab Truth" dated the 11th August, 1947, on the Mausoleum of Mir Sayyid 'Ali Hamadāni at Kolāb, Tājikistān, U.S.S.R.
The Mausoleum situated on the eastern side of the town of Kolāb, known under the name of the Mazār Amir Sayyid 'Ali Hamadānī, was erected 596 years ago, and represents one of the most remarkable monuments of the Tājik architecture of the 14th century of our era.

It has been built, from its very foundation, in bricks cemented with liquid alabaster, and the surface of its walls, outside and inside, has been finished also with alabaster. The building, during the centuries of its existence, has been very seldom repaired and its alabaster finish has considerably crumbled to pieces.

The Mausoleum has four entrances: two from the north and, one each, on the eastern and southern sides. All the entrances have arrow-like arches over them. Inside the Mausoleum there are eleven rooms, out of which two are big and nine small. Every one of these rooms is surmounted by a spherical cupola.

The architecture of the monument is very interesting. The idea of its builder has been carried out in a most original way: a building, square at its base, has been converted at the top into a 12-cornered structure crowned with a spherical cupola built in bricks cemented together only with alabaster without any other wooden or metal reinforcements. Many earthquakes have taken place during six centuries, but the building still stands nearly intact, if we ignore occasional cracks in some of the minor cupolas.

In the central room of the Mausoleum, the Muhammadan scholar Amir Sayyid 'Ali Hamadānī is buried. He originally came from Hamadān and lived, during the epoch of Timūr, in Bukhārā. The year 1314 has been indicated as the time of birth of Sayyid 'Ali Hamadānī.

As a result of some disagreement with Timūr, Amir Sayyid 'Ali Hamadānī betook himself from Bukhārā. He travelled extensively in all the countries of the East. In search of knowledge he visited Arab lands. He prayed at Mecca and Medina, then departed for India, where he saw many cities. He stayed for a certain time in Kashmir. Here he met idol-worshippers and converted them to the Muslim faith. There does exist in Kashmir, until now, a mosque erected by him.

Sayyid 'Ali Hamadānī also called at Badakhshān. At the end of his migrations, Amir Sayyid 'Ali Hamadānī settled in Kolāb, where he acquired a big plot of land for the erection of a mosque and mausoleum.

Sayyid 'Ali Hamadānī's influence on the population of Northern India was considerable. As a result of his activities and propaganda, the population of Kashmir was converted to Islam. There remains after his death a religious book, written by him under the title of the Awrād-i-Sharif.
In 1384 Sayyid 'Ali Hamadānī was buried in the Kolāb Mausoleum, which became thereafter the resting-place of his descendants. His sister Māh-i-Khurāsānī (Hirosoni, Māh-i-Khurāsānī?) and one woman, with the name of Aftāb-i-Pinhānī, as well as more than ten other descendants of Sayyid 'Ali have been interred in the same Mausoleum. There is also buried there Shoi Tolikoni, a Shaikh, hailing from the city of Tolikon [Tālikhān is a town with longitude 69°27 and latitude 36°45, and lies to the south-west of Mazār-i-Sharif in northern Afghanistan] who resided in Kolāb in his capacity of guardian of the Mosque and of the Mausoleum.

To the south-west of the latter, at a distance of 20 meters from the corner of the building, there is an elevation in the ground whereon lies a marble stone of a very rare workmanship, with an Arabic inscription, relating to Sayyid 'Ali's biography. This stone of polished marble, weighing one ton, has been brought, according to an old legend, to Kolāb from India on elephants. This tombstone has been placed not inside the Mausoleum where Sayyid 'Ali was buried, but on a rising of the ground, where the grave of one of the grandsons of the famous conqueror, Timūr, known to Europeans by the name of Tamerlane, is situated.

This tombstone of a rare workmanship is considerably damaged in certain places, and a marble slab lying formerly over it, which had been intact till 1939, has been broken into several pieces. It is lying at present in this condition, in the Mausoleum, and bears also some inscription in Arabic which it is very difficult, at present, to decipher.

This remnant of Tājik architecture in Kolāb—the Hamadānī Mausoleum as well as the marble tombstone near the latter—do possess a considerable historical value. The local authorities should pay serious attention to the repair of the Mausoleum and to the conservation of the tombstone.

Sd. A. KOLPAKOFF,

Historical Sciences Candidate to the Degree of Doctor.

The Kolāb Truth, of the 11th August, 1947, No. 93/276.

(The letter from Stālnābād and the article from the "Kolāb Truth" written in Russian were kindly translated for me by Mr. A. Elsingre of Messrs. Volkart Brothers, Karachi, Pakistan.)
CHAPTER IV
THE SULTĀNS OF KASHMİR
[1320 to 1555 A.C.]
The last phase of Hindu rule in Kashmir before the Sultāns.

As already referred to, at the end of Chapter II, Hindu rule in Kashmir terminated with the close of the reign of Rājā Sahadeva, whom Jonarāja calls "this Rākshasa" or demon "of a king," and adds that he "devoured" the country "for nineteen years, three months and twenty-five days" (1300-1 to 1319-20 A.C.). Consequently administration was paralysed. The contagion of immorality spread from him to his subjects. Debauchery and licentiousness were rampant. The foundations of authority were sapped. Instead of any financial or economic improvement, Sahadeva's rule was characterized by general decay.

Dulcha's invasion.

Such a state of affairs could not fail to attract the notice of the neighbouring chiefs. In the beginning of the fourteenth century, Dulcha—called by Kashmiri historians Zulchū—and already described as "the commander of the army of the great king Karmasena" came down with a sixty thousand mounted force, and entered Kashmir by way of the Zoji-Lā towards the close of Sahadeva's nominal sway. Sahadeva had not the strength to meet Dulcha and give him battle. He sought safety in flight, and left Dulcha victorious and master of the situation. Intoxicated by success, Dulcha's followers oppressed and plundered the people to their hearts' content. Cities, towns and villages suffered unspeakable horrors—of vandalism. Numerous inhabitants irrespective of age or sex were ruthlessly done to death. "Innumerable gods were destroyed." In addition to bloodshed and massacre, Dulcha also "took away the strong men from the country." In short, Dulcha's advent in Kashmir resembled the bloody orgies of Chingiz and Hulāḫū.

Thus Dulcha spent his time in Kashmir in 1319 A.C. Fortunately for the people, the excessive cold of Kashmir
frightened the murderous invader. Finding no other means of escape from the relentless clutches of a severe winter and possibly starvation too, Dulcha left the land. Pandit Birbal Kachur has appropriately described the invasion of Dulcha in the following brief words: "He came, plundered, killed, seized and departed." No more graphic description of the terrible visit of Dulcha, whom he calls Zulchū, could be given!

Some historians have assigned a Turkish, Mongol or Tätär origin to Dulcha or Zulchū. At the same time, they have given him the name of Zulqadr Khan. It is not at all proved that he was a Muslim. It can be surmised that he was a follower of the Buddhist faith—his king was Karmasena. On account of his ferociousness, Dulcha or Zulchū may justly be called a Hun.

Dulcha's departure from Kashmir left the country without a ruler or a central government. Factions appeared on every side with independent chiefs who acknowledged no authority. Here Riñchana comes to prominence. Of him we shall speak presently.

Sahadeva, notwithstanding his cruelty and selfishness possessed, to a marked degree, the virtue of hospitality. He was generous without regard to caste or creed. During his reign, which, as already noted, extended over a period of nineteen years, three months and twenty-five days, two personages of potential power entered his dominions. And he made adequate provision for both of them by assigning lands and jågîrs in order to enable them to maintain themselves.

The first person who received hospitality at the hands of the Rājā was Lankar Chak, the ancestor of the Chaks, who succeeded the Shāh Mīrī Sultāns in the sovereignty of Kashmir. Being defeated by his brother, Lankar fled from Dārdao or Dārdistān and found a ready and welcome asylum in Kashmir. The second case recorded by historians is that of Shāh Mīr, the son of Tāhir. Shāh Mīr came from Panchagahvra identified by Sir Aurel Stein in his map of Ancient Kashmir, as the Valley between Būdīl and Rajaurī and watered by the Panchagahvra stream. But Some histories mention Swāt or Swādīrg. Sahadeva received him with kindness and allotted to him a village.

Riñchana, a son of the ruling house of western Tibet or Ladākh, on the murder of his father by the rebellious nobles
of the court, fled from the country, and came to Kashmir with his companions and soldiers during the invasion of Dulcha. In fact, Jonarāja makes him a joint invader with Dulcha. Other historians give different versions of Rīchana's visit. He also entered by way of the Zōji-Lā as did Mirzā Haidar Dughlāt in 1532 A.C. This route connected Kashmir with Ladākh and thence with Tibet and China. The photo below was taken when I passed the Zōji-Lā in 1943.

Into the Zōji-Lā Pass.

Rinchen, Riṇchana or Rintan.

With regard to the name of Riṇchana there appears to be some difference of opinion among historians. Some have adopted Ratanjū or Ranjū Shāh, while others Rechan, Renchan or Rainchan Shāh, though some also call him Ranjpo or Ratanchan. One is inclined to accept Rinchen as correct because there is no controversy about his Tibetan or Ladākhī origin. In the Tibetan form, Rinchen means 'Great God.' Rinchan Shāh is a name even today used in Ladākh. Kashmiris, however, pronounce it Rintan and call him Rintan Shāh. We have also evidence to this effect in Khwāja Muhammad A'zam's work, the Wāqīʿāt-i-Kashmīr or
the Ta'rikh-i-Kashmir A'zami (Muhammadi Press, Lahore, p. 60), in which a mosque is stated still to bear the name “King Rintan’s Mosque.” People even now call it Rintan Shâh’s Mosque. The Sanskrit form is Rîñchana as adopted by Sir Aurel Stein. We shall spell it as Rîñchana.

Rîñchana becomes king of Kashmir.

We should not dismiss from our minds the chaotic condition prevalent in Kashmir at the time due to Đulcha’s invasion. The country had no ruler. Its old king Sahadeva, a pusillanimous creature, had disappeared. His commander-in-chief, Râmachandra, had retired behind the walls of the Gagangîr fort. Kashmir obviously needed a strong, capable ruler. Rîñchana who, according to Jonarâja, was ‘a lion among men’ and was respected for his great intellect, happened to be on the spot. He had already won the hearts of those with whom he came into contact. The number of his adherents and partisans increased gradually till he became strong enough to seize the throne and enforce authority. His accession to the throne was not the result of an act of usurpation: rather it was almost a popular acclamation. Soon after his accession, he busied himself strenuously with the task of freeing the country from the evil influences which, owing to lack of proper administration and an almost complete absence of strong central authority, had become rampant at this time.

In considering himself without a rival, Rîñchana however reckoned without his host. His exaltation to the throne naturally aroused in Râmachandra a keen sense of jealousy and ambition. He, therefore, refused to acknowledge Rîñchana’s authority. Rîñchana, acting wisely, offered him no open resistance fully realizing that the country had already suffered so much from the ravages of war. Furthermore, he was keenly alive to the dissension which had torn the country into factions, and understood the value of peace. He, therefore, resorted to a stratagem. For a considerable time, he sent to Gagangîr his Tibetan or Ladakhî subjects, disguised as merchants, who sold their commodities at very low rates. After he had disarmed

1. Gagangîr, the old name of which is Gagangiri, is now a small village in the Lâr pargana in the Sind valley of Kashmir, prettily situated on the right bank of the river, about 10 miles west of Sonamarg. Pop. 398.

suspicion in this way, he directed his men, duly equipped with instructions, to rise in rebellion the moment he arrived there. As a consequence of this coup, Rāmchandra was slain and his son, Rāwanchandra, captured along with his relatives. Thus, in 1320 A.C., Riñchana found himself the undisputed monarch of Kashmir.

To further strengthen his position, Riñchana "planted on his breast queen Koṭa," that is, he married Koṭā Rānī, daughter of Rāmchandra, and appointed his son Rāwanchandra the commander of the army with Western Tibet and Lār as his jāgīr or assignment. The step was also calculated to drive out of Rāwanchandra's mind all desire of vengeance. This purpose was completely achieved inasmuch as they began to live on perfect terms of intimacy and sincere friendship. Malik Haidar Chāḍura tells us that Riñchana gave Rāwanchandra the surname of "Ji Dūst,"¹ to express his esteem according to the old Kashmir practice. A son was born of Koṭā and was named Haidar by Sultān Sadr-ud-Dīn as Riñchana had become a Muslim and been given that name.

Riñchana's sense of justice.

Riñchana was gifted with the qualities of wisdom and justice, and always decided matters in an absolutely impartial spirit, neither caring for power nor wealth. Jonarāja² has recorded the following two cases which, strange as they are, serve to show how solicitous of justice he was, and how resourcefully he acted in deciding cases which would sometimes baffle even the wisest heads.

One day Timi, the brother of Tākka or Tukka³ an old companion of Riñchana, forcibly took milk from a milkmaid. She cried to Riñchana for justice. He ordered that Timi should be brought into the court. The accused being brought in, Riñchana inquired from him if the milkmaid's complaint was true. The accused totally denied the charge. When asked to furnish further proof, the milkmaid said:

---

1. The Ta'rikh-i-Kashmir by Ra'is-ul-Mulk Malik Haidar Chāḍura —MS., page 121. According to this author, ji—master or lord—was used in Kashmir to express one's esteem and respect for a person. Dūst means a friend. Ji Dūst would thus mean an "esteemed friend."


3. Tukka is probably Tibetan 'a Brugpa, pronounced Ḍugpa or Tugpa.—The Indian Antiquary, Bombay, Volume XXXVI, July 1908, page 187.
“Rip open the stomach of this man instantly, and if no milk is found in it, then I and my son should be killed.” The stomach was ripped open and found to contain milk.

According to the dictates of civilized society, this method of meting out justice is utterly cruel and primitive; though, at that time, it did not appear so strange to a society which was far behind in its standard of civilization and had no definite code of laws for its guidance. Else Riñchana, himself a lover of justice, would not have followed it. Besides, this incident clearly indicates his complete impartiality, as also his utter disregard of the relative position of the parties before him. Further, it shows how accessible he was to his people that even such small matters could be brought before him. No impediment was placed in the path of the party seeking justice at his hands.

The other case was as follows. Two men living at Vānabal, a village in Bādgām Tahsīl, had entrusted their mares and their foals to a shepherd. The strange thing about the foals was that they were of the same age and had exactly the same colour. When the mares and the foals were conveyed from their winter quarters to a summer pasturage, one of the foals died or, according to another version, “was killed in the forest by a lion.” The two mares were unable to realize which of them had suffered the loss of its young one, and the result was that the surviving young one continued to suck milk from both as it desired. The shepherd, too, was unable to say which master had lost his mare’s foal. The ownership of the surviving foal, therefore, became a matter of contention between the owners of the two mares. The suit was taken to the king who ordered the owners to bring their mares and the foal to a bridge of boats near the city. This being done, the king ordered the foal to be thrown into the river. On this, the mother of the foal also jumped into the river. The other only neighed. By this ingenious method, the king restored the foal to its real owner. When Riñchana “decided dubious cases in this manner, the people thought that the golden age had, as it were, returned.” The feudal landowners or barons, called Dāmaras who were, at times, the cause of considerable trouble to former rulers, were brought under perfect control.

Riñchana, in brief, spared no pains in dealing out justice to the administration of which he devoted the remaining days of his life. And he likewise issued strict
instructions to all his officials. In the words of Jonarāja, "the illustrious Riñchana Surtatāna (Sultān) gave the country, which was weary of trouble and disorder, rest under the shelter of his arm." The people of Kashmir witnessed again all the festivities with which they had been familiar under their former kings (Kings of Kashmir, p. 19, also The Indian Antiquary, July 1908, p. 183).

Riñchana's conversion to Islam.

After he had restored order in the country, Riñchana turned his attention to religious matters. Though Buddhism was nominally the prevailing religion at this time, the country was distracted by the dissensions of sectaries, whose hostile and contending claims to religious truth perplexed the inquirer dissatisfied with the national religion. At first the king sought guidance from the wise and scholarly priests of the Hindu faith. According to Pandit Hargopāl Kaul Khasta, obviously on the authority of Jonarāja who mentions Črī Deva Swāmī as the person referred to, they declined to guide him or initiate him into Caivism. According to Pandit Birbal Kāchur and Ra'īs-ul-Mulk Malik Haidar Chādura, they did all they could to enlighten him on the subject, but failed to satisfy him. Their diverse views on religion and their doctrine, which militated against each other, only baffled him. Undaunted by this failure, he did not abate his efforts. After much perturbation of spirit and constant prayer, it is said that, one night, he dreamt that some one was telling him: "Early in the morning the next day, the first person thou dost behold is thy guide." He acted on this advice, and the next morning observed from the roof of his palace a person with his face towards the west, apparently engaged in offering prayers in a manner hitherto unknown to him.

---


The Ta'rikh-i-Kashmir, Persian, MS., by Ra'īs-ul-Mulk Malik Haidar Chādura, owned by K. B. Maulavi Zafar Hasan, Retired D phty Director-General, Archeaology, Nasheman, Delhi Gate, Delhi, page 125.
Rińchana at once went to this man and asked him his name and his religion, and also the particular prophet whose follower he was. To these inquiries the stranger replied as follows:—

"My name is 'Abdur Rahmān; my religion is Islam; I worship the one God who has no co-partner, and I am a follower of that Prophet whose message has superseded all previous messages and commandments." The saint, as stated in Chapter III, is popularly known as Bulbul Shāh.

The saint next proceeded to relate several of the anecdotes of the Holy Prophet together with a brief account of his mission. The king was deeply impressed by the clear and simple exposition of Islam, and accepted this faith assuming Sadr-ud-Din as his Islamic name. This conversion, in 720 A.H. (1320 A.C.), marks the beginning of Muslim rule in Kashmir.
been important in the history of Kashmir on account of Rīchhana’s conversion to Islam, Shāh Mīr could have begun the Kashmiri era right from his own accession in 740 A.H. (or 1339 A.C.), that is about twenty years later.

Taking a general survey, we see that, at this time, Sultān Ghīyās-ud-Dīn Tughluq Shāh ruled at Delhi, and his namesake at Herāt. Abū Sa‘īd, the Mongol Īl Khān, ruled over Khurāsān during 1317-1334 A.C. Sultān Nāsir was the ruler of Egypt. In Spain, Mūlūk-ut-Tawāif or petty kings continued. Edward II reigned over England and, in France, we find Charles IV; in Germany, Ludwig of Bavaria, and in Scotland Robert I. Benedict XII became Pope after the death of John XXII.

After Rīchhana, his brother-in-law and commander-in-chief, Rāwanchandra, also embraced Islam. This example was followed by many nobles, and Islam became so popular that, within the course of two years or so, it could number many adherents.

During his brief reign, Sadr-ud-Dīn set up many buildings in Kashmir. Immediately after his conversion to Islam, he built, according to the desire of Bulbul Shāh, a grand Khānqāh.* To this he assigned a number of villages so that the expenses of the Khānqāh and the needs of those who either resorted to it, or stayed therein for a brief period, might be met from their revenue. It is interesting to note that, in course of time, the name of the Khānqāh, viz. Bulbul Lānkār, came to be applied to the locality itself. Malik Haidar Chādura who wrote his history in 1027-30 A.H., during the reign of Jahāṅgīr, writes of this place: “The locality is still flourishing and also the Khānqāh, which has been recently repaired, retains its original condition.” Jonarāj’s allusion to Rīchchanpūr, the town built by Rīchhana apparently refers to the town round about this same locality which is now the Bulbul Lānkār mahalla of Srinagar.

A Jāmi‘ or cathedral mosque was also built by Sadr-ud-Dīn. In this, Friday and the usual daily prayers were performed. This indicates the rapidity of the spread of the Muslim faith.

---

* A Khānqāh, in Kashmir, connotes a mosque, a devotional retreat or residence. A Ziyārāt is a devotional retreat, or a grave, or a tomb of a saint.
For his private use, Sultan Sadr-ud-Din had built a palace and a mosque in which the famous Kashmir stone known as Dewar Kaiyn was used. Kaiyn in Kashmiri means a stone. Khwaja Muhammad A’zam, who lived in the twelfth century A.H., or the 18th century A.C., writes in his history of Kashmir that “these stones are still found buried under débris.” Both he and Malik Haidar Chāḍura, who preceded him and lived in the eleventh century A.H., write that the original mosque built by Sultan Sadr-ud-Din was destroyed by fire, and a smaller one, known by the name of King Rintan’s Mosque, was built on the same site. In this the stones of the previous mosque were utilized. We are further told by Khwaja Muhammad A’zam that it was very much in use also in his time, and that the usual daily prayers were offered in it. It now stands deserted and dilapidated in Bulbul Lānkar near the Ziyārat or tomb of Ḥazrat Sayyid Muhammad Amin Uwaisī.

Sultan Sadr-ud-Din’s death.

The Sultan reigned for three years and one month and nineteen days. During this time, he skilfully organized Kashmir into a corporate kingdom. He passed away on Friday, 25th November, 1323 A.C. (723 A.H.). The death is recorded to have been due to a disorder of the wind-humour brought about by the bitter cold of winter.* He was buried in a place to the south of the Khānqāh, Bulbul Lānkar, situated between ‘Ālī Kadal and Nau Kadal, on the right bank of the Jhelum, a little below the Ziyārat of Muhammad Amin Uwaisī, Srinagar. The grave has been declared as a protected monument by His Highness’s Government Notification, dated 2nd September, 1941 A.C., and lies in the Bulbul Lānkar mahalla.

The death of Bulbul Shāh, the Sultan’s spiritual guide, took place on the 7th Rajab, 727 A.H. (1326 A.C.), in the reign of Udayanadeva.

Among the sole survivors of the Sultan’s family were his infant son, Haidar Khān, whom Jonarāja calls Haidara, and his queen Kotā Rānī who, we have reason to believe, remained a Hindu at heart. Sadr-ud-Din left his son, by a previous arrangement, under the personal supervision

---

*Reference to the Bhoṭṭas or Bhauttas in the Rājatarangini of Kashmir. Translation and Notes on Sanskrit Text by Pandit Dayā Rām Sahni, and Notes from Tibetan Records by A. H. Francke.—The Indian Antiquary, Bombay, Volume XXXVII, July 1908, p. 186.
The tomb of Rinchama, afterwards Sultan Sadrud-Din, the first Muslim ruler of Kashmir, buried in Purbul Tanka.
and tutelage of his trusted councillor, Shāh Mīr, whom he had chosen to look after the upbringing and education of his son. It was Shāh Mīr's wife who performed the duties of a foster-mother to the infant king. Hence, the appellation of foster-father given to Shāh Mīr by some historians. A further account of Shāh Mīr will be given in its proper place.

**Chaos in Kashmir: Islam suffers a reverse.**

After a brief reign as mentioned above, Sultan Sadr-ud-Din, formerly Rīnchana or Rintan, passed away having introduced Islam into Kashmir. His infant son, Haidar Khān, being unable to take into his hands the reins of government, Kōṭā Rānī was the Queen-Regent.

**Kōṭā Rānī's religion.**

It is indeed very strange that, herself being the wife of a staunch Muslim, Kōṭā Rānī, later on, adopted a course which throws grave doubts on her adhesion to the Muslim faith. But it is equally impossible to assert with any amount of certainty that she was not a Muslim. After King Rīnchana's public conversion to Islam, she could not, in pursuance of the tenets of that creed, remain a Hindu, being the wife of a Muslim, because Islam does not countenance marriage or lawful conjugal relations between a Muslim and a non-Muslim, unless the latter is a Kitābiya.¹ It is not conceivable how Sadr-ud-Din, devout Muslim as he was, could have a non-Kitābiya for his wife. If it is said that he tolerated this relationship as a result of his own ignorance, it will also have to be admitted, at the same time, that the charge of conversion of Kōṭā under compulsion has no foundation against Sadr-ud-Din. We may, therefore, assert that considering her safety and station in life to lie in professing Islam, Kōṭā Rānī might have done so, but remained a Hindu at heart. Anyhow, her subsequent policy leaves no doubt that her profession of Islam had been out of diplomacy. She invited, from Gandhāra,² Udyānadeva, brother

---

¹ In Arabic, one of 'The People of the Book,' used in the feminin gender.

² Gandhāra, the corridor of India, and now the North-West Frontier Province, was the province of the Kābul valley which included the districts of Nagarahāra or Jalālābād, Lamghān (about 100 miles east of the Kāfrištān district), Kābul and the northern region towards Kūhistān, and the district of Gandhāra proper, formerly called Purushapura, but at this time Parashāwar, and today Peshkwar, the last so named by Akbar.
of Rājā Sahadeva, whom she married. And she invested him with regal authority with the support of Shāh Mir. This widow re-marriage, and particularly with her husband’s brother, would not be approved of in the ordinary Hindu society of that age though Draupadi marrying her husband’s brother is a classical instance. It is, therefore, not improbable that Koṭā was not an out and out Hindu, at any rate.

Udyānadeva’s return: his reign from 1323 to 1338 A.C.

As a result of Dulcha’s invasion and his sojourn in Kashmir in 1319, Udyānadeva had fled to Swāt or Gandhāra and stayed there till he was recalled and raised to the throne by Shāh Mir. Jonarāja’s words are: “Shahamera bestowed on Udyānadeva the country of Kashmir together with queen Ėri Koṭā” (p. 24). It was by no means a wise choice, because the Rāni’s consort was not gifted with the noble qualities generally expected of kings. He was cowardly, and lacked wisdom and ability. The Rāni, however, had the foresight to keep authority in her own hands while she allowed her consort to be titular sovereign. Shāh Mir and Bhikshana Bhaṭṭa or Pacha Baṭ Kakāpuri, the one as commander of the armies and the other as minister carried on the government of the country. Koṭā had a son by Udyānadeva, named Bola Ratan, whom she placed under the supervision of Bhikshana who was both a tutor and foster-father of the prince, his wife having served as foster-mother. According to Jonarāja, Shāh Mir looked after Haidar and Bhikshana the other child. And Koṭā was naturally “disposed towards both her sons” (p. 26). But as to the future of the two children we know nothing except that Shāh Mir “imprisoned the two sons of the queen” (p. 32).

Invasion by Achala or Urwan or Urdil. Udyānadeva’s flight.

Soon after Udyānadeva’s return and his elevation to kingship, Kashmir had to face another horde of invaders led by Urwan, also called Urdil by some historians, and Achala by Jonarāja. Udyānadeva, as before, sought safety in flight towards Western Tibet or Ladākh. It will not be out of place here to point out that Pandit Harṣopāl Kaul Khasta, the author of the Guldasta-i-Kashmir, describes this flight as the result of confusion and dread, on the part of Udyānadeva. He mistook Urwan or Urdil, who had marched across Hūrapōr, the station for entrance and exit from
and to the Rajauri direction, for Dulcha. It is, however, remarkable that the Rāṇī was not beset by any such hallucination.

**Koṭā Rāṇī’s appeal to her subjects: united resistance and the invader’s retreat.**

Realizing that she had been deserted by her consort, Koṭā Rāṇī rallied all her forces. In consultation with Shāh Mir, she made an appeal to all officials and the people inviting them to offer a united front to the invaders, and so save themselves and the country. In this appeal, she recalled to their minds the deplorable conditions* which prevailed in Kashmir after Dulcha’s invasion. This appeal elicited a ready response and aroused feelings of patriotism among the subjects who willingly offered their services for the defence of their motherland. Accordingly, they met the enemy who had to retreat and sue for terms of peace, and was permitted to leave the country unmolested. It was a great achievement to the credit of Koṭā who won fame as the courageous queen of Kashmir.

**Udyānadeva re-appears in Kashmir.**

Notwithstanding his base desertion of her, Koṭā Rāṇī re-called and re-instated her consort on the throne after the enemy had retired from the country. However, the people remained incensed against Udyānadeva and refused him the respect due to a monarch.

Udyānadeva’s reign lasted over a period of fifteen years, two months and two days. For this period, historians have recorded nothing but confusion and chaos. It must not be ignored that, in this régime, the councillors were the same as in the previous one. The example of the king, however, was such that their counsel availed the country little. In times of crises, when their counsel did prevail, as on the invasion of Achala, the country benefited. With regard to the retreat of Urwan or Achala, all historians agree in attributing it to Shāh Mir’s courage and ingenuity. As a result, Shāh Mir was allowed a far greater share in the affairs of the country than was ever done before. He had now become the right hand of the Rāṇī and the mainstay of the kingdom during the nominal reign of Udyānadeva.

---

*Ta’rikh-i-Kashmir by Malik Haidar Chāḍura, MS., page 128.*
Koṭā Rāṇī rules from 1338 to 1339 A.C.

Udyānandeva died in 1338 A.C. Koṭā established herself on the throne and removed the court to the fort of Andarkōṭī. Moreover, in order successfully to execute the duties which now devolved upon her as the sole monarch of Kashmir, she appointed Bhikshana her chief minister, superseding Shāh Mir who naturally raised the standard of revolt. Koṭā ruled the country for about five months.

The revolt of Shāh Mir needs a little explanation. It is evident from the foregoing account that Udyānandeva was not capable of maintaining himself on his tottering throne without the strong and active support of Shāh Mir who had won the hearts of the people by his tact, bravery and resourcefulness. It seems that Koṭā Rāṇī wanted to checkmate his growing influence by retiring to Andarkōṭ and through Bhikshana, her chief minister. Perhaps, she foresaw Shāh Mir’s future ascendancy, and took this step which the latter construed to be tantamount to an open challenge. Shāh Mir, therefore, naturally felt insulted at this show of ingratitude, especially considering the services he had rendered and the loyalty he had maintained at a time when he might easily have usurped the throne. Now Koṭā Rāṇī’s ingratitude impelled him to a course of very strong action. The kingdom was falling into chaos and anarchy, and this was another incentive to Shāh Mir to appropriate all authority to himself.

Shāh Mir’s ancestry.

Shāh Mir was the son of Tāhir and the grandson of Qaur Shāḥ of whom Jonarāḷa says he was “born of noble family.” Baklīshī Nizām-ud-Din Ahmad calls him Shāh Mir, son of ‘Tāhir Āl, son of Āl Shāshab bin Karshāshab ibn Nikrūz” and refers his ancestry to “Arjun, one of the Pāṇḍūs.” Firishta calls him Shāh Mirzā. Once, when Shāh Mir was wandering in a wood, he fell asleep and saw a dream in which a person predicted to him that his des-

1. Andarkōṭ, old Andarkōth, and the ancient Jayapūrā, the capital of King Jayāpūḍa (764–795 A.C.), the grandson of Lalitāditya, is a village about a mile from Sumbal on the left bank from the bridge over the Jhelum, and five miles below Shādipūr. Andarkōṭ now consists of 143 houses, and has a population of 1,171. All are Muslims, half Shi‘as and half Sunnis. Andarkōṭ has the grave of Sultan Shams-ud-Din Shāh Mir in a small poky room about 20 feet square, having walls of half-baked bricks.

2. Qaur means iron, or an instrument, or a weapon in Turkish.
cendants would rise to the dignity of the kingship of Kashmir. It is not difficult to imagine that a prediction like this could not but spur the ambition of Shāh Mir who, judging from his position and power, could successfully defy and set aside the authority of the ruling monarch. He had come to Kashmir in the year 1313 A.C., in the reign of Sahadeva, and had known it for these twenty-five years. As we learn from Jonarāja, Shāh Mir had grandsons—Shīrshāṭaka (Shīr-āṣhāmako) and Hinda (Hindā) at this time, we can conclude that he was well advanced in years.

The end of Koṭā Rāṇī.

Still Shāh Mir did not adopt a course of open rebellion. He, at first, sent the twice-widowed queen, proposals of marriage which she rejected with scorn. This refusal of Koṭā Rāṇī can be explained in several ways. She might have felt an aversion to marry the foster-father of her own son, Haidar Kháñ, though Islam has not placed any ban on such a union. It is also probable that she might have thought it beneath her dignity to marry a servant of the state. But, then, she had already been the wife of Rīṇchana, at one time an invader of her country and the murderer of her father, Rāmachandra.

There could be but one consequence of Koṭā Rāṇī’s rejection of Shāh Mir’s proposals, and this immediately manifested itself. Shāh Mir invested Andarkōṭh now known as Andarkōṭ (the site of King Jayāpiḍa’s capital, Jayapōr or Jayāpiḍapōr) with a large army. The Rāṇī’s chief minister, Bhikshana, was killed by Shāh Mir by a stratagem. Her nephew Achaladeva, Rāwanchand’s son, was only a minor. The majority of her subjects favoured Shāh Mir. It was, therefore, small wonder that some of Koṭā Rāṇī’s adherents deserted her. She had to bow before the supreme will of Shāh Mir. She, therefore, yielded a reluctant consent to the espousal. Malik Haidar Chāḍura is not clear on what exactly happened immediately after Koṭā’s marriage. He asserts that the inhabitants of Andarkōṭ corroborate the committal of suicide by Koṭā which agrees with Jonarāja* who states that Koṭā Rāṇī spent one night as Shāh Mir’s wife and that the next day—tenth bright lunar day in the month of Śrāvaṇa in the year 3915 Laukika—she was seized and “put in prison.” She may have killed herself in her imprisonment. Her two sons were also imprisoned as we have stated already.

---

* Kings of Kashmir, 1898, Volume III, page 32.
SULTĀN SHAMS-UD-DIN I

[740 to 743 A.H. or 1339 to 1342 A.C.]

Shāh Mīr, Jonarājā’s Čīrī Shamsadīnā, ascended the throne, according to Malik Haidar, in the year 753 A.H. (1352 A.C.). Bīrbal Kāchur* places Shāh Mīr’s accession in the year 743 A.H. (1342 A.C.) and his death in 747 A.H. (1346 A.C.). Khwāja Muhammad Aʿzam, in his Wāqiʿāt-i-Kashmīr and Pīr Ḥasan Shāh in his Taʿrīkh-i-Kashmīr also give the same dates. Malik Haidar Chādura, omits to mention the date of Shāh Mīr’s death. He contents himself with the remark that Shāh Mīr ruled for three years and five months. This period mostly agrees with that of Jonarājā who says three years and five days, while Abu’l Fazl has two years, eleven months and twenty-five days. Obviously this is an error, and we can safely put the date of Shāh Mīr’s accession at 740 A.H. or 1339 A.C., on the testimony of Jonarājā who gives the date of the deposition of Kotā Rānī as 10 Shriivana Shudī Laukika or old Kashmir Samat* 3915 which corresponds with 1339 A.C. Shāh Mīr’s accession is particularly notable for the fact that it marks the firm establishment of Muslim authority in both its religious and secular aspects in Kashmir. It is true that, with the conversion of Riṅchana, Kashmir had come directly under Islamic influence, but its continuity was broken by the death of that king and consequent chaos under Kotā and Udyanadeva. Shāh Mīr, though a foreigner to Kashmir, it must be set down to his credit, saved Kashmir from foreign aggression. He also saved it from becoming a province of the Tughluqs of Tughluqābād or Delhi. Kashmir may have lost its independence. It is Shāh Mīr who saved its freedom and his descendants sustained that freedom for over two centuries. Shāh Mīr assumed the title of Sultān Shams-ud-Din.

Shams-ud-Din’s descendants known in Kashmir as Shāh Mīrs, continued to exercise sovereign authority over Kashmir for over two centuries. Shāh Mīr’s reign was beneficial for Kashmir, as it brought peace and settled

* Pandit Bīrbal Kāchur wrote his History in 1251 A.H. or 1835 A.C., when Kashmir was under Ranjit Singh. Bīrbal was a great scholar of Persian, and a poet too. Kāchur, or Kāchru, was added to his name, it appears, on account of his employment under a Pandit family of that name as affirmed by Pandit Anand Kaul Bāmzai.
government, or as Jonaraja says he "assuaged the troubles of Kashmir and changed its condition." He abolished the exactions of his predecessors. He repaired the ruin caused by the invasion and extortion of Dulcha whose ravages had left for generations the traces of his incursion. The Sultan by written orders fixed one-sixth of the produce as land-tax. Sultan Shams-ud-Din introduced what is called the Kashmiri era from the accession and conversion of Rinchana in 720 A.H. (1320 A.C.), which continued till the advent of Mughul rule in 1586 A.C. in the Valley. This new Kashmiri era officially superseded the old Kashmiri era known as Laukika or Sapt Rishi Era under Hindu rule. This new era was used in State documents and on tombstones, some of which preserve their inscriptions to this day. I was interested to know that Kashmiri zamindars use this Kashmiri calendar even now. It is a luni-solar system, stands at 625 in 1944 A.C. or 1363 A.H. The Sultan raised two families—the Chaks or Chakreca or Chakras and Magres or Margeshas of the Chronicles and not Makers of Colonel Haig and others—to importance and drew from them his generals and soldiers. In the words of Wolseley Haig,² Shâh Mir used "wisely and beneficially the power he had acquired. The Hindu kings had been atrocious tyrants, whose avowed policy had been to leave their subjects nothing beyond a bare subsistence. He ruled on more liberal principles." The author of the Ta'rkhi-i-Hâdi, as it were, translates Col. Haig in the following couplet:

드 용 달 통 속식가 크드 하우 شمس الدين
بُرُد ادنر شغل حن آو سه نظير و سه فين—تارينغ هادي

Shams-ud-Din died on the full moon day of Ashâdha in the year 18 Laukika or 1342 A.C. or 743 A.H. The chronogram is—

آمده شمس باز زير حکم

[The sun, then, came under the cloud.]

The tomb of Sultan Shams-ud-Din at Andarkot near Sumbal was declared a protected monument in 1941. The actual grave is about 5 feet long, covered over by latticed wood.

The people of Andarkot call it the grave of Sultān Bādshāh, some holy man, little knowing that he was the founder of Muslim rule in Kashmir about whom Bakhshī Nizām-ud-Dīn Ahmad had said:

[The standard of the Bādshāh, the Cherisher of the Faith, Cast its mighty shadow over all the world; The messengers of the sky conveyed The news of his justice to countries all. The body of disturbance became weak and thin, The house of oppression into ruin fell.]*

SULTĀN JAMSHĪD
[743 A.H. or 1342 A.C.]

Shams-ud-Dīn died in his eightieth year. His eldest son, Jamshīd, succeeded him in 743 A.H. or 1342 A.C. But soon after quarrels arose between him and his younger brother ‘Alī Sher. These lingered on for some time when Jamshīd was defeated at Vantipōr (Avantipur). ‘Alī Sher assumed the title of Sultān ‘Alā-ud-Dīn in the same year, viz. 743 A.H. (or 1342 A.C.). Jamshīd, however, lived for a period of one year and ten months after his dethronement. The Tabaqāt-i-Akbarī says that Shāh Mīr had two other sons also, one called Shīr Āshāmak and the other named Hindāl and they also aspired to greatness.

There is little of importance recorded by historians about the short reign of Jamshīd except that he built a bridge at Sopōr. The author of the Ta’rikh-i-Kashmir A’zamī gives the names of three saintly anchorites, namely Khalāṣman, Palāsman and Yāsman, all brothers, who passed their lives in devotion and retirement.

SULTĀN ‘ALĀ-UD-DĪN
[743 to 755 A.H. or 1342 to 1354 A.C.]

Sultān ‘Alā-ud-Dīn reigned for twelve years, eight months and thirteen days. His reign was essentially a period of peace

The Jowry Lookin: Dhaaliledi tomb of Sultan Shams ud-Din Shah Mir or Mirza Erat Founder of the First Jaleh The Dynasty of Kasimir. Burted in Andarker. About a mile from Sambaal or Sambaal 5 miles below Sambili on the Jaleh.
and internal reform, and aimed at the alleviation of suffering and the amelioration of the hard conditions which were the direct result of Dulcha's and Achala's incursions. Towns and cities which had become depopulated were re-populated. A townlet bearing the name 'Alā-ud-dīnpūr was built at Srinagar. 'Alā-ud-dīnpūr subsequently became the name of a mahalla of Srinagar on which the "Khānqāh-i-Mu‘allā" and Malik Ānān wards now stand. The Sultān showed himself in advance of his time in the matter of social legislation when he promulgated a law that no unchaste childless widow should have any share of her husband's property from her father-in-law. A severe famine occurred during the second year of his reign. The king extended a helping hand to the people of the famine-stricken area with a view to reducing their hardship. Lalla, the hermitess, attracted general notice during this reign. "The great and wise king," writes Jonarāja,¹ "made Jayapīḍāpura his capital, and built at Črī Rīṅchanpura, an edifice named Budhagīra." Budhagīra is now a mahalla or quarter near 'Ālī Kadal in Srinagar. This edifice built by 'Alā-ud-Dīn was used as a resting-place for travellers in his time and thereafter, and appears to have been used by traders from Ladākh and Baltistān.

The Sultān passed away in the year 755 A.H. (or 1354 A.C.), and was buried in 'Alā-ud-dīnpūr. He left two sons, namely, Siyāmuk—afterwards known as Sultān Shīhāb-ud-Dīn—and Hindāl, afterwards Sultān Qutb-ud-Dīn. Some historians have called Shīhāb-ud-Dīn and Qutb-ud-Dīn the brothers of Sultān 'Alā-ud-Dīn. This is wrong. Shīhāb-ud-Dīn succeeded 'Alā-ud-Dīn.

The Sultanate

The adoption of the title of Sultān by Muslim rulers is somewhat difficult to explain. Sir Thomas Arnold² contends that the explanation has never been fully given. The word itself occurs in the Qur'ān merely in the abstract sense of 'power,' or 'authority.' But, as early as the end of the first century of the Hijra, it was used in Egyptian Papyri as the common expression for the governor of a province. So, continues Sir Thomas, it came to be applied to an official

---

to whom power had been delegated. As independent rulers set themselves up in the provinces of the empire, it became common among them to adopt the title of ‘Sultan.’ In this respect the Saljuqs appear to have set the example, though it is commonly asserted that Mahmud of Ghazna (998-1030 A.C.) was the first Muslim potentate of importance to adopt the title. Like many other titles Sultan gained in dignity by being assumed by great and powerful monarchs, while the rulers of petty provinces contented themselves with the words Malik, Khân, etc. The influence of Turkistan, therefore, is apparently responsible for the introduction of the term in Kashmir. The Chaks, however, adopted the title of ‘Bâdshâh’ in rivalry of the Mughul Emperors of India.

**SULTÂN SHIHĂB-UD-DÎN**

[755 to 775 A.H. or 1354 to 1373 A.C.]

Shihab-ud-Din, Jonaraja’s Shahavadina, succeeded his father, ‘Alâ-ud-Dîn, in 755 A.H. (1354 A.C.). Previous to his assumption of the reins of government, he was nicknamed Siyâmuk corrupted from Shîr-âshâmâk, the little milk-drinker. Jonaraja’s early names of Shihâb-ud-Dîn are Shîrshâtaka and Shivasvâmika, or Mir Ashâtâk of the *Siyar-ul-Mut’akhkhirûn* (Vol. I, p. 194) which should presumably be looked upon as variants of this nickname.

Shihab-ud-Din’s reign represents the most glorious period of the sovereignty of the Sultans of Kashmir. It was the period of military prowess shown by the Kashmiris. Shihab-ud-Din was the first of the Kashmiri Muslim monarchs who marched out with the purpose of making foreign conquests. He counted as lost those brief periods of time in which he obtained no victory. “Deer-eyed women attracted not his mind, nor the pleasures of drinking, nor the light of the moon,” writes Jonaraja.* Only the march with his army, he continues, occupied the king’s attention. “Neither heat nor cold, nor evening nor night, neither hunger nor thirst obstructed his march. When this proud king was on his march, he found no difficulty in crossing unfordable rivers, inaccessible mountains and barren deserts.” Shihab-ud-Din in Kashmir history figures next to Lalitâditya-Muktâpiça. “Adorned with pearls and necklace, this king was the most prominent

---

among all the great kings past and future as the central jewel is prominent in the necklace,” adds Jonarâja. Sir Muhammad Iqbal echoes this view when he says—

Commanders under the Sultân, according to Jonarâja, were Chandra Dâmara or Dâr and Laula Dâmara and Shûra. Muslim historians add Sayyid Hasan Bahâdur son of Sayyid Tâj-ud-Dîn Hamadânî, as war minister. Sayyid Hasan, according to the Fatahât, was the Sultân’s son-in-law. Achala or Abdâl Rina or Rina, formerly Achaladeva, son of Rawanchandra whom we noticed on page 125 is another addition.

Shortly after his accession, Shihâb-ud-Dîn thoroughly re-organized his military forces. The composition of Kashmiri armies must have been furnished by people from the hill-country of Pînch, Rajaurî, Bûdîl (on the route from Srinagar to Akhnûr), and the areas between Muzaffarabad and Bârâmûla—called Kûhistân or the Highlands of Kashmir.

Shihâb-ud-Dîn conquered Tibet, consisting of Great Tibet or Ladakh, and Little Tibet or Baltistan from the ruler of Kâshghar. Kishtrwâr and Jammu were added. He then proceeded with an army consisting of 50,000 horse and 50,000 foot through the Punjab, and encamped on the banks of the Indus where he was opposed by the Jam of Sind (Brigg’s Firîshta, Volume IV, page 458)
whom he completely defeated. Probably this Jām was Jām Banhatiya who ruled from 1344 to 1359 A.C. The history of Sind during this period is not extant and, therefore, verification of this victory over Sind by Shiháb-ud-Din is not forthcoming from Sind sources. Elliot and Dowson also deplore the gap of this part of Sind history. (See volume I, page 484). Jonarāja, however, mentions it. Sir Wolseley Haig in the Cambridge History of India (Volume III, page 278) says: "At the beginning of his reign, he led an army to the borders of Sind and defeated the Jām on the banks of the Indus." The defeat of the Jām was so crushing that, when the report reached the kingdoms of Qandahār and Ghazni, the rulers of those places became apprehensive lest he should next make a descent upon them. Shiháb ud-Din, however, took Und, Ohind or Waihind or Hend—pronounced by the Pathân as Hind. Und was formerly known as Udabhānda, the capital of Gandhāra, and is situated 16 miles above Attock. At Peshāwa he defeated the Afghāns and put to death many of the inhabitants who opposed him. Thence he marched through the passes of the Hindu-Kush subduing Kāshghar, Badakshān and Kābul.

[Here the reader need not be reminded that "the country, now termed Afghānistān, had merely consisted of a congeries of petty states, ruled by tyrannical chiefs who were frequently at war with one another. Later, it became provinces of great empires which were ruled by foreign conquerors and their descendants. Later again, it was a dismembered country, with its provinces held by three neighbouring states"—Irān, Turkistān and India. For the first time in its chequered history, Afghānistān became an independent state under Ahmad Shāh Durrānī (1724-73)—who by conquering Kashmir, as it were, counterbalanced Sultān Shiháb-ud-Din’s conquest of Kābul.]

Shiháb-ud-Din raised many columns of victory in the course of his conquest. On his return he established a cantonment in the plains on the banks of the Satluj. Here in 1361 A.C. (763 A.H.), he was met by Udakpati, the Rājā of Nagarkōt (Kāngrā), who had returned from a plundering excursion into the territory of Firūz Tughluq round Delhi. Udakpati, having come back laden with spoils, placed them at the feet of Shiháb-ud-Dīn and acknowledged

KASHMIR UNDER SULTAN SHIHB-UD-DIN,
[Marked Yellow]

To face page 138 of Dr. Suft's 'Kashir'.

Approximate extent of the Kingdom of Kashmir under Sultan Shihab-ud-Din (1354-73 A.C.) on a mode map. The Kingdom comprised Kashmir, the Punjab, Sind, North-West Frontier Province, and extended Kabul on the west and Kashghar to the north.
falty to him. It is to this phase of the Kashmiri that
Sir Muhammad Iqbal refers—

It is noteworthy that, after his conquests, Shihāb-ud-Dīn always behaved like a brave soldier, and generously restored the kingdom to his fallen foe.

It is to the credit of Shihāb-ud-Dīn that he was not only a great conqueror but a builder too. He founded the towns of (i) Lachhmi-nagar, named after Lakshmi, his queen, at the base of the Hārī-parbat, near where the Shārikā-devī temple now stands. (ii) Shihāb-ud-dinpōr, the modern Shādīpūr. Shihābpūr, now called, according to Hasan, Shihāmpūr, a mahalla of Srinagar is also attributed to him. On the 28th Khurdād, Akbar went to visit Shihāb-ud-dinpōr. “This is a delightful spot on the bank of the Bihat,” writes Abu’l Fazl in the Akbar-nāma.1 “The planes there raise their heads to the sky and the verdure enchants the eye.” “This village (Shihāb-ud-dinpōr) is one of the celebrated places of Kashmir and is on the Bihat,” wrote Jahāngīr too. “About a hundred plane trees (Chinār) of graceful form clustered together on one plot of ground, pleasant and green, join each other so as to shade the whole plot, and the whole surface of the ground is grass and trefoil, so much so that to lay a carpet on it would be superfluous and in bad taste.”2

For his soldiers Shihāb-ud-Dīn constructed barracks. He sedulously resumed the repairs of his father of the devastations caused by the invasions of Dūlcha and Aχala which had impoverished the country. Land revenue was properly assessed. The Sultān became the murīd of Sayyid Tāj-ud-Dīn deputed by Shāh Hamadān, encouraged learning, and practised just administration of laws for all.

Shihāb-ud-Dīn’s indignation at the suggestion of Udayačrī, his prime minister, to melt the brass image of the Brihadbuddha (Great Buddha) and coin the metal into money is eloquent of the tolerant character of his rule. The Sultān’s

miniatera mentioned by Jonarāja are Koṭṭabhaṭṭa (a descendant of Muktāpiḍa’s minister) and Udayaṇī. Koṭṭabhaṭṭa received many favours from the Sultān, but subsequently renounced the world and entered a forest. Udayaṇī is mentioned often. Possibly he was the chief minister, at any rate, after the renunciation of Koṭṭabhaṭṭa. Udayaṇī is mentioned by Jonarāja as “inimical to gods” and may, therefore, be supposed to have been a Muslim.

Hindāl, the Sultān’s younger brother, was made heir-apparent. Shihāb-ud-Dīn’s two sons, Hasan Khān and ‘Alī Khān, fled to Delhi, having been declared outlaws, and expelled from the kingdom at the instigation of the Sultān’s second wife, Lāsā. Lāsā was the daughter of queen Lakṣmī’s sister. She must have been beautiful indeed to supplant her mother’s sister as the sweetheart of the Sultān. Jealousy then naturally marred the relationship between the aunt and the niece with the consequence that the old queen saw the sending away of her beloved sons into exile. Although, at last, Shihāb-ud-Dīn wrote letters with his own hand to his sons to come back to him, they did not come in time. The crown, therefore, passed on to Hindāl.

Sultān Shihāb-ud-Dīn reigned for about nineteen years. He ‘cheered celestial beauties by his embraces,’ i.e., died in 775 A.H. (1373 A.C.), and is believed to be buried under the sub-post office at Mahārāj Ganj in Srinagar. For this the authority is no less than Khwāja A’zām Didamari who says that the site was in the neighbourhood of Bad Shāh’s grave, and that there was a dome over the grave of Shihāb-ud-Dīn which had partly fallen down in his time. It is indeed sad that such a great Sultān—the pride and ornament of the entire royalty of Kashmir—should have his grave covered over by the chair of a petty postmaster! If so, no greater insult to the national pride of the Kashmiri can possibly be conceived!

Shihāb-ud-Dīn was loved at home for his just and humane administration, and feared abroad for the valour of his arm and the strength of his armies. His rule raised Kashmir and the Kashmiris to great power. Jammu, Tibet, the Punjāb, Sind, Nagarkōṭ (Kāṅgṛa), Ghazni, Qandahār, Kashghar and Badakhshān were subdued by him and gave him allegiance. Kashmiris were never so powerful as a conquering nation after the death of Shihāb-ud-Dīn. Sir Mu’āmmad Iqāl’s line and Pandit
Jonaraja’s statement are thus an eminently deserved tribute to the greatness of a great sovereign.

But looking at the present-day condition of the Kashmiri, his military might under Sultan Shihab-ud-Din reads like a myth! It is a humiliating transition from conquest to cowardice during the course of six centuries. The position of the Kashmiri people could never be more degrading than that the present descendant of the former Raja of Jammu (whom we found above a tributary of Kashmir), now His Highness the Maharaja Bahadur of Jammu and Kashmir, should ridicule the idea of raising a Kashmri regiment as requiring ‘police protection for its march’ when His Highness’ Army Member* pleaded for the enlistment of Kashmiris in His Highness’ army!

فاعبروا يا أولى الإيصار

[So learn a lesson, O ye, who have eyes!]

More of this the reader will find in the relevant section of Military Administration under Muslim Rule in Chapter X of Kashmir.

SULTAN QUTB-UD-DIN

[775 to 791 A.H. or 1373 to 1389 A.C.]

On the death of Sultan Shihab-ud-Din, his brother, Hindal, ascended the throne in 775 A.H. (1389 A.C.) under the title of Sultan Qutb-ud-Din. Hasan Khan, Shihab-ud-Din’s eldest son, along with his younger brother ‘Ali Khan, had already been exiled by his father as we know. But the new ruler showed his generous-mindedness by inviting prince Hasan Khan to become heir-apparent. Firishta says that Qutb-ud-Din was remarkable for his zealous attention to public business which he transacted in person with justice and moderation.

The Sultan’s reign was disturbed when Lohara revolted. Lohara is the mountain district formed by the southern slopes of the Pir-Pantsal near Tosha-maidan. Sultan Mahmud of Ghazni’s invasion of Kashmir was brought to a standstill at the siege of the fort of Lohkot, the castle of Lohara. Qutb-ud-Din deputed his commander

*Recollections: 50 Years in the Service of India by Mr. G. E. G. Wakefield, Lahore, 1943, page 194.
Dāmara Lolaka with a force to reduce it. The royal force was routed. The commander was killed, and was buried, to use Jonarāja’s* words, according to “the last rite of the Yāvanas,” which shows that the commander was a Muslim though the name looks like that of a non-Muslim.

An event of great importance in this reign was the birth of Shaikh Nūr-ud-Din, the Patron-Saint of Kашmir, in 779 A.H. (1377 A.C.). A note on his life has appeared in Chapter III.

Udayaçri, the latter-day premier of Sultān Shihāb-ud-Din, either on account of loyalty to his old Sultān, or to gain and retain power in his own hands, conceived the conspiracy of dethroning Qutb-ud-Din and of setting up Prince Hasan Khān instead. But the conspiracy fizzled out. Udayaçri was imprisoned and then beheaded. The prince fled the country.

Mīr Sayyid ‘Ali Hamadānī, about whom details appear in Chapter III, arrived for the second time in Srinagar in 781 A.H. (1379 A.C.), and was received with great fervour. Under the influence of the great Sayyid, the Sultān gave more of his time to meditation and prayer, and became a great Sūfī poet with the nom de plume “Qutb.” The Sayyid bestowed on the Sultān his own cap which Qutb-ud-Din wore in his royal crown. Famine occurred more than once during the time of the Sultān, but he successfully coped with the situation by his generosity and relieved the people from starvation. He founded Qutb-ud-dinpor on which two mahallas of Srinagar, viz. Langar-haṭṭa and Pir Ḥāji Muhammad, now stand.

Qutb-ud-Din was now old. He had no son. The queen, at last, gave birth to a son “who was the ornament of the family and the delight of his father and was like a feast after a fast.” Jonarāja calls the child Shrinagāra, an ornament or decoration (p. 53). The Tabaqāt calls him Sikār, perhaps, a corruption of Sikandar. Jonarāja, further on, calls him Shakandhara (p. 54). This is the child who becomes known as Sikandar. In the festivities which were held on the occasion, the Sultān, out of the gladness of his heart, ordered the release of prisoners. The queen later gave birth to another son named Haibat.

Qutb-ud-Din died after having reigned for a period of fifteen years in 791 A.H. (1389 A.C.). The two sons left were both infants. Sultān Sikandar succeeded him. This is the year in which Malik Sarwar founded the Sharqi dynasty of Jaunpur, and Timūr occupied Baghdaḍ.

The tomb of Sultān Qutb-ud-Din in Qutb-ud-dinpūr or Langarhaṭṭa, near the ziyārat of Pīr Hāji Muhammad Sāhib, Srinagar, is a protected monument.

**SULTĀN SIKANDAR**

[791 to 816 A.H. or 1389 to 1413 A.C.]

Sikandar ascended the throne in 791 A.H. (1389 A.C.), when Richard II, the son of the Black Prince, was king of England. Sikandar’s rule was also contemporaneous with that of Henry IV and Henry V.

Sikandar’s mother Haurā was a source of considerable strength to him in the earlier part of his reign on account of his infancy. As Jonarāja uses the word infant, Sikandar may possibly have been, at the most, about under eight years of age at his accession. A lady of remarkable personality and strength of character, Haurā dealt with all opposition and struck terror into the hearts of malefactors. She even went to the extreme of putting an end to the lives of her daughter and son-in-law, Shāh Muhammad, thereby nipping in the bud a rebellion which the latter was secretly instigating and which might have proved formidable.

We are told that Sikandar, on achieving majority, was particularly inclined towards militarism which led to a complete transformation of his army. It is also stated that his military undertakings were seldom unsuccessful. His invasion of North-West India in 1395 A.C., was creditable to his military organization. He accordingly subdued Ohind and married Mīrā, the daughter of its chief, Firūz. Subhaṭā or Čobhā or Čīrī Cobhā Mahādevī, the sister of Khuṇjyaraṇa, was the Sultān’s wife but she was, it appears, at this time childless. Later on, she was the mother of prince Firūz whom Sikandar “exiled in order to

---

2. Fīrishta gives her name as Sūra Begam.
prevent a commotion.” At another place Jonarāja called Čobhā Mahādevi’s two sons “adopted children.” Mīra was the mother of three sons, the second of whom Shāhī Khān was destined to become Bad Shāh or the ‘Great Sovereign’ known in history as Sultān Zain-ul-Ābidin.

Sikandar, sharing the tendency of the age, seems to have possessed a passion for enforcing religious law in all state affairs. His justice and passionate desire for religious uniformity are shown in the following lines of a poet of which the last also gives the year of his accession—

Along with his vigorous spirit Sikandar’s sagacity and tact were of no mean order. His brother Haibat’s death by poison was believed to have been caused by Rāy Māgre, the minister. The king, observing the influence of this minister, delayed revenge. Rāy Māgre, feeling that he had been suspected, induced his royal master to give him permission to punish the insurgents in Little Tibet. The minister’s aim was to secure for himself a principality which would place him beyond the reach of the king’s vengeance. The king, on the other hand, hoped to get rid of his minister by sending him on a military expedition. Success attended the arms of Rāy Māgre which raised his reputation and strength. Feeling himself safe, he proclaimed his independence. The king seized this opportunity, marched with an army and inflicted a crushing defeat upon him. The minister was seized and soon died in prison. The king’s attention was then occupied in restoring order in the regained principality of Little Tibet.

Timūr’s invasion of India. Exchange of courtesy with Sikandar.

When Timūr descended upon India, Sikandar acted wisely in sending his representative to him, because he was aware of the terrible fate of those princes who had tried to stem the tide of Timūr’s march by offering resistance.

1. Kings of Kashmir, page 59, also page 64.
According to the Zafar-nāma, Timūr, through his grandson Rustam, and Mu'tamad Zain-ud-Din, his envoy, sent from Delhi a robe of honour of gold embroidery to Sikandar as a mark of favour. Thus there opened up between the two monarchs means of mutual relations. Maulānā Nūr-ud-Din Badakhshi, a distinguished follower of Shāh Hamadān, was deputed by Sikandar, to take costly presents to Timūr. In acknowledgement, Timūr sent a message expressing his desire to see Sikandar. Certain nobles of Timūr’s entourage, however, sent word that Sikandar should also keep in readiness thirty thousand horses and one lakh of gold coins as a present to the great conqueror. Sikandar engaged himself in arranging for the present which Timūr’s nobles had desired to be kept in readiness. Naturally the disclosure of this exorbitant demand brought Timūr’s anger on their head. Sikandar, however, proceeded to meet Timūr on the bank of the Indus on the 13th of Rajab 801 A.H. (1398 A.C.). In the meantime, Timūr had crossed the Indus and was proceeding towards Samarqand. Sikandar, therefore, returned to Kashmir having gone only as far as Bārāmūla. It is said that he then deputed his son prince Shāhī Khān, afterwards Sultan Zain-ul-Ābidīn, to strengthen the relations of friendship existing between Timūr and himself. But there is no mention of this deputation in any contemporary history as the prince obviously must have been unborn then, Bad Shāh having been born in 1401 A.C. or 804 A.H. But what is a fact, according to the Tabaqāt-i-Akbarī, is that Sikandar sent his ambassadors with much tribute to Timūr.

The Sultān’s subjects greatly benefited from the remission by him of two imposts and taxes, namely, the Bāj and the Tamgha.*

Sikandar’s patronage of learning.

Although Sikandar himself had not received the benefit of a liberal education, his patronage of letters attracted scholars from all parts of Asia chiefly from Khurāsān,

---

*A tax which was levied upon all irrespective of nationality and religion. The exact nature of the tax has not been explained anywhere. Blochman and Briggs translate the tamgha as “inland tolls.” A local living historian is of the opinion that the bāj should be considered to have been the nazrāna which everyone had to present to the Sultān on seeing him, and is customary in Indian States to this day. His Exalted Highness the Nizām of Hyderābād abolished it some years ago. I, however, agree with Blochman and Briggs, and the taxes should be understood to be road dues, duties, or an impost.
Māvarā-an-Nahr (Trans oxiana) and 'Irāq. The most notable person among these scholars was Maulānā Afzal who hailed from Bukhārā and was, on his arrival, placed at the head of the grand college opposite to the Jāmi‘Masjid which Sikandar built. Maulānā Afzal passed all his life in lecturing to students. The king had assigned to him the village of Nāgām for his maintenance. The Maulānā was buried in the enclosure of the tomb of Sayyid Tāj-ud-Dīn, in Shīhāb-ud-dīnpūr. Sayyid Muhammad Madānī was a foreign envoy and a great scholar who chose to live in Kashmir on account of the Sultān’s patronage of learning, and died during Baḍ Shāh’s reign. His tomb was built by Baḍ Shāh.

Sikandar’s zeal for religion.

Being himself a staunch Muslim who carefully conformed to all that his religion required of him, Sikandar put an end to those practices which were contrary to the Shari‘at or the law of Islam. The sale and distillation of wine, suttee, gambling, prostitution and nautches were accordingly tabooed. The “tamgha” tax, to which reference has already been made above, was abolished. Islamic courts of justice were established and upright and learned judges were appointed.

Architecture of Sikandar’s time.

Besides his zeal for religion and sound administration, Sikandar also had a passion for buildings as did Firūz Shāh among the Tughluq Sultāns of India. Many mosques, madrasas and hospices were built in his time. The first building he erected was the Khānqāh-i-Mu‘allā on the Chillah-Khāna or the place of retreat and devotion of Mir Sayyid ‘Alī Hamadānī in Srinagar in 798 A.H. (1395 A.C.). The Khānqāh-i-‘Alā at Trāl, near Vantipūr, the Khānqāh-i-Walā in Wachi, pargana Shāvāra, and the Khānqāh-i-Kubrawi in Qatān are other instances.

Sikandar also built the Jāmi‘ Masjid or grand mosque in which mosaic work was executed without any remuneration by two well-known mosaic workers, Sayyid Muhammad of Lūristān and Sayyid Sadr-ud-Dīn of Khurāsān, both old companions of the great Shāh Hamadān. The mosque contained 372 columns, each 40 cubits in height, and 6 in

1. The Ta‘rīkh-i-Kābir, page 290.
2. Lūristān is a province in Western Irān. The chief town of Lūristān is Khurramābād. For Khurāsān see footnote to page 110.
circumference. Besides these structures, Sikandar set up many others of which the site and ruins cannot be traced today.

Sikandar's regard for Sayyid Muhammad Hamadānī.

Sayyid Muhammad Hamadānī, the son of Shāh Hamadān, accompanied by about three hundred, or according to some historians, seven hundred followers, came to Kashmir, and the Sultān too became one of his disciples.

The Sultān was now fired with a zeal to change the character of his rule into an Islamic administration, and a considerable advance was made in this direction. As his orders to this end were carried out either by recent converts to Islam or other officials, it may be presumed that these converts and officials were not actuated only by zeal for the faith, many offences must have been committed which may have wounded the susceptibilities of the Hindus. The saint, Sayyid Muhammad, on being apprised, told the king that all that was done either at his bidding, or through his connivance, was not sanctioned by Islam, which relied more on personal example and love than violence for its propagation. These words so impressed the Sultān that he at once put an end to these activities.

Sikandar's death.

Sikandar's reign lasted for nearly twenty-four years though much of this—about twelve years at least—was spent under the regency of the dowager-queen Haurā and of Malik Saif-ud-Dīn. When Sikandar contracted a violent fever he summoned his three sons (i) Mir Khān, (ii) Shāh Rukh, as noted in the Fatahāt-i-Kubrawiyya, or, according to Joraṛaja, Shāhi Khān and (iii) Muhammad Khān, and exhorted them to avoid strife and remain united after him. He announced as his successor Mir Khān whom he invested with the title of 'Alī Shāh and passed away on the 22nd of Muharram, 816 A.H. (1413 A.C.).
Sikandar was buried in the northern side of the premises once occupied by the Lui Shör temple. The graveyard is known as the Mazār-us-Salātin, in Mahārāj Ganj, Zaina Kadal, Srinagar.

In the West, this was four years before the battle of Agincourt. In India Khizr Khān, the founder of the Sayyid dynasty, ascended the throne of Delhi one year after. The poet Mullā ‘Abdur Rahmān Jāmī was born also a year later.

**Sikandar’s share in the persecution of Hindus.**

Lieutenant Newall¹ says that partly by the influence of Timūr and partly, no doubt, urged by the fanatic Muslims who had lately entered his country, Sikandar was, about this period, instigated to religious persecution. He began to force his subjects to abjure idolatry and thereby acquired the surname of ‘Butshikan’ (not Butshikast, as Stein puts it, in his English Translation of the Rājataranginī, Vol. I, page 131) or the iconoclast. Sir Wolseley Haig calls him “a ferocious bigot.”²

These remarks will, no doubt, give one the impression that the Sultan himself was responsible for all this persecution and destruction of temples. It cannot be gainsaid that the advent, into his country, of Muslim doctors and preachers and other immigrants had infused a new spirit in him to propagate his faith. He was, however, out-distanced in this matter by Sūhabḥaṭṭa, his chief minister, who subsequently embraced Islam and was re-named Malik Saif-ud-Dīn. The versifier refers to his conversion at the hands of Sayyid Muhammad Hamadānī—

**Sehe Bhit Seri Surkā Sultan**

**Chun Nāgāt Furūd E Islam**

**Sād Makhk Makee Dīn Dāk Nāam**

**Shāh Devī Yāyā Walā Shād**

The persecution of the people and the demolition of temples took place at the hands of this zealot and other converts.

---

¹. *A Sketch of the Muhammadan History of Kashmir* by Lieutenant D. J. F. Newall, of the Bengal Artillery, The *Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bengal*, No. 5, 1854, page 413.

The tomb of Sultan Sikandar's queen, the mother of Sultan Zain-ul-Abidin (Bagh Shal). Before 1944-45 repairs by the State.
They were relentless against the adherents of their old faith. In the words of Chas. J. Rodgers,* the minister’s zeal in the persecution of his former co-religionists has seldom been equalled in the history of religious proselytes. At his instance, orders must have been issued in the name of the Sultan for the destruction of some important temples, forbidding the use of the Tikā (vermilion mark) on the head, and also for enforcing the abolition of Suttee. For, Sikandar himself was, on his contemporary Jonarāja’s testimony, an infant at his accession, and Suhabhaṭṭa the Regent, wielding all power. And Suhabhaṭṭa continued in the office of the Kashmir Vizārat, according to Hasan, for forty years. Sikandar’s reign lasted for 24 years. Even if we suppose Sikandar’s age to be eight on succeeding his father, Sultan Qutb-ud-Din, it is only from about eighteen to twenty that he may have become personally responsible for administration for about twelve years in a life lasting 32 years in all. On moral as well as humanitarian grounds, we cannot blame Sikandar for abolishing the practice of Suttee. As a matter of fact, he only forestalled Akbar and Bentinck in this respect. Sikandar cannot also be blamed for attempting a dry Kashmir either. But one cannot entirely exonerate him from the heavy responsibility of countenancing the religious persecution practised by his ministers and officials, who were, at least, men of his choice or under his complete control in the latter part of his brief reign. We must not, however, omit to mention that Sikandar’s age was the age of religious persecution. It is a strange coincidence that his rule should have been contemporaneous with the persecution of the Lollards in England. In the words of H. G. Wells, the Council of Constance in 1414-1418 adopted “methods which jar with (sic) our modern consciences.” Wycliff’s bones were condemned to be burnt. Huss was decoyed and burnt alive in 1415. Jerome of Prague was burnt in the following year. Pope Martin V issued a bull proclaiming a crusade for the destruction of the Wycliffites, Hussites and other heretics. Mary, the first queen regnant in the history of England from 1663 to 1668 A.C., earned the sobriquet of “Bloody” Mary for her unfortunate habit of causing people to be burnt at the stake.

In our own day, in 1933-39, the cultured Germans—the nation of scientists and philosophers—persecuted the Jews who have lived on German soil for over 1,500 years and banned their children from educational institutions. Dr. J. H. Hertz, Chief Rabbi, wrote to the London Times in April 1933: "The ruthless elimination of the German Jew from the public, the professional, and the social life of his native land continues unabated. Neither achievement nor position nor lifetime of service is of any avail against summary dismissal. Hosts of professional men—physicians, judges, lawyers, civil servants, teachers, journalists, musicians, actors—are thus being robbed of their livelihood, and are doomed in heart-breaking numbers to sink into indigence. Alongside of this deprivation of civic rights, there is an unbelievable trampling underfoot of the human dignity of every Jew and Jewess in that land. Thus, in the Nazi Press, and by means of every form of Government propaganda, Jews are constantly branded as ‘traitors’ to their Fatherland—though no fewer than 12,000 German Jews laid down their lives for their country in the Great War. Jewish emigrants are permitted to take only onetenth of their property out of Germany. Jewish booksellers may only sell Jewish books to Jewish customers. Jews are to sit on separate benches in public parks.

"The Nuremberg decrees deprive the German Jew of all political rights. No "non-Aryan" can become a Reich citizen, vote or hold a Government post. Marriage between Jews and "Aryans" is forbidden, and extra-marital relations are a criminal offence. Jews may not fly the German flag. The names of Jewish fallen, it has since been ordered, must not be inscribed on German war memorials. Although twelve thousand Jews died for Germany in the War, they may not serve in the army. The social degradation of the Jews, and the economic discrimination against them that began with the Nazi régime has, therefore, been given a legal and permanent basis. In some smaller towns and villages, German shopkeepers have been ordered not to sell them food. The "Aryan" who does business with a Jew incurs the wrath of the local Nazi caucus. Jews must not own land but if they try to sell their land, "Aryans" must not buy from them."

In 1938, "pitiable stories were arriving of the state of the Austrian Jews, who number 200,000, and for no crime
except their Semitic origin, were being reduced to beggary. Ninety per cent. of their shops were taken over. Bereft of a livelihood yet unable to leave the country, they were treated like cattle by the ruling classes. During a period of four days, burials in Jewish cemeteries in Vienna were said to have averaged 140 daily, against a normal average of 4. A decade ago, cruelty and ruthless oppression, such as is now being practised in Austria, would have sent a wave of horrified indignation round the world: but during the last five years so much that is atrocious has happened in Abyssinia, in China, in Spain and elsewhere that humanity's capacity for long-range sympathy with the misfortunes of others has become dulled. Emotions tend to be reserved for events and persons nearer home.”

[It must not be misunderstood that the object of reproducing the above letter of Dr. Hertz is to shield Saif-ud-Din or Sikandar in any way. Despite bloody wars between England and France or England and Germany or other Western countries, these great nations forget each other's wrongs in about a quarter of a century. But in Kashmir even five centuries are not sufficient to efface unpleasant memories of old events.

The great Encyclopædia Britannica, that mentions only one Muslim ruler in the whole history of Kashmir, singles out poor Sikandar for the destruction of temples, vide its 14th Edition, 1929, Volume 13, page 290, paragraph 4.]

We must not forget that Sikandar's first minister was a Hindu—Rāy Māgre,—[called in De's English Translation of the Tabaqāt, p. 644 footnote, Rāy Madārī]—who poisoned his brother Haibat Khān. Not only this. According to Jonarāja, Sikandar married a Hindu lady Subhāta or Čri Čohbā Mahādevi, and his commander-in-chief was a Hindu Brāhman who was converted to Islam by Mir Muhammad Hamadānī. The Sultān was, in no way, bound to keep a Hindu wife, a Hindu minister, or a Hindu commander-in-chief. He could invite prominent Muslims for his two most important offices, if he so desired. Herein we get conclusive proof to the effect that he was not a stark bigot, as some Hindu and other historians or writers have tried to paint him, clean forgetting the outrageously sacrilegious treatment of idols, temples and Bhattan by Brāhmans by rulers like Jayapiṇa, Čamkravarnan, Abhimanu or Harsha or Rājadeva, referred to before in Chapter III.
According to Lawrence, Sikandar was "brave and cultured." "Sikandar," in the words of Rodgers, was an exceedingly generous man. Hearing of this, learned men from Iraq and Khurasan and Mavara-un-Nahr (Transoxiana) flocked to his court in such numbers that it became an example to the courts of those provinces."

The prosperity of Kashmir in Sikandar's time can be proved from the fact that there were 100,000 villages. This testimony, to use the words of Stein, is "accurate and matter of fact," based on the record in 1400 A.C., of Sharaf-ud-Din 'Ali Yazdi, the historian of Timur, whose contemporary Sikandar was.

چن امینزر زد سلیم کرم که مایزر را کشت حرام
شد از بس که اسلام رونق گرفت حرم درخ فلی صاحب ہو کامل
طبقات اکبری جلد سوم صفحہ ۳۳

[His noble spirit such generosity proclaimed,
That even to the hopeless despair forbidden became.
When Islam such resplendence gained
His door the sacred shrine of high and low became.—B.De.]

Such a man ill-deserves the wild condemnation that is heaped on his head! He was a thousand times very much more humane than Harsha and others whom nobody ever maligns publicly, so loudly, so repeatedly, and so pungently. Sikandar's name and a few of his misdeeds should not constitute a cause for any serious ill-feeling that they are made so often.

And so the late Mr. Brajendranath De (1852-1932), M.A., Bar-at-Law, I.C.S., Boden Sanskrit Scholar at Oxford University in 1875, ex-Commissioner, Burdwan Division, Bengal, the painstaking translator of the Tabaqat-i-Akbari, wrote:—"There is a great deal in Joraraja about the

breaking of images, but I have not been able to find any mention of the demolition of the temples."

Here one may pause to say a word on why there should be so much bitterness on the breaking of idols or images. The Muslim is not alone in breaking idols. The argument of the Christians was "the absurdity of a man making an idol and then adoring it or being afraid of the work of his own hands." Even amongst the Hindus "the universality of image-worship . . . is comparatively modern." The ancient Vedic religion did not admit images. Like the worship of the cow, it is a subsequent development in Hindu religious practice and not an inherent or integral part of this great and ancient religion. For, after all, Kabir-panthis, Sikhs, Brahma Samajis, Arya-Samajis, Radhaswamis Satsangis discard idolatry. And yet they remain Hindus! In my boyhood, Sardar Arur Singh, the Manager of the great Golden Temple of Amritsar, threw away all the idols from this seat of Sikh worship. And he was never dubbed an idol-breaker or even an idol-remover! The fact is that the study of the Vedanta is leading to the rejection of the Puranic scheme of Hinduism. As Kashmiris became converts to Islam during the period under discussion, they themselves did not feel the necessity of preserving them intact. It was but a simple economic proposition that, by their conversion they should convert their sacred places to the new mode of worship. God to them was there. The place was there. It was a change of manner of worshipping that God in that place. This was effected by removing the idols and making a niche towards the Ka'ba. It is true it did hurt the feelings of the no-changers at the time: it wounded their susceptibilities. But why should happenings of five centuries be still the cause of bitterness? Why should ill-feelings be harboured to this day between brother and brother as all Kashmiris are sons of the same soil? What Islam did, in the language of Si Mu Iqbal, is

آدمی آزاد زنگی توجه سم هو اور

[Man was freed from the fetters of superstition.]

Malik Haidar Chadarura has preserved in the pages of his history* the following elegy on Sultan Sikandar's death:

---

*Malik Haidar's History of Kashmir, page 152.
Note.--In the 6th line from the bottom, the reading **دل حیرت** is a suggestion from a scholar.
Mīr Khān, surnamed ‘Alī Shāh, whom Chas. J. Rogers wrongly calls ‘Ali Sher, succeeded to his father’s dominions in 816 A.H. (1413 A.C.). Very little is known about his reign. Firishta records that this king also had Sūhabhattā for his minister, who continued, according to the Tabaqāt-i-Akbarī, for four years in office, and kept up his campaign of conversion till he died of internal hæmorrhage, or, according to the Tabaqāt, of consumption and is believed to be buried in what is now known as mahalla Saif-ud-dīn-pūr on the Nāla-i-Mār in Srinagar. In all, Sūhabhātta—Saif-ud-Dīn—was minister for forty years as noted by Hasan. The king thereupon appointed his own brother Shāhī Khān in his place. Shortly after this, the king resolved to proceed to Mecca on a pilgrimage. The A’in-i-Akbarī says ‘Alī Shāh went on a pilgrimage. Firishta says he went on world travel and so does the Tabaqāt. But the giving away of charity confirms the view of the A’in-i-Akbarī, and as Jonarāja puts it “gave out valuable jewels from the treasury and beautiful horses.”1 ‘Alī Shāh entrusted his kingdom to the care of his brother2 Shāhī Khān, and proceeded to bid goodbye to the ruler of Jammu. The ruler of Jammu who was converted to Islam by Timūr, was ‘Alī Shāh’s3 father-in-law.4 On ‘Alī Shāh’s arrival there, he remonstrated with him for relinquishing the throne. The Sultān changed his mind. Assisted by his father-in-law and the rājā of Rajauri, he now tried to recover his throne. All three advanced by way of Pakhī, whereupon his brother Shāhī Khān, being defeated at Uḍi, left Kashmir and went over to Sīlkōt to Jasārat Khān, the Chief of Gakkhars (or Khakar). Jasārat,

---

1. Kings of Kashmir, page 71. Also the words “visiting holy places” makes the object certain.
2. Malik Haidar Chādura mentions only one brother, namely, Shāhī Khān to be the person to whom ‘Alī Shāh left his kingdom. Firishta mentions the other brother also.—See Briggs, Vol. IV, page 467.
3. Malik Haidar Chādura, page 142. His statement is based on the authority of Maulānā Nādirī, a contemporary of Sultān Zain-ul-Abīdīn.
4. The father-in-law of ‘Alī Shāh is said to have been converted to Islam by Timūr.—Hutchison and Vögel, Journal of the Panjāb Historical Society, Vol. VII, page 117.
after the death of Timūr, had returned in 1405 from his captivity in Samarqand brought about by his own failure to keep his promise to aid Timūr in his invasion of India and for plundering his baggage. Jasārat Khān was at this time extending his influence in the Punjāb.

Historians are at variance about this fratricidal contest. Firishta asserts that Sūltān ‘Alī Shāh was, at first, successful even at Siālkōt. Then Shāhī Khān and Jasārat Khān Gakkhar succeeded in defeating and taking ‘Alī Shāh prisoner. ‘Alī Shāh subsequently died at Chādūra.

The grave of Sūltān ‘Alī Shāh in Tsōdur or Chādūr on the Srinagar-Charār Road.

The final result was the passing of the kingdom in the year 823 A.H. or 1420 A.C. into the hands of Shāhī Khan—and not Shady Khan as Briggs has wrongly put it. ‘Alī Shāh reigned for six years and nine months. The only event of importance is the loss of Little Tibet

2. Ta’rikh-i-Kashmīr by Malik Haidar Chādūra, page 142.
which was, no doubt, due to the incompetence of 'Ali Shāh. The death of Kabīr in India is recorded in this same year of the dethronement of Sultān 'Ali Shāh.

SULTĀN ZAIN-UL-'ĀBIDĪN

[823 to 874 A.H. or 1420 to 1470 A.C.]

With the assumption, in June 1420 A.C., at the age of 19, of sovereignty by Sultān Zain-ul-'Ābidīn, literally, the Ornament of the Adorers, or the Glory of the Devout, there opened up an era of peace, prosperity and expansion for Kashmir. This reign extending over 50 solar or over 51 lunar years constituted a climax never attained by any other independent king in Kashmir.

As Shāh Rukh or Shāhī Khān, Baḍ Shāh had his education under Maulānā Kabīr. Zain-ul-'Ābidīn was noted early in life for his abilities, had already been minister to his brother, the late king, and had shown his noble qualities to the people of Kashmir. His accession was, therefore, hailed with joy both by Hindus and Muslims.

Shortly after assuming regal authority, Zain-ul-'Ābidīn nominated his brother Muhammad Khān to the office of prime minister, and associated with him Halmat Raina and Ahmad Raina, commanders of his forces. Malik Mas'ūd was appointed minister of the interior. Mirzā Hasan was appointed treasurer-general. On the death of Muhammad Khān, his son Haidar Khān succeeded his father as prime minister.

The king retained in his possession the office of Chief Justice till he was able to find a suitable incumbent in the person of Qāzī Jamāl-ud-Dīn who hailed from Hindustān.

Khwāja Nizām-ud-Dīn Ahmad and Muhammad Qāsim Firishta respectively relate the following case decided by Baḍ Shāh. The only difference in the two versions is that the two women concerned were a mistress and a maid according to the Tabaqāt-i-Akbari, and two co-wives, according to the Gulzār-i-Ibāhīmi or the Tarīkh-i-Firishta. Briefly, a woman killed one of the children and accused the other of the crime. The case went to court which confessed inability to find out the truth of the matter. On reference to the Sultān, the person alleged to be accused was called
in and severely threatened in various ways. As she was innocent, she made no confession whatsoever. At last, the Sultān said: “If you become naked, and in the presence of men go to your own house, that might be a proof of your innocence.” The woman cast her head down in shame, and said: “For me it is better to die than to act in this way. I consent to my punishment but I cannot consent to behave like this.” The Sultān, then, sent for the complainant in another chamber and said: “If you are honest in making this complaint, make yourself naked in the presence of men.” The woman agreed and got ready to remove her garment. The Sultān stopped her, and said: “The guilt of this act is yours.” And “after they had struck her a few strokes, she confessed her guilt.”

Zain-ul-‘Abidīn’s passion for architecture.

(In the matter of architecture, Zain-ul-‘Abidīn might be called the Shāh Jahān of Kashmir. Many important buildings and townships the remains of many of which may still be traced, e.g., Zaina-lānk, Zaina-kōt, Zaina-paṭṭan, Zaina-kūndāl, Zaina-math, Zina-pōr, Zaina-tilak, Zaina-gir, and Zaina-gām, testify to his great passion for architecture and town-planning. He caused resting places to be constructed in every pargana, and in most of the important villages. When he proceeded on his tours—and he travelled much over his dominions—the people were not subjected to any hardship on that account. He also built caravanserais and halting-places by the roadside for the convenience of travellers and thereby forestalled the Safavi kings of Irān and the Sūr Sultāns of Hindustān.

About the origin and history of the Sultān’s island in the Wulur, all historians have recorded the following story:

1. Zainagir is now the name of the pargana in Kām-raja, to the north-west of Sopār about four hours’ drive from it. Zaina Kūndāl and Zaina-Paṭṭan were on the Wulur lake. Zaina-kōt is a village about four miles west of Srinagar. Zaina-gām is a village in the Birwa pargana. Zaina-math was a monastry on the Dal. Zaina-tilak was a city built near Jayapīḍapōr (Andarkōt) on the bank of the Jhelum. Zaina-pōr is the name of the pargana comprising the table-lands lying to the north-east of Shupiān.

2. A pargana is a tract of country comprising the lands of many villages.

The Wulur Lake.

3. The Wulur Lake is the largest in Kashmir, and the largest fresh
This island was an inhabited place* in the days of a dissolute and tyrannical rājā, Sundarsenā by name, whose subjects did not lag behind in copying him. Kalāl, a saint, who lived in those days, exhorted both the king and his subjects to give up dissolute conduct, but no one heeded the saint’s exhortations. One day, at last, he left the place in disgust after warning the inhabitants of a retribution.

The Wulur lake in India. It is situated towards the north end of the Valley at a distance of about 21 miles north-west of Srinagar. The Wulur lies at an elevation of 5,180 feet above sea-level, and has an area of 12½ square miles, which, in years of flood, may extend over 103 square miles. In windy weather, the surface of the lake changes into a sea of rolling waves. The average depth is 12 feet, the circumference is nearly 30 miles. The outline of the lake is very regular, and its general appearance is picturesque.

The name is supposed to be a corruption of ullola Sanskrit for ‘turbulent’ or ‘(the lake) with high-going waves or water.’ The ancient name is Mahāpadama-saras derived from the Nāga, Mahāpadama, its tutelary deity.

According to Andrew Wilson, there is something in the character of the Wulur which reminds one of Lake Leman and arises probably from the stretch of water which it presents, and the combined softness and grandeur of the scenery around. Lofty mountains rise almost immediately from its northern and eastern sides: but there is room all round the lake for the innumerable villages which enliven its shore. Calm, as it usually is, furious storms often play upon its surface, and in one of these Ranjit Singh lost 300 of the boats carrying his retinue and effects. (The Abode of Snow, p. 428).

In the beginning of spring some of the wild-fowls of the Wulur and other lakes of Kashmir take flight to the distant valleys of Yārqand and Kāshghar.

The Jhelum enters the Wulur through the east side and leaves it from the south-west corner. Captain Bates says that it “is a lake simply because its bottom is lower than the bed of the Jhelum; it will disappear by degrees as the bed of the pass at Bārāmūla becomes more worn away by the river; its extent is perceptibly becoming more circumscribed by the deposition of soil and detritus on its margin.” In the north-west corner is the Zaina-lānk used by boatmen who dread the waves of the lake in storm though in the dry season it is no more an island. On the western shore is the scrap of Watlab on which stands the shrine of Bābā Shukur-ud-Din whom people wrongly call Shukr-ud-Din. Fish, wild fowl and singhāra (water nut) are the chief products of the Wulur.

which would change their habitation into a lake. His prognostication turned out to be true, and a physical disturbance is said to have turned the land into a lake!

[A striking parallel far off, here, arrests our attention. The island called Mauri-ga-Sima near Formosa, south of Japan, is also supposed to have been sunk in the sea for the crimes of its inhabitants. The vessels which the fishermen and divers brought up were sold at an immense price in China and Japan. Thomas Moore refers to it in his Lalla Rookh when he says:

And urns of porcelain from that isle
Sunk underneath the Indian flood,
Whence oft the lucky diver brings
Vases to grace the halls of kings.

NOTE.—Is it the Indian Ocean flood driven up to the Pacific?]

The area in question on the Wulur remained under water down to the reign of Zain-ul-‘Abidin, who conceived the idea of raising a palace in the lake. With the help of divers, he was able to lay its foundations on the remains of a temple which had once stood on this submerged land, and was now filled up with stones for the base of the structure.) In addition to the palace, now in complete ruin, a mosque was also raised. This mosque has a quarter of its old dome and a rotten door left. About forty years back the dome is said to have been seen in good condition. Had care been taken in time it could have been preserved. Mullā Ahmad Kashmiri made this structure famous in the following verse*:

این بُقِّه بَنِیان فِئق مَکْمِم بَد
مشْهَوْر تَرِم زَیب دِر مَالم بَاد
شِه زَین هَباد ۴ دِر او ۴شِن جَمَد
بیوَنَه چُر نَارَیخ خُودش خُرَم بَاد

[May this edifice be as firm as the foundations of the Heavens! May it be the most renowned ornament of the Universe. As long as the monarch Zain-i-‘Ibad holds festival therein May it be like the date of his own reign—happy.]

*Malik Haidar Châdura’s Ta’rikh-i-Kashmir, page 145.
The Zanjan Tank in the Wuţur Lake is an artificial island constructed by Sulayman Zin‘-al-‘Abidin. The photo shows the ruins of his palace and the mosque built in 847 A.H. (1443 A.C.)
The numerical value of the letters in *khurram* (happy) is 847 A.H. (1443 A.C.), the date of the foundation of the edifice. "The stone bearing the inscription is apparently a slab of black slate well polished and furnished, and measures 21 ½ by 12 inches and 2 ½ inches thick." This stone is missing.

(The king named the island Zaina-lânk. *Lânk* in Kashmiri means an island. The expense of the work was met by the fortunate find of two idols of solid gold from the lake by divers in royal employ.)

The Sultân erected at Nau Shahr, near Srinagar, which was in modern terminology his New Delhi, a grand palace, twelve storeys high, each consisting of fifty rooms and improved and added to the beauty of Srinagar. At Kraina-râjya, "he built Suratrânpôr graced with houses that humbled the pride of the peaks of the Himalaya."

**Zain-ul-ʿAbidin's patronage of arts and crafts, etc.**

Zain-ul-ʿAbidin invited mechanics, artisans and craftsmen from Írân, Tûrân, Turkistân and Hindustân, and offered them good prospects and concessions to settle down in Kashmir. Zain-ul-ʿAbidin's patronage of various arts and crafts contributed very largely to the material and economic progress of the country, and considerably increased its reputation.) The products of Kashmir industries were highly appreciated abroad and fetched high prices. An expert at fireworks taught his art to many others. Habîb—wrongly written as Jab by Rodgers—made gunpowder. "Weapons made of different metals new and hard" were devised. (A cannon was in operation.) It was "strong, well-regulated, of deep sound, and of great value." Along with the serious subject of arms for the army, amusements for the people were not ignored. Acrobat were invited and they came in a large number. Music flourished to an extent never known before. It is there-

---

4. Ibid., page 105.
fore, chiefly through his exertions that even today Kashmir enjoys a high position in several arts and crafts, e.g., woodcarving, paper-making, shawl-weaving and carpentry. He also sent individuals from among his own subjects to other countries to learn certain industries. Some of the arts of the time were imported from India. He forbade merchants to hide merchandise in their own houses, and compelled them to expose it for sale at a reasonable profit. He devoted his attention to medical science as well, and provided facilities for his subjects by establishing state hospitals for the treatment of disease. It is interesting to note that the great families of physicians, famous in Delhi and Lucknow, originally came from Kashmir. Khwāja A'zam credits Bād Shāh with having imported midwives and nurses from Samarqand. This may have led to the introduction of maternity wards or conveniences to women needing them in Kashmir, a step far ahead of several contemporaries of Bād Shāh.

Zain-ul-Ābidīn’s patronage of letters.

Zain-ul-Ābidīn’s love for letters was in no way inferior to that for arts and crafts. His interest in the intellectual growth and economic progress of his subjects was keen and unflagging. He extended his patronage to scholars in as generous a measure as to artisans and craftsmen; hence the great influx into Kashmir of scholars and men of letters from other lands. For reasons of space, it is impossible to give an account of all the men of letters who were attached to his court or flourished in his time; therefore, a very brief account of but a few, more notable among them, is given below*:

1. Maulānā Kabīr.—He was a Kashmiri by birth who had, in his youth, migrated to Herāt, at which place he studied theology and all its allied sciences. The king, after several attempts, induced him to return to Kashmir to hold the office of Shaikh-ul-Islam or Head of the Ecclesiastical Department. He was also placed at the head of the university, for the upkeep and maintenance of which the revenues of several villages in the Nāgām pargana were assigned.

*Ta’rikh-i-Kabīr, page 290. Also the Ta’rikh-i-Bād Shāhī by Fauq, Lahore, 1944.
2. Mullā Ahmad Kashmirī.—He was the pupil of Sadr-ul-Mudarrisīn Maulānā Muhammad Afzal of Bukhārā who had come to Kashmir during the reign of Sultān Sikandar. Mullā Ahmad was a profound scholar, a distinguished poet, and an excellent historian. The Ta’rīkh-i-Waqā‘ī‘-i-Kashmīr and a translation of the Mahābhārata into Persian are among his works. Bad Shāh has thus the credit of the first translation of the Mahābhārata into Persian. Mullā Ahmad also translated into Persian Kalhana’s Rājatarāṃgīṇī by command of the Sultān, who named this version Bahr-ul-Āsmār or ‘The Sea of Tales,’ perhaps, in contrast to Kalhana’s ‘River of Kings.’ This translation or perhaps adaptation of Kalhana’s work must have been incomplete, as in 1594 A.C., Akbar asked Mullā ‘Abdul Qādir Badāyūnī to complete it. But as Mullā Ahmad’s translation must have become rather archaic Persian in Akbar’s time, the Emperor, therefore, asked for a fresh, complete translation of the whole.

[Badāyūnī (p. 384) says:—“The Emperor had ordered me to re-write the Persian translation of the History of Kashmir by Mullā Shāh Muhammad of Shāhābād, a learned man well versed in argumentative sciences and history. I was to write it in an easy style. This I did, and in the space of two months I presented my book, which was put in His Majesty’s Library to await its turn for reading.” This order was given, it appears, during Akbar’s stay in Kashmir, from the 2nd Jumādā II to 2nd Zīqā’adah, 997 A.H. (1588 A.C.), when he returned by way of Kābul in the beginning of 998 A.H. (1589 A.C.). “No copies have till now turned up of either Shāh Muhammad’s History of Kashmir or Badāoni’s revision.”*]

Again Badāyūnī, on page 402, says: “I was told to complete the Bahr-ul-Āsmār, a book containing stories which, at the command of Zain-ul-‘Abidīn, had been partly translated into Persian. I translated the new portions within the next five months, all in all about sixty juz. Soon after, the Emperor called me once to his sleeping apartment, and asked me the whole night till dawn about these stories. He also ordered me to re-write the first volume of the Bahr-ul-Āsmār, because it was written in ancient Persian, no longer spoken, and told me to keep the MS. of the portion which I had made. I performed the zamān-būsī and commenced with heart and soul the new work. His Majesty also gave me ten thousand Mūrādī tankas (struck when Mūrād

*Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bengal, Volume XXXVIII, Part I, No. III, 1869, page 135, under—“Badāoni and his Works” by H. Blochmann, M.A., Assistant Professor. Calcutta Madrasah, April, 1869, pages 105-144.
was born) and a horse as a present.’ Towards the end of the same year (1003 A.H. = 1594 A.C.), ‘Abdul Qādir Badāyūnī had to mourn the death of Shaikh Ya’qūb Sarfī of Kashmir.

Dr. Charles Rieu’s Catalogue of the Persian Manuscripts in the British Museum (Volume I, 1879, page 296), however, tells us that (Add. 24,032) is probably the work re-written by ‘Abdul Qādir Badāyūnī, in 999 A.H. = 1690-91 A.C. ‘Abdul Qādir Badāyūnī’s Catalogue of the Persian Manuscripts in tho British Museum (Volume I, 1879, page 296) however, tells us that &jc!, (Add. 24,032) is probably the work re-written by ‘Abdul Qādir Badāyūnī, in 999 A.H. = 1690-91 A.C. Abu’l Fazl’s exact words in the A’tn-i-Ākbar are:—‘The History of Kashmir, which extends over the last four thousand years, has been translated from Kashmirian into Persian by Maulānā Shāh Muhammad of Shāhābād (English Translation by H. Blochmann, M.A., Volume I, 1873, p. 106). Rīén notes that this translation was from Sanskrit into Persian for Akbar by Mullā Shāh Muhammad in the year 998 A.H. (1589 A.C.). The History of India by Elliot and Dowson says the translation of the Rājataraṅgini is usually attributed to Maulānā ‘Imād-ud-Dīn (Volume V, 1873, page 478). ‘Imād-ud-Dīn is presumably the author of the Rauzat-ut-Tāhirīn which is a general history from the earliest times to 1014 A.H. = 1605 A.C., containing in its fifth part a section on ‘Kings of Kashmir’ (Rieu’s Catalogue, Volume I, pp. 117-119).

Bernier states that an abridged translation of the Rājataraṅgini into Persian was made by command of Jahāngīr and adds that he was engaged upon rendering this into French. But, says Horace Hayman Wilson, we have “never heard anything more of Mr. Bernier’s translation.”

3, 4. Hāfiz Baghdādī and Mullā Pārsā were two other scholars who, as lecturers, spent their lives in the royal university. They were both immigrants. The first one was from Baghdad as his name denotes and the other was from Bukhārā. The Hāfiz is buried in the tomb of Maulānā Kabīr. The Mullā found his last resting-place in Nau Shahr.

5. Qāzi Jamāl-ud-Dīn.—As has been stated previously, Jamāl originally came from Hindustān. He was leading an austere and secluded life at the Khānqāh of Shāh Hamadān, imparting knowledge to those who sought it. His introduction to the king’s court took place in a strange manner.

4. Ta’rikh-i-Kauhmir by Malik Haidar Chādura, MS., page 147.
The Khānqāh at Saldahpôr further up Sopôr.
He used to write petitions for persons who had either a law-suit, or sought redress for some grievance. The king was deeply impressed by his scholarship as he perused the petitions presented to him. This excited the king’s imagination and made him all the more eager to see Jamāl-ud-Dīn.

Once a petition, in verse, from Jamāl’s pen came up before the king, in which the former had deplored the demise of Sultān Sikandar, the last line of the petition was:

\[
\text{شہ شہ شہ شہ شہ شہ شہ} \\
\text{بنان و دل طلیبے دعاہ مکیان}
\]

On reading this petition, the king could no longer restrain his desire to see Jamāl, and dispatched a noble to bring him to the court. He was received with marked respect and honour by the king to whom he presented a volume of one of his works. The king later appointed him Chief Justice for the whole of his kingdom.

6. Another scholar of distinction in this reign who also held the office of Qāzī, was Qāzī Mīr ‘Alī Bukhārī who came from Bukhārā, and was held in high esteem by the king and received a jāgīr or assignment for his maintenance.

7. Sayyid Husain Qummī Rizavī, a learned theologian who had renounced his home to preach Islam, came to Kashmir and was invited by the Sultān to stay in Bāgh-i-Zainā-gīr, Tāhīl Handwāra, which is now known as Sayyidpūr or Saidahpūr after the learned Sayyid.

8. Ḥākim Mansūr wrote the \textit{Kifāyah-i-Mansūrī} on medicine in Persian. It is translated into Urdu and published by the Newāl Kishore Press.

9. Mullā Nādīrī, according to Malik Haidar Chādurā,* succeeded Mullā Ahmad as the poet-laureate of Bād Shāh. Nādīrī was a historian too. But neither his \textit{Divān} nor his \textit{History of Kashmir} are available.

*\textit{Ta’rikh}, page 32, Pratāp Library MS. copy.
10. Shaikh Bahā-ud-Din Ganj Bakhsh, a well-known saint of the time, was a disciple of Khwāja Is-hāq of Khatlān, a prominent Khalīfa of Shāh Hamadān. The Shaikh travelled very extensively. In Kashmir, he associated himself with Shaikh Nūr-ud-Dīn and Sayyid Muḥammad Madānī. Stories of his profound meditation and his extreme humility, his self-abnegation and self-effacement are related. His funeral was attended by a large number of notables of the time. Bad Shāh's queen, Baihaqī Begam, sold an ornament of hers to erect the Shaikh's tomb when he died in 849 A.H. (1445 A.C.).

11. Qāżī Hamīd came of a family that held the office of Qazā or administration of justice. He is reputed to be the author of a good history of Kashmir, which unfortunately cannot be traced today. His son, Qāżī Ibrāhīm, took up the continuation of the history left by his father, but this history too is not extant.

12. Sayyid Nasīr-ud-Dīn Khanyārī is a notable of Bad Shāh's time. The Sayyid came originally from Baihaq, a district to the north-west of Nishāpūr in Irān. Bad Shāh entrusted him with ambassadorial duties. Nasīr-ud-Dīn is buried in mahalla Khanyār, Srinagar, under a dome which contains also the grave of Yūz Āsaf. The area is known as Rauza-bal.

13. Yūz Āsaf believed to have been an envoy from Egypt, Babā 'Usmān Uchchap Ganāi, a learned divine, Hājī Adham a saintly figure, Shams-ud-Dīn Andrābī a noted scholar, Sultān Muḥammad a poet, Sayyid Muḥammad 'Alī Balkhī who gave up sovereignty for a saintly life, Sayyid Jānbāz Valī, Mir Sayyid Hasan Mantiqī, Babā Zain ud-Dīn Rishi are others who adorned the age of the Sultān.

Zain-ul-Ābidīn, whose name is sanskritized as Jaina, and whom Jōnarāja calls Čri Jainollabhādīna, was a student of Sanskrit, and also "a patron of Sanskrit learning and occasionally a pilgrim to the ancient tīrthas of the Valley." During his peaceful reign, Hindu traditions re-asserted themselves while the country enjoyed a return of its old prosperity. Zain-ul-Ābidīn is also credited with having studied Hindu philosophy (Yōga-vaśishtha). Črīvara says

---

the king "caused the Purāṇas, books on logic, the Mīmāṁsā and other books to be brought from distant lands, and distributed them to the learned. The king heard me recite the Vāshīṣṭa Brahma-darshana composed by Vālmiki. . . . The mlecchas read the Vṛihat Kathā-sāra, the Hāṭakeshwara Samhitā, the Purāṇas and other books in their own language." ¹

The most distinguished among the Hindu scholars were the following:

1. Uttha-Soma was a Kashmiri scholar thoroughly conversant with Persian, Sanskrit and his own language, in which he composed verses. He held a high post in the Translation Bureau and wrote, in Kashmiri, Zain-ul-ʿAbidin's life the Jaina-charita.

2. Yōdhabhaṭṭa was an exceedingly intelligent person endowed with a marvellous memory. He went to Mahārāṣtra to study the Atharva Veda, and was induced by Čriyabhaṭṭa to return to Kashmir in order to spread the knowledge of that Veda. Five hundred years later, when the late Shankar Pāndurang Pandit brought out his famous edition of the Atharva Veda, owing to the lack of the manuscript in the Dakhan, he relied on this Kashmiri MS. ²

3. Jonarāja was a scholar of Sanskrit and of "considerable attainments though apparently without much originality." He was a historian who, in his own words, made an outline of the history of kings and brought Kalhaṇa's work up to date. The king rewarded him with his customary liberality. Jonarāja received orders from the noble-hearted Čriyabhaṭṭa, the Superintendent of the Courts of Justice, "to complete the story of the kingly line." Jonarāja died in 1459 A.C.

4. Črivara was another of the noted historians, though "he was an imitator of Kalhaṇa." He undertook to finish the remainder of the book of kings left by Jonarāja on his death. Črivara, after Baḥ Shāh's death, sanskritized Jāmī's Yūsuf-Zulaikhā in 1505. It is entitled the Kathā-kautuka. ³

¹ Kings of Kashmir, pp. 145-46.
³ Published in 1901, and printed at the Nīṟṇaya-Sāgara Press, Bombay. Edited by M. M. Pandit Čivadatta, Head Pandit, Oriental College, Lahore, and Kashināth Pāndurang Parab. Sir A. Berriedale Keith is wrong in stating that it was written under Zain-ul-ʿAbidin, vide A History of Sanskrit Literature, 1928, page 361.
Other notable scholars were: (5) Tilak Āchārya, the Buddhist, (6) Karpūrabhatṭa, the physician (7) Rupyabhatṭa, the astronomer, (8) Simha, the astrologer, (9) Rāmananda, the chemist, who wrote an exposition of Mahābāṣya. Bhāṭṭa Avatāra wrote the Jaina-vilāsa. (10) Čивabhatṭa was the physician in personal attendance on the king and supervised his meals.

All these literary activities, with all their incidental expenses, acquired the volume they did, as the king himself was a scholar “well-versed in the literature of his age,” and conversant with a number of languages. Zain-ul-ʿAbidin dictated instructions to Habib, the Mir Ātish, in the form of Questions and Answers on the composition and preparation of explosives. He composed the Shikāyat (plaint) “treating of the vanity of all objects,” in his old age. Both these were in Persian. (Bad ʿShāh sent to Mahmūd I, the Khaljī ruler of Māṇḍu, “a beautiful poem composed by himself in his own language,” presumably Persian as Mahmūd could hardly enjoy a poem in Kashmirī. Kashmirī literature also received a great impetus.) The Sultān’s activities in the domain of literature and scholarship were not confined to translations of books, among which the translation of the Mahābhārata holds a prominent place, he spent huge sums, sent his men to various places, and thus collected a library which compared favourably with the one collected by the Sāmānīds. This library remained intact down to the day of Fath ʿShāh, approximately for a period of one hundred years, after which it perished.

Zain-ul-ʿAbidin’s love of poetry.

Zain-ul-ʿAbidin loved poetry, and derived much delight from the company of poets whose number at his court was not negligible. The most brilliant among them was Malik-ush-Shuʿrā, (the poet laureate), Mullā Ahmad Kashmirī whose nom de guerre was “Qutb.” Malik Haidar Chāḍura has quoted the following two lines of this poet:

1. Kings of Kashmir, page 150.
[Vide the Ta'rikh-i-Kashmir by Malik Haidar Châdura, page 145.]

Munshi Muhammad-ud-Dîn Fauq in his Mukammal Ta'rikh-i-Kashmir, Vol. II (page 20), has ascribed these lines to Sultan Qutb-ud-Dîn, and has also given the last couplet of the ghazal which is as follows:

قَطْبِ سَكَّانِ كَرّمُكُمْ يَا كَانِ، عَيْشَ مِنّكَ
عبِّدُ نَبُوْدَ كَرّمُكُمْ يَا كَانِ دِوْرِكَ.

Malik Haidar Chûdûra, on the other hand, takes these lines to have been composed by Mulla Ahmad. Considering that Malik Haidar's history is an epitome of the works of Maulana Nadiri and Mulla Ahmad, Fauq's ascription falls to the ground. But Fauq has withdrawn this ascription in his Ta'rikh-i-Hâdîskhâhî (1944). Khwaja Qutb-ud-Dîn Bakhtiyâr Kâki of Dehli is certainly not the author of these lines as suggested by some. Since the Divân of Khwaja Bakhtiyâr Kâki published by the Newal Kishore Press does not contain these lines, and Khwaja Kâki does not use Qutb for his home de plume, but generally Qutb-i-Dîn.

Mulla Ahmad and Sultan Zain-ul-Abidin had, at times, contests in improvisation. Once the Mulla appeared in the Sultan's presence with the tassel of his turban hanging on his forehead, whereupon the Sultan improvised the following couplet:

شَاعرُ بِنْشَانِ مِثَالَ احْمِدُ كَشِمِرٍ بِنُ نِدَّدَتْسَ أُهُّ ذِيَ آفَاقٍ غَرْبَ مَشَارٍ
To this the Mulla replied with the couplet:

شَاعرُ بِنْشَانِ خَدْيَا آَوُگَرَكَ وَارَى دَارَمُّ تَأْمَى درَمَانُ مَاءُ غَرْبَ مُغَرَّ

The Sultan was so delighted with the ready wit of the Mulla that he rewarded him munificently.

As a result of intrigue by his enemies, the nature of which is not revealed, the Mulla fell into disgrace, and was consequently banished. After reaching Pakhî, he sent the following couplets to the Sultan:

ٍثَبَثَ وَمَحَمَّدَ زِى مِدَدَا خَبَرَٔ َنَّبِئ مِنْطَقَ زَجَّى وُقُّلَ اَثْرِهُ
ٍآَمَّدُ اَمَرْ عُنُفَ مَنْصِرَ خَوَانَدٔ

The Sultan was greatly moved by perusing these lines, and forthwith sent orders to the Mulla to return.

* Another reading is كِرَّ کُرُکُ, meaning the rhinoceros, or the Tibetan yak, but the wolf has the tuft of his tail drawn on his head when angry.
Bad Shāh's army and his conquests.

When the Sultān ascended the throne, the army numbered 100,000 foot and 30,000 cavalry. He so organized it as to leave no possibility of a rebellion or rising. Moreover, his personal treatment of the officers so charmed them that, at his bidding they were ready to march with their men bravely facing any danger. He conquered the whole of the Punjāb though his army led by Jasārat Khān Gakhar failed to conquer Delhi. The Punjab had then slipped from the feeble grasp of the Sayyid King of Delhi. Bad Shāh added Bhottaland or Western Tibet, very probably between 1460 and 1470 A.C., to his dominion. Here he rescued a golden image of Buddha from destruction in Sayā-desha or Shel (pronounced Shē), above Leh, on the Indus. This village has always been famous for its large Buddhist images. The Sultān took the town of Kulūtā or Kulū which, apparently at that time, was occupied by the Tibetans. The king of Kulūtā or Kulū was a vassal of the king of Leh. After taking Kulū, Bad Shāh returned by way of Lāhul in Kāngra. There is an uncorroborated tradition that in the course of his conquest of the Punjab, he halted at Amritsar where old Kashmiris repeated, until lately, this tradition about his halt, and said that he had a well dug out in the locality known after him as “Baṭ Khū” which was subsequently called “Baṭ Khū” on account of the influx of Kashmiri Pandits in that quarter of the city. According to the Tabaqāt, Bad Shāh allowed the treasuries of all countries, which were conquered, to be plundered; and assessed the revenue on them on the same scale as that of the country round the capital.

His statesmanship and foreign relations.

Besides putting down conspiracies and removing such elements as tended to disturb the tranquillity of his realm, the Sultān further proceeded to enter into friendly relations with his immediate neighbours, as well as the potentates and rulers of distant lands. He sent ambassadors with adequate presents and letters to the kings of Khurāsān,

1. Indian or provincial historians make no mention of this conquest of the Punjab by Zain-ul-Ābidīn. I suppose it was a mere swoop and led to no established occupation.
3. The Indian Antiquary, Bombay, Volume XXXVII, July, 1908, p. 188
Turkistān, Āzarbāijān, Gilān, Sistān and the Sultān of Turkey, the Burjī Mamlūk of Egypt, and the Sharīf of Mecca. Sultān Buhāl Lodi, Sultān Mahmūd Begarha of Gujrāt, and Jām Nizām-ud-Dīn (Nanda) of Sind received his embassies. The ruler of Tibet sent him a pair of extremely beautiful geese to which a strange performance was attributed, namely, that they could separate milk and water, and drink the milk and leave the water in the vessel. Between the Sultān and the Tonwār rājā of Gwāliōr love of music formed a bond.

The noted contemporary rulers of Bād Shāh in India were:

Delhi .. From Mu‘izz-ud-Dīn Mubārak son of Khīzr Khān, to Buhāl Lodi

Sind .. Jām Nizām-ud-Dīn (or Nanda) .. 1437—1494 A.C.

Multān .. Qutb-ud-Dīn Shāh .. 1440—1456 „

Jaunpur .. Mahmūd Shāh .. 1436—1458 „

Deccan .. Ahmad Shāh Walī .. 1422—1436 „

Gujrāt .. Mahmūd Begarha .. 1458—1511 „

Mālwa .. Mahmūd I (Khālījī) .. 1436—1469 „

Khāndesh .. Mubārak Khān .. 1441—1457 „

Bengāl .. Nasīr-ud-Dīn Mahmūd Shāh .. 1442—1460 „

Orissa .. Kapilēçvara (or Kapilendra) Deva .. 1434—1470 „

Vijayanagar .. Devarāya II .. 1419—1446 „

Gondwāna .. Suraja Ballāl Singh (Sher Sāh Ballāl Sāh) .. 1437—1462 „

Burma .. Queen Shinsawbu .. 1453—1472 „

Ceylon .. Parakkama-Bāhu VI .. 1409—1466 „

1. Āzarbāijān is now a province of north-western Irān with an area of 40,000 square miles. The population is estimated at 2,000,000. The capital is Tabrīz which has a population of 200,000. Āzarbāijān was also a province in the empire of the Caliphs. It consists generally of lofty mountain ranges. The principal river is the Araxes which enters the Caspian.

The former Russian provinces of Bākū and Elizavetpol on the coast of the Caspian Sea are also now called Āzarbāijān and declared a Socialist Soviet Republic since 30th September, 1920 A.C., with Bākū as its capital. This second Āzarbāijān was a part of the old one.

2. Gilān, a province of Irān south of the Caspian Sea and north of the Alburz chain, is now a vilāyat with Rasht as capital. The population numbers 250,000. Gilān, independent for long, was conquered by Hulāgū, and finally incorporated in Irān by the Safavids. Arabs call it Jīl or Jīlān.
Zain-ul-‘Ābidin’s European contemporary rulers were:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Country</th>
<th>Ruler</th>
<th>Reign</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>England</td>
<td>Henry VI</td>
<td>1422–1461 A.C.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Scotland</td>
<td>James II</td>
<td>1437–1460</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>France</td>
<td>Charles VII</td>
<td>1422–1461</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Spain</td>
<td>Henry IV</td>
<td>1454–1474</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Empire</td>
<td>Emperor Frederic IV</td>
<td>1439–1498</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pope</td>
<td>Eugenius IV</td>
<td>1431–1447</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Some of the Muslim contemporaries were:

Among the Nasrids of Granada (Spain)—

(i) Muhammad VIII Al-Mutamassik ibn Yūsuf III 1417–1427 A.C.

(ii) Muhammad IX—As-Saglīr ibn Nasr

(iii) Muhammad VIII (again)

(iv) Abu’l Hajjāj Yūsuf IV ibn Muhammad VI.

(v) Muhammad X—Al-Ahnāf ibn ‘Usmān

(vi) Sa’d Al-Musta’in ibn ‘Ali

(vii) Muhammad X (again). (viii) Sa’d (again)

(ix) Abu’l Hasan ‘Ali ibn Sa’d 1461–1482 A.C.


In Āzarbāijān among the Qara-Quyunlis, the Turkomān clan known as the Black Sheep from the device on their standards—(i) Sikandar ibn Yūsuf (2) Muzaffar-ud-Dīn Jahān Shāh ibn Yūsuf (3) Hasan ‘Ali. Among the Aq-Quyunlī’s, the Turkomān clan of the White Sheep—(1) Nur-ud-Dīn Hamza ibn Qara Yūluq (2) Mu’izz-ud-Dīn Jahāngir (3) Uzun Hasan ibn ‘Ali.


Bad Šāh’s attitude towards Hindus.

Among measures adopted by the Sultān, there were certain laws relating to the Hindus which vouchsafed to them a just administration and a trial of their cases according
THE WORLD at the time of SULTÁN ZAIN-UL-ÁBIDÍN’S rule in KASHMÍR 1420-70 A.C.
to their own laws. The *Tabaqāt-i-Akbār*¹ says the Sultān took an agreement from Brahmans that they would not act in contravention of what was written in their books. After this the odious measures of persecution instituted by Malik Saif-ud-Din, Sikandar’s prime minister, were revoked, and a general toleration of all religions was proclaimed. The Brahmans and other Hindus who had migrated during the last regime were recalled. Complete religious independence was granted. Some of the temples which had been demolished in the last reign were re-built, and permission was accorded to erect new ones. Within the palace known as Siddhapuri, Bád Shāh repaired dilapidated temples by props, or re-built them, says Črvāra.² Pāṭhashālas were opened for Hindu boys to study their own scriptures. Scholarships were awarded to students for the study of Sanskrit and they were deputed to the Deccan and to Kāshī (Benares).³ The Sultān remitted the poll-tax and granted jāqīrs or assignments to Hindus and discountenanced the killing of cows. He further encouraged his Hindu subjects by taking into his service such of them as deserved his patronage and recognition. It is also remarkable that the Kārkun (state service) and Bāchch Bāṭ (priestly) classes⁴ of Brahmans came into being, and obtained recognition in this reign. These two sections continue to be two distinct groups and do not intermarry even to this day. A third section is the Jotish or astrologer class which intermarry with the Kārkun. According to Munshī Muhammad-ud-Dīn Fauq (*The Ta’rīkh-i-Aqwām-i-Kashmīr*, Vol. I, p. 43) the Brahmans who first took to the study of Persian and Muslim learning in Kashmir were the Sapūrs, the forefathers of the caste that in our day produced (i) the late Sir Muhammad Iqbāl whose family embraced Islam in the days of Aurangzib ‘Alamgīr, and migrated to Sīālkōt, (ii) the Right Honourable Sir Tej Bahādur Sapru whose family migrated from Kashmir, according to Sir Tej himself, “about 130 years or more and settled down in Delhi,” and then moved to Allāhābād.

The Hindu and Muslim subjects of Bád Shāh lived at peace with each other undisturbed by religious dissensions. In case there occurred any occasional friction it was

---

amicably settled by *panchāyats* at which the monarch* himself presided.

**Bad Shāh’s suavity in effecting reforms.**

The Sultān provided his subjects with a code of laws, and had them all engraved on copper-plates and placed in public markets and halls of justice. He was in this respect, perhaps, the first systematic lawgiver of Kashmir. He abhorred every kind of bloodshed and never put to death any one for a petty crime. It is recorded of him that he gave away some camel loads of money and cloth for the repose of the soul of a man whom he had executed because he had been guilty of the wanton death of his wife. Perhaps Jonarāja refers to this case. “Though the king was kind-hearted,” writes Jonarāja, “yet for the sake of his people, he would not forgive even his sons, or a minister, or a friend if he were guilty. Mereshaya the Yāvana (i.e., Muslim) was once drunk, and killed his wife without any fault, and though he was the king’s favourite, yet the king caused him to be executed.” (Similarly, according to Firishta, Bad Shāh executed his own foster-brother Sher on Sher’s killing his own brother Masʿūd. Arbitrary fines imposed by provincial governors were abolished. says Firishta The Sultān released all the prisoners of former kings. When the Chaks set fire to his grand Zaina Ḍab, a magnificent palace twelve storeys high, he drove them back and had their leader Pāndū Chak flogged to death, but took his younger son, Husain Chak, the younger brother of Himmat Chak, into favour. We shall meet this Husain Chak later in our history when he becomes Shīʿa under the influence of Mir Shams-ud-Dīn ʿIrāqi. This mildness of temper and leniency shown to people did not, however, encourage any crime in the country though perhaps, in later days, strife among the Sultān’s sons could be said to have been due to this undue mildness of disposition.)

A system of prison industries like pottery and others was instituted. The brandishing of prisoners was stopped, and they were required to work on road construction. He devoted particular attention to the agriculturist class, and adopted many measures which enormously improved their condition. He did not even spare himself. He personally

---

supervised the construction of several bridges, canals and aqueducts, rendering thereby a large portion of Kashmir arable and irrigated. His Zaina-gir canal has been recently reconstructed. He added to the length of the jarib or the chain, and the yard but the detail is not available. What the Tabaqat records is: "In kindness to the ra'iyat he increased the length of the yard measure and of the chain beyond what had been customary." In simple language we may understand that he standardized the jarib and the yard. Land assessment was revised, being reduced to a seventh in some places. Village-folk and farmers were further protected from the exactions of revenue officers by a law which prohibited the latter from accepting any gifts. The price of commodities were regulated by monthly notifications. Sale deeds were stamped with the king's seal. Rest-houses were built on principal roads, and shelters were set up within forests. The Sultān took a further stride in raising the status of those placed low in life.

**Bad Shāh's sources of income.**

For a great court, for a galaxy of eminent scholars, for a number of structures, some of which were indeed magnificent and for his army, the Sultān needed money. This he found by the working of copper mines, the collection of gold dust in the Ladakh rivers, and the construction of an extensive system of canals which irrigated large tracts of arid land.

Zain-ul-Abidin and Akbar compared.

Historians have sometimes drawn a comparison between Zain-ul-Abidin and Akbar. It is essential, in the first place, not to forget that they were not contemporaries. Zain-ul-Abidin was, moreover, the Sultān of Kashmir, and parts of Tibet and of the Punjab, while Akbar held under his sway a kingdom which far exceeded many times that of Zain-ul-Abidin. There is, therefore, no comparison between the two in the matter of the extent of their kingdoms. Zain-ul-Abidin did not lack Akbar's enterprise and physical vigour, but the field for their display was
comparatively limited for Bad Shāh. A very great point of similitude between the two was the popularity, particularly with Hindus, enjoyed by both. A more careful observation, however, will clearly show that, even in gaining popularity, their approach was quite dissimilar to each other. Akbar had favoured the development of an eclectic faith of his own to which he gave the name of “Divine Faith” and matrimonial alliances with Rājput princes. Zain-ul-ʾAbidin’s greatness lies in this, that without compromising his religion, or having recourse to any of such measures of policy, he was able to command as much love and respect from his Hindu subjects, perhaps more than Akbar did. In his aims and objects, the monarch stood for what Akbar always pursued and kept in view. As Sir Wolseley Haig has well put it, Zain-ul-ʾAbidin “possessed a stock of learning and accomplishments from which Akbar’s youthful indolence had, to a great extent, excluded him, his views were more enlightened than the emperor’s and he practised a tolerance which Akbar only preached.”

II. Beveridge, who spent over twenty years in translating the historical part of the Akbar-nāma feels driven to say that Akbar has been over-praised. Akbar had the defects of his age and race, and of his own idiosyncrasy. He was both ruthless and self-indulgent. He ordered a lamp-lighter to be flung over the battlements for the crime of having fallen asleep in the imperial bed. He flung into the river a man who failed to trace out a ford on the Indus on one occasion. On another occasion, Akbar in anger at a person, coming into his presence drunk, had him drenched with cold water with the result that the poor man eventually died of shock. V. A. Smith’s special study of Akbar made him assert that, on many occasions, Akbar would get rid of people he considered dangerous by assassination or secret execution.

It is true that Akbar, after he became half a Hindu or half a Pārsī, expressed horror at Jahāngir’s cruelties but

it was Akbar, points out Beveridge, who hanged the innocent and able Mansūr Shīrāzī, and it was he who killed or connived at the killing of his old and once venerated teacher! Zain-ul-ʿĀbidin’s life was free from such cruelty. He was no Tartar. His veins were not tainted with blood from the bloody Chingīz.

Akbar’s own son, Jahāngīr, writing about the piety of Zain-ul-ʿĀbidin says that he passed many periods of ‘forty days’ in his Zaina Lānk, and adds that the Sultān is said to have performed many miracles (Elliot and Dowson, Vol. VI, page 306). Akbar experienced trouble from Jahāngīr. Zain-ul-ʿĀbidin had likewise trouble from his sons.

The family lives of Bād Shāh and Akbar.

(Akbar had more than 300 wives. Bād Shāh had but two. Zain-ul-ʿĀbidin possessed the virtue so rare among medieval monarchs whether of the East or of the West, of contenting himself, as just noted, with only two wives because the first one had no male child. Akbar’s own historian, Bakhshī Nizām-ud-Dīn Ahmad writes that Bād Shāh “never looked at the face of a strange woman.”)

The following incident throws further light on this aspect of Bād Shāh’s character. “Tributary Hindu chiefs observed the practice of sending a daughter to the harem of the lord paramount, and it is related that Sundarasena, the chief of Rājapurī (the ancient name of Rājaūrī) whose accession is fixed at about 1450 A.C., sent his eldest daughter, Rājya Devi, to Sultān Zain-ul-ʿĀbidin. On her arrival in Kashmir, the king was engaged in sport on the Wulur Lake. Seeing the ladies’ party coming, he asked one of his attendants the question: “What mother’s doli is that?” On hearing that it was the Rājapurī princess sent to him, he said, “As I have already called her mother how can I receive her as a wife?” She was sent over to live with the ladies of the harem, where she afterwards became a Muslim. The Rājwīr, or Rājaūrī Kadal, a bridge over the Mār canal in Srinagar, was built by her.”

---

2. Ibid., page XVIII.
3. A kind of palankeen or covered litter for a person, usually carried by four or five men.
"The king's beloved queen named Vodha Khātonā died," writes Pandit Črīvara. "She was to the family of Saidas (Sayyīda) what the moonlight is to the sea. It was by union with her that the king had thought his life happy, and now by her separation his body became burnt with sorrow and all things appeared to him as nothing."

The grave of Makhdūma Khātān, the Queen of Sultan Zain-ul-Abidīn or Bād Shāh, is situated in the Masār-i-Kalān or Hazrāt Bahā-ud-Dīn Ganj Bakhsh Mausoleum, among the graves of the Baihaqī Sayyīds. She died in 870 A.H. (1465 A.C.).

This Vodha (or Boḍ, meaning big) Khātonā was Tāj Khātūn Baihaqī Begam, the daughter of Sayyīd Muhammad Baihaqī Kāndhāmi. She lies buried in the ziyārat of Qutb-ul-ʿĀlam Shaikh Bahā-ud-Dīn Ganj Bakhsh, outside Nāgar-nagar, Hari-parbat, Srinagar. Her tomb is now a protected monument.

Baihaqī Begam had two daughters, one was married to Sayyīd Hasan Baihaqī, her own nephew, and the second was married to the Sultan of Pakhlī. Baihaqī Begam had no son. Zain-ul-ʿAbidīn, then, married a second wife. She was the daughter of the ruler of Jammu, and by her Bād Shāh had four sons: (1) Ādam Khān (2) Hājī Khān (3) Jasārat Khān (4) Bahram Khān. Jasārat probably died early as we hear nothing further about him. The tomb of the Dogrā queen of Jammu, the second wife of Zain-ul-ʿAbidīn, is beside the grave of her eldest son Ādam Khān according to Črīvara. She died in 856 A.H. (1452 A.C.) if the inscription on this grave, near Ādam's, correctly refers to her.

*Kings of Kashmira, page 157.*
Bad Shāh and Akbar in their general habits.

Unlike Akbar who spent freely of public funds, Sultān Zain-ul-ʿĀbidin expended only the proceeds of his own copper mines for his private use. Akbar was fond of hunting, Zain-ul-ʿĀbidin forbade hunting. In fact, during the month of Ramazān, he never ate flesh, and never executed persons for theft: in this respect, in Rodger's words, 'he was three hundred years ahead of England.' In Jonarāja's language "beauty dwelt in his person, and the goddess of learning on his lips, fortune rested in his breast, and patience in his mind."* Such, in brief, was this king—princely in appearance, the patron of arts and crafts, a friend to the cultivators, promoter of learning and scholarship, and benefactor of the Hindus. And truly he was the 'Glory of the Devout' or the 'Ornament of the Adorers' as his name implied.

To borrow the words of Col. Malleson used for Akbar, when we reflect, what Zain-ul-ʿĀbidin did, and the age in which he did it, we are bound to recognize in the Sultān one of those illustrious men whom Providence occasionally sends in the hour of a country's need to re-conduct it into those paths of peace and toleration which alone can assure the happiness of its inhabitants.)

Zain-ul-ʿĀbidin's life was somewhat embittered towards its close owing to jealousy among his sons. Unfortunately they did not prove the worthy sons of the worthy father. The wise king realized, with dismay, that it would be better to separate them. He, therefore, probably in 1451 A.H., placed the eldest son Adam Khān, whose manners always repelled the king, at the head of a large army, and charged him to invade Ladākh or Western Tibet. In those days, Tibet was to Kashmir what Algiers or Tunis was to France during

the latter part of the nineteenth century. Háji Khán, the second son, was ordered to proceed against Lohkót in Pûnch; the youngest, Báhrám Khán, remained with the king. Both sons were victorious and returned covered with glory. Háji Khán who was also the king's favourite son, turned his arms against his father.¹ The two armies met on the plain of Pâllaçilâ in Badgâm Tâhil in 1452 A.C. (856 A.H.). Ádam Khán, the elder, stood by his father who, at first, tried to bring round the rebellious son through persuasion. Hájí's army attacked the Sultân's and the fight continued from sunrise till sunset. Hájí being unable to withstand the royal forces, fled to Hûrapôr² about seven miles south-west of Shupiyân. Thence he fell back upon the town of Nàrwân which stands on the road leading into Kashmir by the Bûdîl³ pass. Ádam Khán followed him, but orders from the Sultân restrained his pursuit.

The Sultân, however, ordered Ádam Khán to march against Sopôr, the fort of Kamráj—which place was reduced to subjection. Such of its inhabitants as had instigated Háji Khán to rebellion were remorselessly executed. This last step caused a good number of Kamráj soldiers from Sopôr in Háji's army to desert him. Ádam Khán was declared the king's successor for his gallant behaviour at this critical juncture. But he proved a failure. His maladministration of Kamráj was repeatedly reported to the Sultân to whose admonitions he sent an unflial rejoinder by raising the standard of revolt at Qutbuddinpôr. He invited Háji's co-operation, who tried to turn the situation to his own advantage by attacking the elder brother, but suffered a severe reverse at Sopôr. The Sultân, then, sent his army against Ádam Khán. It was now Ádam's turn to sustain a defeat with considerable loss, after which he fled to Sopôr hotly pursued by the Sultân. Hájí followed the fortunes of war with shrewdness and at this time arrived at Bâràmûla. The Sultân sent his youngest son Báhrâm

¹. Briggs, Vol. IV, page 471. It might be assumed that the object of this move was Ádam Khán, as the two brothers were never on good terms with each other.
³. The Bûdîl (Budhil) or Seda pass crosses the Pântsâl range towards the south-west corner of the Valley of Kashmir. Bûdîl is the name of a village (Population 827) situated to the south of the Pir Pântsâl on one of the upper tributaries of the Ana River. It has given its name to the pass.
The grave of Baḍ Shāh or Sultān Zain ul Abidin in the Mazār-us-Salātīn, Zaina Kadal, Maharaj Ganj, Srinagar.
Khān to welcome him on his arrival. Ādam Khān sought safety in flight to the banks of the Nil-āb, the Kashmirī name of the Indus. Háji, now penitent and submissive, was declared heir-apparent in place of his elder brother, and also tried to make amends for his past misbehaviour.

The Sultān, however, was sorely troubled to observe that his favourite son paid no heed to his admonitions, and persisted in his licentious habits and drinking. He further showed a total disregard of statesmanship in taking to a course of bloodshed. His opponents, now thinking the time opportune, secretly invited Ādam Khān, but the Sultān refused to pardon him when he came to the capital. However, the eldest son was not dismayed by this, and continued his intrigues and his propaganda. The nobles, now in view of the desperate situation and the declining health of the Sultān, urged him to nominate his successor. Háji Khān, being supreme at the capital, and still retaining the Sultān's favour, was proclaimed successor to the throne.

Shortly after this, the Sultān passed away in his sixtieth solar year in 1470 A.C., or 874 A.H., after a "reign of fifty-two years," at noon on Friday, the 12th day of the moon, in the month of Jaishtha (corresponding to June-July) with prayers on his quivering lips as noted by Pandit Ćrivara. The Pandit saw the dead body of the king, and noticed "the beauty of the flowing black beard on his face." "At the time of his death," writes Pandit Ćrivara, "Fortune seemed to abandon all his limbs and appeared on his face, and I saw him in that state. His face methought was the dwelling place of the Goddess of Fortune, and perspiration issued from it, even like a stream of good luck. His breath left him, taking his life with it, and as if afraid of having stolen that jewel. After life had departed, tears still issued from his eyes, as if his eyes, which were like the sun and the moon, melted away and his affection for his subjects trickled down."

The Sultān was buried beside his father, Sultān Sikandar. "A long crystal stone was placed on the grave, it was the highest," says Ćrivara, "among those that were there, and was like the figure of the king in a recumbent position, and it was illumined with verses." The tomb is below the fourth bridge called the Zaina Kadal.

The locality is called Bad Shāh, after this great sovereign. But the condition of the tomb evoked from the late Pirzāda Muhammad Husain 'Ārif, ex-Chief Justice, Kashmir:

And Fauq has the following:

Zain-ul-'Abidin was deeply mourned by all his subjects. Poets and historians wrote to commemorate his unprecedented reign of peacefulness and glory. The following chronogram,* while aptly eulogising the king, also gives the year of his death, 874 A.H. (1470 A.D.)—

Malik Haidar Chādura and Jahāngīr have recorded an interesting miracle about Zain-ul-'Abidin. The Sultān had gone out for a pleasure trip to the Wulur Island. His elder

---

*In the second line of the second couplet, the first letters of all words as well as the four should not count; the numerical value of the remaining letters should be taken and added to obtain the date of the Sultān's death, viz. 874 A.H. The words given in Hasan's History are not quite correct as they total up 879. And in his chronogram should have been replaced by ضیافت
son accompanied him on this occasion. He advised the Sultān to enjoy a trip in a boat, calculating the chances of throwing him overboard and thus doing away with him. The Sultān evinced no suspicion. After covering a mile, he asked Ādam Khān to fetch his rosary which he had left behind in his prayer-room. On his return to the prayer-room, the prince observed with consternation that the Sultān himself sat in the room, and was deeply absorbed in meditation. He returned to the Sultān and confessed his guilty intention, whereupon the former pardoned him, but at the same time recited this couplet* and how true it proved in that Ādam, though the eldest, was not destined to succeed his father:

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{پدرگوش ادشاپ را نتاید،} & \quad \text{وگر شاید، بیچر شش م نباید} \\
\end{align*}
\]

[A patrilineal does not deserve to wear a crown. Even if he does, he cannot hold his sceptre for more than six months.]

This recalls to mind Aurangzīb Ālamgīr's letter to one of his sons who likewise prayed for his royal father's death and did not succeed to the crown. Sir Muhammad Iqbal has put it in verse:

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{ندباق که یپدان دیره بود} & \quad \text{بی دید و سنجد و بست و کسورد} \\
\text{زمایی جاکان این تیره خال} & \quad \text{شیند است صد ناش درناک} \\
\text{بی همیز شبر در خون نشت} & \quad \text{نیک ناله از زینه او گست} \\
\text{بی از گریه بسرکمان ندید} & \quad \text{نه از درد اورب آم هکشید} \\
\text{مینداً آن که به نفعه کیمر} & \quad \text{بیا دعاها ن تر گرد امیر} \\
\end{align*}
\]

Ādam Khān once again exerted himself to secure the throne. But Ḥāji Khān's resourcefulness and the timely appearance of his son, Ḥasan Khān, on the scene, again shattered Ādam Khān's schemes and he was forced to fly to Hindustān.

---

*Ta'rikh-i-Kashmir by Malik Haidar Chādura, page 152. Jahāngīr has also repeated this incident with a slight variation.—Elliot and Dowson, Vol. VI, page 306.
Hājī ascended the throne with the title of Haidar Shāh.

(According to Firishta, the Sultān, following the family tradition, appointed his younger brother, Bahrām Khān, his minister with Nāgām as his jāgīr. His own son, Hasan Khān, was nominated as his successor, as well as Amīr-ul-Umarā' or Chief of the Noblemen, with the district of Kamrāj as his personal estate, bestowed upon him in perpetuity. From the very outset the new king abandoned himself to a life of debauchery and licentiousness. He proved himself to be, in every way, the reverse of his father, and left the administration of the country entirely in the hands of Bahrām Khān. Haidar Shāh's fame was tarnished by the undue favour he showed to a barber, Lūlī by name, who secured the beheading of Hasan Kuchche, treasury officer, who had worked on behalf of the Sultān in securing his accession to the throne. Ādām Khān, the Sultān's eldest brother, tried to take advantage of this incident, but was killed by a party of Mughuls.) His body, however, received a decent interment at the hands of Haidar Shāh. The tomb of Prince Ādām Khān is situated at Sehyār, Nau Kadal, Srinagar, opposite to that of Sultān Sadr-ud-Dīn. (The nobles, at this time, offered to help Bahrām Khān if he wished to seize the throne. He had arrived at no decision. In the meantime Hasan Khān, the Sultān's son, who had conquered, according to the TABAQAT-I-ĀKBARĪ, many fortresses in India, but according to the Cambridge History of India had been raiding the Punjāb, and had acquired much booty, appeared at the court with the so-called intention of laying at the feet of his father the spoils he had collected from his expeditions. But his real aim was to try his fortune. His sudden appearance filled the minds of the nobles with suspicion, and they advised the king, say Firishta and Bakhshi Nizām-ud-Dīn, not to give audience to him. The Sultān's behaviour cannot be clearly understood except that he was afraid of Bahrām.

---

2. Pandit Črīvara calls him Riktetara in one place and Pūṟṇa in another, and says this "cunning man kept concealed, by the sweetness of his tongue, the hardness of his heart, which led him to oppress the people."—Kings of Kashmir, page 186.
During this time confusion and turmoil prevailed in Kashmir. Intrigues and plots were rampant. The beginning of the decay of the rule of the Sultāns of Kashmir was marked by the death, in 1472 A.C., of this Sultān who, after a brief reign of fourteen months, fell from a terrace whilst intoxicated. But Pandit Črīvara, the Sultān’s contemporary, however, says people suspected that a certain Yūgī gave Haidar Shāh medicine which contained poison. Črīvara praises the king for his love of music and poetry.

SULTĀN HASAN SHĀH

[877 to 889 A.H. or 1472 to 1484 A.C.]

(With the active support of Ahmad Abū or Aswad,1 the commander of forces, Hasan Khān, Sultān Haidar Shāh’s son, ascended the throne with the title of Sultān Hasan Shāh.)

Črīvara describes (page 208) Hasan Shāh’s coronation in glowing terms, and says “all the wealth of his father, his grandfather (Sultān Zain-ul-‘Abidin) and his uncle (Bahārām Khān), flowed to this fortunate king even as rivers flow to the sea.” Hasan Shāh on this occasion, liberated the captives taken by his father and grandfather from the Bhoṭṭa country. Hayāt Khātūn, according to Črīvara, was the Sultan’s beloved queen. She came of the noted Sayyid family, and was the daughter of Sayyid Hasan Baihaqi son of Sayyid Nasīr-ud-Dīn Baihaqi of Baq Shāh’s days. When she gave birth to prince Muhammad Shāh, “silk clothes were distributed to the poor.” Hasan Baihaqi was made a minister.

In return for his services to the Sultān, Ahmad Aswad received the title of Malīk and the office of prime minister while his son, Naurūz, was appointed Amir-i-Dar2 or the Lord Chamberlain. Bahārām Khān, the uncle of the king, consulted his safety in a self-imposed exile to Hindustān. Hasan Shāh revived the edicts and practices of his grandfather, Zain-ul-‘Abidin, which had suffered temporary abeyance during the brief reign of Haidar Shāh. Črīvara says that Hasan Shāh learnt the six schools of

1. Firishta and Bakhshi write Ahmad Aswad. Aswad, besides ‘black’, means ‘powerful’ and ‘illustrious.’
2. The Amir-i-Dar was analogous to the Vakil-i-Dar in the Sultanate of Delhi who controlled the entire household and supervised the payment of allowances and salaries to the sovereign’s personal staff. The queens, the princes, the kitchen and even the stables were under his care. It was he who reported all affairs requiring royal sanction. In fact, the Vakil-i-Dar exercised great influence, and in many respects was considered to be the king’s deputy.
philosophy, and "the different works of these six schools became one in him" (page 208). This looks as if Hasan Shâh was anticipating the uncrowned Dârâ Shukh after Akbar. Râjânaka Čïtâ Kanâth wrote several books and sanskritized several others from Arabic and has spoken well of Hasan Shâh for his wise and liberal rule. The Stuti Kusmânjâlî (Offering of Prayer-Flowers) was written during this time. Bâbâ Islâmî'îl Kubrâvî, a scholar and saint, was the Shaikh-ul-Islâm.

The Jâmî' Masjid and Shâh Hamadân’s Khângâh that had been destroyed by fire were re-built. The year of the erection, 886 A.H. = 1480 A.C., of the mosque attached to the Khângâh is embodied in these words:—

\[
\text{سجد أَسْمَّى عَلَى النَّقَرَيْنِ}
\]

[The Mosque raised on the Foundation of Piety]

The words were, later on, versified as follows:—

\[
\text{سجد أَسْمَّى عَلَى النَّقَرَيْنِ خَاتمَا أُمِّيِرَ هُدَانَ أَسِتَ}
\]

(Evidently some malcontents wanted to turn the new order of things to their own advantage, and did not favour the revival of the beneficent old practices. They summoned Bahram Khân, the king’s uncle, to occupy the throne. He accordingly penetrated Kashmir as far as the province of Kamráj. Malik Tâzî Baṭ who held the office of Guardian of the Crown Prince Muhammad Khân, however, stemmed the tide of Bahram’s advance, and inflicted a crushing defeat on him. Bahram Khân expected active support and cooperation from the notables of Kashmir, but these failed him at the last moment. He fled to Zaina-pûr, but he and his sons were soon taken prisoners and brought to the capital where Bahram’s eyes were put out. He did not survive this violence more than three days. Historians refer to increasing jealousy between the minister Sayyid Hasan Baihaqi and the commander, Malik Ahmad. Ahmad’s end is, however, sad. He died in prison.)

This inscription on the grave of Malik Ahmad testifies to his tragic end. (The Sayyid's party was powerful.) And yet Sayyid Amin Uwaysi, a great poet and saint of this period, also lost his life in a skirmish in 1484 A.C. Before his death he said—

About 1483 A.C. or 888 A.H., the Sayyid dispatched an expedition to conquer Baltistan and Ladakh under Jahangir and Nasir, two Sayyid commanders. Both did not act promptly together. The result was the failure of the invasion and the defeat of the Kashmir forces at the hands of Bhottas. The consequence of this miserable defeat was that the soldiers of Kashmir were never more sent on raiding expeditions into Ladakh during the rule of the Shah Mirs.1

Malik Haidar Chaudura tells us that Hasan Shah's court had twelve hundred Hindustani musicians, and an equally large number of concubines.2 The king ignored his duty to his subjects. He neglected the administration of justice, and left the inspection of his army to certain of his nobles.

The struggle between Muhammad Shah and his father's cousin, Fath Shah, for the throne of Kashmir

SULTÁN MUHAMMAD SHÁH (i)

[S89 to 892 A. H. or 1484 to 1486 A.C.]

Sultán Hasan Sháh, on his death-bed, instructed Sayyid Hasan Baihaqi, his father-in-law, and Bad Sháh's son-in-

1. *The Indian Antiquary*, July 1908, pages 190-191.
2. *The Tarikh-i-Kashmir* by Malik Haidar Chádura, page 139.
law, and prime minister of the state, to set on the throne either Fath Khan, son of Adam Khan or Yusuf Khan, son of Bahrám Khan. But, obviously spurred by ambition, the minister set up on the throne in 889 A.H. or 1484 A.C. Prince Muhammad Shāh, the son of Sultan Hasan Shāh and Hayāt Khātūn, the minister's own daughter. The prince was then a child of seven, having been born in 1477 A.C. or 882 A.H. Sayyid Hasan's regency on account of the king's minority excited considerable jealousy, and resulted in hostile activity among the malcontents. Encouraged by these factions and with the collusion of Tāzi Baṭ, Fath Khan collected a force and attacked Kashmir. Jahāngīr Māgre with the strong support of the Sayyids was able to inflict a defeat on Fath Khan. A second attempt proved equally futile. After these failures, Fath Khan occupied Jammu, whence he launched a far more formidable attack. This attempt, too, proved fruitless. Fath Khan, however, did not despair. He again advanced with an army. In this battle which occurred in 895 A.H. (1489 A.C.), Jahāngīr Māgre was wounded. He had to retire from the field, and Fath Khan gained a complete victory in consequence of which Muhammad Shāh, after his nominal sovereignty of two years and seven months, vacated the throne.1 He and his entourage sought refuge in flight, but were captured and handed over by certain zamindārs or farmers to Fath Khan who kept Muhammad Shāh in close confinement.

"Just about this time in England," writes Rodgers,² "Edward V and his young brother were murdered in the Tower. Fath Shāh was not so bad as Richard III. He ordered the food and drink of the prince to be prepared according to his order, and gave him a place in the palace." It is perhaps, in gratitude for this early fostering care that Sultan Muhammad Shāh honoured the interment of Fath Shāh's last remains by a befitting burial on bringing his dead body from Naushahra near Bhimbar on the Pir Panjāl route. These kings, despite their differences and depositions, did not cease to be human to each other. Rather their

1. Lt. Newall, too, in his article, A Sketch of the Muhammadan History of Kashmir, has placed Muhammad Shāh's first dethronement two years and seven months after his accession.—J. A. S. B., No. 5, 1854, page 417. Firishta, on the other hand, assumes it to have taken place in 902 A.H. (1496 A.C.) in the eleventh year after accession.—Briggs, Vol. IV, page 486.

depositions, though, no doubt attended with bloodshed, look more like the fall of ministries in France or the changes of cabinet in England.

**SULTĀN FATH SHĀH (i)**

[892 to 898 A.H. or 1486 to 1493 A.C.]

Fath Khan ascended the throne with the title of Sultān Fath Shāh in 1486 A.C. It could have been expected that, with a new king on the throne, who possessed grit and strength enough to contest the crown, all dissensions would cease, and all disintegrating elements in the kingdom would be controlled. But, as a matter of fact, Zain-ul-ʿĀbidīn's successors lacked the necessary qualities of administration and leadership. Fath Shāh was unequal to the task of restoring peace and tranquillity. His weakness brought the Chaks to the forefront. This led to the undoing of his own authority, and finally the extinction of his family as the dominant and ruling factor in Kashmir.

Malik Saif-ud-Din Ḍār or Saif Ḍār was the king's chief minister. He conducted the affairs of the state wisely and in a statesmanlike manner. In his pay was the redoubtable Chak, Shams-ud-Din, who, at first, had entered the service of Sayyid Muhammad Baihaqi, the son of Sayyid Hasan Baihaqi, and then took Malik Naurūz son of Malik Ahmad for his master, and finally joined the service of Saif Ḍār. Shams-ud-Din Chak married the daughter of his uncle Husain Chak, gaining strength from the alliance. After this, he began to traffic in intrigue. He won over Shankar or Shringār or Sarhang Raina and Mūsā Raina, both brothers, descended from Rāmāchandra the father of Kotā Rānī. Shams-ud-Din Chak openly set them up as rivals of Saif Ḍār. Fath Shāh, too, withdrew his favour. Soon the factious struggle ended in the death of Saif Ḍār and one of his rivals, Sarhang Raina. Shams-ud-Din Chak succeeded to his master Saif Ḍār's share of authority and administration. He was not satisfied with the removal of one master. He dreaded Sayyid Muhammad Baihaqi whom he brought into clash with Kājī Chak and others. The Sayyid soon realized the parvenu's intentions. Consequently, he entered into an intrigue with the deposed king, and also won over to his side Ibrāhīm Māgre, Ḥājī Ṣadār, and Malik ʿĪdī Raina son of Mūsā Raina. An engagement fought in the vicinity of the tomb of Bulbul Shāh resulted in the flight of Kājī Chak and Shams-ud-Din.
Chak to Kamrāj. Sayyid Muhammad gave them a hot pursuit for some distance, and, on his return, burnt down their homes. Fath Shāh, too, left for the Punjāb. Shams-ud-Dīn Chak now better known as Shams Chak returned to avenge himself. On finding Muhammad Shāh and other opponents, he, however, abstained from an open fight. He carried out a night attack and, suffering defeat, rejoined his former master, ex-Sultān Fath Shāh, in the Punjāb, who, after a sway lasting for two years and eleven months, was again a fugitive.

The struggles of Muhammad Shāh and Fath Shāh during the period of 32 years from 1484 to 1516 A.C. show that history was repeating itself in Kashmir. Both of them remind us of the disgraceful struggles of Pārtha and Chakravarman for 31 years from 906 to 937 A.C. It was, as it were, a re-incarnation in Kashmir of the ferocious Wars of the Roses lasting for 32 years from 1455 to 1487 A.C., when English kings Henry VI, Edward IV and Richard III were enthroned and dethroned by factions.

SULTĀN MUHAMMAD SHĀH (ii)

[898 to 911 A.H. or 1493 to 1505 A.C.]

Muhammad Shāh, now 16 years old, re-gained his throne through the exertions of his maternal uncle Sayyid Muhammad Baihaqi. Sayyid Muhammad Baihaqi’s keen eye did not fail to detect the rising power of the Chaks. He discovered the further possibility of danger from the same tribe in their Shi‘īte tendencies which had been successfully promulgated among them by Mīr Shams-ud-Dīn ‘Īraqī. This religious leader had found asylum in Kashmir from the exile inflicted upon him by the governor of Khurāsān. So successful was his propaganda that all the big chiefs among the Chaks particularly, and several of the public too had willingly embraced his doctrines. Therefore, Sayyid Muhammad Baihaqi perceived a danger in his preachings which, he thought, would add religious fervour to the fire of Chak opposition, the embers of which were still smouldering. He, therefore, banished Mīr Shams-ud-Dīn ‘Īraqī. But as this step was taken too late, the Chaks keenly felt the compulsory exodus imposed upon their religious leader. In their turn, they retaliated by starting an intrigue with Fath Shāh and Shams Chak.

Fath Shāh and Muhammad Shāh again met on the battlefield of Khāmpūr, in Tahiil Pulwāma. Sayyid Muhammad Baihaqi’s bravery, a first, seemed to decide victory
in Muhammad Shāh's favour, but owing to Baihaqi's accidental fall into a ravine, the tables turned. The adversaries, taking courage in both hands, charged and routed the royal forces. The natural consequence was that Fath Shāh again seized the throne, and wreaked vengeance on the family of Sayyid Muhammad Baihaqi.

Malik Haider Chādurā ascribes the Chak defection* to Muhammad Shāh who, on account of his meanness and parsimony, failed to give due reward to Mūsā Raina for his brave services which had, to a great extent, contributed to the defeat of Fath Shāh.

It was in 1505 A.C. that Pandit Črīvara sanskritized Mullā 'Abdur Rahmān Jāmi's Yūṣuf-u-Zulaikhā for the edification of Sultān Muhammad Shāh as the Sultān's court-poet. Sir A. Berriedale Keith's misstatement that it was written under Zain-ul-'Ābidin has already been pointed out in the footnote on page 167

SULTĀN FATH SHĀH (ii)

[911 to 920 A.H. or 1505 to 1514 A.C.]

On re-ascending the throne, Fath Shāh rewarded Shams Chak by appointing him his minister, and also invested Mūsā Raina with considerable authority. Shams Chak could not brook the presence of a rival at court. He, therefore, tried to encompass the downfall of Mūsā Raina, but only succeeded in finding himself entangled in the meshes of the net he had spread for his rival. He was disgraced, arrested in the open court, and thrown into prison. Mūsā lost no time in disposing of so formidable and scheming a rival. Armed men were sent to the prison to kill Shams Chak who, however, first killed quite a number of them, before he fell under the relentless blows of his assailants. This feat of Shams Chak has been made famous in the following couplet:

[By stick and by stone, by brick and by blow
Did Malik Shams Chak lay sixty men low.]

*Ta'riх-i-Kashmīr by Malik Haider Chādurā, page 158.
Mūsā Raina, however, was too astute a person to take the blame of this murder upon himself. He managed to lay the blame at the door of the Māgre notables who were therefore exiled.

Mūsā Raina filled the position which Shams Chak had occupied. His accession to power was a signal to Mir Shams-ud-Dīn Irāqī to return from Skardū. The latter soon inaugurated a religious campaign for the spread of Islam among the Hindus. In this respect, he tried to emulate Malik Saif-ud-Dīn, the minister of Sultān Sikandar. These religious persecutions carried out by the Shi'as continued unchecked by Mūsā Raina, and justly aroused the anger of Ibrāhīm Māgre who now stood as the leader of the Sunnīs. The king, himself being unable to do anything, secretly warned Ibrāhīm to settle matters with Mūsā Raina who was forced to flee towards the Punjāb. In his precipitation and hurried flight on horseback, Mūsā Raina got his neck so inextricably entangled in a vine creeper and the horse took such fright, that he died on the spot in 1513 A.C.

Now it was Ibrāhīm Māgre's turn to enjoy authority. He recalled Malik 'Usmān, Dānī Malik and others of his tribe who had previously been accused of bringing about the death of Shams Chak, and had been banished. But, after a space of forty days, he vacated his post for Malik 'Usmān. Malik 'Usmān, too, was forced to withdraw after three months.

These constant changes of ministers were as baneful as those of kings. Fath Shāh seemed to be no more than a figurehead, and was powerless to keep one minister long enough. He felt so overpowered that, accompanied by several councillors, he left for Hindustān. Ibrāhīm Māgre took advantage of this situation and instituted himself as minister. He, then, recalled Fath Shāh. Kājī Chak and Jahāngīr Pādar, the king's adherents, retired to the Punjāb. In the meantime, Muhammad Shāh's army came into conflict with that of Fath Shāh at Ghāzikōt, in Pákhlī, with the result that Fath Shāh's army had to retreat. For a year, the situation remained unchanged. Ibrāhīm Māgre, however, continued to wield authority as minister. Malik 'Usmān, who had been set free by Ibrāhīm Māgre, then replaced him. On relinquishing his post, Ibrāhīm Māgre accompanied by Kājī Chak and Jahāngīr Pādar, joined Muhammad Shāh. A coup cleverly carried out by 'Ali
Raina, however, decided the day in Muhammad Shâh’s favour. Fath Shâh had to flee again, after a reign of twelve years and eight months, during which period revolutions and constant changes of ministers had sapped the very foundations of authority and administration.

SULTÂN MUHAMMAD SHâH (iii)

[920 to 921 A.H. or 1514 to 1515 A.C.]

Although installed by Ibrâhîm Mâgre, Muhammad Shâh was not able to hold the throne for more than five months. When Fath Shâh made his appearance with a large army, Muhammad Shâh retired in safety to Naushahra with Sayyid Ibrâhîm Baihaqi, son of the late minister, Sayyid Muhammad Baihaqi.

SULTÂN FATH SHâH (iii)

[921 to 922 A.H. or 1515 to 1516 A.C.]

The third phase of Sultân Fath Shâh’s rule lasted for a period of one year and one month. Remembering his old trouble, he resolved to divest himself of all regal authority, and divided the country into four parts. Three of these he handed over to Jahângir Padâr, Kâjî Chak and Sunkur Raina, and retained only one portion for himself, hoping thereby to pass his days in peace. His co-partners, however, soon revolted against him, and invited Muhammad Shâh together with Ibrâhîm Mâgre to fight for the throne. The result of the battle which took place was, in no way, favourable to Muhammad Shâh, because Ibrâhîm Mâgre, who was the mainstay of his power, was slain with his sons. Muhammad Shâh did not lose heart at his discomfiture. He sought help from Sikandar Lodî of Delhi. In the meantime, Jahângir Padâr and Sunkur Raina also welcomed Muhammad Shâh. They enabled Muhammad Shâh to drive out Fath Shâh who died in exile at Naushahra a town on the Pîr Panjâl route—after three years in-925 A.H. or 1519 A.C. Fath Shâh fanâ is the satirical chronogram. Muhammad Shâh caused his remains to be interred by the side of his father Adam Khân, Bâd Shâh’s son. The cap which was a gift from Mir Sayyid ‘Ali Hamadâni (Shâh Hamadân) was
according to Fath Shāh's wishes, also buried with him.\(^1\) The grave of Sūltān Fath Shāh lies in the burial-ground\(^2\) of Baḍ Shāh. Fath Shāh, in all, ruled over 17 years.

Pandit Čuka\(^3\) closes his account of Fath Shāh with these lines: "The great king Phatāh Shāh (Fath Shāh), the moon among sovereigns, died in a country outside Kashmir. Mahmudshāha (Muhammad Shāh) did not take his meal on the day in which he heard of this event, nor did he sleep or bathe, but spent his time in thinking of that king. Where could be found a king like him experienced, truthful, patient, a great politician, a lover of men of worth, and one who loved his servants? The king was born in a country outside Kashmir, and he died there. The work of fate is extraordinary! The corpse was then placed in a litter, and was brought here within a few days by his servants and chiefs in order to give it its last funeral rites."

Muhammad Shāh, now about 39 years of age, or 40 according to lunar months, gained the throne for the fourth time through the ability and exertions of Kāji Chak. In reward for his services the king appointed him Madār ul-Muhāmm or the chief minister.

**SULTĀN MUHAMMAD SHĀH (iv)**

\[922 \text{ to } 934 \text{ A.H. or } 1516 \text{ to } 1528 \text{ A.C.}\]

Kashmir, it seems, had now become fertile soil for jealousy, dissensions, rivalry and blood-thirstiness. Factions grew up, temporarily strengthened themselves and caused constant feuds among the nobles. Kāji Chak became the target of a faction of nobles which included Nusrat Raina, Lohur Māgre and Jahāngīr Paḍar. Kāji Chak was, however, able to inflict a defeat on his opponents and kill Nusrat Raina. This confederacy being broken, Abdāl Māgre, then, began to devastate the country, and was put to flight by Mas'ūd Chak, Kāji's son. Soon after this, another body of nobles consisting of Sīkandar Shāh, Fath Shāh's eldest son,

---

1. Cunningham in the *Numismatic Chronicle*, Vol. VI, page 37, says: "On the same night, Sayyid 'Ali Hamadānī appeared to a faqir, and told him that the cap had been given by him to Sūltān Qubt-ud-Dīn for good luck, and that, along with it, the kingdom had been transmitted from father to son down to the present generation; but that, as Fath Shāh had now taken the cap with him to the tomb, so likewise had the kingdom gone to the tomb and departed from his family."—*The Ancient Coinage of Kashmir* is the title of the article.
Jahāngīr Pādar, Lohur Māgre and ‘Idī Raina made its appearance with the avowed object of securing the throne for Sikandar Shāh.

Mas‘ūd Chak was again dispatched to suppress the rising. The insurgents secured no tangible results beyond the death of Mas‘ūd Chak, and the king was left again in peace for some time.

It was during Sultān Muhammad Shāh’s reign that Bābur, the founder of the Mughul dynasty in India, took advantage of internal confusion, and sent his army to attack Kashmir. Kāji Chak, who had already retired from state affairs, was fired with patriotism, and taking an army went out to meet the invaders who had to retire before the onslau3hts of Kāji Chak. This success re-installed Kāji Chak in the king’s favour. But Kāji Chak now deposed the king and put Ibrāhim Shāh, Sultān Muhammad Shāh’s son and his own nephew, on the throne.

The great scholar Shaikh Ya‘qūb Sarfī was born in 1521 A.C., during this reign of Sultān Muhammad Shāh. We shall hear of the greatness of Sarfī later.

SULTĀN IBRĀHĪM SHĀH I
[934 to 935 A.H. or 1528 to 1529 A.C.]

According to Firishta, during Ibrāhīm’s reign, Abdāl Māgre who, after his flight, resided at Bābur’s court, appeared on the scene. He came with a large army officered by ‘Ali Beg and Muhammad Khān, two Mughul nobles. Nādir Khān, the younger brother of Sikandar Khān and the son of Sultān Fath Shāh, was used as a pawn in order that the Kashmiris might not imagine that a foreigner was being imposed upon them as their king. Sultān Ibrāhīm Shāh’s army marched out to meet the Mughul army, but suffered a heavy defeat at Tāpar, below Paṭan, in Tahsīl Bārāmūla, and Ibrāhīm fled from the country.

SULTĀN NĀZUK SHĀH (i)
[935 to 936 A.H. or 1529 to 1530 A.C.]

Nādir Khān then ascended the throne as Sultān Nāzuk Shāh, and appointed Abdāl Māgre as his chief minister. The officers of the Mughul army were also generously rewarded, and they afterwards returned to Hindustān.  

2. Ibi1., Vol. IV, page 492.
Abdāl Māgre maintained the pursuit against Kājī Chak until he fled from Kashmir.

Abdāl Māgre, curiously enough, then re-instated Muhammad Shāh,™ having sent for him from Lohkōṭ, where he was a prisoner. Evidently as a pawn in the game, Nāzuk had served his purpose and was no longer required.

**SULTĀN MUHAMMAD SHĀH (v)**

[936 to 943 A.H. or 1530 to 1537 A.C.]

The fifth or the last phase of Muhammad Shāh's reign might appropriately be called the Māgre domination, inasmuch as Malik Abdāl, the Māgre chief, after his elevation to the post of prime minister, divided Kashmir among his adherents and influential partisans. Abdāl thus reduced Muhammad Shāh to the subordinate position of a stipendiary.

If one compares the glorious past enjoyed by Kashmir with the sordid plight to which she had now been reduced, one cannot help being amazed. A succession of incompetent rulers, and ambitious nobles—constantly engaged in interneceine warfare, and all its concomitants—left the country a prey to foreign invaders. Bābur twice directed his cohorts against her with a fair measure of success. Then, with Humāyūn's consent, Kāmran led an expedition of thirty thousand horse from Naushahra² in 1531. Mahram Beg—wrongly called Mujrim Beg—and 'Ali Beg, his generals, penetrated within sight of Srinagar, whence Mahram Beg sent a congratulatory poem to Kāmran, of which the following lines have been quoted by Malik Haidar Chādura³:

2. Naushahra is a town on the Pir Panjāl route into Kashmir, and is 27 miles north of Bhimbar and 122 miles south-east of Srinagar. There is a fine old Mughal sarai in the middle of the town, a part of which is now an official residence. Naushahra has a cantonment of 511 sepoys.
3. The Ḥiḏr-i-Koḥīsrā, page 175. Malik Haidar Chādura quotes only two, while Hassan (in his History, folio 134) has quoted the third line which is not without interest. I am giving the Ḥiḏr as it appears in the Ḥiḏr-i-Ḵᵛāzīmī.
It is noteworthy that, while Kashmir nobles at this time displayed a tendency to cut each other's throat, they did not exhibit any want of patriotism for their country. And in spite of personal feuds and grievances, they were able to rally round an outcast leader to defend their country. Kājī Chak came to the rescue on this occasion. He rallied all the disaffected or hostile nobles, and led his forces so capably that Mahram Beg had to retreat after concluding peace. Soon after this, disintegration set in again. The result was that, Abū Sa'īd Mīrzā, king of Kāshghar, sent his second son Sultānzāda Sikandar Khān accompanied by Mīrzā Haidar Dūghlāt from Tibet by way of Lār with a cavalry twelve thousand strong to conquer Kashmir. Mīrzā Haidar calls the Sultānzāda Iskandar Sultān:

In this project, Iskandar Sultān was fortunate. He won his spurs by effecting a triumphant entry into the capital. The victorious army satiated their lust for rapine and plunder. According to the Tabaqāt-i-Ākbari, the Kāshghar army "razed the grand edifices which had been built by the old Sultāns to dust, and set fire to the city and the villages." The treasury was plundered. Buried treasures were searched and seized. All the soldiers loaded themselves with goods and gold. Kashmirīs were pursued, and slain or imprisoned. These hordes remained in occupation for three months according to the Tabaqāt. In the following spring, a new spirit was infused into the benumbed Kashmir nobles who united themselves to drive the foreigners from their land. But in this attempt, they sustained a signal defeat involving considerable loss of life. Not disheartened by this defeat, they again combined under the leadership of Kājī Chak and Ābdul Māgre, and pressed the invaders so hard that they were compelled to sue for terms of peace. Fīrūshṭa does not assign victory to either side. Mīrzā Haidar giving details of this campaign (pp. 437—442, English Translation) says: "In a word the Khutba was read and coins were struck in the exalted name of the Khān (Abū Sa'īd Khān Mīrzā). The revenue of Kashmir, which was due to the Mughuls, we took. One of Muhammad Shāh’s daughters was wedded to Iskandar Sultān. And everyone, according to his rank, made acquaintance with the Sultān or Maliks of Kashmir. I, for example, established contact with Muhammad Shāh. In accordance with the Mughul practice we called each other ‘friend.’ Similar contact was established between Mīr Dā‘īm ‘Alī (Mīrzā
Haidar's lieutenant) and Abdāl Māgre......Bābā Sārik Mirzā and Kājī Chak......Numerous presents and offerings were interchanged.” (p. 441).

Mīrzā Haidar Dūghlāt* sent his congratulations to Sūltān Abū Sa‘īd of Kāshghar, and a court-poet of Kāshghar rendered them into verse:

аххд لله كان تالو مودل
زارق اهدا در ژوز فيجا
تاریخ للحس الحلق، هي است
ژوز چهارم از ماه شبان.

After concluding a peace so advantageous to themselves, the invaders departed from Kashmir. On return from Kashmir, Mīrzā Haidar was naturally, in his own words, most affectionately welcomed by Abū Sa‘īd Mīrzā, king of Kāshghar. But the Mughuls left behind them such traces of desolation and hunger, as revived the memories of Zulcū or Dulcha’s sojourn in this fair land. Two comets rose on the horizon. A famine, too, ensued.

Thousands perished of hunger and hundreds of thousands were rendered homeless. The next crop, however, provided some sustenance, and saved the remainder of the population from starvation. Sūltān Muhammad Shāh also befriended his perishing subjects in their struggle against starvation. Unfortunately he did not live long to sustain these ameliorative efforts. Struck with typhoid fever, he died on Thursday the first of the month of Jayaishtha, in the bright fortnight, in 943 A.H. or 1537 A.C., at the age of 60, “having given away all the gold that he had to the poor and the needy.” In his chequered reign of over thirty-four years—or to be precise—thirty-four years, eight months and ten days, he had faced many changes of fortune, as have rarely been the lot of any other king perhaps in the whole history of royalty in the world.

SULTĀN SHAMS-UD-DĪN II

[943 to 944 A.H. or 1537 to 1538 A.C.]

Shams-ud-Dīn II was Muhammad Shāh’s second son. Like his father, he retained the character of a stipendiary

---

*The Ta’rikh-i-Kashmir by Malik Haidar Chādurā, page 179.
king, being guided by his all-too powerful minister, Kāji Chak. Shams-ud-Dīn is the Second, because Shāh Mīr the founder of this dynasty is Sultān Shams-ud-Dīn the First. During the reign of Shams-ud-Dīn II there was the usual strife between the Chaks and the Māgles, but this was successfully controlled by Kāji Chak.

It was due to the sagacity and foresight of Kāji Chak that he established matrimonial relations with the ruling family. This diplomatic move ultimately led to accession of power to his own family.

SULTĀN ISMĀ'IL SHĀH I

[944 to 945 A.H. or 1538 to 1539 A.C.]

Sultān Shams-ud-Dīn II was succeeded by his brother, Ismā'īl, who was Kāji Chak's son-in-law. The veteran Chak continued to retain his position and influence as the prime minister, but his overbearing attitude towards the other nobles eventually destroyed his influence. For safety he fled towards the Gakkhar hills, whence, aided by Sayyid Ibrāhīm Bhaiqaqī, he returned and regained his power. On his return, he divided Kashmir into three equal parts, two of which he assigned to the Sultān and Sayyid Ibrāhīm Bhaiqaqī retaining the third for himself. The Sultān's position, therefore, remained entirely unchanged; and he was no more than a stipendiary like his immediate predecessors.

When Kāji Chak considered himself to be free enough, he imposed on the whole of Kashmir Shi'ite doctrines, promulgated by Mīr Shams-ud-Dīn 'Trāqī. In this respect, he took upon himself the role of Mūsā Raina, and offered a treatise of Mīr Shams-ud-Dīn as a code of law for all the subjects. After a brief reign of eighteen months, Ismā'īl Shāh I passed away.

SULTĀN IBRĀHĪM SHĀH II

[945 to 946 A.H. or 1539 to 1540 A.C.]

Ismā'īl I was succeeded by his son, Ibrāhīm II, Muhammad Shāh's son being Ibrāhīm I. The brief reign of four months of Ibrāhīm Shāh II was characterized by two noteworthy events. The first of these was Kāji Chak's flight due to his own high-handed behaviour to others. The second event was of far greater importance. It was the third attempt on the part of Bābur's descendants to conquer
Kashmir. The Mughes sought help from Humayun to get rid of Kaji Chak. That monarch was himself sorely harassed by Sher Shah Suri at this time. But, however, Humayun allowed Mirza Haidar Dughlat to lead an expedition to Kashmir on behalf of the Mughes. Mirza Haidar was a cousin of both Babur and Sultan Abū Sa'id Khān of Kāshghar. Besides being a soldier, the Mirza was also a scholar and well-known as the author of the Ta'rikh-i-Rashidi. The Kashmiris were engaged in fighting against each other at the time. Therefore, Mirza Haidar had what might be called an easy victory over all the desperate resistance offered by Kaji Chak, who, after his defeat, was astute enough to appear at the court of Sher Shah Suri for help against his adversaries. Meanwhile, the brief reign of Ibrāhim II was terminated by his untimely death.

Mirza Haidar Dughlat

As several references have been made to Mirza Haidar Dughlat in the course of this book, a brief note on his life will not be inappropriate here, when we are discussing the period during which he played an important part in the history of Kashmir.

Mirza Muhammad Haidar Dughlat (or Oghlat) Gurgān Chaghatai Mughul, to give him his full name, was born in the year 905 H. = 1499 A.C.—at Tashqand, Tashkend or Tashkint, the capital of the province then known as Shash (or Chach). His father, Muhammad Husain Gurgān Dughlat, had been made governor of Shash some six years before by Mahmuḍ, the titular Khān of Mughulistan and Kāshghar. On his mother Khūb Nigār Khānam's side, Mirza Haidar was related to the Emperor Babur. Khūb Nigār was a daughter of Yūnus Khān Mughul and a younger sister of Qutluq Nigār Khānam, the mother of Babur.

1. Information given here about Mirza Haidar and his History is extracted from the Introduction by Mr. Ney Elias to Sir Denison Ross's English Translation of the Ta'rikh-i-Rashidi and from Babur's Memoirs. Ross's is a good translation, on the whole, except that certain passages have been mistranslated.

2. Actually 1500 A.C., as the year 905 began on 8th August, 1499 A.C.
Mirzá Haidar began his life "in the midst of strife and adventure." His father—a treacherous and intriguing man—had been convicted of a mischievous plot against Bābur at Kābul, but had been pardoned on account of his blood relationship. After some time, Muhammad Husain Gurgān Dughlāt was murdered at the instigation of Shāhī Beg Khān, otherwise known as Shaibānī Khān, the Uzbek leader. In 1508, when about nine years of age, Mirzá Haidar was taken charge of by one of his father’s faithful friends, who took him to Khān Mirzā, a cousin and dependant of Bābur. Here Haidar remained for a year, when Bābur summoned him to Kābul. On his arrival at Kābul, Mirzá Haidar was made a member of the royal household, and seems to have been treated with much consideration.

It was about the beginning of 920 A.H. or 1514 A.C., that Mirzá Haidar, led away by youthful ambition, left Bābur to go to Andījān, then the capital of Farghāna.* Here he entered the service of his kinsman, Sultān Sa’īd Khān. It is in regard to this period that Bābur writes: "Haidar Mirzā excels in penmanship, in painting, in fletchery, in making arrow-heads and thumblets for drawing the bow-string. He is remarkably neat at all kinds of handiwork. He has also a turn for poetry, and I have received an epistle from him the style of which is by no means bad." Abu’l Fazl adds music to the Mirzā’s accomplishments. Though at this time only 15 years of age, Mirzá Haidar was raised to a high position, and thus began the most active part of his life. For the ensuing 19 years of Sultān Sa’īd Khān’s reign, the Mirzā served him in various capacities, but chiefly as a soldier. While in the service of Sultān Sa’īd, Mirzá Haidar undertook an invasion first of Ladākh, then of Kashmir, and then of Baltistān, and afterwards of Tibet proper. After subduing Ladākh, a rapid march was made into Kashmir in about 1531 A.C., but the Mirzā was obliged to leave Kashmir. Later, Mirzá Haidar marched towards Lhāssa and fought with the Nepālese. It was one of his most remarkable exploits. But he had to retrace his steps because of mortality among his horses, want of supplies, and of the general distress caused by cold and

---

* Farghāna is a province of Turkistān and consists mainly of a valley surrounded by high ranges of mountains and traversed by the Sir Daryā and its tributaries. The area of Farghāna is 55,483 square miles and the population is about 2,169,600. The present capital of Farghāna is Khūqand.
high elevation. It was in the early months of 1534 A.C. that he reached a position of safety in Ladākh. From Ladākh, it appears, that he repaired to Kābul by way of Badakhshān on account of Sultān Saʿīd Khān's death, which occurred in 1633. Mirzā Haidar thereafter abandoned Kāshghar and transferred his services to the Mughuls in India and proceeded to Lāhore.

Here Mirzā Haidar was received by Bābur's son, Mirzā Kāmrān, who raised him to a position of honour and dignity, namely, the governorship of the Punjāb. Mirzā Haidar resided at Lāhore for a year, when differences arose between Mirzā Kāmrān and Hūmāyūn. Mirzā Haidar became an adherent of the latter. When Sher Shāh Sūr pursued Hūmāyūn to the Beās and Mirzā Haidar was governor at Lāhore, he suggested to Hūmāyūn to conquer Kashmir. At this time, Mirzā Haidar according to his own statement was approached by Kāji Chak, Abdāl Māgre and Rīgī (Rose's Translation has Zanḡī). Chak of Kashmir, who were at variance with the reigning Sultān and had found refuge in the Punjāb. They endeavoured to procure, through Mirzā Haidar's influence, the assistance of a body of Mughul troops to invade their own country, and expel the obnoxious ruler. The scheme seems to have commended itself to the Mirzā's judgment. After some delay, he was able to descend into the Valley in about November 1540 A.C. or 947 A.H. The chronogram of this date Mirzā Haidar says he "discovered in Jūlūs-i-Dār-ul-Mulk-i-Kashmir." He obtained possession of Kashmir without striking a blow, thus at once becoming, to all intents and purposes, king of the Valley. As, however, the fate of Hūmāyūn was uncertain, Mirzā Haidar, on account of his faithfulness to Hūmāyūn, did not declare himself king of Kashmir, nor did he think it discreet to declare Hūmāyūn as the overlord of Kashmir.

During the ten years, counting from the battle of 2nd August 1641 A.C., over which Mirzā Haidar's regency extended, he is stated, in the Akbar-nāma,* to have devoted himself, when not actively engaged with his enemies, to the restoration of the Valley and the improvement of its resources. It is said that he found it in a state of ruin and desolation, and raised it into a land abounding in cultivation

---

and flourishing towns. He extended the frontiers also, and ruled with moderation and justice. "He (Mirzā Haidar) sent for," writes Abu'l Fazl, "artists and craftsmen from all quarters, and laboured for the renown and prosperity of Kashmir. Especially was music in brisk demand, and varieties of instruments were introduced. In short, the outward condition of the country, that is, its worldly state, acquired solidity."* The government of Kashmir was, however, carried on in the name of Sultān Nāzuk Shāh. This was the time when Humāyūn was a refugee in Irān.

The Ta'rikh-i-Rashīdī.

It was during these years of his stay in Kashmir that Mirzā Haidar Dughlāt wrote his Ta'rikh-i-Rashīdī which is a history of the Mughuls of Central Asia, the eastern branch of the Chaghatāis or the Mughuls proper. The first part of the Ta'rikh-i-Rashīdī is called by its accomplished author Ta'rikh-i-Asl, or the Real History. It was written in Kashmir in 1544 and 1545 A.C., and was completed about February 1546, or five years after his installation as Regent of Kashmir. The second part which the Mirzā styles Mukhtasar or the 'Epitome,' was written in 1541-42 A.C., and is twice the extent of the first. The first part was written after the second part had been completed, and the History was named after 'Abdur Rashid Khān, the ruler of Kashghar and the eldest son and successor of Sultān Sa'id Khān. It was Sultān Sa'id Khān who dispatched Mirzā Haidar to Kashmir with his second son Iskandar Sultān. The Ta'rikh-i-Rashīdī ends with the year 948 A.H. (1541 A.C.).

The Ta'rikh-i-Rashīdī was not written "for effect or for the indulgence of a taste for literature." The work is an earnest one. The author, no doubt, intended that it should be, before everything else, a clear and complete exposition of the times he had set himself to chronicle.

Bābūr has been represented as at once a soldier, a historian and an autobiographer. His kinsman Mirzā Haidar may justly be described in the same way. Bābūr, however, was a better autobiographer than Mirzā Haidar, and was incomparably a greater soldier. Mirzā Haidar, on the other hand, may clearly be acknowledged a better historian. While Bābūr made history incidental to his

Memoirs, says Mr. Ney Elias, in his Introduction to Sir Denison Ross’s translation of the Ta’rikh-i-Rashidi, the reverse was the case with Mirzá Haidar. The Mirzá, continues Mr. Elias, wrote the history of his race and family with a definite purpose; and when he came to his own days, he wove in his personal adventures as those of an actor and participant in the events he was recording—making the one illustrate the other; so that it may, with truth, be said that his life belongs to history. The Mirzá wrote in Persian. Bābur wrote in the Chaghtāī Turki.

Mirzá Haidar was 16 years younger than Bābur and was killed at the age of 52 near Khānpōr, 12 miles from Srinagar, on the old Mughul road. He was buried in 1541 A.C., in Srinagar. Bābur died at the age of 48 at Agra in 1530 A.C., 11 years before Mirzá Haidar, and lies buried at Kābul.

SULTĀN NĀZUK SHĀH (ii)

[946 to 958 A.H. or 1540 to 1551 A.C.]

Mirzá Haidar did not feel himself secure enough to assume kingship. He thought it safer to have a titular king on the throne, and himself to enjoy all real power. He, therefore, elevated Nāzuk, the son of Fath Shāh, to the throne, and ruled the country to the entire satisfaction of almost all sections of the people for a period of time.

 Barely a year had passed after the marriage of his niece with Sher Shāh Sūr that Kāji Chak obtained from him two elephants and five thousand horsemen commanded by Husain Khān Shirwānī and ‘Ādil (or according to the Akbar-nāma ‘Alawal) Khān, and invaded Kashmir. Kāji Chak now found Kashmir stronger and better able to defend herself against a foreign invasion. He therefore lost the day. In the words of Mirzá Haidar, “at noon-day prayers on Monday, the 8th Rabi’-us-Sānī 948 (2nd August, 1541 A.C., and not 20th Rabi’ II=16th August as noted in Beveridge’s Akbar-nāma, Vol. I, p. 403), we routed an army of 5000 cavalry and several thousand foot with a body of only 300 men. Fath-i-Mukarrar1 or ‘Victory Repeated’ (948 A.H.=1541 A.C.) composed by the Khatib of Kashmir, Maulānā Jamāl-ud-Dīn Muhammad Yūsuf,2 yields the date of Mirzá Haidar’s

victory. Two years later, Rigi Chak rebelled and, suffering a defeat, fled from the country and joined Kājī Chak. The two then united their forces and marched again upon Kashmir. Mirzā Haidar was again able to inflict such a crushing defeat upon them as hastened the death of Kājī Chak, whose date is embodied in the expression Faut-i-Sardār, 951 A.H. = 1544 A.C.

Free from all anxiety of rivals, Mirzā Haidar tried to revive the industrial glories of Sultān Zain-ul-ʿĀbidin’s reign. By his territorial conquest, he again added Little Tibet, Pahlī, Rajaurī and Kishṭwār to the kingdom of Kashmir. He further resorted to various measures to revive and re-establish the industries for which Kashmir had created a name for herself. In statesmanship, too, he tried to follow in the footsteps of that illustrious monarch, and very largely succeeded in his object by meting out equal treatment to all sections of the people. He successfully reconciled public opinion and pacified the qualms of those who regarded him as a foreigner. But unfortunately peace did not continue for long.

Rightly or wrongly, Mirzā Haidar conceived the idea that the prevailing religious schism was solely responsible for all the intrigues and dissensions which marred the progress of Kashmir. The trouble caused by the inroads of Kājī Chak and his comrades was there. The Mirzā also observed that the adherents of the new Shiʿite faith had made themselves conspicuous in all reactionary measures. In the words of Abu’l Fazl,* the Mirzā transgressed the laws of justice ‘the watchman of dominion’ and let fall from his hands prudence and forbearance, the two arms of felicity.’ He, therefore, resolved to crush out of existence this new faith; hence his changed attitude and changed line of action. He quarrelled with Malik Rigi Chak, whose fall was precipitated by the factions of Malik ʿĪdī Raina and Husain Māgre. They at first, helped Mirzā Haidar but, later on, filled the whole of Kashmir with stories of Mirzā Haidar’s oppression and high-handedness. No wonder this incident chafed the Mirzā, and further strengthened him in his attitude of hostility towards all adherents of the Shiʿa faith. Mīr Dāniyāl, the son of Mir Shams-ud-Dīn ʿIrāqī, was executed after a year’s imprisonment, according to Hasan, on the fatwā (ruling) of Qāzī

Ibrāhīm, Qāżi ‘Abdul Ghaffūr. The promising career of usefulness of the young man was thus rudely cut short. Dāniyāl’s date of death is touchingly *Dasht-i-Karbālā* (957 A.H.=1549 A.D.). The grave of Mīr Shams-ud-Dīn ‘Irāqī at Jādi-bal was desecrated and hence the transfer of the dead body of Mīr Shams to Chādūra. Malik Ḥidrī Rīna or Raina, Husain Miṅgūr, Malik Muhammad Nājī and Khwāja Ḥājī Bāndō formed a faction—possibly aided by Īsām Shāh Sūr, which the Mīrzā thought it was his duty to crush.

Qarā Bahādur Khān, the Mīrzā’s cousin,1 accompanied by a combined army of Mughuls and Kashmīrīs, was dispatched to reduce to subjection Muḥammadkūt, their stronghold, which might be located in the hilly tract, higher up Khānpūr or Awānpūr, near about Rajaurī. On his arrival there, Qarā Bahādur Khān found the Kashmīrīs wavering and the nobles disaffected. He, therefore, warned Mīrzā Haidar against the folly of the measures he had embarked upon. But Mīrzā Haidar felt that he could not now retract the step he had already taken, and therefore ordered an assault which ended disastrously. Qarā Bahādur Khān and his followers fell captives to the Kashmīrīs. Aggravated by this failure, the Mīrzā resolved upon a night attack to release Qarā Bahādur Khān, when an arrow from his own armour-bearer Shāh Nazīr, struck him fatally.2 Malik Haidar Chādūra,3 however, asserts that, while the Mīrzā was in the act of entering the gate of the fort a butcher or, according to another version, Kamāl Dūlī (wrongly transcribed in Abu’l Fazl’s and Nizām-ud-Dīn’s versions as Kamāl Dūbī), who happened to be at the gate, challenged him. The Mīrzā’s ignorance of the Kashmīrī language proved fatal. Dūlī discovered that the Mīrzā was a Mughul because of his foreign accent and brought down his heavy axe upon him. Since, however, only an arrow wound is stated to have been visible on the dead body of Mīrzā Haidar, the strong presumption is that it was Shāh Nazīr who by mistake killed

---


his own master by an arrow in a dark cloudy night. Ney Elias says the locality where the Mirzâ fell "must have been somewhere near Bârâmûla on the Jhelum."1

This is wrong. Mirzâ Haidar fell near Khânpûr on the old Mughul road. Khânpûr is pronounced by Kashmiris as Khâmpûr and is in the Pulwûma Tahsil. Khânpûr is now a small village of 100 souls and is about 12 miles from Srinagar.

The fire of strife thus ignited could not be quelled without claiming its full due. Mullâ Qâsim, Mullâ Bâqî, Mullâ 'Abdullâh Samarqandî, Muhammad Nazar and Yûsûf Mirzâ, Mirzâ Haidar's foster-brother, who were among the foremost and most gallant of the Mirzâ's nobles, and had respectively recovered Little Tibet, Pakhî, Mânglí2 (between Mansehra and Abbotâbâd), and Kâshtrwâr, also suffered at the altar of a policy which aimed at the total extirpation of the Shi'ites in Kashmir. The conceiver of this policy himself fell. The date of Haidar's death, viz. 958 A.H. (October 1651 A.C.), is expressed in the following chronogram:

It is said that the rebels had decided to treat Mirzâ Haidar's remains with disrespect. The dead body of Mirzâ Haidar could not be buried at Khânpûr where he fell, or Awanpûr (with 221 souls, now in Tahsil Baqgâm), where an engagement also seems to have taken place. Khânpûr and Awanpûr are only two miles from Châdûra (population 1,064, Bâqgâm Tahsil), the residence of noted Shi'as. But when the rebels found their confederates of the Sunni faith resolved to resist them, they had to give way. They, however, wreaked their vengeance on Mirzâ's descendants. Firishta is silent on this point. But Malik Haidar Châdûra (page 188) asserts that, accompanied by Mirzâ Qârâ Bahâdûr Khân, Mirzâ Haidar's family, his sons and others were allowed to repair with honour to their home, Kâshghar, with all their property untouched. Châdûra's statement is not accepted in its entirety for the reason that he also espoused the Shi'ite faith. It is not improbable that in the flush of victory

1. The Ta'irikh-i-Rashîdî—English Translation by Ross and Elias
   —Introduction, page 22.
   2. Unless Dêngal, a Ghakkar hill fort on the lower Jhelum, is meant. But the locality of Mânglí was in the outskirts of Pakhî as Abu'l Fazîl's notes, Akbar-nâmâ, Vol. III, page 627.
and goaded by bigotry, the Chaks did not act as chivalrously as could be desired. We learn from Hasan, that Sayyid Muhammad Baihaqi had to guard the Mirza's grave for a month against its possible desecration by the Chaks. According to the Tabaqat-i-Akbari the remnant of the Mughul following of Mirza Haidar fled back to Andarkot where the Mirza's wife Khänam and his sister Khänji were staying. The Mughuls fortified themselves but Mirza's wife and sister said to the Mughuls: "As Mirza Haidar has gone away from us, it is better to have peace with the Kashmiris." All furniture and goods from Andarkot were removed by the victors. The remains of Mirza Haidar are buried outside the enclosure of the graves of Bad Shâh and others in Srinagar. The grave was repaired at the instance of William Moorcroft,*

*William Moorcroft, English traveller, was born in Lancashire about 1770 A.D. He was educated at Liverpool in medicine and then turned to the study of veterinary science, which he later practised in London. In pursuit of veterinary work he went over to France for a time and then returned to London. Forced by his private circumstances he became Inspector of the Bengal stud of the East India Company in 1808. In this capacity he undertook a journey into Central Asia to obtain a stock of Turkomân horses as he regarded the Turkomân horses from Balkh and Bukhârâ superior to the Arab variety. With Captain William Hearsey (afterwards General Sir John), he left Josimath, well within the mountains, on May 26, 1812. Crossing the frontier pass of Niti, they struck the main upper branch of the Indus near its source, and on August 5 arrived at the sacred lake of Mánasarowar. Returning by Bhutân, he was detained some time by the Gurkhas, and reached Calcutta in November. Moorcroft set out on a second journey in October 1819. On August 14 the source of the Beâs (Hyphasis) was discovered, and subsequently that of the Chenâb. Leh, the capital of Ladâkh, was reached on September 24, and a commercial treaty was concluded with the Government of Ladâkh, by which the whole of Central Asia was virtually opened to British trade. Kashmir was reached on November 3, 1822, Jâlalâbâd on June 24, 1824 Kâbul on June 30, and Bukhârâ on February 25, 1825. At Andkui, in Afghan Turkistan, Moorcroft was seized with fever, of which he died on August 27, 1825 and was buried outside the walls of Balkh. His companion George Trebeck,—the son of a London solicitor settled in Calcutta—interested in the preparation of geographical notes, survived him only a few days. But according to the Abbé Huc, Moorcroft reached Lhâsa in 1826 and lived there 12 years, being assassinated on his way back to India in 1838. In 1841, Moorcroft's papers were obtained by the Asiatic Society and published under the editorship of H. H. Wilson, under the title of Travel in the Himalayan Provinces of Hindustan and the Punjab, in Ladakh and Kashmir, in Peshawar, Kabul, Kunduz and Bokhara from 1819 to 1825.—[Based on the Encyclopædia Britannica, 14th edition, London, 1929, Volume 15, page 782.] Mr. H. L. O. Garrett in the Asiatic Review for October 1941 (page 785) says: "Most probably he was an intelligence officer sent to Bukhârâ to spy out the land" (Central Asia) in 1825.
The Grave of Mirza Haidar Dughlat, Zaina Kadal, Srinagar.

The Grave of Mirza Haidar Dughlat was put up at the instance of William Moorcraft, an English Veterinary Surgeon under the East India Company, who visited Kashmir in 1824 A.D. by Sayyid Izzatullah Khan, attache to Dr. Moorcraft. The grave is in the Mazar-us-Salatin, Zaina Kadal, Srinagar. Mirza Haidar Dughlat desired Emperor Humayun to conquer Kashmir, but as he did not come, the Mirza himself governed it from 1541 to 1551 A.D. in the name of Sultan Nazuk or Nadir Shah of Kashmir, as Mirza Haidar did not feel himself secure enough to assume kingship.

The above on the right is a monolith at the north of the grave.
the traveller, in 1823, and a stone slab with an inscription set up on it by 'Izzatullāh Khān, an attaché of Moorcroft.

Mirzā Haidar Dughlāt entered Kashmir with the sword and the spear, but ended his sovereignty with the fire of religious strife and burnt himself by it.

From the Akbar-nāma, it appears that Humāyūn had resolved to invade Kashmir, an intention he had cherished for years. His officers, however, thought it unadvisable. Humāyūn sought an omen from the Qurʾān. It chanced that the story of Hazrat Yūsuf came up. Khwāja Husain Marvi, a courtier, submitted that Kashmir was likened to a well or a prison as was the fate of Hazrat Yūsuf (Prophet Joseph). Humāyūn was thus compelled to abandon his intention of invading the Valley. Had the courtiers desired to invade Kashmir, they could certainly have interpreted the omen as referring to Yūsuf's subsequent sovereignty of Egypt!

After the death of Mirzā Haidar, power devolved on to the shoulders of ‘Īdī Rina or Raina who had long been desirous of it. Under him, Kashmir was attacked by Haibat Khān Niyāzi, who was deputed by Salīm Shāh Sūr the son and successor of Sher Shāh Sūr after Niyāzi had patched up his quarrel with Salīm Shāh Sūr. Daulat Chak, the chief commander, beat the enemy back and won distinction for his exploits. Then followed a hard tussle for power between ‘Īdī Raina and other Chaks led by Daulat Chak. Most of ‘Īdī Raina’s partisans deserted him. Sayyid Muhammad Ibrāhīm Baihaqi and Husain Māgre who remained faithful were captured by Daulat Chak. The inevitable consequence of the resultant disintegration of ‘Īdī Raina’s party was a defeat which ultimately ended in ‘Īdī Raina’s death at Srinagar in 1551 A.C., and the ascendency of the Chaks.

This ascendency definitely marks the beginning of their accession to power. Daulat Chak having taken all authority

2. Lieut. Newall asserts that the party had Ghīzī Khān, Husain Khān and ‘Alī Khān, Kāji Chak’s sons, as their leaders.—J.A.S.B., No. 5 —1854, page 424.
3. Salīm Shāh Sūr had a Kashmiri wife and had a daughter by her. The wife and the daughter proceeded to Hajj with Bairam’s caravan. Bairam was killed by an Afghan en route.—Akbar-nāma (English translation by Beveridge, Vol. II, page 201).
in his own hands now released Sayyid Muhammad Ibrāhīm Baihaqī and Husain Māgere, and made them his councillors. His assumption of power was so certain that he actually dethroned Sultān Nāzuk Shāh in 1551 A.C.

SULTĀN ISMĀ‘ĪL SHĀH II

[958 to 961 A.H. or 1551 to 1554 A.C.]

Firishta\(^1\) differs from Malik Haidar Chādura about the next succession. Firishta asserts that, after Nāzuk Shāh, his son Ibrāhīm, was placed on the throne, but was deposed after a reign of only five months, and Ismā‘īl Shāh II, son of Ibrāhīm Shāh I, who was the son of Sultān Muhammad Shāh, was raised to kingship. Firishta designates Ibrāhīm, Nāzuk’s son, as Ibrāhīm II.

Daulat Chak imposed his will and the Shi‘ite tenets on the country in a high-handed manner, compelling the imāms (priests) of mosques, on pain of death, to recite the names of the Twelve Imāms of the Shi‘as in Friday sermons. But his ascendancy did not last long. In those days of decentralized kingship, intrigue had become an integral part of the temperament of the Kashmiri nobility, and it was carried on irrespective of considerations of caste and creed. Ghāzī Chak and Daulat Chak, although both Shi‘as, were greatly at variance with each other, because the latter had the hardihood to marry\(^2\) Kāji Chak’s widow, i.e., Ghāzī Chak’s mother. Daulat Chak had to flee, but was caught and handed over by a shepherd to Ghāzī Chak’s soldiery and put to death.

Many stories are related of Daulat’s deeds of prowess and strength. It is said that once he caught with one hand a falling beam twenty-four yards long and two yards thick. When at Delhi, he caught an elephant by the tail in the presence of Sher Shāh Sūr, and the animal could not move at all. Daulat is also credited with having shot an arrow two kōs.

As soon as Daulat Chak’s star waned, Ismā‘īl’s reign also came to a close.

---

Ghāzi Chak deposed Ismā'īl Shāh and placed on the throne his own nephew, Habīb Shāh the son of Ismā'īl Shāh II, the grandson of Sultān Muhammad Shāh. Habīb Shāh had also, in 945 A.H., owed his temporary accession to Kāji Chak who, in turn, had his own selfish designs for it. Habīb Shāh goes down to history as the last of his line, though, strangely enough, he expected more of his dynasty to follow him as this inscription shows:

Ever since the days of Muhammad Shāh and Fath Shāh, the descendants of the great Shāh Mīr were mere figure-heads; who were enthroned or dethroned according to the whim of the noble in power. The Chaks, however, at first entertained no ambitious designs to usurp kingship until the accession of Habīb Shāh. This, it seems, was now their objective and for this they staked their lives and their purse.

Ghāzi Chak now began to work out his policy. He started by accusing the Sultān of various misdemeanours and possibly of acts of faithlessness. The Sultān was powerless to say or to do anything. At last, one day in open court, Ghāzi Chak’s brother, 'Āli Chak, took off the crown from the king’s head, and placed it on his brother's. The courtiers hailed Ghāzi Chak as their monarch. Habīb Shāh was removed from the throne and kept as a prisoner. All this happened in 963 A.H. (1555 A.C.).
This event in Kashmir history is not unlike that in English history, when seventy years earlier, Richard III's crown, struck from his head on Bosworth Field (August 22, 1485), was presented to Henry Earl of Richmond who became Henry VII.

There appears to be no cause for lamentation over the displacement of the Shâh Mirî dynasty in Kashmir. Its rulers had become quite effete. They sadly lacked the essential qualities of initiative and capacity to command. They also displayed weakness of character, and were not, therefore, capable of holding their place. It was only by a divine mercy, or it might be said, the diffidence of the Chaks, that they were allowed to maintain the rôle of supernumerary kings under Chak domination. As a matter of fact, they should have long been displaced to make room for kings of vigour and virility.

Addenda to Chapter IV

A short note on Lâhul, which is mentioned on page 170, is given here. Lâhul, with its rich pastures for sheep and the famous pashmina goats, is a mountainous country between Western Tibet and North Punjab, and never descends below 10,000 feet. It is a Wazîrî or canton of the Kulû sub-division of the Kangra district, in the East Punjab. On the north, Lâhul is bounded by the Ladâkh province of Kashmir, and on the west by the Chamba State. The population in 1901 was 7,205. Hiuen Tsiang notices it as a district lying north-east of Kulû and calls it Lo-hu-lo. The Lâhulis hold in their hands the trade between Ladâkh and Central Asia, and also of Kulû and the East Punjab. The rigours of climate and country have produced a sturdy people. A Lâhul woman's choice of jewels on festive occasions is an amazing collection of amber, turquoise, coral, and silver ornaments daringly worn together.
1. THE SHAH MIRI DYNASTY


<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>A.H.</th>
<th>A.D.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>747</td>
<td>1 Shāh Mirzā, Shams-ud-Dīn</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>750</td>
<td>2 Jāmshīd</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>751</td>
<td>3 ‘Alī Shīr, ‘Alā-ud-Dīn</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>760</td>
<td>4 Shīrāshāmāk, Shihāb-ud-Dīn</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>780</td>
<td>5 Hindāl, Qutb-ud-Dīn</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>796</td>
<td>6 Sikandar, Butshīkān</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>819</td>
<td>7 Mīr Khān, ‘Alī Shāh</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>823</td>
<td>8 Shāhī Khān, Zain-ud-‘Ābidīn</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>875</td>
<td>9 Hájī Khān, Haidar Shāh</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>876</td>
<td>10 Hasan Shāh</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>894</td>
<td>11 Muhammad Shāh</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>894</td>
<td>12 Fath Shāh</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>903</td>
<td>11 Muhammad Shāh, restored</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>903-04</td>
<td>12 Fath Shāh, restored</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>904-05</td>
<td>11 Muhammad Shāh, again restored</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>932</td>
<td>13 Ibrāhīm Shāh I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>933</td>
<td>14 Nāzuk Shāh</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>935</td>
<td>11 Muhammad Shāh, again restored</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>941</td>
<td>15 Shams-ud-Dīn Shāh II</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>947</td>
<td>14 Nāzuk Shāh, restored</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>947</td>
<td>16 Mirzā Haidar Dūghlāt, usurper</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>958</td>
<td>14 Nāzuk Shāh, again restored</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>969</td>
<td>17 Ibrāhīm Shāh II</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>962</td>
<td>18 Ismā‘īl Shāh</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>964-968</td>
<td>19 Ḥabīb Shāh</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

2. THE CHAK DYNASTY

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>A.H.</th>
<th>A.D.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>968</td>
<td>1 Ghāzī Shāh</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>971</td>
<td>2 Nāsir-ud-Dīn Husain Shāh</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>977</td>
<td>3 Zahir-ud-Dīn ‘Alī Shāh</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>986</td>
<td>4 Yūsuf Shāh</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>993-997</td>
<td>5 Ya‘qūb Shāh</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(Mughul Emperors)

Note.—E. de Zambara in his Manuel de Généalogie et Chronologie pour l'Histoire de l'Islam (Hanovre, 1927),—Part II, page 293, has different dates; for instance, 735 A.H. for the accession of Shams-ud-Dīn Tāhir Mirzā Swāltī, 820 for that of Zain-ud-‘Ābidīn, and so on.
DATES OF THE SHAH MIRIS AND THE CHAKS

ACCORDING TO

THE 'A’in-i-Akbari' OF ABU’L FAZL.*

Thirty-two princes reigned 282 years, 5 months, 1 day.

A.H.  A.C.  Rinjan of Tibet, a native of that country,

10 years and some months.

The Shah Miris

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>A.H.</th>
<th>A.C.</th>
<th>Name and Title</th>
<th>Reign Duration</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>715</td>
<td>1315</td>
<td>Sultan Shams-ud-Din, minister of Sinha Deva</td>
<td>2 11 25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>750</td>
<td>1349</td>
<td>Sultan Jamshid, his son</td>
<td>1 10 0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>752</td>
<td>1351</td>
<td>Sultan ‘Ala-ud-Din, son of Shams-ud-Din</td>
<td>12 18 13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>765</td>
<td>1363</td>
<td>Sultan Shihab-ud-Din</td>
<td>20 0 0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>785</td>
<td>1386</td>
<td>Sultan Qutb-ud-Din, son of Hasan-ud-Din(?)</td>
<td>15 5 0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>799</td>
<td>1396</td>
<td>Sultan Sikandar, his son, whose name was Sankar</td>
<td>22 9 0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>819</td>
<td>1416</td>
<td>Sultan ‘Ali Shih, his son</td>
<td>6 9 0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>826</td>
<td>1422</td>
<td>Sultan Zainu’l ‘Abidin, younger brother of Ali Shih</td>
<td>52 0 0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>877</td>
<td>1472</td>
<td>Sultan Hajji Haidar Shih, his son</td>
<td>1 2 0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>878</td>
<td>1473</td>
<td>Sultan Hasan Khan, his son</td>
<td>12 0 0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>891</td>
<td>1486</td>
<td>Sultan Muhammad Shih, his son</td>
<td>2 7 0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>902</td>
<td>1496</td>
<td>Sultan Fath Shih, son of Adam Khan, son of Sultan Zainu’l ‘Abidin</td>
<td>9 1 0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>911</td>
<td>1506</td>
<td>Sultan Muhammad Shih, a second time</td>
<td>0 9 0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Sultan Fath Shih, a second time</td>
<td>1 1 0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Sultan Muhammad Shih, a third time</td>
<td>11 11 11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Sultan Ibrhim, his son</td>
<td>0 8 25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>942</td>
<td>1535</td>
<td>Sultan Nizuk Shih, son of Fath Shih</td>
<td>1 0 0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Sultan Muhammad Shih, a fourth time</td>
<td>34 8 10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Sultan Shamst, son of Muhammad Shih</td>
<td>0 2 0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Sultan Isma’iil Shih, his brother</td>
<td>2 9 0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Sultan Nizuk Shih, a second time</td>
<td>13 9 0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Sultan Isma’iil Shih, a second time</td>
<td>1 5 0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>948</td>
<td>1541</td>
<td>Mizr Haidar Gurghan</td>
<td>10 0 0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Sultan Nizuk Shih, a third time</td>
<td>1 0 0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The Chaks

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>A.H.</th>
<th>A.C.</th>
<th>Name and Title</th>
<th>Reign Duration</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>971</td>
<td>1563</td>
<td>Husain Chak, his brother</td>
<td>6 10 0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>‘Ali Chak, brother of Hussain Chak</td>
<td>8 9 0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Period of reign

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>A.H.</th>
<th>A.C.</th>
<th>Y.</th>
<th>M.</th>
<th>D.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>986</td>
<td>1578</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### Note
The Kashmir Sultans, as given in Princep's Tables, follow the above order of the Ā'in-i-Akbarī of Abu'l Fazl except that between 948 A.H. = 1441 A.C., and 971 A.H. = 1563 A.C., we find—

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>A.H.</th>
<th>A.C.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>980</td>
<td>1552</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>964</td>
<td>1556</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Also that a few details of names of rulers are omitted between 891 A.H. = 1486 A.C. to 911 A.H. = 1505 A.C., which are given by Abu'l Fazl.

### Dates of the Shah Miris and Chaks

**According to Jonaraja, Crivara, Prajyabhatta & Cuka.**

[See the List of Kings at the end of Vol. III of *Kings of Kashmir* by Jogesh Chander Dutt, Elm Press, Calcutta, 1898, pp. XXI, XXII, XXIII and XXIV at the end.]

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Period of reign</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>A.C.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Riśchana (Sultan Sadr-ud-Din)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### The Shah Miris

- Shahamara alias Shamshadena (Sultan Shams-ud-Din I, Shah Mir) | 1339 | 3 | 0 | 5 |
- Jamsara (Jamsald) | 1342 | 0 | 1 | 10 (?) |
- Alāvadina (Alā-ud-Din) | 1343 | 12 | 8 | 13 (?) |
- Shahāvadina (Shihāb-ud-Din) | 1354 |
- Kumbhadīna (Qutb-ud-Din) | 1373 |
- Shekandhara (Sikandar) | 1389 |
- Ališāba (Ali Shāb) | 1413 |
- Jainollābhadīna (Zain-ul-Ābidīn) | 1420 | 52 | 0 | 0 |
  (By calculation 50 years)
- Haidara Shāhā (Haidar Shāh) | 1470 | 1 | 10 | 0 |

---

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Year</th>
<th>A</th>
<th>B</th>
<th>C</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Hasana Shāha (Hasan Shāh)</td>
<td>1472</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mahmada Shāha (Muhammad Shāh)</td>
<td>1484</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Phataha Shāha (Fath Shāh)</td>
<td>1486</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mahmada Shāha (2nd time)</td>
<td>1514</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Phataha Shāha (2nd time)</td>
<td>1515</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mahmada Shāha (3rd time)</td>
<td>1516</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibrāhima Shāha (Ibrāhīm)</td>
<td>1528</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nājoka Shāha (Nāzuk Shāh)</td>
<td>1529</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mahmada Shāha (4th time)*</td>
<td>1530</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Samsha Shāha (Shams-ud-Dīn II)</td>
<td>1537</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Habhebha (Habīb Shāh)</td>
<td>1560</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### THE CHAKS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Year</th>
<th>A</th>
<th>B</th>
<th>C</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Gāja Shāha (Ghāzī Shāh)</td>
<td>1560</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hosaina Shāha (Husain Shāh)</td>
<td>1562</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ale Shāha ('Aī Shāh)</td>
<td>1569</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Yosobh Shāha (Yūsuf Shāh)</td>
<td>1573</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Momāra Khāna (Sayyid Mubārak Baihaqī)</td>
<td>1578</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lahvāra Chakka (Lohur Shāh)</td>
<td>1578</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Yosobha (2nd time)</td>
<td>1579</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Yākobha (Ya‘qūb Shāh)</td>
<td>1587</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
THE CHAK DYNASTY

[1555-1586 A.C.]

Lankar Chak migrates from Dardistan to Kashmir

Pāṇḍu Chak

Halmat or Himmat Chak

Husain Chak

Hasan Chak

Kāj Chak (Qāsi Chak)

Sāliḥ Mājī, Queen of
Sultān Muhammad Shāh,
great-grandson of
Bād Shāh

Tāj Chak or Tāzi Chak

Daulat Chak

Nusrat Chak

Nāzuk

Chāsi Shāh

1555 to 1563

Haider

Ibrāhīm

Ahmad

or Iba Khān

killed by Yūsuf Khān

Hussain

Queen of Sultān
Ismā'īl Shāh and
mother of Sultān
Habīb Shāh

Muhammad

Mas'ūd

Nāṣir-ud-Dīn,
Hussain Shāh

1563 to 1570

Yūsuf

Ibrāhīm

Habīb

Ya'qūb Shāh

1566

Ibrāhīm

Haider

or

Iba Chak

Ya'qūb Shāh

Bādī-ud-Dīn

Shams

Muhammad

(i) 1579

(ii) 1580 to 1586

Hussain

or Gauhar or

Lohur Shāh

1579 to 1580
CHAPTER V

KASHMIR UNDER THE CHAKS

[1555 A.C. to 1586 A.C.]

From a perusal of its history, Kashmir appears to be a land of hospitality. Shāh Mīr, the founder of the Shāh Mīrī dynasty, and Lankar or Langar Chak, the progenitor of the Chak dynasty, were well received. Though Lankar or Langar himself had not the distinction of wearing a regal crown, his descendants gradually so strengthened themselves that they were able to exert very great influence on the politics of Kashmir: to enthrone and dethrone kings, and finally to wield the sceptre.

The history of the Chaks,\(^1\) to whom a Dardic origin is ascribed, bears a strange resemblance to that of the Marāthas. [For the history of the word Dard, see Chapter VIII, section Kashmirī language.] The Chaks—called the Chakreças or Chakras in the Kashmir Chronicles—gradually rose from obscurity, and forced their existence even upon the attention of a wise ruler like Sulṭān Zain-ul-‘Abidīn,\(^2\) whose penetrating eye enabled him to predict the sovereignty they finally acquired. They sought and entered service with the nobles. They thus strengthened and consolidated their position till, at last, they were able to assert themselves under the redoubtable leadership of Kāji or Qāzī Chak (called by the Chronicles Kānchana Chakreça or Kācha Chakra) and became an important factor in the politics of Kashmir.

---

1. The word Chak is written by Sir Wolseley Haig as Chakk but the more correct Kashmiri pronunciation is something like Tsak or Tschak.
It is noteworthy that the rise of the Chaks synchronizes with their conversion to the Shi'ite doctrine promulgated by Mir Shams-ud-Din 'Irāqī, whom Malik Haidar Chādūra calls Shaikh Shams-ud-Din Muhammad 'Irāqī, in the first reign of Sultān Fath Shāh when Husain Chak became a Shi'a. And Husain's descendants continued to be Shi'as. To clarify the link it may be stated that Lankar or Langar, fourth descendant, named Pāndū Chak, had flourished as a feudal lord in the time of Sultān Zain-ul-ʿĀbidin. Pāndū had two sons, Himmat and Husain. Husain, as we said, became Shi'a while Himmat remained Sunnī. Himmat, however, had no sovereignty among his descendants, though they occupied high positions in civil and military employ. Shams, Rīgī, Mas'ūd and Bahrām are notable instances in this line of Himmat. It would be incorrect to say that change over to Shi'ism by Husain's line had fired the Chaks with an ambition for the throne. History has not yet proved it. The fact must not, however, be omitted that they were already strong enough to interfere in the trend of events and exert their influence when internecine war between Muhammad Shāh and Fath Shāh gave them time to make hay.

All through their career, either as partisans of a particular king, or as wielders of regal authority, they did not give much promise of their statesmanship. They showed narrow-mindedness too. No Shāh Mīr showed such religious bias against Shi'as as Ghāzi Chak and Husain Chak displayed against the Sunnīs of Kashmir. The bitterness of feeling resulting in a number of serious clashes between Shi'as and Sunnīs—and their number is put down at eighteen—earned for the Shi'a of Kashmir the notoriety of Bē Pīr like the Sunnī of Balkh. The Chaks were clever at intrigue too. But it must be admitted that they were good soldiers on the battlefield. Their exploits cannot be easily forgotten. Their patriotism and martial spirit were a great advantage to Kashmir. One can, therefore, emphatically suggest that but for them, Kashmir would have fallen an easy prey to the ambition of Haidar Dūghlāt or Bābur and his immediate successor, in rivalry of whom the Chak rulers took the title of Bādshāh in place of Sultān adopted by the Shāh Mīrā.
Camping on the snows before entering Deosai on the way to Skardu. Dr. Sufi, Dr. Bashir, Professor Beg and some Ph.D. scholars of the Panjab University Institute of Chemistry.
A waterfall on the way to Skardu. Dr. Sufi on horseback.
KASHMIR UNDER THE CHAKS

GHÂZÎ CHAK

[962 to 970 A.H. or 1555 to 1563 A.C.]

It is not necessary to recapitulate the circumstances which installed Ghâzî Chak as the first ruler of his line. He started his regal career with discretion, and devoted his attention to the removal of evils which had, for long, paralysed the administration of the country.

Ghâzî Chak re-conquered or annexed such territories as had fallen off from the kingdom. In this attempt, he attained marked success in recovering Skardu, Gilgit, Kisutwâr, Pakhli and Mângli (near Pakhli), besides bringing into subjection the chief of the Gakkhars. In order to ensure efficient administration of these territories, he appointed experienced and intelligent governors to control them.

[Ladakh or Ladâg or Great Tibet is one of the most elevated regions of the earth. Cultivation is sparse and is carried on uplands ranging from 9,000 to 14,000 feet high. The climate is very dry and healthy and the air is invigorating. There is a remarkable absence of thunder and lightning. Leh is the only place of importance. The people style themselves Bhoțs. With the exception of one village of Shi'â Muslims in Chhachkhôt and of the Arghûns or half-breeds, practically the whole population, excluding the town of Leh, is Buddhist among whom polyandry prevailed till recent years; it is now stopped by legislation. The Arghûns are the result of the union between Ladâkh women and Kashmiris or Yârqandîs. There are also some Turki caravan drivers and Dogras. In the waterless wastes of sand, says Major Gompertz (Magic Ladakh, 1928, page 45) are to be found the remains of old towns, of old civilizations, paintings and writings in scripts whose very names are unknown.

Baltistân, or Little Tibet, is a tract under the Wazir-i-Wazârat of Ladakh. The rainfall is about 6 inches in the year. The air is dry and bracing. The snowfall is often considerable and is of great importance to the villages which depend on the snow for their irrigation. The old rulers of Baltistân were known as Gialpos or Râjâs. 'Ali Sher Khân built the fort which lies in the tahsil of the same name which is an important tract of Baltistân. In the early seventeenth century, 'Ali Mir, chief of Skardu, successfully invaded Baltistân. The Bâltis are of the same stock as the Ladakhs.

Though Ladakh and Baltistân are geographically similar, and their people ethnologically the same, the Baltis are generally Muslims while the Ladakhis are Buddhists.

Tibet proper, the land of the Lâmas, is called Tibet only.]

Ghâzî was a just but somewhat stern ruler. In meting out justice, he showed no compassion even to his kith and kin. Once a servant belonging to his son, Haidar Khân,
plucked 'unnāb (fruit of the jujube tree) while accompanying the Sultan. The Sultan observed this act of pilfering, and had the delinquent's hands cut off, a punishment which both grieved and incensed Haidar Khān. Later on, when Ghāzi Chak sent Muhammad Malik, the youth's uncle, to admonish him for the sullenness he had displayed, the youth, in a fit of rage, stabbed his uncle. On this, Ghāzi Chak caused him to be hanged, and his remains were exhibited on the gibbet for eight days.

Ghāzi's sternness roused his own tribesmen against him. Nusrat Chak and Yūsuf Chak, sons of Rīgī Chak, rose in rebellion against him, but were successfully repressed. Later on, Shankar Chak, Bahram Chak and Fath Chak, sons of Rīgī Chak,—who by the way, had seven or more sons—raised the standard of revolt at Sopūr, but were defeated and dispersed. Then, Shams Raina, son of 'Idī Raina and the grandson of Mūsā Raina, whom we met under Fath Shāh in his second term on pages 191-2, proceeded to Delhi to seek help from Humayūn. Unfortunately for him, however, Humayūn died as the result of a fall on the day of his arrival. On his return, he met Abu'l Maʿālī, Humayūn's favourite, who had been driven out by Bāirām Khān, and had found refuge in the mountains of Gakkhar. Shams Raina induced him to invade Kashmir. Encouraged by the previous success of Mirzā Haidar Dūghlāt, Abu'l Maʿālī proceeded to invade Kashmir without hesitation. Ghāzi Chak, however, won over Sayyīd Ibrāhīm Baihaqī and his followers to his side, and successfully defeated the invaders. Shams Raina's brother Muhammad Raina next year led a joint insurrection of the Rainas and some disaffected Chaks, but sustained a defeat.

In 1559, Ghāzi's possession of the throne was again disturbed by Qarā Bahādur, cousin of Mirzā Haidar Dūghlāt, whom Yūsuf Chak the son of Rīgī Chak and others had induced to fight. It is stated that Qarā Bahādur took 10,000* horse with him. The battle took place in the Rajauri mountains. Ghāzi Chak advanced in person to meet the enemy, and promised his men a gold coin for each head captured. The king was completely victorious, and 7,000 heads were presented to him after the engagement. It is said that he exceeded this promise and disbursed two gold coins per head.

*J.A.S.B., No. 5,—1854, page 428.
The "Zakh", or inflated skin, used on the river Shigar which joins the river Indus near Skardu. Dr. Sufi, with a hat, on the right.

An apricot garden in Skardu,
Ghāzī Chak was an able and energetic ruler. He was also a poet.* After reigning for over eight years, he abdicated the throne in favour of his brother Husain Chak on account of a very severe form of leprosy which prostrated him for about two years after which he died. His pride in his Shi'ite doctrine is expressed by Mullā Mir 'Alī Sairfī in the following quatrain:

Some time after his abdication, he divided equally his effects and gave half to his son and other descendants, while he sent the other half to the merchants for sale. The price he demanded for these effects from the merchants was so exorbitant that they complained to Husain Shāh, who, on taking the matter up with Ghāzī Chak, so angered him that he sought to re-establish himself but was cleverly checkmated by Husain Shāh. Some time later, Husain Shāh, for reasons of personal safety and removing a rival from his path, thought of putting out the eyes of Ahmad Khan, Ghāzī Chak's son. Ghāzī naturally interceded for his son but failed, and died of a broken heart. He had already severely suffered from virulent leprosy as stated above.

HUSAIN SHĀH CHAK.

[971 to 978 A.H. or 1563 to 1570 A.C.]

Husain Shāh ascended the throne in 970 A.H. (1563 A.C.). Khusraw-i-'Adl is the chronogram of his accession. He was, comparatively speaking, a mild ruler, less bigoted than his brother, and solicitous about the well-being of his subjects. He regulated the efficient organization of his state finances. In the year 972 A.H. (1564 A.C.), Husain Shāh sent his brother Shunkar Chak as governor of Rajauri. The brother gathered an army and rebelled to seize the throne for himself. He was defeated by the minister Malik Muhammad Nājī,—the grandfather of Haidar Malik Chādura, our historian,—and the king's younger brother 'Ali

*Malik Haidar Chādura's History of Kashmir, page 201.
Khān Chak. This victory secured considerable favours for Malik Muhammad Nājī from the king.

The trouble, it appears, did not end here. Next year, in 973 A.H. (1565 A.C.), the Bādshāh happened to be hunting at Vethnār, in Tahsil Islāmābād (Anantnāg). In his absence, Fath Chak, called also Khwāja Fath Baqqāl and surnamed Khān-uz-Zamān, a minister of the state, rebelled with his son Bahādur Khān. Fath Chak attacked the king’s palace to seize the treasure and proclaim himself king.

Malik Muhammad Nājī who had been left in charge of the palace was, however, able by recourse to a clever stratagem to beat back Khān-uz-Zamān, and to kill his son. In the course of this contest, Ḍasʻūd Nāyak, an officer of the king’s bodyguard, made himself conspicuous by his gallant and fearless behaviour. Khān-uz-Zamān was taken prisoner. On the Bādshāh’s return he was led in chains to his presence. The Bādshāh rewarded Ḍasʻūd Nāyak with the title of Mubāriz Khān, and the pargana of Phāk on the Dal as his jāgīr or assignment. Khān-uz-Zamān was, of course, executed for his treachery.

Mubāriz Khān, however, became rather proud of his power in course of time. The king had therefore real cause not only to be jealous but also to be afraid of him. On some pretext, the king imprisoned him, and appointed Malik Lūlī Lōn* in his place. Lūlī, too, did not enjoy his new office for long. He was detected in an attempt to embezzle forty thousand kharwār of shalī or unhusked rice and was dismissed. ‘Ali Koka was then appointed prime minister.

In 976 A.H. (1568 A.C.) Yuṣūf Mandav, a Shī‘a fanatic, attacked and somewhat seriously wounded Qāzi-ul-Quzzāt Sayyid Habibullāh Khwārizmī, a Sunni Khatīb (or Sermonizer) of the Jami’ Masjīd, who was saved from being killed by Maulānā Ṣir Kamāl-ud-Dīn, his son-in-law. We shall later meet Sir Kamāl-ud-Dīn as Mullā Kamāl the teacher of ‘Allama ‘abdul Hakim Siālkōṭī, Mujaddid Alf-i-Sānī and ‘Allama Sa‘dullāh Khān in Chapter VIII under “Men of Learning.” The king issued orders for Yuṣūf’s arrest. A jury of divines consisting of Mullā Shams-ud-Dīn Almās (known also as Mullā Yuṣūf) and

---

Mulla Firuz Ganai appointed by the king, had Yusuf Mandav stoned to death.

Soon after this, there arrived in Kashmir an embassy from Akbar's court led by Mirza Muhammad Muqim and Mir Ya'qub, both of Shi'a persuasion. The Badshah welcomed them in person, and had his own tent pitched for their reception at Huraqpor.* They then proceeded by boat to Srinagar, and were lodged in the house of Husain Mager, a nobleman. Mirza Muqim committed an act of great indiscretion by interfering in the matter of the stoning to death of Yusuf the Shi'a fanatic, referred to above. Purely an internal affair, it should have been settled by Husain Shah himself. But unfortunately Husain Shah absented himself from the city on this occasion to escape the clamour of the contending Shi'a and Sunni parties whose passions were now roused against each other. Mirza Muqim instigated making over the divines, who had acted as judges in Yusuf's case, to Fath Khan, a Shi'a official. Fath Khan had them executed, and dragged their dead bodies through the streets. After his return to the city, Husain Shah, in his anxiety to avoid misrepresentation by Mirza Muqim at the court of Akbar, and lest the Emperor should be displeased at Husain Shah's own hesitation to punish the divines, gave them suitable presents. Husain Shah also agreed to give his own daughter for the emperor's son Salim to wed. A deputation of Kashmiris, headed by Haji Ganai, waited upon Akbar to report the disgraceful treatment of the dead bodies of the divines, and seek redress at his hands. The deputation was successful in rousing Akbar against Mirza Muqim and against Husain Shah Chak. On Mirza Muqim's return, Akbar had him executed for religious bigotry, and sent back Husain Shah's presents. The emperor also sent back Husain Shah's daughter. Husain Shah received such a shock at Akbar's insult that, as a result of it as well as of his son's death, he did not survive more than a few months. Cuka, however, states that Husain Shah died of epilepsy.

Husain Shah seems to have had, in general, very catholic views. He set aside three days in the week to listen to the discourses of Muslim and Hindu religious scholars and

*Huraqpor village in the Pir Panjal valley is about seven miles south-west of Shupian. The ancient name of Huraqpor was Curaqura. Huraqpor is the entrance and exit to and from Kashmir towards Rajauri. Population 1635.
The Badshah also possessed a taste for poetry. It is related that a poet, who usually received from him gifts and a robe of honour every ‘Id, sent him this line before a particular ‘Id—

ख़लूत़ शाही म्रा आस्येय रस्ते या बिन रस्ते

The Badshah wrote back the following line:

इनं चढ़ियें प्रेम रों ने आय रस्ते या बिन रस्ते

Khwaja A'zam and Pir Hasan Shahu quote other couplets of Husain Shahu:

अं तरी आल पुश सौर सहन शुद
यारान हजर कुश तक आश्न बनन शुद
जातल कर निग बस्तह खजर यार मि आइद
दला बरखेजो कार गौं केज जान दर कार मि आइद

It was the set practice of Husain Shahu, after Friday prayers, to order his treasurer to put aside a sum which he gave away in charity. Çuka says: "The goddess of wealth, though insulted by large expenditures, went with him.” The Tabaqat-i-Akbari says, Husain Shahu founded a college and lived in the society of pious and learned men in its precincts, and he allotted them the pargana of Zaina-pur as their jagir.

Before he died, the nobles at the court began to intrigue about the next successor. Some favoured a choice between Husain Shahu’s brother, ‘Ali Khan and Sayyid Mubarak Bahlaiqi, while others preferred to have the youthful prince Yûsuf Khan as their next king. ‘Ali Khan retired to Sopûr and returned with an army. Daujat Chak then advised the king to send the royal insignia to ‘Ali Khan to avoid bloodshed. The king followed his advice, abdicated on account of epilepsy in 1570 A.C., and thenceforward remained at Zaina-pur where he passed away in 1572 A.C.

---
1. Ta’rikh-i-Kashmir by Malik Haidar Châdura, page 203.
2. Ibid., page 202.
'Ali Shāh Chak

[978 to 987 A.H. or 1570 to 1579 A.C.]

'Ali Khān ascended the throne as 'Ali Shāh Chak. Like his brother Husain Shāh, 'Ali Shāh too was a just and wise ruler. He showed great respect towards saints and friars.

As Bābā Dā'ūd Khāki says—

والی نوران على شاه، دوستدار صالبان
پُر او شهزاده يوسف با جاه و جلال

Although the Chaks were Shi'as, and the Shi'as of Kashmir are condemned like the Sunnis of Balkh in the satirical Persian couplet—

نوگره اند در جهان یک پیر
سبتی بدخ و شیعه کشی ابر

it appears on the testimony of a great Sunni leader, the lieutenant of Sultān-ul-'Ārifīn Shaikh Hamza Makhdūm, namely, Bābā Dā'ūd Khāki, that this ruler was good to the Sunnis.

An impostor from Īrān dressed in the garb of a darvish and named Shāh 'Ārif came to Kashmir. He claimed relationship with the reigning Safavī king, but was found out.

Soon after his accession, 'Ali Shāh put an end to all feuds among his nobles. He appointed Sayyid Muhammad Mubārak Baihaqi, who was a Sunni, as his prime minister. Sayyid Muhammad Mubārak Baihaqi was the grandson of Sayyid Muhammad Baihaqi whom we have known in the course of the struggle between Muhammad Shāh and Fath Shāh. Sayyid Muhammad Mubārak was the son of Sayyid Ibrāhīm Baihaqi. These Baihaqīs descended from Sayyid Muhammad Baihaqi, the father-in-law of Bad Shāh and had migrated to Kashmir during the time of Sultān Sikandar from Baihaq a district to the North-West of Nishāpur in Īrān. They took a very prominent part in the politics of Kashmir during the days of the Later Shāh-Mirīs.

Sayyid Mubārak Baihaqi, 'Ali Shāh's prime minister, a brave man indeed, seems to have been a person singularly disposed towards peace, and settling affairs by tact. He showed great wisdom on several occasions: notably
in securing the king’s pardon for ‘Ali Chak, son of Naurūz Chak, who had been imprisoned for rebellion. He also restored peace and amity between the monarch and his son Yūsuf Khān who had killed, in an altercation, Ibrāhīm Khān, popularly known as Ibbā Khān, the son of Ghāzi Chak.)

Bahādur Singh, the rājā of Kishtwār, who had ascended the gaddī in 1570 A.C. was defeated twice in succession. After his first defeat in 1572 A.C., the rājā offered to the Bādshāh’s grandson, Ya’qūb Khān, his sister Shankar Devi. This lady, later on, gained the sobriquet of Fath Khātūn and subsequently took her husband, when he was defeated by Akbar, to Kishtwār. The rājā also promised to maintain the annual tribute. When he was defeated the second time in 1574, the rājā gave his son Nārāin Singh as hostage, and renewed his pledge for payment of tribute. The same year, ‘Ali Shāh received Qāzī Sadr-ud-Dīn and Maulānā ‘Īshqī, Akbar’s ambassadors, with a message of matrimonial alliance. He thereupon sent his niece, Husain Shāh’s daughter, who had previously been sent back by Akbar, along with presents. He also included Akbar’s name in the Friday sermon and struck coin in the Emperor’s name, (indicating that he owned Akbar as his suzerain.

Haidar Khān and Salim Khān, sons of Nāzuk Shāh, allied themselves with certain nobles of Hindustān and proceeded to invade Kashmir in 1575 A.C. ‘Ali Shāh sent his nephews, Lohur Chak and Muhammad Chak, against the enemy. Muhammad Chak, cleverly as a mere matter of show and to hoodwink the adversary, took Lohur Chak prisoner, and boldly joined the enemy. Finding the earliest opportunity he turned the tables on Salim Khān and put him to the sword, at which Haidar Khān fled. Thus ended this final attempt of Shāh Mir’s descendants to regain the throne.

In 984 A.H. (1576 A.C.) Kashmir suffered from a famine which lasted for three years. Food had become so scarce that, at times, people actually stopped to cannibalism. Zaitī Chak, popularly known as Zait Shāh, was a zealous darvīsh and a disciple of Shaikh Hamza Makhdūm. When ‘Ali Shāh asked Zaitī how long the famine was to last, Zaitī frankly told him that the cessation of famine would synchrenize with his death. The king met his death while playing polo in the plain of the ‘Idgāh, as the
pommel of his saddle entered his stomach. Before his death, however, he saw his son, Yusuf, crowned king to prevent Abdal Khan Chak, his own brother, from creating any mischief. Abdal Khan Chak was eventually killed by Sayyid Mubarak Baihaqi, the Vazir-i-A'zam.

**YUSUF SHAH CHAK (i)**

[987 A.H. or 1579 A.C.]

Yusuf Shah continued to have Sayyid Mubarak Baihaqi as his prime minister. But the king abandoned himself to the career of a voluptuary, which so estranged his minister that he resigned his post. Muhammad Baṭ was appointed in his place, and the king continued indifferent to the state.

The nobles banded themselves together and sought help from Sayyid Mubarak Baihaqi who advised them to avoid rebellion. At the same time, he sent word to the king through Bābā Khalil, a Shi'a divine, requesting him to treat the insurgents mildly in order that the revolt may not grow in volume. The king exhibited a lack of diplomacy when he asked Sayyid Mubarak Baihaqi, on pain of death, to hand over the insurgents in chains to him. It was both a direct affront and a challenge which the Sayyid accepted readily.

Malik Muhammad Nāji advised the king to be generous in order to win over to his side even his opponents. But to this Yusuf would not listen. On the other hand, he dispatched soldiers under two Sardārs, Habib Khan Chak and Muhammad Khan Chak, to fight Sayyid Mubarak Baihaqi. Malik Muhammad Nāji lost his son in this contest. The king too lost his throne. Malik Nāji pined and died within a few weeks. Yusuf relinquished the insignia of royalty and betook himself to the mountains of Brijal-Lāmar between Tahsil Kulgām and the Pīr Pāntasāl range.

[Sayyid Mubarak Baihaqi is known in Kashmir history as Sayyid Mubarak Khan Baihaqi, the title of Khan being applicable in Kashmir to those notables who were concerned with the control of the army, and to princes of the royal blood. Khan may be supposed to be, more or less, somewhat analogous to Duke in English usage except that a dukedom is hereditary but not a khānate in Kashmir in that sense.]

---

   The *Ta'rikh-i-Kashmir* by Malik Haidar Chāḍura, page 217.
Sayyid Mubarak, now installed as a ruler, started his short regime in a somewhat unceremonious way, rather Lenin-like in a socialist manner. He broke up the crown and divided its gems amongst the poor. His manifest disregard of his nobles, however, seriously offended them. They plotted for the return of Yusuf Shah. Sayyid Mubarak however, sent Da’ud Mir, a courtier, with an invitation to the exiled king, who sent his sons, Ya'qub Khan and Ibrahīm Khan, intending to follow them himself. But he was secretly warned against this by Abdal Bat, the commander of forces, who explained that the invitation was a ruse played by Sayyid Mubarak. Eventually, however, he gave battle and was severely defeated, whereupon he disappeared behind the Brijal hill in Tahsil Kulgam.

Abdal Bat, the commander, manoeuvred so successfully that he threw both Yusuf Shah and Sayyid Mubarak into utter confusion, and also caused them to fight each other. The result was that Abdal’s clever machinations secured the throne to Lohur Chak, since Sayyid Mubarak willingly offered to abdicate, after a sway of six months and two days according to Hasan, and eight months and fifteen days according to Khwaja A'zam, though Haidar Malik Chaudura and Khalil Marjānpuri set down the period as two months and fifteen days only. Sayyid Mubarak at his abdication recited the following lines:

شها فقر و غناً از ما و مَلک و جَرَو و جَهَاء از تَو
که دنیا را وفاه نیست خواه از ما و خواه از تو

Yusuf was balked of the prize of kingship for which he had been invited. The death of the Baihaqi took place in 1591 A.C., five years after the advent of Mughul rule in Kashmir.

LOHUR SHĀH CHAK

[987 A.H. or 1579 A.C. to 988 A.H. or 1580 A.C.]

Badi‘-ud-Din or Gauhar Shāh, better known as Lohur Chak, was Yusuf Shāh’s cousin, being the son of Shankar Chak. Abdal Bat received the coveted office of prime minister under the Pādshāh.
Yūsuf Shāh Chak, on losing the crown which seemed to be within reach, repaired to Akbar’s court at Fatehpur-Sikri, on January 2, 1580 A.C., to solicit help to regain his kingdom. That Emperor, it is needless to say, was only awaiting an opportunity like this to turn it to his own advantage. Akbar, therefore, willingly sent Rājā Mān Singh and Mīrzā Yūsuf with an army with the exiled king, and they were joined by Muhammad Bat, Yūsuf Shāh’s vazir, at Lāhore with an army one thousand strong. Yūsuf Shāh, on Muhammad Bat’s advice, suspected that Akbar would usurp the kingdom himself, and was now smitten with remorse for unnecessarily seeking foreign help. He left Rājā Mān Singh and Mīrzā Yūsuf behind, on the pretext that it would be better for him to march alone with a view to sound his countrymen. We shall meet Mān Singh later.

Through the efforts of Muhammad Baṭ, Yūsuf was able to rally four thousand men around him before reaching Kashmir. He crossed the river Jhelum, near the village Dalna, seven miles from Bārāmūla, to avoid Yūsuf Dār’s three thousand soldiers deputed by Abdāl Baṭ. Yūsuf Shāh entered Srinagar triumphantly. Abdāl Baṭ was killed. Lohur Chak sought safety in abdication by flight and subsequent death. Lohur had reigned for about thirteen months during which Malik Haidar, practically an eyewitness, remarks that plenty ruled the land and that a kharwar of shāli or unhusked rice was available for a falas (pice), and the people enjoyed prosperity.

**Yūsuf Shāh Chak (ii)**

[988 A.H. or 1580 A.C. to 994 A.H. or 1586 A.C.]

After an exile of a year and a half, Yūsuf Shāh re-established himself on the throne. In the beginning, he devoted his attention to the affairs of the state, freed the country from schism, and re-entered into friendly relations with Sayyid Mubārak Khān Haïhaqi to whose son he gave one of his daughters in marriage. Malik Haidar Chā‘īdūra, the historian, entered Yūsuf Shāh’s service and continued in it for twenty-four years in Kashmir and in Yūsuf’s exile in Bihār.

It was Yūsuf Shāh who used to visit Gulmarg during the hot weather, and changed its name from Gaurimarg (the mārg or path or pass of Gauri, wife of Ṣiva) or popularly Gurmarg or Horse’s Meadow (from Gur; a horse) to Gulmarg.
the Meadow of Flowers.' He used to visit Sonmarg, Ahrabal, and Achabal too. Yusuf had his Zulikha in Habba Khattun to whom he was attached as a prince. Their love romance is one of the most poetic episodes in the romantic literature of Kashmir. On one brief separation, Yusuf Shah, cried out—

[ Parsar and Marsar are two lakes in the pargana Phak. Parsar is stated to mean the lake of Tar, a goddess. Marsar is the lake of Cupid.] Habba or Hub will receive notice, later on, among the 'Noted Women of Kashmir' in Chapter VIII.

[Gulmarg is about 28 miles east of Srinagar, and 13 miles due south of Baramula. The Marg, which is shaped somewhat like the figure 8, is about 3 miles long, and varies in width from a few hundred yards to more than a mile. It is enclosed, on all sides, by hills densely wooded by deodar. The whole of its surface is dotted with flowers of every hue. The elevation of the Marg is about 3,000 feet above the level of the Valley of Kashmir, and above 8,700 feet above the sea. The climate is cold, bracing and salubrious. The rainfall is three times as much as at Srinagar and yet it is not more than two-thirds of that of Murree. Jahangir and Nur Jehan, it is said, used to itch their tents for picnics on the stream that winds through Gulmarg, as, before them, Yusuf Shih and Habba Khattun used to enjoy life in their own days. Gulmarg is thus a land of Kashmir's royal lovers.]

Peace did not reign long. Yusuf Shah's nobles soon began to show restiveness on account of his indifference to state affairs. Prominent conspirators like Shams Chak, Alam Sher Mage and Sayyid Yusuf were hauled up. Later, Muhammad Ba, the Vazir, and his brother Husain Ba, along with Yusuf Chak, son of Husain Chak, were suddenly discovered in their designs against the king, and were imprisoned. But Yusuf Chak, son of Husain Chak, escaped from prison, and joined Haidar Chak, a commander of Lohur Chak's troops, at Lahore, whence they quietly decided to proceed to Ladakh or Western Tibet. From that country they attacked Kashmir, but were defeated, captured, and punished by having their eyes put out. The king's son Yaquib Khan also rebelled and joined Haidar Chak. Both were defeated, but Haidar Chak fled to Lahore to Raja Man Singh. The Raja already owed Yusuf Shih a grudge for the manner in which the latter had spurned his help. To checkmate Haidar Chak's designs, Yusuf Shih sent
Khwâja Qâsim with presents to Râjâ Mân Singh. The Khwâja, on his return, pretended to have achieved success in his political mission, while Râjâ Mân Singh had already assigned the districts of Naushehra and Bhimbar to Haidar Chak as jâgîr.

A little detail from Abu'l Fazl about this campaign will be reproduced here. "When the envoys,* Mir Tâhir and Sâlih 'Âqil, returned from Kashmir, Akbar dispatched Shâh Rukh Bahâdur, Râjâ Bhagvân Dâs, Shâh Quli Mahram, Mâdhû Singh, Mubârak Khân and others under the charge of Mirzâ 'Ali Akbar Shâhî, Shaikh Ya'qûb Kashmirî, Haidar Chak and others . . . When the army marched to conquer Kashmir, the idea of the leaders was that they would go by Bhimbar, as large armies could march by that route with ease and celerity, as also some of the landholders there were well-disposed." "The idea was that when the roads were cleared of snow and the winter had come to an end, they would advance through the passes. When the enemy were off their guard, the Mughul army was to proceed by the Pakli route where snowfall is less." (p. 723).

"On this news, Yusuf Shâh Chak resolved to give battle, and sent off many experienced men in order that they might construct a fort near a gorge of the river Kunhâr, a tributary of the Jhelum. In every defile they were to establish a strength and to prepare for war." The force that was sent had passed Bârâmûla by six kâs. To the good fortune of the Mughul army Yusuf Shâh, however, suddenly recalled his men, setting store on the difficulty of crossing the passes, the advent of snow and rain, and the invading army belonging to a hot country. Yusuf Shâh accordingly revised his plan.

But Yusuf Shâh learnt rather late that Akbar's delegation had arrived near Pakhlî or Hazâra, and the Mughul troops had traversed heights and hollows, and had come near Bûliyâsa (old Bolyâsaka, perhaps now called Bunyâr) on the right bank of the Jhelum some 50 miles away from Bârâmûla and six marches to Abbottâbâd. The expedition of Muhammad Shâh Rukh and Râjâ Bhagvân Dâs marched from the west and followed the bed of the Jhelum and the line of the modern road. But they did not get beyond the borders of Kashmir. Jahângîr refers to this when he says (The Tûzuk, Vol. II, p. 132) that Ya'qûb Shâh fought

---

with Bhagavān Dās’ army at Būliyāsa which he calls Bhūlbās and which he says is the boundary of Kashmir. The fact is that Yusuf behaved with great pusillanimity and deserted his army and country. Yā’qūb, however, fought vigorously; and the Mughul army suffered terribly from the cold, the dearness of provisions, the difficult roads, and the rain and snow, and were glad to retreat on any terms.

Meanwhile, Akbar sent Timūr Beg to Yusuf Shāh. Yusuf Shāh, in turn, sent his son Yā’qūb Khān, who had now composed his differences with his father, with presents, to Akbar’s court at Fathpur-Sikrī. On receiving the news of the death of Mīrzā Hakim, Akbar’s step brother, then governing at Kabul, the emperor resolved to proceed thither, and desired to interview Yusuf Shāh on his way. When Yusuf Shāh failed to put in an appearance, Akbar directed Mir Tāhir and Sālih ‘Āqil Diwāna to present Yusuf at court. Yā’qūb Khān reached Kashmir after forced marches to apprise his father, who, spurred on by Khwāja Qāsim, was very angry at the insult Akbar had offered him. Yusuf Shāh’s nobles dissuaded him from going to Akbar’s court. Yusuf was not actually materially helped by Akbar in gaining the throne of Kashmir. But, at the same time, it is true Yusuf would not have been successful so easily had it not been known that Akbar was prepared to aid him. Akbar’s historians henceforth treat Yusuf as a vassal and call him Yusuf Khān. Yusuf’s view was—as Sir W. Haig says (Cambridge History of India, Vol. III, page 292)—that, as he had regained his throne without the aid of foreign troops, he was still an independent sovereign. Akbar on 20th December, 1685, ordered Rājā Bhagavān Dās, Shāh Rukh Mīrzā and Shāh Qulī Khān to advance upon Kashmir.

Akbar did not conduct his campaigns himself, and it was a weakness in him as a ruler, points out Lawrence Binyon,* that he did not always choose his lieutenants wisely. The three generals sent on the Kashmir campaign quarrelled. One of them was “Birbal, a musician, a poet, a jester, rather than a soldier or commander.” Akbar could hear the loss of eight thousand men more calmly than the loss of Birbal who was killed in the engagement. “Birbal, his dear Birbal, his merry companion, whose voice, as he talked or sang in the evenings verses of his own

* Akbar by Lawrence Binyon, Peter Davies Ltd., 1932, pages 134-35.
composition, was still in his ear: Birbal, for whom he had built so beautiful a house at Fathpur-Sikri: Birbal, the one Hindu who had embraced the emperor's new religion of the Divine Faith.” But according to the Siyar-ul-Muta’akkhirin (Vol. I, page 192), Akbar had drawn lots between Abu'l Fazl and Birbal. The latter's name came up and consequently he had to go. As success from the military point of view could not be claimed, Raja Bhagav añ Dås tried to save the situation diplomatically by proposing terms, whereupon Yüsuf Shâh visited his camp. Taking advantage of Yüsuf’s absence, the Kashmir nobles placed Ya’qûb Khân on the throne, and further attacked the imperial army, inflicting a great loss upon it. Raja Bhagav añ Dås, was obliged to make terms with Ya’qûb, the chief of which was the annual payment of tribute by Kashmir to Akbar. The Akbar-nâma says that the Kashmiris offered to agree that “the pulpits and coins should make mention of the Shâhinshâh and that the mint, the saffron, the silk and the game should be imperial. A superintendent or dârûgha should be appointed for each department and then the army should return . . . . His Majesty , . . . . accepted the agreement.”

The Raja took Yüsuf Shâh to Akbar’s court. But Akbar refused to ratify the treaty which Raja Bhagav añ Dås had made, and broke faith with Yüsuf by detaining him as a prisoner. Bhagav añ Dås, sensitive on a point of honour, committed suicide.

Yüsuf Shâh Chak ceased, here, as a ruler. He was generous. He was cultured. He was a liberal Shi’â. (But he was weak and fickle. His lack of decision and his indifference to affairs of state cost him his crown. He should have controlled the factions and his nobles by tact and firmness. He lacked these and ended his life away from his own land. Yüsuf showed bravery in returning the attack of Sher Afgan Khân, whom he killed near Burdawán in Bengal.

YA’QÛB SHÂH CHAK.

[994 A.H. or 1586 A.C.]

As Habib Shâh was the last of the Shâh Miris, the descendants of Sultân Shams-ud-Din Shâh Mîr, Ya’qûb Shâh was the last of the Chaks. On his accession, Ya’qûb made ‘Ali Dâr, a prominent official, his minister, and himself took to a life of ease and pleasure. Misrule naturally followed.
'Ali Ḍār, the first minister, rebelled, fled the city, and suffered death by drowning. The second minister, Muhammad Baṭ, relentlessly persecuted the Sunnis. Qāżī Mūsā, the Chief Qāżī, was ruthlessly done to death by Yaʿqūb Shāh. Yaʿqūb, it seems, wanted the Qāżī to retain the name of Caliph 'Ali to the exclusion of the other three Caliphs of the Prophet in the public prayer. Qāżī Mūsā objected to it. He said that temporal rulers had nothing to do with spiritual matters. Yaʿqūb was offended. He sent for the executioner and put Qāżī Mūsā to death. Qāżī Mūsā's house was also plundered.* The Sunnis were naturally so alarmed that Shaikh Yaʿqūb Sarfī and Bābā Daʿūd Khāṭi petitioned Akbar for help and entered into the following covenant with him:—

1. That the ruling prince shall not interfere with religious affairs, the purchase and sale of commodities, and the rates of cereals.

2. That the dignitaries and officials of Kashmir shall have no Kashmiri, male or female, Hindu or Muslim, as slave. [Possibly this was to forestall the Mughul custom of taking slaves from subjugated areas.]

3. That the inhabitants of the country shall not be molested or oppressed in any way, or begār exacted.

4. That the nobles of Kashmir having been a source of mischief shall have, for the present, no share in the administration of their country.

Qāsim Khān was ordered to march on 28th June, 1586 A.D., upon Kashmir with an army of forty thousand horse and twenty thousand foot. He entered Rajaurī and proceeded to Srinagar. Yaʿqūb made several attempts to retrieve the situation, but met with no success. The flight of Yusuf and Yaʿqūb has been satirized in the following couplet:—

نه ار یوسف نشان دیدم، نه ار یعْقَوب آثاره
عزیزان یوسف ارگُم شد؛ پچَشُد یعْقَوب را باره

* A full account will be found in the Nawādīr-ul-Akẖār by Raffī-ud-Dīn Ahmad Ghāfīl in the British Museum Catalogue of Persian Manuscripts, Add. 24,029, page 299. See note on the Nawādīr-ul-Akẖār on p. 236, footnote.
Mirzā Qāsim entered Srinagar in 995 A.H. (1586 A.C.). From that date Kashmir came under foreign domination. She now embarked upon her career as a Mughul province.

Now that we close the story of Kashmir as an independent country, some observations on this loss of independence are perhaps pertinent.

Shāh Mīr was a foreigner to Kashmir, but, as we said, he saved Kashmir from subjugation by the Tughluqs. The Chaks brought about the defeat and death of Mirzā Haidar Dūghlāt, and prevented Bābur and Humāyūn from forming Kashmir into a principality of theirs. Kashmir was conquered by Bābur’s grandson, the great Akbar no doubt, but this conquest was due more to causes inside Kashmir than to Akbar’s military might. Akbar’s own Prime Minister, Abu’l Fazl, had at one time admitted that if the ruler of Kashmir fortified Kashmir’s passes, an army of “thousands of Rustams” would find it difficult, or rather impossible, to get possession of the country. (See the footnote on page 17).

The last descendants of Shāh Mīr lost Kashmir by internecine warfare and by incompetence. But they were not bigots or religious fanatics. They were tolerant, forbearing and cultured. They made no distinction in the matter of their military recruitment. The Chaks, on the other hand, committed atrocities under the cloak of their new cult, though it is true the Shi’as had suffered from Mirzā Haidar Dūghlāt. The Chaks confined recruitment to the army mostly to the Shi’as. And thus they made the army loyal to themselves alone, but not fit for the general defence of the country as a whole.

Lalitāditya-Muktāpiḍa (725-753 A.C.) had warned Kashmir rulers against raising troops from a single district—implying thereby any single clan or caste. It was wise advice. The Chaks disregarded it. They raised their army and recruited or promoted their army officers mostly from among the Shi’as. The Chaks had themselves become the re-incarnation of feudal Dāmaras of yore. By their heroism the Chaks overthrew the Shāh Mīrīs. By their feudalism and factions they brought about their own fall. For, religious bigotry, the raising of troops mostly from among
themselves, and the consequent factions caused in the people of Kashmir, led to an invitation to Akbar to rid Kashmir from fanaticism and oppression.

There is a lesson from the history of Bulgaria, to which reference cannot but be made. A quotation from the Historians' History of the World will appropriately illustrate it. "For many centuries the Bulgarians held the whole peninsula (of the Balkans) in suspense, shared their literature and culture with the remaining orthodox Slavic world, and by the doctrines of a native sect shook the whole of southern Europe, and what is the conclusion? The nation once so respected and feared, passed politically under the yoke of the Turks, intellectually under the yoke of the Greeks, and remained in this servitude until in our days it has shown that its task is not finished. The three causes which contributed directly to the fall of the Tirnova Empire (of Bulgaria) were Byzantinism, Bogomilism and medieval feudalism." (Vol. XXIV, page 175).

The causes which led to the fall of the Chaks were (i) medieval feudalism that promoted fights and factions among feudal lords, and (ii) Bogomilism, which in their case was religious fanaticism.

[The Bogomilism of Bulgaria was founded by a reformer, named Bogomil (literally, Love of God) about the first half of the tenth century A.C. The theology of Bogomilism was founded on the original two elements, a good and an evil, a kind of Manichaeism imported from the East.]

Let us now bury Ya'qūb Shāh before we turn to the birth of Mughul rule in Kashmir.

We know Ya'qūb was married to Shankar Devī, the daughter of Bahādur Singh, the rāja of Kishťwār, in 1572 A.C. Shankar Devī, as already stated, became Fath Khātūn. In his defeat in 1586, Ya'qūb betook himself to Kishťwār, to the land of his devoted queen. From here he made one more attempt to recover Kashmir in 1887, but failed. In 1588 Ya'qūb died* at Kishťwār and is buried towards the

---

*Raft-ud-Din Ahmad bin 'Abd-us-Sabūr bin Khwāja Muhammad Balkhi Kashmirī, takhallus Ghāfīl, the author of the Navādir-ul-Akhbār, a history of Kashmir from the earliest times to the conquest of Akbar, and completed by the author at Shāhjahānābād in the month of Safar 1136 (1723 A.C.), says that the death of Ya'qūb Khān Chak was caused by means of a khil'ah sent by Akbar.—Riéus's Catalogue, Vol I, 1879, page 300.
south of the tank of Sirkōt on the Chaugān, outside Kishtwār town. Fath Khātūn constructed a water-course in memory of her husband. This water-course must have been a great blessing to Kishtwār as it is afflicted with shortage of water. She also constructed a tank, and another water-course from Kālī Nāg to the village Zewar.

The last resting-place of the last independent Muslim ruler of Kashmir is today but a low heap of lime and stone in a corner of a field in the possession of a Pandit!

This heap of stone and lime represents the last resting-place of the last independent Muslim ruler of Kashmir, Ya'qūb Shāh Chak, in a field in Kishtwār.
Pakhli.—The footnote 1, on page 87, treats of Pakhli, which occurs so many times in this Chapter also, some more information about it is, therefore, given here. ‘An ancient Sarkâr or district of the Mughul Sūbah of the Punjâb, now included in the Hazâra District of the North-West Frontier Province, Pakhli roughly corresponds with the ancient Urasa which Ptolemy places between the Bidaspes (Jhelum) and the Indus. Its king was named Arsakes in the times of Alexander. Hiuen Tsiang found it tributary to Kashmir. In the Kashmir chronicle called the Rājataranginī, it appears, now as a separate kingdom, now as tributary to that State. In it lay Agror, the ancient Atyugrapura. In Bâbûr’s time, this tract was held by the Khakha and Bamba tribes, whose chiefs had been the ancient rulers of the country east of the Indus but had been driven out by the Gibari Sultâns of Bâjaur and Swât; and the tract derives its name from Pakhli one of these conquerors. In the Āin-i-Akbarī it is described as bounded on the east by Kashmir, on the south by the country of the Gakhars, on the west by Attock, and on the north by Kotor (Chitrâl). Under Durrânī rule, Šâdât Khân, was chosen as chief of Pakhli, then a dependency of Kashmir. He founded the fort of Garhi Šâdât Khân, which was the headquarter of Āzâd Khân’s rebellion against Timûr Shâh. Early in the nineteenth century Pakhli comprised three districts: Mansehra in the south and south-east, Shinkiari (subdivided into Kandî and Maidân) in the north-east, and Bhir-Kand in the centre. The valleys of Kâgân Bhogarmang and Agror were dependent on it.’—The Imperial Gazetteer of India Vol. XIX (New edition), Oxford Press, 1908, p. 318-19] “The Pakhli plain of the Mansehra Tahsil, 3,000 feet above sea-level, is 11 miles from north to south, and 10 from east to west. It is a fertile, highly cultivated tract, especially in the western portion which is irrigated by the Siran river.”—Gazetteer of the Hazâra District, 1907. Compiled and edited by H. D. Watson, C. S., Settlement Officer, Chatto and Windus, London, 1908, p. 3.
The Mughul rulers concerned with the history of Kashmir.

[1586 A.C. TO 1752 A.C.]

1. Jalāl-ud-Dīn Akbar, 1556 to 1605 A.C. = 963 to 1014 A.H. Conquers Kashmir in 1586 A.C.

2. Nūr-ud-Dīn Jahāngīr 1605 to 1627 A.C. = 1014 to 1037 A.H.

3. Dāvar Bakhsh, son of Prince Khusrū, the eldest son of Jahāngīr, 1627 A.C. = 1037 A.H. Khusrū had died in 1622.

4. Shihāb-ud-Dīn Shāh Jahān, 1628 to 1657 A.C. = 1037 to 1068 A.H.

5. Murād Bakhsh, the fourth son of Shāh Jahān, 1657 A.C. = 1068 A.H.

6. Shāh Shujā', second son of Shāh Jahān, 1657 A.C. = 1068 A.H.

7. Muḥyī'ud-Dīn Aurangzīb 'Ālamgīr, 1658 to 1707 A.C. = 1068 to 1118 A.H.

8. A'zam Shāh, second son of Aurangzīb 'Ālamgīr, 1707 A.C. = 1118 A.H.


10. Qutb-ud-Dīn Mu'azzam Shāh 'Ālam Bahādur, 1707 to 1712 A.C. = 1119 to 1124 A.H.

11. 'Azīm-ush-Shān, second son of Shāh 'Ālam Bahādur, 1712 A.C. = 1124 A.H.

12. Mu'izz-ud-Dīn Jahāndār Shāh, eldest son of Shāh 'Ālam Bahādur, 1712 A.C. = 1124 A.H.

13. Muḥyī'ud-Dīn Farrukh Siyar, son of 'Azīm-ush-Shān, 1713 to 1719 A.C. = 1124 to 1131 A.H.

14. Rafī'-ud-Darajāt, son of Rafī'-ush-Shān and third nephew of Jahāndār Shāh, 1719 A.C. = 1131 A.H.
15. Rafi’-ud-Daula Shāh Jahān II son of Rafi’-ush-Shān and second nephew of Jahāndār Shāh, 1719 A.C. = 1131 A.H.

16. Nasir-ud-Din Muhammad Shāh, son of Jahān Shāh the fourth son of Mu‘azzam Shāh ‘Ālam Bahādur, and nephew of Jahāndār Shāh, 1719 to 1748 A.C. = 1131 to 1161 A.H.

17. Muhammad Ibrāhīm, son of Rafi’-ush-Shān and nephew of Jahāndār Shāh (simultaneously with Muhammad Shāh), 1719 to 1720 A.C. = 1131 to 1132 A.H.

18. Mujāhid-ud-Dīn Ahmad Shāh Bahādur, son of Muhammad Shāh, 1748 to 1754 A.C. = 1161 to 1167 A.H.

Kashmir then goes to the Afghān ruler, Ahmad Shāh Durrānī in 1752.
CHAPTER VI

KASHMIR UNDER THE MUGHULS

[1586 A.C. TO 1752 A.C.]

Brave though the Chaks were, they lacked the qualities essential for the making of successful rulers and administrators. Hence the rapid close of their sway extending over only a generation—about 31 years. It is unnecessary to recapitulate the early Mughul attempts on Kashmir since they have already been related in the preceding Chapter. They begin with Bābur, continue with Humāyūn and Mīrzā Haidar Dūghlāt, and are successful with Akbar. Akbar started interference with the affairs of Kashmir in the time of 'Alī Shāh Chak. Then he helped Yūsuf Shāh Chak against Lohar or Gauhar Shāh Chak. Later he detained Yūsuf, and finally ousted Yūsuf's son, Ya'qūb, and annexed Kashmir. The Mughuls held Kashmir for 166 years. Disintegrating forces, however, gathered strength under the Emperor Muhammad Shāh, and Nādir Shāh's invasion in 1739 A.C., hastened the disruption of the gigantic fabric of the Mughul empire. Nādir Shāh annexed Afghānistān. After his death, Ahmad Shāh Durrānī obtained complete control over Afghānistān and added Kashmir to his dominions when the Emperor Ahmad Shāh, the son of Muhammad Shāh, was on the throne of Delhi.

The last effort of the last of the Chaks.

After its conquest by Akbar in 1586 A.C. Kashmir did not readily submit to Mughul rule. Ya'qūb Shāh, the ex-Chak king, was still exerting himself to regain his lost kingdom. Ibrāhīm Chak, Ya'qūb's brother, and 'Alī Malik Chādūra, the brother of Malik Haidar Chādūra, joined him. They took the Mughuls unawares at Chēr-wani* (in the Badgām Tahsil). Ya'qūb Shāh Chak re-entered Srinagar as king.

*Chēr-wani and Chēr-ūdar are two names that appear in the Persian histories of Kashmir in regard to the same place. Chēr-wani means the garden of Chēr or wild apricots, Chēr-ūdar means the Udar or Karēwa or the alluvial plateau of wild apricots. The place
Sayyid Abu'l Ma'ali Baihaqi, the second son of Sayyid Mubarak Khan Baihaqi, Shamsi Chak, Sayyid Husain Baihaqi and Shams Duli next worsted the Mughuls. The whole country was up in arms and the loss of Kashmir was imminent.

[The Bahārīstān-i-Shāhi is a history of Kashmir from the earliest times to 1023 A.H. (1614 A.C.). The author, whose name is not given, (Add 16,706, Ricci's Catalogue, Vol. I, 1879, pages 296-297), appears to have been a dependant of a Kashmiri, Sayyid Abu'l Ma'ali Baihaqi, to whom he gives a prominent place in the later period of his history. This Sayyid, Abu'l Ma'ali, was the second son of Sayyid Mubarak Khan Baihaqi who was raised for some months to the throne of Kashmir in 986 A.H. (1578 A.C.), and died in exile at Erīzībi in 999 A.H. (1590 A.C.). Abu'l Ma'ali played an active part in the frequent broils which disturbed Kashmir for some years before its conquest by Akbar, and was thus placed under the command of Rijūi Mīr Singh whom he served for four and twenty years. After the latter's death in 1021 A.H. (1612 A.C.), he was presented, with Haidar Malik Chidure, to the Emperor Jahāngīr who conferred upon him a mansāb.

This Abu'l Ma'ali, therefore, should not be confused with Abu'l Ma'ali whom Badayūni calls 'of noble Sayyid extraction and of the country of Kāshghar,' and was one of the Amirās of Humāyūn. He married Māh Kūchak Begam's daughter Fakhr-un-Nisā, had quarrels with Bairam Khān, and was ultimately strangled to death by Mīrzā Sulaimān at Kābul during the 'Id of Ramazān in the ninth year of Akbar's accession. Abu'l Ma'ali, too, according to the Tabaqāt-i-Akbari (De's English translation, p. 734), and the Akbar-nāma (Beveridge's English Translation. Vol. 2, p. 154), did come on a raid to Kashmir in the first year of Akbar's accession and was at Naushahra, a town between Bhimbar and Rajauri. Abu'l Ma'ali marched on to Bārāmūla and was defeated at Mārkalah near Paṭan by Ghāzī Chak, and 'turned his face to flight.' Shāh Abu'l Ma'ali's incursion is noted by Pandit Shuka in the Kings of Kashmir (p. 389)].

Qāsim Khān, Mir Bahr, the conqueror and viceroy of Kashmir, at last sought help from Akbar who dispatched Sayyid Yūsuf Khān Ṣulāvi Mashhādi with a strong force of
twenty-five thousand horse. The Emperor further instructed Muhammad Baṭ and Bābā Khalil, two influential Kashmiri nobles then residing at his court, to accompany Sayyid Yūsuf and render him all possible help. These nobles won over several powerful Chaks to their side. At the same time, Ya'qūb's indiscreet behaviour towards his nobles and his unfair treatment of Hindus and Sunnis brought about his final overthrow in August 1589. After three years' struggle with Akbar, Ya'qūb, then, surrendered to him, and retired to Kishtwār accompanied by Sayyid Abu'l Ma'āli Baitaqi and Ibrāhim Khān called Iba Khān. The independence of Kashmir was thus completely ended in 1589. Qāsim Khān, Mir Bahr, came to the court with several Kashmiri nobles, leaving Sayyid Yūsuf Khān Rizāvī Mashhādī as governor in his place.

The end of Yūsuf Shāh Chak.

Yūsuf Shāh Chak was exiled to Bihār, where he was detained under the charge of Mān Singh, the governor. A year or so later, Yūsuf Shāh Chak was appointed to the ‘command of 500,’ a rank carrying a salary ranging from 2,100 to 2,500 rupees a month and a grant in Bihār. Although this appointment was far from being commensurate to the dignity of a deposed sovereign, yet Yūsuf Shāh served in that capacity under Mān Singh for several years. The time and manner of his death do not appear to be recorded by Akbar's historians. But Haidar Malik Chāḍūra says that Yūsuf died in Hindustān on account of acute insanity and deep melancholia, separated, as he was, from his own land, from his own kingdom, and from his own accomplished Queen Ḥabba Khāṭūn.

1. The Ta'rikh-i-Ā'zmi, Ta'rikh-i-Hasan and Ta'rikh-i-Khalil Marjānpūrī all spell this name as Eba Khān, while Pandit Nārāyan Kaul 'Ājiz, writes Amina Khān.

2. The History of Kashmir from the earliest times to 1122 A.H. (1710 A.C.) is by Nārāyaṇ Kaul 'Ājiz. The author was urged by Kashmirian nobles to write its history which he began in the fourth year of the reign of Shāh 'Alam in 1122 A.H. (1710 A.C.). 'Ārif Khān, a Kashmirian who was the Nā'īb and Diwān of the Sūbadār, had collected the Sanskrit chronicles of Kashmir, and Ibrāhim Khān, afterwards 'Alī Mardān Khān, wished to become acquainted with their contents. The author had also before him the history of Malik Haidar Chāḍūra. Nārāyaṇ Kaul condensed all this material from Sanskrit and Persian into the present abridgement known as the Ta'rikh-i-Kashmir by him. Nārāyaṇ Kaul was also a fine poet of Persian.
The treatment of the ex-ruler of Kashmir cannot be described, in the words of Dr. V. A. Smith, as generous. In fact, it is one of the chief blots on Akbar's character. Abu'l Fazl says that Akbar's appointment of Yūsuf Shāh was to test his fitness for restoration to Kashmir. But there is no evidence that Akbar ever proposed to make amends for the wrong which he had done to Yūsuf Shāh Chak—that Yūsuf who disposed of Sher Afgan for Jahāngīr and corrected Akbar's great singer Miyān Tān Sēn, according to the testimony of Malik Haidar Chāḍura as already noted!

It is believed in Kashmir that Akbar caused a change to be effected in the dress of the people, and the effeminate pheran (from the Persian pairahan, the long, loose shirt) was thus introduced together with the Kangūrī, or, in Kashmirī, Kangar,* the chafing vessel. "And it is possible," says Lieutenant Newall (page 434), "that this measure, one out of a long series of acts of systematic tyranny and spirit-breaking oppression, may have had its effect in changing the character of this once brave and warlike race." Such a belief, however, lacks authority.

Akbar's reign in Kashmir.

In May 1589 Akbar himself came to Kashmir by travelling on horseback or on foot. To be precise like Abu'l Fazl, "His Majesty planted his standards in the city of Srinagar on 25th Khurdād, (5th June, 1589) after 8 hours 24 minutes." Pandit Ćuka mentions that "Jalāl-ud-Dīn on the seventh bright lunar day of Ashīdha pleased the Brāhmans boys with gifts of gold, and they blessed him. He then went to Mārtāṇḍa and gave cows adorned with pearls and gold to Brāhmanas. He was glad to see Kashmir with its vines and walnut trees and of high and charming woods." (Kings of Kashmir, Vol. III, page 417.)

Three well-known Qasidas on Kashmir.

Akbar spent a month visiting towns, villages, springs, and streams, of which the most important

---

*The statement that Sultān Zain-ul-Ābidīn "in his effort to reduce the proud spirit of the Hindus, insisted on the use of the kangār, and the gown" is incredible on the face of it, in view of the Sultān's well-known attitude towards Hindus, and his invitation to those Hindus who had left the Valley for fear of Malik Sūhabhaṭṭa to return and re-settle.
are Pāmpar,* Bijbihāra and Islāmābād (Anantnāg). Malik-us-Shu‘arā Abu’l Faiz Faizi refers to this progress of Akbar in a beautiful qaṣīda (eulogistic poem) of 98 couplets some of which are—

*Pāmpar, the ancient Padmāpura, was founded in the beginning of the 9th century A.C. by Padma, the powerful uncle of a puppet king named Chippaṭa-Jayapīḍa. It is now a village having a population of 4,446, and is chiefly noted for its saffron fields which blossom in October-November when large numbers of people visit them. Shāh Jahān here built a bridge on the Jhelum in 1635 A.C. Near a temple, built by Padma, stands the ziyarat of Mir Muhammad Hamadān, son of Shāh Hamadān. Three miles north-east of Pāmpar lies the village Uyan, known for its sulphur springs and ancient bathing tanks.
The poet 'Urfit also accompanied the emperor, and wrote the well-known Qasida, the first two lines of which are:

"It must be delightful to come to this Jhelum valley, in April or May, from the burned up plains of India, and it might revive even a dying man." And so 'Urfit is not alone,—two centuries after 'Urfit, Andrew Wilson corroborates him. So did Sir Lancelot Graham, ex-Governor of Sind, when he told me at Sonmarg in 1943 that he was dying and that Kashmir climate had revived him.

Munshi Ghulam Husain Tabatabai in his Siyar-ul-Muta'akhkirin, (Volume I, page 199) notes the following lines in praise of Kashmir at Akbar's visit in the 34th year of his accession:

\[ \text{چی، کشمیر انتخاب هفت کشور} \]
\[ \text{قسم خورده بازاس اپ کوتر} \]
It must not be imagined that this was merely a pleasure trip to the Happy Valley. Akbar respected the feelings of his subjects by proclaiming that no soldier should molest any citizen. He fixed the camp of his army at Shihāb-ud-dīnpor or Shādīpūr about nine miles in a direct line to the north-west of Srinagar, and himself halted in Bāgh Hasan Shāh Chak, Khwāja Bāzār, Nauhaṭṭa, Srinagar. On the representations to the Emperor of the Sūbadār, Sayyid Yūsuf Khān Rizavī Mashhādī, that the assessment was excessive Qāzī Nūrullāh and Totā Rām* had been directed by the Emperor to submit a report on land produce, and also to make the tax thereon uniform. But as the intended measure jeopardized the interests of both officials and landholders, the authorities deputed by the Emperor were considerably hampered in their task. Qāzī Nūrullāh reported the matter to the Emperor, who dispatched Hasan Beg and Shaikh ‘Umar to help him. The Qāzī fixed the pay of the Kashmir army in cash instead of kind. This precipitated the storm that was already brewing. Çuka also blames the Qāzī for his harshness which was responsible for quarrels caused among the Mughuls themselves (Vol. III, p. 418). The Sūbadār’s officials and landowners both united. And Yādgār Mirzā, his cousin, left in charge to act as Nāzīm in the absence of Sayyid Yūsuf Khān Rizavī Mashhādī who had himself escorted Akbar out of the Valley, was declared as king. Kashmir was once again in revolt. But it did not take long to suppress the rebellion, which lasted only fifty-one days. Yādgār Mirzā was taken prisoner and beheaded. Prince Salim interceded on behalf of Sayyid Yūsuf Khān Rizavī Mashhādī, whom the emperor pardoned. As a result of this insurrection Akbar asked Shaikh Faizī, Mir Sharīf Āmulī, Khwāja Īgī

*It is sometimes said that the Mughuls did not employ Kashmiri Pandits in any high capacity. It is not so. Pandit Totā Rām was the peshkār or deputy of Mirzā Yūsuf Khān and Pandit Mahādeva was ‘Alī Mardān Khān’s peshkār to whom he entrusted all powers of administration.
Muhammad Husain to scrutinize the accounts of Mar-rāj, while Khwāja Shams-ud-Din Khāfi and Kūar (Kaũwar) Mān Singh were sent to examine those of Kam-rāj. Though the autumn crop was over, yet they were able by their skill to make an estimate of it. Čuka notes that, at this time, the Emperor ordered Shaikh Faizi "to distribute one thousand pieces of silver among Brāhmanas and beggars who dwelt in villages and in woods, and in other places." (P. 423). Akbar appointed Qalīch Khān governor of Kashmir. Qalīch continued in this office for six years. He spent this period chiefly in extirpating the Chaks and suppressing the malcontents.

The building of the Nāgar-nagar.

During the first visit, Akbar had directed Sayyid Yūsuf Khān Rizāvi Māshhādi, his governor, to build the Nāgar-nagar, or Naga-nagari as Čuka puts it (page 426), around the slopes of the Hari-parbat or the Kūh-i-Mārān (literally, the Hill of Snakes), and the work was completed at a cost of one crore and ten lakhs. The construction of this great bastioned stone-wall was undertaken, it was given out, chiefly with a view to provide work for the people. Under cover of this construction it was, perhaps, also intended to overawe the people of the Valley. Čuka says that the Mughuls were to live within the wall so that the soldiers could not, then, molest the local people (p. 426). The work was supervised by a Kashmiri, Mir Muhammad Husain Kanṭ by name, and completed during the reign of Jahāngīr. In the palace there was a little garden with a small building in it in which Akbar, according to Jahāngīr, used constantly to sit. As it was out of order, Jahāngīr deputed Mu’tamad Khān to put the garden in order and repair the building. It was "adorned with pictures by master hands" so that it was "the envy of the picture gallery of China." And Jahāngīr called the garden Nūr-afzā. (The Tūzuk, English Translation, Vol. II, pp. 150-151).

Palaces were erected and gardens were laid out. These added a charm to the natural beauty of the country. During his second visit to Kashmir in 1592 A.C. =1000-1001 A.H., Akbar directed operations against Aju Rāi, the ruler of Tibet Kālān (major) and Khurd (minor), parts of Little Tibet (Baltistān)—who offered resistance. The latter was consequently replaced by ‘Ali Rāi who held a principality in that vicinity. Jahāngīr refers to ‘Ali Muhammad, the son
of 'Ali Rāi, deputed by his father to be attached to the Mughul court (Vol. II, p. 288.)

On this second visit, Akbar was accompanied by Bakhshi Nizām-ud-Din Ahmad, the author of the Tabaqāt-i-Akbarī.

Khwaja Nizam-ud-Din Ahmad, whose year of birth may be taken as 958 A.H. or 1551 A.C., was the son of Khwaja Muqim Hiravi (of Herat). Khwaja Muqim was one of Bābur's officials and about the close of his reign was Diwān-i-Buyūtāt or Barrack Officer, or perhaps, Steward of the Royal Household. Khwaja Muqim acted as Vazir of Humāyūn, and was an official of Akbar's government too.

In addition to being a student of history, Khwaja Nizam-ud-Din Ahmad, his son, was a patron of poets and apparently himself used to write poetry. The interest of Khwaja Nizam-ud-Din Ahmad in historical matters and his skill as a writer is evidenced by the fact, points out Dr. Baini Prashād, in his Preface to B. De's English translation of the Tabaqāt-i-Akbarī, that when Akbar ordered the preparation of the History of the Kings of Islam or the Ta'rikh-i-Allā in 990 A.H. (1582 A.C.), he employed the Khwaja as one of the seven authors.

The Khwaja's interest in Sufism and theology is indicated by his association with Sufis and Shaikhs and religious people in general. As Blochmann says, "Nizam-ud-Din was a pious Muslim," and yet "managed to rise higher and higher in Akbar's favour by keeping his religious views to himself." He is one of the two or three with whom the orthodox Mullā 'Abdul Qādir Badāyūnī is pleased.

In addition to being a scholar, Nizam-ud-Din was a good soldier and administrator. He was attached to Akbar's court, according to one statement, from the thirty-fifth year of his life. In 980 A.H. (1572 A.C.), the Khwaja was appointed Bakhshī in Gujrat where his duty was to act as the head of the military department and to look after recruitment, reviews and other similar affairs connected with the army.

For his services in Gujrat, the Khwaja was honoured with the gift of a horse, a robe of honour and an increase in his stipend. Later, the Khwaja carried on a successful campaign in Soraṭ in the Ran of Kachh. He was, after this, appointed Bakhshī in the year 1000 A.H. (1591-92 A.C.). The Mir Bakhshī, according to the Ā'in-i-Akbarī, was one of the nobles of the state.

Nizām-ud-Din was a great favourite of the Emperor at this time when he accompanied Akbar to Kashmir. The Khwaja says his account of Kashmir which terminates with the end of the 38th year of Akbar's reign, is written in a "summary manner" but that "most of the great events have been succinctly narrated." The reader will completely agree with this last part. And Mr. De, by his edition of the Persian text and English translation and scholarly notes, has made the whole work very intelligible and quite clear.
Bakhshī Nizām-ud-Dīn Ahmad utilized, for the compilation of the *Tabaqāt* in respect of Kashmir, as he himself notes: (i) *Ta'rikh-i-Mirzā Haidar* and (ii) *Ta'rikh-i-Kashmir*. The first is the *Ta'rikh-i-Rashādī* and we have already discussed it. The other is the *Ta'rikh-i-Kashmir*, the author of which is not mentioned. But Dr. Bānī Prashād in his Preface (p. xxx) says that this is probably the translated from Sanskrit into Persian for Akbar in 998 A.H. by Mullā Shāh Muḥammad of Shāhābād not far from Ver-nāg, Kashmir, and re-written in an easy style in 999 A.H. (1590 A.C.) by Mullā 'Abdul Qādir Badāyūnī. This manuscript is in the British Museum (*Rieu’s Catalogue*, Volume I, page 296, Add. 24,032). [Reference to it will be found on pages 163-4 of *Kashir.*] The *Tabaqāt* closes with the year 1002 A.H. Fīrishta and others come after the author of the *Tabaqāt*.

[While staying at Lāhore in attendance on the Emperor, Khwāja Nizām-ud-Dīn Ahmad laid out or purchased a garden, and it was in this garden that he was buried after his death in his forty-fifth year, on the banks of the Rāvi, on 14th Safar, 1003 A.H. (19th October, 1694 A.C.) when he was expected to rise much higher in Akbar’s favour. (A priceless pearl has left the world) gives the date of his death.]

Akbar spent the summer of 1597 A.C. in Kashmir, introduced a lighter assessment of revenue and returned to Lāhore in the early winter. Towards the close of Akbar’s reign, a severe famine occurred in Kashmir. It developed to such an alarming extent that the emperor had to transport grain and cereals from Siālkōt to alleviate the misery of the sufferers. Two priests, Father Hierosme Xavier, a grand-nephew of St. Francis Xavier, and Beroist-de-Gois who accompanied Akbar at his request to Kashmir, relate their experience of this famine. The famine, they say, was so grievous that “many mothers were rendered destitute and having no means of nourishing their children exposed them for sale in the public places of the city. Moved to compassion by this pitiable sight; the Father bought many of these little ones, who soon after receiving baptism, yielded up their spirits to their Creator. A certain Saracen (Muslim) seeing the charity of the Father towards these children brought him one of his own; but the Father gave it back to the mother, together with a certain sum of money for its support; for he was unwilling to baptize it. seeing that, if it survived there was little prospect of its being able to live a Christian life in that country.”

The new land assessment which had followed the remittances of the tax, called *bāj tamgha*, resulted in an
Bhimbar

Bhimbar is a small town situated in the plains, on the right bank of a stream of the same name, which flows into the Chenab near Wazirabad. It is about 29 miles north of Gujrat, 22 miles east of Jhelum, and 50 miles north-west of Sialkot.

The place is of some importance, as being the point of departure from the plains for Kashmir; it is distant about 150 miles from Srinagar, by the Pir Panjal or Pantsal route.

The town, which is mostly built of stone, is surrounded on all except the south side by a low hill, about 500 or 600 feet in height.

There is an old Mughul sarai in the middle of the town, and a brick gahrī or fort of no strength on the north; the former building is used as the thanah and the district officer's residence.

To the south of the town are two buildings for the reception of travellers. There is also a good encamping ground supplied with water from the nadi. This stream is usually shallow and fordable, but is liable to freshets.

Bhimbar was anciently governed by an independent Rājā; the last of the line, Sultān Khān, opposed Ranjit Singh's designs upon Kashmir, and is stated to have been blinded by Rājā Gulāb Singh who, in his early career, was an employé of Sultān Khān.

The ruins of the palace of the old Rājā of Bhimbar may be traced near the village, on the left of the road towards Kashmir.

This small mosque, on the reverse, has a façade of three arches. "The outer face is soiled by constant exposure to the weather. It was originally covered with painted floral designs which still exist in considerable freshness on the inner walls where they were protected from the inclemency of weather. The lower part of the mural decoration consists of a dado divided into panels which are dark red, fringed with minutely worked floral scrolls. The façade of the arches, their intrados, pendentives, etc., are covered with painted cypresses, palms and various other trees and flowers, natural and conventional. The whole surface is glazed."

"There are two windows at the sides which originally possessed brick screens with star-shaped perforations. The core of the structure consists of rubble stones built in lime over which was applied a thick coat of lime bajri which again was superimposed by a thinner one of gypseum. The last served as the background of the paintings."

"The mosque is a very interesting relic."—Extract from the Kashmir Archaeological Report. See also page 620.
The Mosque at Bhimbar, a town south of Rajauri on the old Gaurat to Kashmir road.

[See note on the reverse.]
increase of revenue, which, as recorded by officials, amounted to over a lakh of kharwar. A kharwar was equal to 3 maunds and 8 seers of Akbar’s reign, and was reckoned at 16 dam of Akbar’s currency. In normal times, a maund of rice could be purchased for five annas.

In the reign of Akbar the Subah of Kashmir included Kabul and Qandahar, according to the A’in-i-Akbari (Vol. II, p. 134).

The re-alignment and construction by Muhammad Qasim Khan, Akbar’s chief engineer, of the great empire route by way of Gujrat, Bhimbar and Shupiyān ensured the regularity of traffic with India. Faizi referring to such improvements says:

بنعم مُخسرو والا ز تیشه كوه كنان
هزار جوک روان كر د صاف تر ار شير
چنان پگو و كمر خاره را تراشیدند
که بمار مُوبک شاهی سرد مسر و مسر
زمین مرصة كشیم آسان ہگندشت
بقر دولت تقیبل پایہہ سربر

Jahangir.

Jahangir was essentially a lover of Nature and Kashmir, therefore, appealed to him particularly. He paid eight visits to Kashmir two of which were in the company of his father and six during his own reign, viz. 14th, 16th, 18th, 19th, 20th and 21st.

Jahangir was accompanied by his beautiful Queen Nur Jahān “whose romantic spirit appears to have led her lord and Emperor into the most secluded and picturesque recesses of the Valley.” “Many of these pleasant retreats are to this day pointed out as the spots where the royal pair were wont to disport themselves in those days of regal abandon.” The royal pair must have passed their time in festivities of every kind. In summer nights, the Dal lake

1. Kharwar, literally meaning an ‘ass-load,’ is the standard measure for weighing large quantities in Kashmir. The word is abbreviated as khar (or khari of the Rajātaraṅgini). Nowadays a khar is equal to a little over two maunds. See footnote in Chapter X, Section “Weights and Measures.”

must have reflected brilliant illuminations and fantastic fireworks, and the air must have "re-echoed to the sound of song and dance." Akbar, Jahāngīr and his Nūr Jāhān, says Mrs. Stuart,1 are far more vivid personalities in India than Elizabeth or the Stuart sovereigns are in England. To please his consort, Jahāngīr is said to have introduced the chinār2 or the plane tree from Irān, her native country. But this is wrong. The Kāshmirī word bāwāyn shows the existence of the chinār in Kāshmir before Jahāngīr, who himself refers to the girth and spreading shade of chinārs with wonder. Jahāngīr’s account of the journey and his impressions of the country, its people, their costumes and modes of life, of the variety of its picturesque scenery, his comments on men, women and things are all vividly recorded in his own inimitable style in his Memoirs. He built many palaces and summer-

2. The Chinar.—Shams-ul-Ulamā Sir Jivanji Jamshedji Modi traces the plane-tree to Irān. He finds its mention in the Pahlavi Bundehesh [the commentary on one of the 21 books of the Zend-Avesta. The Bundehesh gives an account of the Creation as told in the Zend-Avesta]. Herodotus refers to the plane-tree as being held in estimation by the Achemenian kings like Xerxes and Darius, the father of Xerxes. Later Persians call the plane-tree Darakht-i-Fazl or ‘the Tree of Grace.’ Teherān, by some, is called the ‘City of Plane-Trees.’ And hence, Longfellow’s lines:—

Bright with the sheen of the dew, each glittering tree of the forest,

Flashed like the plane-tree the Persian adorned with mantles and jewels.

—Evangeline, Part the First, II, Lines 22-23.

Pliny in his Natural History (Book XII, Chap. 1, pp. 357-58) refers to the plane-tree having been brought on the Ionian Sea into the Island of Diomedea to beautify the tomb of Diomedea. From there it was transplanted into Sicily and later to Italy, where it was planted as "a most singular, rare and special tree" throughout the peninsula. It was carried to Terwin and Tournay in France, where "it was counted as an appearance to the very soil." Those who walked and refreshed themselves under its shadow were to "pay a custom to the people of Rome." Spain, too, had the plane-tree. All this happened, says Pliny, about the time that Rome was sacked by the Gauls. The plane-tree came to be so highly esteemed that people would "water them with wine." Pliny gives several instances of large plane-trees in Italy, in the hollow trunks of which, kings and emperors had made banqueting places—The Journal of the Anthropological Society of Bombay, Volume VI, 1901-03, No. 8, pages 427-434. Jahāngīr also notes large plane-trees in Kashmir. He says: "I myself was riding on a horse, with five at her saddled horses and two eunuchs, we went inside it,"—English Translation, Vol. II, p. 154. The chinār is also a native of Farghāna, Central Asia.
houses. He completed the construction of the celebrated Shālimār Gardens. The ruins of palaces at Mānas-bal, Acha-bal and Vēr-nāg, etc., attest to Nūr Jāhān's taste in selecting picturesque sites.

The late Justice Shāh Dīn has beautifully described the scene in his well-known poem *Shālāmār—*

*Oh! best of delights as it everywhere is*  
To be near the loved One,—what a rapture is his  
Who in moonlight and music thus sweetly may glide  
O'er the Lake of Cashmere with that One by his side!  
If woman can make the worst wilderness dear,  
Think, think what a Heaven she must make of Cashmere!

...
When from power and pomp and the trophies of war
He flew to that Valley, forgetting them all
With the Light of the Haram, his young Nourmahal,
When free and uncrown'd as the Conqueror roved
By the banks of that Lake, with his only beloved,
He saw, in the wreaths she would playfully snatch
From the hedges, a glory his crown could not match,
And preferred in his heart the least ringlet that curl'd
Down her exquisite neck, to the throne of the world!
There's the beauty, for ever unchangeingly bright,
Like a long sunny lapse of a summer day's light,
Shining on, shining on, by no shadow made tender,
Till Love falls asleep in the sameness of splendour:
This was not the beauty—oh! nothing like this,
That to young Nourmahal gave such magic of bliss!
But that loveliness, ever in motion, which plays
Like the light upon autumn's soft shadowy days,
Now here and now there, giving warmth as it flies
From the lips to the cheek, from the cheek to the eyes;
Now melting in mist and now breaking in gleams,
Like the glimpses a saint has of heaven in his dreams!
When pensive, it seemed as if that very grace,
That charm of all others, was born with her face!
And when angry—'for e'en in the tranquillest climes
Light breezes will ruffle the flowers sometimes—
The short, passing anger but seem'd to awaken
New beauty, like flowers that are sweetest when shaken.

"There too the Haram's inmates smile—
Maids from the West, with sun-bright hair,
And from the Garden of the Nile,
Delicate as the roses there;
Daughters of Love from Cyprus' rocks,
With Paphian* diamonds in their locks;
Light Peri forms, such as there are
On the gold meads of Candahar;
And they, before whose sleepy eyes,
In their own bright Kathaian bowers,
Sparkle such rainbow butterflies,
That they might fancy the rich flowers
That round them in the sun lay sighing,
Had been by magic all set flying!
Everything young, everything fair,
From East and West is blushing there,
Except—except—O Nourmahal!
Thou loveliest, dearest of them all,
The one, whose smile shone out alone,
Amidst a world the only one!

*Of Paphos, a city of Cyprus, sacred to Aphrodite or Venus,
"The board was spread with fruits and wine; 
With grapes of gold, like those that shine 
On Casbin’s hills;—pomegranates full 
Of melting sweetness, and the pears, 
And sunniest apples that Caubul 
In all its thousand gardens bears;— 
Plantains, the golden and the green, 
Malaya’s nectar’d magusteen; 
Prunes of Bokhara, and sweet nuts 
From the far groves of Samarcand, 
And Basra dates, and apricots, 
Seed of the Sun, from Iran’s land;— 
With rich conserve of Visna cherries, 
Of orange flowers, and of those berries 
That, wild and fresh, the young gazelles 
Feed on in Ernc’s rocky dells. 
All these in richest vases smile, 
In baskets of pure sandal-wood 
And urns of porcelain from that isle 
Sunk underneath the Indian flood, 
Whence oft the lucky diver brings 
Vases to grace the halls of kings. 
Wines, too, of every clime and hue, 
Around their liquid lustre threw; 
Amber Rosolli,—the bright dew 
From vineyards of the Green-Sea gushing; 
And Shiraz wine, that richly ran 
As if that jewel, large and rare, 
The ruby, for which Kublai-Khan Offer’d a city’s wealth, was blushing, 
Melted within the goblets there! 
And amply Selim quaffs of each, 
And seems resolved the flood shall reach 
His inward heart,—shedding around 
A genial deluge, as they run,

1. Qazvin, in Irān, is on the main route to Europe. 16th and 17th century travellers spell it as in the text above. 
2. ‘Tuhm-i-Shams’ is a kind of delicious apricot. 
3. Visna is no other than Vishnia, originally Greek but now a Russian word, meaning cherry. The vishnia is a fine cherry in Russia proper and in Turkistān. 
4. Erac now written ‘Irāq. But here the reference is probably to the district of ‘Irāq-i-‘Ajam in Irān, situated to the west of Qumm between Hamadān and Isfahān. 
5. Rosolli is the name of an Italian liquor. Here perhaps the meaning is Rosolli of amber colour, viz., yellow wine. 
6. Green-Sea. The allusion is to the Persian Gulf. 
7. A Mongol emperor (b. 1216, d. 1294) was the grandson of Changiz Khan. Kublai Khan ruled as emperor of China and Central Asia from 1259 to 1294 A. C.
That soon shall leave no spot undrown'd,
For Love to rest its wings upon.

"Come hither, come hither,—by night and by day,
We linger in pleasures that never are gone;
Like the waves of the summer, as one dies away.
Another as sweet and as shining comes on.
And the love that is over, in expiring, gives birth
To a new one as warm, as unequal'd in bliss;
And, oh! if there be an Elysium on earth,
It is this, it is this.

"The mask is off—the charm is wrought—
And Selim to his heart has caught,
In blushes, more than ever bright,
His Nourmahal, his Haram's Light!
And well do vanish'd frowns enhance
The charm of every brighten'd glance;
And dearer seems each dawning smile
For having lost its light awhile;
And, happier now for all her sighs
As on his arm her head repose,
She whispers him, with laughing eyes,
'Remember, love, the Feast of Roses.'"
[Malik Haidar Chadura.—Malik Haidar Chadura, whose History we have utilized, must here come in for a few words. Malik Haidar wrote his History of Kashmir from the earliest times to his own, in Persian, in 1027 A.H. (1617 A.C.), the 12th year of the accession of Jahangir. The total number of pages of the copy used by me on loan from Khān Bahādur Maulāvī Zafar Hasan, B.A. (Alig.), o.b.e., Retired Deputy Director-General of Archaeology, Nusheman, Delhi Gate, Delhi, is 235, the number of folios is 118. The size is 7" 4", the written portion of the folios being 5\(\frac{3}{4}\)" 2\(\frac{1}{2}\)". The number of lines per page is 17. This manuscript is a copy of the manuscript dated A.H. 1117=1706 A.C. There is another date: Rewārī, 16th September, 1893 A.C., Bhidān S. 1960, 6th Rabi' 1, 1310 A.H. on this manuscript which may presumably be the date of its transcription from the 1117 A.H. copy. The British Museum MS. Add. 8906, (Vol. I, page 297), has 224 folios, size 10\(\frac{3}{4}\)" 6\(\frac{1}{4}\)", 12 lines per page 3\(\frac{3}{4}\)" long in nastā‘iṣq, dated Shavvāl A.H. 1216 (A.C. 1802), and Add. 16,705 (page 298), has 230 folios, size 8\(\frac{3}{4}\)" 4\(\frac{1}{4}\)", 16 lines per page, 3" long, in cursive nastā‘iṣq, probably in the 17th century A.C. Ağhā Hakim ‘Ali, B.A.-P.B., D.S. (Milan, Italy) Director of Sericulture, Srinagar, secured me another copy of Haidar Malik's History which originally belonged to the late Malik Asadullah and is now in possession of Hāji Mohammad Jawād of Jādi-bal, Srinagar. This copy is very clear and has 262 pages, size 9\(\frac{1}{2}\)" 6\(\frac{1}{2}\)", 13 lines per page, in cursive nastā ‘iṣq, dated 1297 A.H. = 1879 A.C.

Malik Haidar and his brother Malik ‘Ali were Kashmir noblemen descended from Malik Muhammad Nājī, the minister of Husain Shāh Chak. In the latter part of his History, Malik Haidar says that he had spent four and twenty years of his life in the service of Yūsuf Shāh Chak whom he followed in his banishment to his jāgīr in Bihār. Malik Haidar carried out with great success, as Faujdār of Jā‘is, (Jā‘is from joish a ‘camp’ is a town, on the rail, in the Salon Tahsil of the Rāi Barelī district of the United Provinces, on the road from Lucknow to Sultānpur. Jā‘is originally had a fortress called Udyanagar or Ujilekāngar) an expedition against Rājā Balbhadr, and was personally engaged with Shīr Afgan Khān in the attack in which the latter succumbed in 1016 A.H. (1607 A.C.). With his brother, ‘Ali Malik, he protected Shīr Afgan’s widow Mihr-un-Nisā Begam (afterwards Nūr Jahān) against all dangers and even received a wound. Haidar was warmly recommended by her to Jahāngir who bestowed upon him the titles of Chaghatāī and Ra‘īs-ul-Mulk, with an office in the government of Kashmir. The Ta‘rīkh-i-Khātīl Marjānpūrī (p. 166) mentions that Mihr-un-Nisā actually entered the house of Yūsuf Shāh Chak for personal safety.

When the Jāmi‘ Masjid at Srinagar was consumed by fire during the reign of Jahāngir, Malik Hasan, the father of Malik Haidar who was a Shi‘a, was accused of having been concerned, along with other leading Shi‘as, in the conflagration. It is said that, at the instance
of Nūr Jahān, Haidar consequently re-built it at his own expense as the following chronogram illustrates:

بنايةً هزار و بست و ثناءً از هرجرت سيد
بزو عيد روژه سوخته در نوبت ذاک
ملك حيدر رئيس الملك در عهد قبهانگیز
نهاد از نو بناشش باز روز عيد قرنانی
جوتايانغ بناشش جست گفدا هامت نیبند

The Jāmi’ Masjid, that was originally built by Sultān Sikandar, was twice partially destroyed by fire previous to the reign of Jahāngir, and was re-built by Sultān Hasan Shāh and later by Ibrāhīm Māgre. Malik Haidar conducted several works of improvement and utility in Kashmīr. His brother, ‘Ali Malik, is given the credit of the conquest of Kishtwār in 1029-30 A.H. (1619-20 A.C.).

The grave of the historian Ra’is-ul-Mulk Haidar Malik

Chādura, to which Malik Haidar belonged, is pronounced in Kashmīrī as Tsōdur and written Chādura. It is a village in the Nāgām pargana about a mile from Nāgām itself; and is some ten miles south of Srinagar. The Khānqāh (tomb) of Mir Shams-ud-Dīn ‘Irāqi, originally built by Daulat Shāh Chak, was also re-built by Malik Haidar.

“On Sunday, the 7th of Urdibihisht, I rode to the village of Chādura which is the native country of Haidar Malik,” writes the
A Dutch Protestant's view of Kashmir under Jahângîr.

Francisco Pelsaert of Antwerp, a Dutch Protestant, in the service of the Dutch East India Company, was in India for seven years from 1621 to 1627 A.C. Pelsaert rose to be the President of the Dutch fleet. His commercial report to his employers written in 1626 is printed under the title of the Remonstrantie. In this booklet of 88 pages, Pelsaert gives us light glimpses of Kashmir in Jahângîr's reign (pp. 33-36). Though the observations are not quite accurate in all detail, and there are several obscurities, the extract has its interest for the general reader, as a whole, from the point of view of a fanatical Protestant trader of the time. Writes Pelsaert: "The city of Kashmir (viz., Srinagar) itself is planted with very pleasant fruit-bearing and other trees, while two great rivers flow past it. The larger of these comes from Wirnagie (Vêr-nâg), Achiauvel (Acha-bal) and Matiaro (Maṭân, referring to the river Lidar), the other rises from the ground like a well or spring, three kos from the city, having its source at Saluara (Sölur or Salura village, at one time was on the Anchâr Lake—1½ miles from the large spring of Tulmîl Tiratha. Sölur is 13½ miles from Srinagar] on an inland lake; but the water of neither of them appears to be sweet or healthy, and the inhabitants boil it before they drink it, while the king and the chief nobles have their water carried

3 or 4 kos from Swindesseway (the Sind river of Kashmir, which passes the village Gādur, about eight miles from Srinaga by road and boat) where the water is clear and snow-white. King Jahangir began the construction of a wooden aqueduct, to bring good water from a distance of 10 or 12 kos into the fort, but realizing that it could be easily poisoned by enemies or malcontents, he abandoned it after having spent fully 10,000 rupees. In Kashmir foreigners usually suffer from the flux, and many die of it; the cause must be water, and also the quantity of fruit which is available.

"On the East side of the city lies a great stronghold, with a wall of grey stone fully nine or ten feet thick, which joins it to a high rocky hill, with a large palace on the summit, and another somewhat lower or half way up, towards the North, as well as two or three residences with separate approaches, but the principal ones lie on the South towards the East. In the centre of this fort is the King's palace, which is noteworthy rather for its elevation and extent than its magnificence. The Queen lives next to the King, on the North side; next to her her brother, Asaf Khan, and, a little further on, Mukarrrib Khan. [Shaikh Hasan with the title of Muqarrab Khān was some time governor of Delhi. From his childhood he was always in Jahāngīr's service and in attendance on him.] On the other or southern side, lives Sultan Shahriyar, the King's youngest son, who is married to the Queen's daughter by her first husband. On the south-west live Khawja Abdūl [Abu'1] Hasan and also other great nobles, all of whom reside within the fortress and round the hill in a circle of about a kos in circumference. The city is very extensive, and contains many mosques, as their churches are called. The houses are built of pine-wood, the interstices being filled with clay and their style is by no means contemptible. They look elegant, and fit for citizens rather than peasants and they are ventilated with handsome and artistic open-work, instead of windows or glass. They have flat roofs entirely covered with earth, on which the inhabitants often grow onions, or which are covered with grass, so that during the rains the green roofs and groves make the city most beautiful on a distant view.

"The inhabitants of the country and the city are for the most part poor, but they are physically strong,
especially the men, who can carry quite twice the load of a Hindustani; this is remarkable in view of the fact that men and women get so little food. Their children are very handsome and fair, while they are young and small, but when they grow up they become yellow and ugly, owing to their mode of life, which is that of beasts rather than men. The women are small in build, filthy, lousy, and not handsome. They wear a coarse grey woollen garment, open from the neck to the waist. On the forehead they have a sort of red band, and above it an ugly, black, dirty clout, which falls from the head over the shoulders to the legs; cotton cloth is very dear and their inborn poverty prevents them from possessing a change of raiment.

"They are fanatical Moslems. It was their twelfth king (obscure sentence) who observed this creed, before king Akbar’s General, Raja Bhagwan Das, overcame the country by craft and subtlety, the lofty mountains and difficult roads rendering forcible conquest impossible.

"Kashmir produces many kinds of fruit, such as apples, pears, walnuts, etc., but the flavour is inferior to those of Persia or Kabul. In December, January and February the cold is very great, with constant rain and snow; the mountains remain white with snow, except in places where the sun shines in the warm weather, causing heavy floods in the rivers.

"The reason of the King’s special preference for this country is that when the heat in India increases, his body burns like a furnace, owing to his consumption of excessively strong drink and opium, excesses which were still greater in his youth. He usually leaves Lahore in March or April, and reaches Kashmir in May. The journey is very difficult and dangerous, besides being expensive, for pack animals cannot cross the mountains, and practically everything must be carried on men’s heads. All the nobles curse the place, for it makes the rich poor, and the poor cannot fill their stomachs there, because everything is excessively dear; but apparently the King prefers his own comfort or pleasure to the welfare of his people.

"Kashmir yields nothing for export to Agra except saffron of which there are two kinds. That which grows near the city sells in Agra at 20 to 24 rupees the ser; the other kind, which grows at Cashtuwar (Kishtwār),
10 kos (?) distant is the best, and usually fetches 28 to 32 rupees the ser (of 30 pice weight). Many pamris are also woven; these are cloths 3 ells long and 2 broad, woven from the wool (it is more like hair), which grows on the hind-quarters of the sheep, very fine and as soft as silk. They are worn here (i.e. in Agra) in wraps in the winter because of the cold, and look very well and fine, having a surface like boratos (a thin woollen cloth fashionable in Europe at this period). Walnuts, which are plentiful, are also exported to Agra.

"The goods sent from Agra to Kashmir are coarse, unbleached, cotton-cloth, yarn for local consumption, and also pepper and opium. Nutmeg, cloves and mace are too dear, and their use is unknown; but all of them are, as might be expected, brought there when the King is in residence."

Qalich Khān and Saʿādat Khān, governors under Jahāngīr, suppressed the Chaks with a strong hand. All their hauteur departed. The poor Chaks took to humbler ways of life, and either went in for humbler jobs or settled down as husbandmen, farmers and horse-keepers. Iʿtīqād Khān imposed severe, unjust restrictions upon the agriculturist class. He introduced the evil practice of requisitioning or attaching fruit gardens, of reserving forests and villages. He exacted forced labour particularly in connexion with the plucking of saffron flowers, which formed an asset of imperial revenue. Shāh Jahān, however, revoked these practices by issuing a special farmān (command) after his accession.

Jahāngīr did not neglect the welfare of his subjects. In 1621 A. C. (1031 A. H.) he abolished the vexatious tax Rasūm-i-Faujdārī "to ease the subjects and soldiers." He prohibited in Rajaurī the immolation of Muslim women in emulation of their Hindu sisters who devoted themselves to flames with the remains of their husbands. A girl of twelve* years of age had been buried alive in the grave of her dead husband just before the arrival of Jahāngīr in 1619. The strangulation of daughters at birth by men without means was stopped. He also forbade intermarriage between Hindus and Muslim women. The conversion of

---

Chingas Sarai

Chingas Sarai is a small and scattered village situated on a flat table-land, about 200 feet above the right bank of the Tawi river. It lies on the Bhimbar route into Kashmir, between Naoshahra and Rajauri, about 13 miles north of the former place, and 15 miles south of the latter. There is a bungalow for the accommodation of travellers, about a quarter of a mile from the village.

The old Sarai, from which the village takes its name, is close to the bungalow. Water is procurable from a bagli or from the river beneath. The hill sides in the vicinity are covered with under-wood and firs, but on the opposite side of the river there is good grazing ground. Next to the Mughul mosque at the Sarai is the grave entombing Jahangir's entrails.

In proof of the ophiolatry that prevailed in these hills, the ancient slabs sculptured with figures of snakes have been adduced. A most curious example of these stones exists at this village where, among a number of small lingams under a pipal tree, is a rudely carved slab, representing a serpent with its long coils spreading over the whole length of the stone, and a devotee with clasped hands standing below.
The Mughul Sarai at Chingas on the old route from the Punjab to Kashmir.

[See note on the reverse.]
Muslim girls to Hinduism and then their cremation with Hindu husbands at one time was as large as 4,000 in Rajauri and Bhimbar.¹ Shāh Jahān followed his father’s policy in the matter. In Shāh Jahān’s time, in the seventh year of his reign, an investigation was made into the complaints of Muslims of Bhimbar against the Hindus who burnt the Qu’rān and oppressed the Muslims. On the report of the investigating official, Shaikh Mahmūd Gujratī, an order was issued that, if a Hindu wanted to be converted to Islam, his family should not place any obstacles in his way.² During the present Dogrā rule a Hindu, on conversion to Islam, loses right to his share of the family property.

Owing to difficulties experienced in his journey, Jahāngīr ordered suitable lodgings to be constructed for himself and the harem at convenient stages. He further ordered a garden to be built at the Ver-nāg Spring. In this garden, there was a picture gallery in which the pictures of Humāyūn, Akbar, Jahāngīr and Shāh ‘Abbās of Iran were painted. According to the contemporary, Francisco Pelsaert, Ver-nāg was “the most delightful pleasure-resort where the King had the best hunting grounds in the whole of India.” Dilāwar Khān and Irādat Khān, two of his governors, also constructed gardens on the Barārinambal lagoon fed by the Mār-nāla and situated in the southeast of Srinagar, and at Nāopūr a village five miles south of Sopūr.

Seven⁴ Sūbadārs or governors were appointed by Jahāngīr, one after the other, to govern Kashmir. With the exception of Qalīch Khān (1606) and Irādat Khān (1620), all were just, and numerous are the instances of their justice. The Hindus of Kashmir complained against Qalīch Khān to the Emperor Jahāngīr who communicated, after the epigrammatic style of Ja‘far Barmaki (see Al-Kāmil al-Mubarrad, Lahore, 1337 A.H. = 1928 A.C., Vol. I, p. 301), the following warning to him:—

٠ حكومت پیداها! داد خواهان تو بسیار، شکرگزاران تو ام، آم سعاب
برلیب تشکنان بیز! ورنده از حکومت برخیز —

The Dabistān\(^1\) says that Pandit Črī Kanta, a Kashmirī, conversant with Hindu sciences and knowing the Šastraśas, was invested by Jahāngīr with the dignity of a judge of the Hindus in order that, in every concern of personal law and custom, they should have complete autonomy.

According to his autobiography, Jahāngīr married a Kashmirī lady. 'After him, by the daughter of the prince of Kashmir who was of the society of the Jōgis, I had another daughter, who died a year old.'\(^2\)

As regards territorial extension, Jahāngīr's reign witnessed the conquest of Kishtwār. A description of this conquest in the language of the royal diarist is worthy of reproduction. It reads almost like the dispatch of a modern war correspondent—

"On the tenth of the Ilāhī month of Shahriwar, in my 14th year, Dilāwar Khān with 10,000 horse and foot, determined to conquer Kishtwār. He appointed his son, Hasan by name, with Gird 'Ali Mīr Bahr to guard the city and administer the territory. As Gauhar Chak and Aiba Chak laid claim to Kashmir as heirs, and were stirring up strife in Kishtwār and were wandering in the valley of confusion and ruin, he left Haibat, one of his brothers, with a force at Desu, which is near the Kotal of the Pīr Panjal, by way of caution. Dividing his forces at that place, he himself hastened with a force by the road of Sanginpūr, sending his son Jalāl, with Nasrūllāh 'Arab, and 'Ali Malik Kashmirī and a band of Jahāngīr servants by another road, and his elder son Jamāl with a band of zealous young men as an advance-guard to his own force. At the same time, he placed two other forces to move forward on his right and left. As no horses could go on the road by way of precaution, he took some with him, but left nearly all his sipāhis' horses behind and sent them to Kashmir (i.e. Srinagar). The young men girded the belt of duty on their waists, and went up hills on foot. The ghāṣiṣ of the army of Islam fought from post to post with the ill-fated unbelievers as far as Narkōṭ, which was one of the enemy's strongholds . . . . The ill-fated Aiba Chak with many of the people of ruin were slain. By the death of Aiba, the Rājā became powerless and without heart, and took the road of flight, and, crossing by the bridge, stopped at Bhandarkōṭ which is on the other side. . . . Dilāwar Khān drew up his forces at Bhandarkōṭ . . . . In short, for four months and ten days, Dilāwar Khān having planted the foot of courage at Bhandarkōṭ made endeavours to cross over . . . . Jalāl, Dilāwar

2. The Valley of Kashmir, page 194, footnote 2.
Khán's son, with some of the servants of the Court and a band of Afghans, about 200 in number, crossed over in safety, made unawares an attack on the Rájá, and blew loudly the trumpets of victory... The men rushed on the Rájá and made him prisoner... Diláwar Khán... having crossed the river (Márú) came to Mandal Badr which was the capital of the country, and is three kos from the river. The daughter of Sangrám, Rájá of Jammu and the daughter of... Súraj Mal son of Rájá Baso were in the Rájá's house (i.e., married to him). By Sangrám's daughter he had children. Before the victory he had sent his family for refuge to the Rájá of Jaswal and other Zamindárs... Diláwar Khán took the Rájá with him, and came to kiss the threshold, leaving Nasrulláh 'Arab with a body of horse and foot to guard the country.

"The whole income of the Rájá consists of fines, and for a small offence he takes a heavy sum. From whomsoever is wealthy and in comfortable circumstances the Rájá, on some pretext, clears out all that he has. From all sources his income is about Rs. 100,000. In time of war 6,000 or 7,000 men on foot collect together. There are but few horses among them. The Rájá and the chief men have about fifty between them. I bestowed a year's revenue on Diláwar Khán by way of reward."*

During the régime of Diláwar Khán, following the appearance of a comet, it is said, rats appeared in alarming numbers and considerably damaged the crops. The epidemic of plague infested the country so virulently that the dead were thrown into the river without even the last rites being performed. Let Jahángir himself describe it: "On this day (Wednesday, 17th Isfandārmuz, 12th year of Jahángir's reign—1617 A.O.) a report of the chronicler of events arrived, that the plague had taken firm hold of the country (Kashmir) and that many had died. The symptoms were that the first day there was headache and fever and much bleeding at the nose. On the second day the patient died. In the house where one person died all the inmates were carried off. Whoever went near the sick person or a dead body was affected in the same way. In one instance, the dead body was thrown on the grass, and it chanced that a cow came and ate some of the grass. It died, and some dogs that had eaten its flesh also died. Things had come to such a pass that from fear of death fathers would not approach their children, and children would not go near their fathers. A strange thing was that, in the ward in

which the disease began, a fire broke out, and nearly 3,000 houses were burnt . . . . I trust, that the Almighty will have mercy on His sinful slaves, and that they will be altogether freed from such calamities.”

“On this day (Wednesday, the first of the month of Āzar—March 1617 A.C., the 12th year of Jahāngīr’s reign) Kashmir reports were laid before me. One was that in the house of a certain silk-seller two girls were born with teeth, and with their backs as far as the waist joined together, but the heads, arms and legs were separate: they lived a short time and died.”

During the time of Jahāngīr, Kashmir yielded a revenue amounting to 7,46,70,000 dāms, which undoubtedly indicates the increase of prosperity enjoyed by Kashmir during his rule.

**Shah Jahan.**

Shāh Jahān visited Kashmir four times during his reign at intervals of five or seven years. The first visit took place in 1043 A.H. (or 1634 A.C.), when Shāh Jahān arrived in Srinagar on June 5. “The enchanting beauty of this province hypnotized Shāh Jahān,” writes the author of *History of Shahjahan of Dihli,*

> “and though he had no staff of painters with him to reproduce its natural beauty, he had a number of excellent writers at court who have described Kashmir in glowingly picturesque language, which is poetic in spirit though prose in form.”

The descriptions of Kashmir written by Mirzā Aminī Qazvīnī (*Pādshah-nāma*, British Museum, Or. 173) and Jalāl-ud-Dīn Tabātabāī (*Pādshah-nāma*, British Museum, Or. 1676), the versified narratives of Qudṣī and Kalīm are instances. Mirzā Aminī Qazvīnī was in the royal retinue on this occasion. Shāh Jahān’s second visit took place during January to October 1640 A.C. Another visit is recorded in 1645. The last visit took place in 1651 which, however, was cut short on account of floods and storms. And Shāh Jahān returned to Lāhore. It was at the time of Shāh Jahān’s first visit that the Hindu rājā of Bhimbar announced the adoption of Islam, and was given the title of Rājā-i-Daulatmand (or the Rājā of Riches).

---

Shāh Jahān appointed nine governors altogether, of whom two, namely, Zafar Khān and 'Ali Mardān Khān were re-appointed. I'tiqād Khān, who had been appointed by Jahāngīr, continued in office till his high-handedness and oppressive rule brought about his removal. Prince Murād visited Kashmir in 1640 A.C., and remained as governor for a year, being followed by 'Ali Mardān Khān. During his stay, Prince Murād married a daughter of the Maliks of Shāhābād. Shāhābād was formerly called the Vēr-nāg _pargana_, according to Hasan, and was re-named Shāhābād by Shāh Jahān.

Zafar Khān's original name was Ahsanullāh Khān Ahsan. Zafar Khān was the title conferred on him by Shāh Jahān on account of his triumphant courage and coolness. He succeeded I'tiqād Khān. In reality, Ahsanullāh's father, Abu'l Hasan Turbatī, was nominated to the governorship. He was, however, too infirm and aged to assume the onerous duties of office in person. The son deputized for the father. Zafar's excellent administration won the Emperor's approbation and he was confirmed in his post.

The final conquest of Tibet was effected by Zafar Khān. Its brief detail is this. Chaks were given asylum in Little Tibet (Baltistān). Jahāngīr's Subadār of Kashmir, Ḥāshim Khān, son of Qāsim Khān _Mīr Bahr_, attempted to reduce 'Alī Rāi _Marzbān_ (Warden of the Marches) of Skārdu to submission but failed. In Shāh Jahān's time, Abdāl, 'Alī Rāi's son, gave protection to Habib Chak and Ahmad Chak. Zafar Khān, therefore, persuaded Abdāl to acknowledge Mughul sovereignty and to read the _Khutba_ in Shāh Jahān's name in 1634. But Abdāl, within the next two years, repudiated his submission. Shāh Jahān ordered Zafar Khān to subjugate Little Tibet. With 2,000 cavalry and 10,000 infantry, Zafar Khān forced Abdāl to resume submission and to pay an indemnity of one million rupees. In the course of the fight, Abdāl's son, Daulat, a lad of fifteen, showed considerable pluck in sallying out of his fort at Shakar on the other side of the Nil-āb or the Indus, in Little Tibet, but was driven back by Mir Fakhr-ud-Dīn of the Mughul army. Daulat, on being overwhelmed, escaped with his father's cash and jewellery. Zafar Khān, however, brought Abdāl and the families of Habib Chak and Ahmad Chak to Kashmir and left Muhammad Murād, Abdāl's Vakīl, in charge of the country.

Zafar is chiefly remembered for the removal of
hardships which I‘tiqād Khān had imposed upon the people of Kashmir, and which were beautifully brought to the notice of Shāh Jahān by a Kashmiri poet in a striking and significant poem in honour of the Emperor’s birthday:—

The poet, in the first couplet, addresses the Emperor saying that ‘We have a plaint in Your Majesty’s Court.’ In the second couplet the poet says that saffron causes the sad and the sorry to laugh, but here innocent people are made to weep on account of saffron!

To this effect, Zafar, therefore, obtained a farmān from Shāh Jahān which was engraved on a stone and put into the masonry of the gate of the Jānī‘ Masjid in Srinagar and is there still. The translation2 of this farmān is:

GOD IS GREAT
Shāh Jahān the King, Defender of the Faith.

Copy of the auspicious order of His Majesty, Solomon-like in dignity, Sāhib Qirān the Second (or ‘Lord of the Conjunction), which was recorded on the 7th of Isfandārmaz (February) Ḳāhī, (or according to Akbar’s calendar), at the request of the humblest of dependants who is known by the name of Zafar Khān, with reference to the removal of the wrongs done in the time of former Sūbadārs in beautiful Kashmir, and were the cause of the misery of the subjects and inhabitants of these regions.

Since all our exalted desire is turned to the contentedness of the people, we gave the order for the repeal of some Acts

1. I‘tiqād Khān Mirzā Shāhpūr was the son of I‘timād-ud-Daula and the brother of Āṣaf Khān and of Nūr Jahān. In the 17th year of Jahāngir’s reign, he was appointed to the governorship of Kashmir. Habīb Chak and Ahmad Chak revolted and created trouble, but were forced to flee to Tibet. I‘tiqād died at Āgra in 1060 A.H. (1650 A.C.).
KASHMIR UNDER THE MUGHULS

which in the beautiful country of Kashmir became a cause of distress to the inhabitants of the land. Of the number of those matters one is that, at the time of collecting the saffron, men used to be impressed for this work without any wages except a little salt, and the people have suffered much distress. We ordered that no man should, by any means, be molested as to gathering the saffron. And as to saffron grown on crown lands, the labourers must be satisfied and receive proper wages. And whatever grows on lands granted in Jagir, let the whole saffron in kind be delivered to the Jagirdar that he may gather it as he likes. Another grievance is that in the time of some of the Subadars of Kashmir they used to levy two *dam* for wood (fuel) on each *kharvar* of rice, and during the government of I'tiqad Khan four *dam* for the same purpose were levied on each *kharvar*. Since on this account also the people were much distressed, we ruled that the people should be entirely relieved of this tax, and nothing should be taken on account of wood (fuel). Another grievance is that a village whose rental was more than 400 *kharvar* of *shali*, was obliged to furnish to the authorities of the place two sheep annually. I'tiqad Khan, during his rule, took 66 *dam* in place of each sheep. Since on this account also the people were much annoyed, we gave strict order that it should cease; neither should the sheep be taken nor money in their place; the people shall be held excused from paying this impost. Moreover, I'tiqad Khan, during his incumbency, levied a summary poll-tax of 75 *dam* on each boatman whether a young or an old man or a boy, whilst it was the established custom formerly to levy 60 *dam* on a young man, 12 on an old man, and 36 *dam* on a boy. We ordered that the former custom should be re-established, that the wrong done by I'tiqad Khan be redressed, and that people should not act in accordance with it. Another grievance is that the Subadars, in the fruit season, placed their own men in each garden, large and small, which appeared to contain good fruit, to watch the fruit for themselves and did not allow the owners of those gardens to use the fruit; hence much loss was caused to these people, so that some of these men have destroyed the fruit trees. We ordered that no Subadar should lay an embargo on the fruit of the orchard or garden of any one. It is proper that noble governors and competent collectors and the officials of this and future times in the province of Kashmir should consider these orders as lasting and external, nor should they admit any change or alteration in these regulations. Who-
ever admits any change or alterations, will fall under the
curse of God, and the anger of the King.—Written on
the 26th (March) Āzar Ilāhi, (or according to Akbar’s
calendar).

Ahsanullāh Khān planted several gardens to add to the
beauty of the country. He also introduced varieties of new
fruits and flowers in Kashmir. He was a talented
person and patronized Mirzā Muhammad ‘Ali Sā’īb of
Īsfahān, who afterwords became the poet-laureate of Īrān
whence he wrote to Zafar Khān—

 Norwich. ra. bā hāshsan yād kardn āgh t ast
worn. hār nāghl bā pāh hūd hūr mī aṅgīnd

and received a reward of five thousand rupees from him.
Zafar, too, was grateful to Sā’īb for literary advice—

Tāzē gūdikāhāt ār āz fīnī. ṫibū chāb ast

Zafar Khān has himself left behind a Masnavī called the
Haft Manzil in praise of Kashmir, which he presented to
Shāh Jahān on his third visit at the picturesque waterfall
of Ahrabal, Tahsil Kulgām. In one place, in his Masnavī,
Zafar Khān says:

Elī bi tā būd khashīr ābād r ġōlzn ĥūrasa mādā rāhād
bherkūs ḥūrē kwohe ī. nāshin dā mā khashīr bā dābīl rā ākān

[While Kashmir lasts, O God!
Remind not me of the Garden
Of my Khūrāsān.
To each man grant his wish—
To the nightingale the garden
And to me Kashmir!]

Zafar Khān’s two other Masnavīs are also known.
One is Jalwa-i-Nāz and the other is Maikhāna-i-Rāz. The
reason why the Jalwa-i-Nāz is so named is—

Arah ān nāmshē khūdā mū. Dānē nāz kā ko kōd dūsō khashīn bānān bāz
The Maikhâna-i-Râz has—

The Ahsan-ul-Hikâyât, a collection of thirty-one anecdotes by Háfiz Muhammad Rizâ, was written in Kashmir during Ahsan’s régime. Zafar Khân’s son, Muhammad Tâbir Āshnâ, whose title was Inâyat Khân, held the office of the Dârûghâ-i-Kutub-Khâna or Keeper of the Imperial Library. Āshnâ was a poet and also wrote the Mulakhkhas, a history of the first thirty years of the reign of Shâh Jahân. It was Zafar Khân’s patronage of poetry and learning that Abû Tâlib Kalîm wrote in his Pâdshâh-nâma—

making a reference to Zafar Khân’s expedition for the conquest of Tibet in 1046-47 A.H. = 1636-37 A.C.

[Zafar Khan “Ahsan.”]—Perhaps a short note on Zafar Khân is needed here. Khwâja Mirzâ Ahsanullâh’s takhâllus was Ahsan. He was the son of Khwâja Abu’l Hasan Turbatî (i.e. of Turbat-i-Haidari, a town south of Mashhad in Khurâsân, Írán). Khwâja Abu’l Hasan was at one time the Adviser of Prince Dâniyâl, and the Diwân of the Deccan, and later Mîr Bakhshi, and had the title of Rukn-us-Saltanat. In the 19th year of Jahângîr’s reign, 1033 A.H. (1623 A.C.), Ahsanullâh was appointed Governor of Kâbul, and received the title of Zafar Khân or the ‘Lord of Victory’ with the mansâb of 1,500 which was subsequently raised to 2,500.

In the fifth year of Shâh Jahân’s reign, 1041 A.H. (1631 A.C.), he was deputed to Kashmir as the lieutenant of his father who was nominated to the governorship of Kashmir. This position, according to the Bânkipur Catalogue (Vol. III. p. 117), Ahsanullâh held to the twenty-sixth year of Shâh Jahân’s reign, after which he was transferred to Taţtah. But Zafar Khân was really the lieutenant of his father for one year, and twice governor of Kashmir, first in 1042 A.H. (1632 A.C.), for seven years, and the second time in 1052 A.H. (1642 A.C.), for four years as supported by the Maâthîr-ul-Umrâ’ of Shâh Nawâz Khân (pp. 757-59).

Ahsanullâh was dwarfish but very keen and quick-witted. His father was a staunch Sunni, but he himself was a zealous Shi’a. Ahsanullâh married Buzurg Khânâm and had a son, Mirzâ Muhammad Tâbir Āshnâ, who was given the title of ‘Inâyat Khân, as noted above.

Ahsanullâh died in 1073 A.H. (1662 A.C.), at Lâhore, and was buried near the grave of his father in Mughulpura. ‘Inâyat Khân died in 1081 A.H. (or 1670 A.C.) in Kashmir. Mirzâ Khurshid was the brother of Ahsanullâh.]
Khwāja Khāwand Mahmūd of Bukhārā came to Kashmir during Zafar Khān’s régime, and gave impetus to the Naqshbandī tariq when the poet Mashrābi wrote—

हेस्ट जाउ शाामालन जाने जू द्र कृंशिया दान
कुंप भ है के पीर वलाले, मुरा दरबार रसीद
खजावठ व आकाशिखावंद जहूड, आने फिलिन
अज लगी दा हडय औबा बना मुहस्तान रसीद

Ibrāhīm Khān who became afterwards known as 'Ali Mardān Khān was originally an Iranian. He is said to have come by a treasure at Qandahār, but not willing to surrender it to his master, the Shāh of Iran, sought Shāh Jahān’s protection. 'Ali Mardān was just and generous. So lavishly did he spend his money that even Shāh Jahān was astonished. 'Ali Mardān was thus, no doubt, popularly credited with the possession of the philosophers’ stone. As Lawrence¹ notes, it was believed that through this stone he was enabled to build splendid serāis on the Pir Panjāl route to India. Pandit Mahādev was the secretary employed by 'Ali Mardān Khān during his second tenure of office. Pandit Mahādev also profited by his master’s generosity considerably.

Besides planting gardens, 'Ali Mardān raised a number of serāis or inns, and also repaired the Hūrapūr road. Notwithstanding his tendency to a life of ease, he was generally solicitous of the welfare of the country. The Emperor, too, was no less keenly interested in the material advancement and well-being of the people of Kashmir. And when a severe famine broke out in the days of Tarbiyat Khān, the Emperor appointed capable officers to organize relief measures. Tarbiyat Khān, being unable to cope with the task, he was removed. Corn was exported from Lāhore, Jullundur, Sīlkōt, Kalānaur, and other districts of the Punjāb, to be distributed free among the sufferers. All the queens and princes voluntarily contributed towards the relief fund started for the purpose. During the régime of Lashkar Khān, the last governor under Shāh Jahān, the country, however, enjoyed such a spell of prosperity that a bag of shāli or unhusked rice could be had for a fowl.²

---

¹ The Valley of Kashmir, page 195.
² The Tā’rikh-i-Khalil, folio 192.
Tavernier was not, therefore, wrong when he said that Shâh Jahân “reigned not so much as a King over his subjects, but rather as a father over his family and children.”

A galaxy of famous poets.

Both under Jahângîr and Shâh Jahân, Kashmir shone with a galaxy of famous poets like Kalîm,1 Qudsî,2 Auji,3 Tughrâ,4 Mir Ilahi,5 Nadîm,6 Fasîhî,7 Fahmî,8 and Khwâja Mûmin.9 Their verses are often quoted by lexicographers. Some of the poets were, of course, of Persian origin; but they loved Kashmir more than their own native land, and there lived their lives. Zafar Khân,10 in the preface of his Divân, particularly mentions the names of Maulânâ Haidar Muhammad, Muhammad Muqîm Jauhari, Qâzî Muhammad Qâsîm better known as Qâzî-zâdah as distinguished poets of his time in Kashmir. The presence of so many men of culture and learning contributed to the intellectual attainments of this country in literature and belles lettres.

Aurangzib ‘Ålamgîr

Unlike his predecessors, Aurangzib ‘Ålamgîr visited Kashmir only once. He became seriously ill in the summer of 1664 A.D., and came to Kashmir in the following months to restore his health. Princess Râmsîan accompanied the Emperor. Bernier arrived in the Valley early in 1665 A.D. His Travels give a graphic account of this royal visit. The Emperor’s experience of the journey was not, however, a happy one. The passage of the Chinâb river was a scene of confusion. Again, in the Pir Panjâl Pass, an elephant carrying the ladies stepped back and forced fifteen animals behind him over the precipice. Three or four women were killed. Some elephants rolled down to the bottom of a khad or ravine. A number of men were injured rather seriously. Jân Muhammad Qudsî, the poet, was not wrong, therefore, when he said:

[The road is more tortuous than the curl of a blackmoor’s hair; in sharpness it is like the sword of the Firangi.]

4. Of Mashhad; 5. Of Asadâbâd near Hamadân.
KASHIR

'Aqil Khān has, as it were, replied to it:

Nawwāb Zafar Khān Ahsan says—

The progress to Kashmir of Aurangzib 'Alamgīr did not obstruct* the necessary business of the state. Attended by all his officers, the decisions of each department were carried from the camp to every corner of the Empire. Expresses stood ready on horseback at every stage: and the imperial mandates were dispatched to the various provinces as soon as they were sealed in the Tent of Audience. The nobles, as was customary in the capital, attended daily the Presence; and appeals were discussed every morning as regularly as when the Emperor remained at Delhi. The petitioners followed the court; and a small allowance from the public treasury was assigned to them as a compensation for their additional expense in attending the imperial camp. In this manner, Aurangzib 'Alamgīr arrived in Kashmir.

The beauty, the cool and salubrious air of the country induced 'Alamgīr to relax his mind for a short time from business. He wandered over the Valley after a variety of pleasure; and soon recovered that vigour of constitution which his attention to public business as well as his late sickness had greatly impaired. Here Dr. Bernier (on Rs. 300 per month in the service of Dānish-mand Khān, the Emperor's Foreign Minister) attended on 'Alamgīr and helped him in the restoration of his health. The summer Bernier visited Kashmir, Fidāi Khān, grandmaster of the artillery, 'Alamgīr's trusted foster-brother, was stationed as a guard below the pass at Bhimbar until the heat was over and the Emperor returned.

"Aurangzib, to whom business was amusement, added the most extensive knowledge of the affairs of the empire

---

to an unremitting application," wrote Lieutenant-Colonel Alexander Dow in 1772 A.C., 65 years after Aurangzib's death. "He made himself minutely acquainted with the revenue paid by every district, with the mode of proceeding in the inferior courts, and even with the character and disposition of several judges. He ordered the register of the rents to be left open for the inspection of all, that the people might distinguish extortion from the just demands of the Crown. He commanded that men versed in the usages of the several courts, in the precepts of the Coran, and in the regulations established by edict, should attend at the public expense, and give their opinion to the poor in matters of litigation. He established a mode of appeal beyond certain sums: and he disgraced judges for an error in judgment and punished them severely for corruption and partiality. His activity kept the great machine of Government in motion through all its members: his penetrating eye followed oppression to its most secret retreats and his stern justice established tranquillity, and secured property over all his extensive dominions."

The number of governors, appointed by Aurangzib Alamgir, was fourteen, of whom Ibrâhîm Khân held the appointment thrice, while Saif Khân was sent twice. It was in the time of Ibrâhîm Khân, the son of 'Alî Mardân Khân, that the poet Mirzâ Dârâb Jûyâ, born in Kashmir, flourished. In Jûyâ's Divân, the ghazals open with—

[There is no Kashmiri in this province whom I may appoint] in the Ruqâ‘ât-i-'Alamgîri, page 95, must be a reason for pride to the Kashmiri coming, as the remark does, from an exacting hard taskmaster of the high standard of 'Alamgir. Nothing escaped 'Alamgir's vigilant eye. And he did not hesitate to introduce effective measures to improve the condition of the people. Ibrâhîm Khân was twice removed

from governorship for backing the Shi'as in sectarian feuds. Similarly, Muzaffar Khán paid dearly for his imposition of heavy taxes. Hence it cannot be said that Mughul Súhadárs had a free hand in Kashmír. The subjects were treated infully and justly, and the Súhadárs were, with the rare exceptions of Muzaffar Khán and Abú Nasr Khán, vigorous advocates of justice. Saif Khán caused Khwája Muhammad Sádiq Naqshbandi to be flogged to death for inflicting jail-like punishment on a Hindu official charged with defalcation in state accounts. Saif Khán was the brother-in-law of Sháh Jahán, their wives being sisters. He acted as governor twice. Qivám-ud-Dín Khán is famous for his invention of the Takhtah Kuláh or Kuláh-i-Takhtah 'the Wooden Cap,' presumably on the analogy of the Fool's Cap, for criminals.

I'timád Khán, Iftikhár Khán, Hífzulláh Khán, Isláim Khán and Fázil Khán, governors one after the other, acted in an impartial manner and did their best in personally dealing out justice, and in looking after the people. Saif Khán, in his second term of office, held the census of the Valley about 1670 A.C. According to Hasan, this census showed the population of Kashmír to consist of 12,43,033 souls including 90,400 infantry and 4,812 cavalry. No authority is quoted and no details are forthcoming and no comment can, therefore, be offered. Possibly this census may have been on the lines of the census of the Mughul Empire of India during Akbar's reign in 989 A.H. = 1581 A.C. The Mughul governors also tried to improve the general appearance of the country and its towns by laying out gardens, erecting mosques, building rest-houses, populating villages. A jágirdár of the time, Chaudhri Mahésh Pandit's garden is mentioned as a model of beauty and taste. These governors relieved the agriculturist class of the heavy taxes imposed by preceding governors. Fázil Khán is associated with a well-known Madrasah. It was in his time that the Sacred Hair of the Prophet was brought to Kashmír by Khwája Núr-ud-Dín Ishbári. Fázil Khán recommended Kashmíris for mansabs and the Emperor approved of his recommendations. Khwája 'Ináyatulláh was, perhaps, the first of the Kashmíri Mansabdárs. He rose to the rank of 4,000 and was made Imperial Revenue Minister in 1717 in Farrukh Siyár's time.

Fire, famine, earthquake and flood, each occurring at intervals, inflicted on the people considerable hardships
including loss of property. In those days, it was difficult adequately to cope with these calamities in the nick of time. Nevertheless, steps were promptly taken to alleviate misery whenever it was possible to do so. After the Kāwdora fire, Aurangzib 'Ālamgīr sent Ibrāhīm Khān with urgent and explicit orders to help the people re-build their houses and to furnish a report on the progress of the measures taken. It was only after the houses had been re-built, that an effort was made to re-construct the Jāmī’ Masjid, which had also perished in the fire.

Sectarian fights between the Shi’as and Sunnis were not uncommon in those days. As a matter of fact, it is a mistake to judge the happenings of those times from the present-day point of view. Europe itself was passing through the ordeal of the Reformation. Religious feelings were bitter everywhere. It was particularly so in Kashmir where Mir Shams-ud-Dīn ‘Irāqī’s successful propagation of Shi’ite doctrines had proved fruitful. The minds of both Shi’as and Sunnis were, therefore, in a state of frenzy. Moreover, as fresh converts the Shi’as must have been very zealous, at times, fanatical. The Chaks, who were Shi’as by faith, had lost their domination only recently. The aggrieved minds of the Shi’as looked upon this fact both as personal and religious grievance. It is, therefore, not surprising that riots and disturbances between the Shi’as and the Sunnis were not unusual.

Regarding external affairs touching Kashmir, there are several deserving notice. For instance, the Qalmuqs,1 invaded Tibet Kalān (major). Daldal Namjal, the ruler of Tibet Kalān, himself being unable to defend the country, sought help from the Emperor of Delhi. Consequently, Fidār Khān was ordered by Ibrāhīm Khān, the then governor, to drive out the Qalmuqs. This was successfully done. But, later, when the ruler of that country rebelled, he was chastised by Saif Khān. Subsequently, he embraced Islam.

---

1. Kāwdora is the name of a big mahalla or ward near the shrine of Makhdūm Sāhib in Srinagar.

2. Qalmaq, Qalmaq or Qalmiq is the Turkish name for a Mongol people. In the 16th century, under the name of Oriet (Confederation) they roamed about a vast region in Central Asia between the Altai and Tian-Shan, and the Desert of Gobi and Lake Balkhash and the Caspian. For ferocity they are called قالمق قوم or Qalmiq of evil creation. The Qalmuqs followed Buddhism in contrast to the Dungans—speaking Chinese, who adopted Islam.
and returned to Tibet where he built a grand mosque. Similarly, the rājā of Rajaurī became a convert to Islam after his defeat, when his kingdom was restored to him in the third tenure of Ibrāhīm Khān’s governorship. The rājā of Jammu broke out into open revolt, and was reduced to submission by Hīfzullāh Khān who had succeeded Ibrāhīm Khān in 1636 A.C.

'Abdullāh Khān, the ruler of Kāshgīr, passed through Kashmir about 1667-8 A.C., on his way for a pilgrimage to Mecca. According to one version, he had to hand over his kingdom involuntarily to his son Nawāzīsh Khān. ‘Abdullāh Khān was received and entertained in a royal manner by Mubāriz Khān the governor, the successor of Saif Khān. And when, very much later, Arsalān Khān, ‘Abdullāh Khān’s nephew, came to Kashmir for help against his own son, the matter was referred to ‘Alamgīr by Ibrāhīm Khān, the governor of Kashmir during 1701 to 1706 A.C. On receipt of orders, Ibrāhīm Khān communicated the Emperor’s wishes to the fugitive prince, asking him to seek help from the governor of Kābul. As a matter of fact, ‘Alamgīr had the intention of conquering Kāshgīr, but he was dissuaded from entering upon the campaign. Kashmir, this shows, was at that time a strong outpost of the Mughul Empire.

Lalla Rookh.

At the mention of ‘Abdullāh Khān of Kāshgīr, the reader may not resist the temptation of regaling himself with an intriguing reference to the celebrated poem of Thomas Moore known as Lalla Rookh (Lāla Rukh or Tulip Cheek), though the hero and the heroine and their parentage and marriage are all purely imaginary. Says Moore;*

*Thomas Moore (May 1779 A.C.—February 1852) was an Irish poet and musician. In 1798 Moore graduated, and in the next year left for England to keep his terms at the Middle Temple. He was a social success in London. But his social successes involved him in expenses far beyond his means. His publishers advanced him money which relieved him of his debts. In 1814 Moore contracted with the firm of Longmans for 3,000 guineas to supply a metrical romance on an Eastern subject. Moore retired to a cottage in the neighbourhood of Donington Park, where with the help of Lord Moira’s library he read himself slowly into familiarity with Eastern scenery and manners. According to Florence Parbury, (the author of The Emerald Set with Pearls, vide its Notes), "the particulars of the visit of the king of Bucharia to Aurangzib are found in Lt.-Col.
"In the eleventh year of the reign of Aurangzebe, Abdalia, King of Lesser Bucharia, a lineal descendant from Alexander Dow's *History of Hindostan*, London, 1803, Volume III, pages 418-19. I reproduce it below for the information of the reader:—

"An opportunity offered itself to his (Aurangzeb's) magnificence and generosity in the beginning of the eleventh year of his reign. Abdalla, king of the Lesser Bucharia, lineally descended from the great Zingis, having abdicated the throne to his son Aliris, advanced into Tibet, in his way to Mecca. He sent a message to Aurangzebe, requesting a permission for himself and his retinue to pass through India. The emperor ordered the governor of Cashmire to receive the royal pilgrim with all imaginable pomp, and to supply him with every article of luxury and convenience at the public expense. The governors of districts were commanded to attend Abdalla from province to province, with all their followers. The troops, in every place through which he was to pass, were directed to pay him all military honours; and in this manner he advanced to Delhi and was received by the Emperor at the gates of the city. Having remained seven months in the capital, he was conducted with the same pomp and magnificence to Surat where he embarked for Arabia."

The *Lalla Rookh* was published in 1817. It was an immediate success. Moore's fame speedily became European. "No poem of the time was more translated into foreign languages." But the poets of Moore's own day, who knew and liked Moore, never cared for *Lalla Rookh*. Leigh Hunt condemned it as "too florid in its general style." Moore was an amatory poet and he made successes by writing about love.

The story of "the Feast of Roses at Cashmere" is "most lavishly decorated." "*Lalla Rookh* is a work of very secondary merit and retains its place in literature mainly as an example of an extinct taste," says Stephen Gwynn in *Thomas Moore* (English Men of Letters, 1905, page 90).

"Kashmir is a dream of loveliness" says Florence Parbury. "The marvel lies in that Moore should have described so clearly and accurately a land he never visited." (*The Emerald Set with Pearls* by Florence Parbury.—Simpkin, Marshall, Hamilton, Kent & Co., Ltd., London.)

"No poem has ever had greater popularity than *Lalla Rookh* for it has been translated into all European and most Eastern languages, while Rubinstein, Schusmann, Felicia David, Sir Sterndale Bennett and many others have composed operas based upon parts of its romance."

"The greatest tribute to Moore's genius was the splendid entertainment given in the apartments of Frederick I, at the visit of the Grand Duke Nicholas in 1822. The different stories were represented in tableaux, vivants, songs and dances and all the characters were impersonated by members of the Royal House and Court."

At the close of the gorgeous pageant, the Empress of Russia who had herself played the part of "*Lalla Rookh*" exclaimed with a sigh: "Is it then all over? Is there no poet who will impart to others and to future times some notion of the happiness we have enjoyed this evening?"

Upon this Baron de la Motte Fouque promised to attempt it. It was from this grand fête that the translation of *Lalla Rookh* into German by Fouque originated. The French dancer, Jules Joseph Perrot, used *Lalla Rookh*, in 1846, in his shows in London, Paris and Milan.
the Great Zingis, having abdicated the throne in favour of his son, set out on a pilgrimage to the Shrine of the Prophet; and, passing into India through the delightful valley of Cashmere, rested for a short time at Delhi on his way. He was entertained by Aurungzebe in a style of magnificent hospitality, worthy alike of the visitor and the host, and was afterwards escorted with the same splendour to Surat, where he embarked for Arabia. During the stay of the Royal Pilgrim at Delhi, a marriage was agreed upon between the Prince, his son, and the youngest daughter of the Emperor, Lalla Rookh*—a Princess described by the

*The Oxford Companion to English Literature (compiled and edited by Sir Paul Harvey, Clarendon Press, Oxford, 1937, page 439) will accordingly be read with interest:—

We have written about Moore and the background of his Lalla Rookh. Now a word about Lalla Rookh the book itself.

Lalla Rookh, a series of oriental tales in verse, connected together by a story in prose, by Thomas Moore was published in 1817.

The prose-story relates the journey of Lalla Rookh, the daughter of the Emperor Aurungzebe, from Delhi to Cashmere, to be married to the young King of Bucharia. On the way, she and her train are diverted by four tales told by Feramorz, a young Cashmerian poet, with whom she falls in love, and who turns out, on her arrival at her destination, to be the king of Bucharia himself. An element of humour is introduced by the self-important chamberlain, Fadladeen. A series of accidents on the way has thrown him into a bad temper, which he vents in pungent criticisms on the young man's verses (in the style of the 'Edinburgh' reviewers), and he is correspondingly discomfited on discovering the latter's identity. The four tales are as follows:

The Veiled Prophet of Khorasan. The beautiful Zelica, half demented by the loss of Azim, her lover, supposed dead, is lured into the harem of Mokanna, a repellent impostor who poses as a prophet, on the promise of admission to paradise. Azim, returning from the wars, finds Zelica wedded to Mokanna, and joins the army of the Caliph, on its way to punish the blasphemy of Mokanna. The latter is defeated, throws himself into a vat of corrosive poison, and dies. Zelica, seeking death, puts on his veils, and being mistaken for the prophet, is killed by Azim and dies in his arms.

Paradise and Peri.—A peri, one of 'those beautiful spirits of the air who live on perfumes,' offspring of fallen angels, is promised admission to paradise if she will bring to the gate the gift that is most dear to heaven. She brings first a drop of the blood of a youthful warrior who dies to free India from the tyrant Mahmood of Gazna, but it fails to open the gate. Then the expiring sigh of an Egyptian maiden who dies from grief at the loss of her plague-stricken lover; this is equally unavailing. Lastly, the repentant tear wrung from a criminal by his child's prayer to God, and this opens the gate.

The Fire-Worshippers, a tale of the Ghebers or Persians of the old religion, who maintained their resistance against the conquering Moslems. Hafez, a young Gheber, falls in love with Hinda, daughter of the Emir
poets of her time as more beautiful than Leila, Shirine, Dewilde* or any of those heroines whose names and loves embellish the songs of Persia and Hindostan. It was intended that the nuptials should be celebrated at Cashmere where the young king, as soon as the cares of the Empire would permit, was to meet, for the first time, his lovely bride, and, after a few months' repose in that enchanting valley, conduct her over the snowy hills into Bucharia.

"The date of Lalla Rookh's departure from Delhi was as splendid as sunshine and pageantry could make it. The bazaars and baths were all covered with the richest tapestry; hundreds of gilded barges upon the Jumna floated with their banners shining in the water; while through the streets groups of beautiful children went strewing the most delicious flowers around, as in that Persian festival called the Scattering of the Roses: till every part of the city was as fragrant as if a caravan of musk from Khoten had passed through it. The Princess, having taken leave of her kind father, who, at parting, hung a cornelian of Yemen round her neck, on which was ascribed a verse from the Koran, and having sent a considerable present to the Fakirs, who kept up the Perpetual Lamp in her sister's tomb, meekly ascended the palankeen prepared for her: and, while Aurangzebe stood to take a last look from his balcony, the procession moved slowly on the road to Lahore.

"Seldom had the Eastern world seen a cavalcade so superb. From the gardens in the suburbs to the Imperial Palace, it was one unbroken line of splendour. The gallant appearance of the Rajahs and Mogul Lords distinguished by those insignia of the Emperor's favour, the feathers of the egret of Cashmere in their turbans, and the small silver-rimmed kettle-drums at the bows of their saddles; the costly armour of their cavaliers, who vied, on this occasion,

Al Hassan, who has been sent from Arabia to quell this resistance. Hafed scales the rocks on which her bower stands, and wins her love. Presently Hinda is captured by the Ghebers and discovers that her lover is their chief. The Ghebers are betrayed to Al Hassan, and Hafed throws himself on a funeral pyre. Hinda leaps from the boat on which she is being carried back to her father and is drowned.

The Light of the Harem, a story of Nourmahal, the beloved wife of Selim, son of the Great Akbar. The Feast of Roses is being celebrated in the Vale of Cashmere, but Nourmahal has quarrelled with her husband. Namouna, the enchantress, teaches her magic song, which Nourmahal sings, masked at Selim's banquet, and thus wins back his love.

*Dewal Devl.
with the guards of the great Keder Khan,* in the brightness
of their silver battle-axes and the massiness of their maces
of gold;—the glittering of the gilt pine-apples (a large
golden knob) on the tops of the palankeens;—the embroidered
trappings of the elephants bearing on their backs small
turrets, in the shape of little antique temples, within which
the Ladies of Lalla Rookh lay as it were enshrined: the
rose coloured veils of the Princess's own sumptuous litter,
at the front of which a fair young female slave sat fanning
her through the curtains, with feathers of the Argus
peasant's wing;—and the lovely troops of Tartarian and
Cashmerian maids of honour, whom the young King had
sent to accompany his bride, and who rode on each side of
the litter, upon small Arabian horses:—all was brilliant,
tasteful, and magnificent, and pleased even the critical and
fastidius Fadladeen (Fazl-ud-Din) Great Nazir or
Chamberlain of the Haram, who was borne in his palankee
immediately after the Princess.

"During the first days of their journey, Lalla
Rookh, who had passed all her life within the shadow
of the Royal Gardens of Delhi, found enough in the beauty
of the scenery through which they passed to interest her
mind, and delight her imagination; and when at evening
or in the heat of the day, they turned off from the high
road to those retired and romantic places which had been
selected for her encampments,—sometimes on the banks of
a small rivulet, as clear as the waters of the Lake of Pearl;
sometimes under the sacred shade of a Banyan tree, from
which the view opened upon a glade covered with antelopes;
and often in those hidden embowered spots, described by one
from the Isles of the West, as "places of melancholy,
delight, and safety, where all the company around was wild
peacocks and turtle-doves";—she felt a charm in these
scenes, so lovely and so new to her, which for a time, made
her indifferent to every other amusement. But Lalla Rookh
was young, and the young love variety; nor could the
conversation of her Ladies and the Great Chamberlain,
Fadladeen (the only person, of course, admitted to her
pavilion), sufficiently enliven those many vacant hours,
which were devoted neither to the pillow nor the palankee.
There was a little Persian slave who sung sweetly to the
Vina, and who, now and then, lulled the Princess to sleep

*Khāqān of Turkistān at the end of the eleventh century.
with the ancient ditties of her country, about the loves of Wamak and Ezra, the fair-haired Zal and his mistress Rodahver; not forgetting the combat of Rustam with the terrible white demon. At other times she was amused by those graceful dancing girls of Delhi, who had been permitted by the Brahmins of the Great Pagoda to attend her.

"It was recollected that, among the attendants sent by the bridegroom, was a young poet of Cashmere, much celebrated throughout the valley for his manner of reciting the Stories of the East, on whom his Royal Master had conferred the privilege of being admitted to the pavilion of the Princess; that he might help to beguile the tediousness of the journey by some of his most agreeable recitals . . .

"For the purpose of relieving the pauses of recitation by music, the young Cashmerian held in his hand a kitar*—such as, in old times the Arab maids of the West used to listen to by moonlight in the gardens of the Alhambra—and having premised, with much humility, that the story he was about to relate was founded on the adventures of that Veiled Prophet of Khorasan, who in the year of the Hegira 163, created such alarm throughout the Eastern Empire . . .

"They had now arrived at the splendid city of Lahore, whose mausoleums and shrines, magnificent and numberless, where Death seemed to share equal honours with Heaven would have powerfully affected the heart and imagination of Lalla Rookh, if feelings more of this earth had not taken entire possession of her already. She was here met by messengers, dispatched from Cashmere, who informed her that the king had arrived in the Valley, and was himself superintending the sumptuous preparations that were then making in the Saloons of the Shalimar for her reception . . .

"They were now reposeing for a time in the rich valley of Hussun Abdaul, which had always been a favourite resting-place of the Emperors in their annual migrations to Cashmere. Here often had the Light of the Faith, Jehan-Guiré, been known to wander with his beloved and beautiful Nourmahal.

"About two miles from Hussun Abdaul were those Royal Gardens which had grown beautiful under the care of

*From the Arabian كيتاب meaning a guitar or lyre or harp.
so many lovely eyes, and were beautiful still, though those eyes could see them no longer. This place, with its flowers and its holy silence, interrupted only by the dipping of the wings of birds in its marble basins filled with the pure water of those hills, was to Lalla Rookh all her heart could fancy of fragrance, coolness, and almost heavenly tranquillity.

"Who has not heard of the Vale of Cashmere, With its roses the brightest that earth ever gave. Its temples and grottos, and fountains as clear As the love-lighted eyes that hang over their wave? Oh! to see it at sunset,—when warm over the lake Its splendour at parting a summer eve throws, Like a bride, full of blushes, when lingering to take A last look of her mirror at night ere she goes!— When the shrines through the foliage are gleaming half shown,

And each hallows the hour by some rites of its own. Here the music of prayer from a minaret swells. Here the Magian his urn, full of perfume, is swinging, And here at the altar, a zone of sweet bells Round the waist of some Indian dancer is ringing. Or, to see it by moonlight,—when mellowly shines The light over its palaces, gardens and shrines; When the waterfall gleams, like a quick fall of stars, And the nightingale’s hymn from the Isle of Chenars Is broken by laughs and light echoes of feet From the cool, shining walks where the young people meet—

Or at morn, when the magic of daylight awakes A new wonder each minute, as slowly it breaks, Hills, cupolas, fountains, call’d forth every one Out of darkness, as if but just born of the Sun. When the spirit of Fragrance is up with the day, From his Haram of night-flowers stealing away; And the wind, full of wantonness, woes like a lover The young aspen-trees, till they tremble all over. When the East is as warm as the light of first hopes, And day with his banner of radiance unfurled Shines in through the mountainous portal that opes, Sublime from the valley of bliss to the world!
“But never yet, by night or day,
In dew of spring or summer’s ray,
Did the sweet Valley shine so gay,
As now it shines—all love and light,
Visions by day and feasts by night!
A happier smile illumines each brow,
With quicker spread each heart uncloses.
And all is ecstasy,—for now
The Valley hold its Feast of Roses;
The joyous time, when pleasures pour
Profusely round and, in their shower,
Hearts open like the season’s rose,—
The flow’ret of a hundred leaves,
(*Gul-i-Sad Barg or the rose of a hundred leaves*)
Expanding while the dew-fall flows,
And every leaf its balm receives.

’Twas when the hour of evening came
Upon the Lake, serene and cool,
When day had hid his sultry flame
Behind the palms of Baramoule,
When maids began to lift their heads,
Refreshed from their embroidered beds,
Where they had slept the sun away,
And waked to moonlight and to play.—

“Of the happiness of the King and Queen of Bucharia,
after such a beginning, there can be but little
doubt.”

Aurangzib ‘Alamgir did not remain in Hindustān
during the second half of his reign. The Deccan engaged his
attention. And there he passed away in 1707 A.C., after a
long reign extending over a period of fifty years. The
emperor’s whole stay in Kashmir was for three
months only.

Mullā Tāhir Ghani, the great poet of Kashmir, died
during the reign of Aurangzib ‘Alamgir. The ancestors of the
late Sir Muhammad Iqbal, who were Kashmirī Brāhmans
of the Saprū caste, embraced Islam in this reign.

Nawāzīsh Khān Rūmī, the governor-elect, was on his
way to Kashmir when he received the news of ‘Alamgir’s
death. After a year, Ja’far Khān succeeded Nawāzīsh Khān
Rūmī. Ja’far Khān proved to be a tyrant and a drunkard.
He died of hard drinking after having been governor for
one year and three months. Governors and high officials on assumption of office in Kashmir were welcomed by hereditary singers by grand receptions held in honour of such occasions. This was stopped by 'Ālamgīr. During Ja'far Khān’s governorship, Qāžī Haidar, surnamed “Qāžī Khān,” a Kashmiri by birth, who held the important office of the Qāžī-‘l-Quẓāt or Chief Justice under ‘Ālamgīr, passed away. The Qāžī’s remains were interred in his own garden in the village of Bachhpūr in the Phāk pargana, on the Dal.

The death of ‘Ālamgīr was followed by a short and sharp contest for the throne which ended in the death of two of his sons and three of his grandsons in the field. His eldest surviving son Mu‘azzam Shāh ‘Ālam was at Jamrūd, near Peshāwar, when on 22nd March, 1707, he heard of his father’s death and set out for Āgra, crowning himself as Bahādur Shāh at the bridge of Shāh Daula, 24 miles north of Lāhore. Meantime A‘zam Shāh after hastening to his father’s camp at Ahmadnagar had ascended the throne on 14th March. But, in their fights, A‘zam lost the day and lost his life in June. Kām Bakhsh who had crowned himself at Bijāpur was disposed of some four miles outside Hydarābād, Deccan, on January 13, 1709. Bahādur Shāh then reigned till February 1712 and died on the 27th of that month.

Later Mughals

At the time of Bahādur Shāh’s death all his four sons Jahāndār Shāh, ‘Azīm-ush-Shān, Rafī‘-ush-Shān and Jahān Shāh were with him at Lāhore. The brothers fought. Ultimately Jahāndār Shāh was victorious. But he gave himself up to pleasure. And in January 1713, therefore, Farrukh Siyar, the son of ‘Azīm-ush-Shān, enthroned himself and ruled till 1719, when the Sayyid Brothers ‘Abdullāh and Husain ‘Alī intrigued. They strangled Farrukh Siyar in April 1719. Rafī‘-ud-Darajat, a youth of twenty, was set upon the throne, but was a consumptive and therefore was made to give room to his elder brother, Rafī‘-ud-Daula, on 4th June, 1719. He lived within the fort almost a prisoner of the Sayyid Brothers when Raushan Akhtar, the son of Jahān Shāh (the fourth son of Bahādur Shāh), was crowned under the title of Nasir-ud-Din Muhammad Shāh on 28th September, 1719.

During Muhammad Shāh’s time the Sayyid Brothers set up Prince Muhammad Ibrāhīm, a brother of Rafī‘-ud-
Darajät and Rafi‘-ud-Daula on 14th October, 1720. A coin was actually struck in İbrahim’s name. But he was arrested and carried before Muhammad Shāh who received him royally, and kept him under watch and ward. Nādir Shāh, then, appeared on the scene. His invasion of India naturally weakened Mughul authority. And Delhi experienced a terrible massacre. But Ahmad Shāh Durrānī’s invasion was repelled near Manapur, 10 miles north-west of Sarhind, by Prince Ahmad Shāh, the son of Muhammad Shāh, in 1748.

On the death by dropsy of Muhammad Shāh, Prince Ahmad ascended the throne of Delhi on 29th April, 1748, as Mujāhid-ud-Dīn Ahmad Shāh Bahādur. In 1751 Ahmad Shāh Durrānī demanded and obtained the cession of the Punjāb and Multān from Ahmad Shāh the Mughul ruler of Delhi. The acquisition of the Punjāb enabled the Durrānī to take Kashmir in 1752 in the course of his third invasion of India.

The governors under Shāh ‘Ālam, Aurangzīb ‘Ālamgīr’s son, had begun to send representatives in their place to rule the country. The practice acquired considerable vogue in later years. Amānat Khān and Musharraf Khān were both representatives of Khwāja ‘Ināyatullāh who had been appointed to succeed Nawāzish Khān Rūmī. Other than this, there is very little of importance, to chronicle in the brief reign of Shāh ‘Ālam (Bahādur Shāh I) which terminated in 1712 A.C.

The only notable incident which took place in Kashmir at this time was the revolt of Rājā Muzaffar Khān Bamba in 1124 A.H. (1713 A.C.), and his taking possession of Darāvā* and Karnāva (modern Karnā) both sīfās of the Sūbadār of Kashmir. ‘Ināyatullāh Khān, the governor, was unable to reduce him to subjection owing to the death of the Emperor Jahāndār Shāh in 1124 A.H. This task was, however, performed by ‘Ali Muhammad Khān in the reign of the next ruler, Farrukh Siyar. The same Sūbadār also punished Abu’l Fath, the zamīndār of Pūnch. But ‘Ali

*The Ta‘rikh-i-Hasan, folios 258-59; Ta‘rikh-i-Khalil Mārijānpūrī folio 234. Darāvā is the name of a parjana which formed part of the possessions of the rājās of Karnā, and until the time of Sher Ahmad, the last of the line, the inhabitants seem to have held their lands rent-free on conditions of feudal service. Darāvā lies in the valley of the Kishangangā river, a tributary of the Jhelūr.

Karnāv or Karnā is now a tahsil in the Muzaffarābād district, lying north-west of Kashmīr to the south side of the Kishangangā river.
Muhammad Khan did not prove to be a good governor. He was recalled for levying unjust taxes.

Farrukh Siyar’s mother, Sâhiba Nisân, was a Kashmirian lady. Her brother Khwâja ‘Inâyatullah had the title of Shâista Khan.¹ When Farrukh Siyar’s marriage to the daughter of Ajit Singh of Jodhpur took place in 1715 A.C., Shâista Khan was sent to bring the bride from her home at Jodhpur to Delhi. ‘Inâyatullah rose to the rank of 4,000 and was made Imperial Revenue Minister in April, 1717. “He tried to purge the administration of the abuses that had recently crept into it and to restore the regulations and discipline of Aurangzib’s time.”² This raised him a host of enemies.

Muhammad Murâd Kashmiri.

Muhammad Murâd Kashmiri rose to the status of Haft-hazâri and ten thousand sowârs, with the title of Rukn-ud-Daula I’tiqâd Khan Bahâdûr Farrukh Shâhi, and had the sarkâr of Morâdabâd as his sîba re-named Rukn-abâd. Muhammad Murâd entered employment under Mîr Malik Husain Khan Jâhân Kokaltâsh the foster-brother of Aurangzib ‘Alamgîr. Later, he was attached to the camp of Shâh ‘Alam I. It was in the time of Jahândâr Shâh in 1713 A.C. that his rise began and reached its climax in that of Farrukh Siyar. Murâd was second Mîr Tûzuk or Marshal of the Empire of Delhi. The emperor said one day to the great nobles in darbâr: “You have heard, have you not, I’tiqâd Khan is related to my exalted mother.” Murâd became an enemy to the intrigues of the Sayyid Brothers in his loyalty to Farrukh Siyar, and was imprisoned in Sayyid Husain ‘Alî’s house. On the 12th of Ramazân 1139 A.H. (2nd May, 1717 A.C.), Murâd died in Delhi at the age of seventy-two.³

Immigration of the Nehrûs.

In Farrukh Siyar’s time, Pandit Râj Kaul, a scholar of Sanskrit and Persian, attracted the notice of the emperor during the royal visit to Kashmir. At the emperor’s instance the family of Râj Kaul migrated to Delhi about 1716,⁴ and

². The Cambridge History of India, Vol. IV, page 337.
later came to be known as the Nehru family of Allâhâbâd and produced Pandit Moti Lâl Nehru and his son Pandit Jawâhar Lâl Nehru.

**Muhammad Shâh.**

Nasîr-ud-Dîn Muhammad Shâh ascended the throne of Delhi in 1719 A.C. A youth of 17, Muhammad Shâh was extremely handsome, large of limb and strong. But his sedentary life of inactivity and sexual excess soon impaired his constitution, and he became a confirmed invalid by the time he was only 40. The evil was aggravated by his taking opium, and this drug habit made him weak and emaciated till at last it became impossible for him to move from his palace. As the fires of youthful passions burnt themselves out in Muhammad Shâh, says Sir Jâdu Nâth Sarkâr, a deep melancholy settled on him, and towards the end of his life he loved to frequent the society of fâqîrs and to hold long converse with them, discussing spiritual questions like an initiate. Though he neglected his public duties, “he was free from insolent pride, caprice and love of wanton cruelty. Nor did he lack consideration for others.” He showed courage “when instead of fleeing to Bengâl as advised by his friends, he voluntarily went into Nâdir Shâh’s captivity in order to save his people and capital from the horrors of violent assault and forcible subjugation to incensed victors.”

It cannot be denied that the emperor’s personal character up to now had largely accounted for good administration in distant provinces. But Muhammad Shâh and his nobles abandoned themselves to a life of ease and pleasure. Aurangzib ‘Abâmagîr had left a completely settled empire at his death, says Colonel Alexander Dow. Its disintegration commenced in the reign of Muhammad Shâh (1719-1748 A.C.) who is said to have once thrown an urgent report of an important conspiracy into a barrel of wine as useless bother—

اَيُّهُ ٌدَقَّرُ بَيْنَ مَعْنِيٍّ فَرْقٍ مَعْ نَابَ أُوْلِيٍّ

Muhammad Shâh did not recover from the effects of his orgy till two days after.

Muhammad Shâh, however, “never gave his consent to shedding blood or doing harm to God’s creatures. In his reign the people passed their lives in ease, and the empire

outwardly retained its dignity and prestige. The foundations of the Delhi monarchy were really rotten, but Muhammad Shāh by his cleverness kept them standing. He may be called the last of the rulers of Bābur’s line, as after him the kingship had nothing but the name left to it." (Siyar-ul-Mu'ta'-akhīrīn, 111, 25). Muhammad Shāh died in 1748, having been on the throne for 29 years.

In Muhammad Shāh’s reign, the history of Kashmir presents little else but a record of local riots and internecine struggles. Under him Kashmir entered upon a new phase of political life in that the Sūbadārs completely abstained from ruling their provinces in person as already mentioned, and deputed trusted agents answerable to them for good conduct and administration.

Mīr ‘Ināyatullāh Khān Kashmīrī.

Muhammad Shāh invested Mīr ‘Ināyatullāh Khān with the governorship of Kashmir. ‘Ināyatullāh Khān was a Kashmīrī by birth, and was descended from Qāzī Mūsā Shahīd who was killed in Ya‘qūb Shāh Chak’s days. ‘Ināyatullāh was originally Mīr ‘Ināyatullāh, and later became known as Mīr ‘Inayatullāh Khān. He had six sons of whom the more notable were: (i) the elder Hīdāyatullāh known first as Vazārāt Khān, then as Sa‘du’llāh Khān Mīr-i-Sāmān, and (ii) the younger son was ‘Atiāyatullāh Khān who was given as title his father’s name ‘Ināyatullāh Khān. Mīr ‘Ināyatullāh is known in Kashmir as Yanna Sōr as he built the wall or sōr of Hazrāt Makhdūm’s mausoleum, Yunnā being nicknamed from ‘Ināyatullāh. His mother, Ḥāfīzā Maryam, taught the ladies of the royal seraglio in the days of Aurangzib ‘Alamgīr, notably Zīb-un-Nisā. Ḥāfīzā Maryam’s mother Jān Begam, the daughter of Mulla Sharif, Mīr ‘Adl, taught the princesses in Shāh Jahān’s time. Aurangzib ‘Alamgīr had such great confidence in ‘Ināyatullāh’s ability that he made him Vazīr-i-A’zam when Nawwāb ‘Umdatu’l Mulk Madār ul-Mahāmm Ja’far Khān, the Prime Minister of the realm, was ill. ‘Ināyatullāh compiled the Akhām-i-‘Alamgīrī. All signed royal commands were collected and edited by him under the title of Kalimāt-i-Tayyībat. ‘Alamgīr had a high opinion of ‘Ināyatullāh’s literary attainments and was impressed by his diction, style and mode of calligraphy. ‘Ināyatullāh was handsome, good-natured, grave, and scrupulously honest. He was simple in his habits and loved to mix with fuqarā’ or friars.
'Ināyatullāh1 himself' seems to have been a conscientious man and selected his Nā'ibs or deputies with a view to proper government of the country.2 His Nā'ib, Mir Ahmad Khān, made honourable amends for the excesses of his predecessors by his good and equitable administration. But trouble arose from a strange quarter.

Mullah 'Abdun Nabi Muhtāvi Khān or Mahbūb Khān, who was given the title of Dīndār Khān by his followers, had risen on account of his learning to the post of Shaikh-ul-Islam of Kashmir in the time of Šāh 'Ālam Bahādur. "Muhtāvi or Mahbūb Khān Mullah 'Abdun Nabi" is mentioned in the Maāthir-ul-Umrā (Vol. III, page 761) as one of the learned men of the time and as selfish in obtaining his object under the cloak of advancing the cause of Islam. The Mullah was also a big landlord. A case of corruption by Pandit revenue clerks demanding gratification from the agents of Mullah Muhtāvi brought forth from him summary orders of ostracism for the corrupt clerical caste. Pandit Majlis Rāi, Sarrāf-i-Pādshāhī or the Royal Cashier, reported these restrictions to Shāhpūr Khān, Mir Bakhshi of Kashmir. The Mir Bakhshi was a Shi'a. It appears that disputes developed. And Pandits and Shi'as joined hands to oppose the Shaikh-ul-Islam. Riots ensued. Mullah Muhtāvi Khān was murdered by a faction of the Shi'as. His two younger sons were also put to death.

Mullah Sharaf-ul-Din, 'Abdun Nabi's son, stepped into the shoes of his father, and kept up trouble. Mir Ahmad Khān, the Nā'ib of the Sūbādār Mir 'Ināyatullāh Khān, could not control the situation and was consequently replaced. The second Nā'ib, 'Abdullāh Khān, also failed, and was replaced by Mūmin Khān Najm-i-Sānī, the third Nā'ib, who likewise failed in restraining the Shaikh-ul-Islam. Insurrections were still prevalent. 'Ināyatullāh resigned his post as Sūbādār. The Mughul Viceroy of Lāhorē, 'Abdus Samad Khān Ahmārī Saif-ud-Daulā Bāḥādur Dalir Jang who defeated Bandā Bāirāgī, and was the father of Zakariyā Khān the governor of Lāhorē during 1720-26, was appointed to fill it in 1720 A.C. 'Abdus Samad Ahmārī had 'Abdullāh Khān Deh-bidī (originally from Deh-bid, a village almost midway between Shirāz and Isfahān, Iran) as his Nā'ib.

1. The Ta'rikh-i-Khalil, folio 254, also Ta'rikh-i-Hasan folio 265.  
2. Lieutenant Newall, J.A.S.B., No. 6, 1854, page 442.  
Saif-ud-Daula proceeded from Lāhore with a large army. He took summary action against Mullā Sharaf-ud-Din, Shaikh-ul-Islām (the son and successor of Muhtavī Khān) who had become the leader of the insurrection after his father. Saif-ud-Daula put the Mulls to death, and hanged fifty insurgents. He also removed the restrictions imposed by the former Shaikh-ul-Islām, Mullā Muhtavī Khān, against the Pandits who had been forbidden, for a time, to use the turban, to ride, to wear the tilak or the vermilion mark on the forehead—somewhat paralleling the stricter and much more humiliating restrictions imposed on the Jāts and Lohānas of Brāhmanābād, the then capital of Lower Sind, by the Brāhman ruler Chack or Jajja (History of India as told by its own Historians—Ellist and Dowson, Vol. I, page 151). This action was so much esteemed by the Pandits that one of them sang of Saif-ud-Daula 'Ābdūl Samad in Kashmirī:—

"Haqqa lāv Samad phutrān zin;
"Na rūd kunih Sharaf, na rūd kunih Din."

[Verily Samad came swiftly, and Sharaf-ud-Din was nowhere. Literally, "Sharaf-ud-Din came breaking the saddle, and there remained neither Sharaf (His Highness) nor Din (i.e., nor his zeal for his faith) anywhere."]

In 1724 A.C. = 1137 A.H. 'Ināyatullāh was re-appointed governor of Kashmir, third time but died after a few months at Delhi. Aqidat Khān, the next governor-elect, appointed Mir Firūz-ud-Din Nawwāb Abu'l Barakāt Khān Firūz Jang Sūfī, to give him his full subsequent title, his Nā'īb but he proved a failure. Āghur Khān succeeded 'Āqidat Khān in 1727 A.C. Āghur came himself to Kashmir, but began to oppress the people, and sent Abu'l Barakāt, who opposed him, as a prisoner to Delhi. The people became so incensed against Āghur for his oppression that they finally chased him out. He escaped to Bārāmūla where he received orders of his dismissal. Dil Dīlīr Khān Pānīpatī, Fakhr-ud-Daula Bahādur, and 'Atīatullāh known as 'Ināyatullāh Khān the second, the younger son of the first Mir 'Ināyatullāh Khān Kashmirī, succeeded one after the other.

Abu'l Barakāt, who had been removed from the office of the Nā'īb, appeared, on release from Delhi, as the champion of popular cause in times of fires, floods, earthquakes and windstorms and helped them. He rose against the governor, 'Ināyatullāh the second, conspired with the leading

landlords of Pûnch, Muhammad Zamân and Wâli Muhammad, and had the governor killed on 16th Shawwâl, 1154 A.H.=1741 A.C., at the hands of Pandit Dayâ Râm, their accomplice. The Mughul Nâ’ibs or deputies fought either with the neighbouring chiefs and nobles, or with their own master, as was the case of Abu’l Barakât when he was the Nâ’ib himself.

**Beginning of the transfer from Mughul to Afghan rule.**

Nâdir Shâh’s presence in Afghanistân and his subsequent invasion of Hindustân exerted an unfavourable influence on all provinces, particularly Kashmir, which was not far away from Afghanistân, the home of Ahmad Shâh Durrâni, Kâbul and Qandahâr being included in the Sûbah of Kashmir under Akbar as already noted before. When Nâdir Shâh placed the crown of Hindustân on the head of Muhammad Shâh, the Emperor bowed and offered the provinces of his empire west of the river Indus from Kashmir to Sind. Kashmir proper, however, does not appear to have been annexed by Nâdir Shâh. But the Ta’rikh-i-Kashmîr by Mullâ Khalîl Marjânpûrî and the Ta’rikh-i-Hasân by Pir Hasan Shâh assert that Fakhr-ud-Daula obtained order of appointment as Sûbadâr of Kashmir in 1152 A.H.=1739 A.C. from Nâdir Shâh, and ruled for forty days in Nâdir’s name and gave currency to Nâdir’s coin as well. Subsequently, however, Fakhr-ud-Daula, probably on revised orders from Delhi, accepted ‘Inâyatullâh Khân the second as the Sûbadâr of Muhammad Shâh and left Srinagar.

Circumstances then combined further to unsettle authority, and caused anarchy to become rampant in Kashmir. The situation did not improve under Ahmad Shâh who succeeded Muhammad Shâh on the throne of Delhi in 1748 A.C., a year after Nâdir Shâh’s death.

Such was the condition of Kashmir when, in 1747 A.C., some of the nobles wrote to Ahmad Shah Durrâni, who had taken the place of Nâdir Shâh, to annex Kashmir. When this letter fell into the hands of Afrâsiyâb, the Mughul pro-consul, these nobles broke out into open revolt, and asked Ahmad Shâh, the Mughul emperor of India, to appoint a governor. Consequently, Mir Muqim Kanth was appointed as such, as a temporary measure, but he was soon driven out by Abu’l Qâsim, the son of Abu’l Barakât.* In 1752 A.C., when Ahmad Shâh Durrâni was at Lâhore preparing

*The Ta’rikh-i-Hasan, folio 287.
for an invasion of Hindustān, Mīr Muqīm and Khwāja Zahir Didamarī of Kashmir craved his assistance. Thereupon, Ahmad Shāh Durrānī dispatched 'Abdullāh Khān Ishak Aqāsī with a considerable force. After some ineffectual negotiations, Abu’l Qāsim, the Mughul Nāzim, fought the Afghāns at Gund-Ni’mat (near Shupiyān) for fifteen days. His commander-in-chief, Gul Khān Khaibārī, deserted him, whereupon Abu’l Qāsim, the last Mughul governor of Kashmir, fled and was taken prisoner. The Valley of Kashmir passed on to the Afghāns.

**Summary of the benefits of Mughul Kule.**

Before we turn to the Afghāns, we must sum up comments on the Mughuls. The Mughuls were generally solicitous for the welfare of the country and its people. The visits of emperors to the Valley stimulated its trade and encouraged its industries. The Mughul empire, suggests Mr. W. C. Smith,\(^1\) was allied to the middle class, and during its most flourishing period it had middle class commerce as a secondary and very important basis of income, its primary basis being land. It appears that copper mines were worked during Jahāngīr’s time in Kashmir, and the Emperor made a grant of these mines to a private individual to be worked.\(^2\) Jahāngīr is, perhaps, the pioneer in opening up, as it were, the tourist trade of the Valley. During the entire period of one hundred and sixty-six years, in which Kashmir was under the Mughuls, there are, out of 63 governors, only six instances of high-handed treatment of the Kashmiris. According to Colonel Alexander Dow,\(^3\) an Orientalist, and a civil servant under the East India Company in 1772 A.C., whom we quoted before, “the uncommon abilities of most of the Princes with the mild and humane character of all rendered Hindostan the most flourishing Empire in the world during two complete centuries.” Sir Jadu Nāth Sarkār mentions\(^4\) the following six gifts of the Mughul Empire to India: (1) the uniform administrative type throughout the Subas; (2) one official language; (3) one uniform system of coinage; (4) an all-India cadre of higher public services, the officers being transferred from province to province every three or four years; (5) the frequent march of large armies from province to province, and (6) deputation of inspecting

---

1. *Islamic Culture*, Hyderabad, October, 1944, page 362.
officers from the central capital. To these may be added the fact that the patronage of, and interest in, art shown by Mughul rulers in India is unparalleled in any cultural history of humanity in the world.

We cannot do better than close this Chapter by a quotation from Dr. Sachchidananda Sinha1 the scholarly ex-Vice-Chancellor of the Patna University and ex-Minister, Bihār, on the Mughuls in Kashmir. “Ever since Akbar added Kashmir to his dominions,” says Dr. Sinha, “the Valley cast its spell upon him and his descendants. Kashmir formed the inspiration of the greatest Moghal Emperors during the years that it was an appanage of the Delhi throne. Akbar, Jahangir, Shah Jahan, and Aurangzehb, each, in turn, made it his summer resort. “Truly,” exclaimed Jahangir, “this is the paradise of which priests have prophesied and poets sung.” For nearly a century and a half, these four great Emperors came, from far-away Delhi and Agra, in stately progress across the Pir Panjal, with glittering retinues and splendid state, with escorts and audiences, tributes and forced labour, from the dusty glamour of an Indian court to the cool and quiet of a Kashmir summer. And Jahangir, when stricken with his fatal illness, knowing that his hour was near, turned to this one spot of all his wide Indian dominions, and died at Behramgul,2 almost within sight of his beloved and favourite land. Fourteen summers he had spent in the Kashmir Valley, coming in with the blossoming of the lilac and the wild iris in the spring, and setting out back towards the plains of India when the saffron flowers had bloomed in the autumn.”

---


2. Bahram-Galah is a small village in the Mendhar Tahsil of Pīnch and has a population of 328. It was Jahāngir’s favourite shooting place. At the bottom of a high mountain, a wall was built for resting a matchlock. And the country people driving the deer down the side of the mountain afforded Jahāngir excellent sport. A foot soldier drove a deer before him. The soldier’s foot slipped. He fell down the mountain and was killed. This so affected Jahāngir that he left off shooting, and retired to his tent in great concern. It seemed to him as if the angel of death had visited him under the form of this unfortunate man. From that moment he sunk into despair. He proceeded from Bahram-Galah to Thanna and thence to Rajauri, commencing his stage about three o’clock in the afternoon as usual. He breathed with the utmost difficulty during the night, and expired on Sunday morning. It was the 28th of Safar A.H. 1037 = 28th October, 1627 A.C. Jahāngir was in the sixtieth year of his age and twenty-second of his reign.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Father</th>
<th>Mother</th>
<th>Spouse</th>
<th>Son</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Timur Shāh</td>
<td>Zulfiqar Khān</td>
<td>Ahmad Khān</td>
<td>Shujā‘-ul-Mulk</td>
<td>Fath Jang</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sulaiman Shāh</td>
<td>Zaman Khān</td>
<td>Ahmad Khān</td>
<td>Sultān ‘Ali</td>
<td>Shāhpūr</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sikandar Shāh</td>
<td>Timur Shāh</td>
<td>Sulaiman Shāh</td>
<td>Timur Shāh</td>
<td>Safdar Jang</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Parviz</td>
<td>Ahmad Shāh Durrānī</td>
<td>Ahmad Khān</td>
<td>Firuz or Hājī</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

- Zaman Khān who had descended from Sado
- Ahmad Khān (subsequently Ahmad Shāh Durrānī)

Note: The chart represents the Durranī Dynasty of Ahmad Shāh Durrānī.
CHAPTER VII
KASHMIR UNDER THE AFGHĀNS

[1752 A.C. TO 1819 A.C.]

Before we present the position in Kashmir under the Afghāns it is necessary to know who the invader from among the Afghāns was, his successors, their fights for power in Afghānistān, for Afghān politics naturally had their repercussion on the course of events in Kashmir during this period. We did not do this in the case of Mughul rule as the invader came from Āgra, and the broad outline of Mughul history in India is fairly well known to the general reader. In the case of the Afghāns it is not Āgra or Delhi but distant Herāt, Qandahār and Kābul, that affected the destinies of the people in the Valley of Kashmir. Therefore, a bird’s-eye view of the happenings in Afghānistān will enable the reader of Kashmir to understand the background of the drama staged in Srinagar.

Ahmad Shāh Durrānī.

Ahmad Shāh Durrānī who conquered Kashmir in 1752 A.C. was the son of Muhammad Zamān Khān, an Afghān of the Sadozai clan of the Popalzai branch of the Abdālī tribe living in the province of Herāt. Zamān Khān’s father ‘Abdullāh Khān was the son of Hayāt Sultān. The Sadozai clan was so called on account of its chief Sado who had obtained certain concessions from Shāh ‘Abbās the Great of Irān in the sixteenth century. Sado’s companion was Muhammad. From Muhammad, Hāji Jamāl Khān, the father of Pāinda Khān—whose son Amīr Dūst Muhammad Khān later ruled at Kābul—descended. Zamān Khān had migrated to Multān where Ahmad was born. The exact date of Ahmad’s birth is however not known, though the Encyclopaedia of Islam gives 1722, and the Encyclopaedia Britannica gives 1724, and therefore 1722-24 may be considered approximate. The Sadozais to whom Zamān Khān belonged were—it is said—Shi’as, and hence a surmise that they derived their name from ‘Abd-i-‘Alī or the Servant of Caliph ‘Alī. Sayyid Jamāl-ud-Dīn
Asadabadi, widely known as Afghani, accordingly spells the name ‘Abdal. As, however, the Abdalis later turned strict Sunnis, the second version is that they were called Abdali because they were descended from Abdal, the founder of this clan, who was so called by his own pir Khwaja Abu Ahmad Abdul Chishti, a saint. Abdul had three grandsons called Popal, Barak, Haloko and Musa. Popal had six sons, of whom the third was Bami. Bami’s eldest son was Sado. The two principal clans of the Durraniis whose government, Mountstuart Elphinstone says, was at all times democratic, were the Popalzais and the Barakzais. The Sadozais, or the royal race, was one of the branches of the Popalzais. The Bamiuzai in which the vizarat was vested was another branch of the same clan. Second in influence to the Popalzais and greater in extent was the tribe of Barakzais. The elder brother of Ahmad Khan was Zulfiquar Khan. Before the advent of Nadir Shah, there was trouble in Iran when Zamun, Zulfiquar and Ahmad returned to Herat from Multan.

The Afghans revolted against Nadir Shah. He defeated them. By way of punishment Nadir removed the Ghilzais inhabiting Qandahar to Herat and forced the Sadozais from Herat to Qandahar. During the execution of this transfer of Afghans, Zulfiquar and Ahmad were taken prisoners presumably on account of some protest against, or interference in, the orders of Nadir by them. Zulfiquar and Ahmad struck Nadir as promising youths. The elder brother rose to the command of a large clan in 1737 and was in course of time made governor of Herat, where he lost his life in a fight with the Ghilzais. Ahmad was enlisted in the personal staff of Nadir on account of his bright features, his keen intelligence and conspicuous gallantry.

Nadir Shah was murdered near Mashhad in eastern Iran on the night of 9th June, 1747. In the confusion that ensued, Ahmad Khan seized a major part of the treasury and the famous diamond, the Kuh or Koh-i-Nur, ‘the Mountain of Light,’ and hastened to Qandahar. En route in October, 1747, the Afghan chiefs elected him their leader and called him Ahmad Shahr. Haji Jamal—the father of

Pāinda Khān and grandfather of Dūst Muhammad Khān—who was also a candidate, withdrew in favour of Ahmad Shāh. Ahmad Shāh was crowned in the mosque at Qandahār by pouring on his head a measure of wheat which to the Afghāns is symbolic of abundance and prosperity. Ahmad Shāh was thus the first to lay the foundation of the kingdom of Afghānistān. Hāji Jamāl first, and later Shāh Valī Khān Bāmīzāi, was appointed Ashraf-ul-Wuzūrā or the prime minister.

How Ahmad Shāh Abdālī became ‘Durrānī’ is explained by the circumstance of his pīr Muḥammad Sābir Shāh calling him Durr-i-Daurān, ‘The Pearl of the Age.’ But Ahmad Shāh preferred to be styled Durr-i-Durrān, or ‘The Pearl of Pearls,’ states the Hayāt-i-Afghānī of Sādār Muhammad Hayāt Khān (page 129), hence the name Durrānī applied to the Abdālis. The Encyclopaedia of Islam, however, discards the version about Durr-i-Daurān and accepts Durr-i-Durrān. Ahmad Shāh was about 25 then.

Ahmad Shāh claimed the provinces that Nādīr had wrested from the Emperor Muhammad Shāh as a part of the Durrānī kingdom, which included Qandahār, Ghaznī, Kābul, Hazārā, Peshāwar, Derajāt, Multān and Sind. Ahmad Shāh invaded India ten times; it was the fifth invasion which brought about the defeat of the Marathas at the third battle of Pānīpat in 1761. It was in the course of his third invasion in 1752 that Kashmir was annexed under the circumstances already narrated at the close of the preceding chapter of Kashmir.

In 1757 during his fourth invasion Ahmad Shāh married Timūr to Zuhra Begam the daughter of ‘Ālamgīr II, and himself married Hazrat Begam the daughter of Muhammad Shāh emperor of Delhi.

Without going into the details of the busy life of Ahmad Shāh here, suffice it to say that he died in October 1772 (1186 A.H.) of complications arising from nasal gangaraine. He was highly esteemed by the Afghāns who called him Ahmad Shāh Bābā, respecting him as a saint. His mausoleum at Qandahār is declared a bast or a sanctuary where not even criminals can be touched. In the words of Elphinstone, Ahmad Shāh “was himself a divine and an author and was always ambitious of the character of a saint.”
Ahmad Shâh was succeeded by his son Timûr Shâh, born in December, 1746, at Mashhad in Írân, when Ahmad Shâh was serving Nâdir. Ahmad Shâh's three other sons were: Sulaimân Shâh, Sikandar Shâh and Farviz. Shâh Vali Khân, the Vazîr, wanted to enthrone Sulaimân who was his son-in-law. The Vazîr was therefore killed at the instance of Timûr Shâh. Qâzî Faizullâh was nominated prime minister. And Sardâr Pâinda Khân, who was the son of Hâjî Jamâl Khân and the chief of the Bârakzaïs, was given the title of Sarfrâz Khân. He came over to the side of Timûr having deserted Shâh Vali Khân. Pâinda Khân, as already stated, later becomes famous as the father of Amîr Dûst Muhammed Khân. Pâinda Khân really replaced his own brother, Rahîm-dâd Khân, whose testy emper did not appeal to the people.

Timûr transferred his capital from Qandahâr to Kâbul as more peaceful, but usually wintered at Poshâwar. Timûr invaded India five times. When he was occupied with his fourth invasion, mostly with the Sikhs in the Punjâb, Azâd Khân, the governor, revolted against his authority in Kashmir. Of this we shall hear later.

Timûr Shâh defeated Murâd Shâh, king of Bukhârâ (Turkistân) who was preparing to invade Afghân territory in December, 1790.

According to Sayyid Jamâl-ud-Dîn Afghânî,* Timûr had three hundred women in his harem and not one of them was Afghân, and that he left 32 sons.

At last Timûr Shâh died on 20th May, 1793, and was buried at Kâbul which he loved best in the whole of his empire.

Zamân Shâh.

Zamân Shâh with the support of Pâinda Khân Bârakzaî, obtained through Timûr's favourite queen, succeeded Timûr. He was about 23 years of age and his empire comprehended Kâbul, Ghazní, Qandahâr, Herât, Khurâsân, Bîlkh, Poshâwar, Kashmir, Sind, Mûltân, Bâhâwalpur and

the Derajat of Ismā’īl Khān and Ghāzī Khān. Zamān Shāh however had his troubles. Usually they were from his brothers and nephews and from Írān. The principal brothers were in order: (1) Humāyūn, (2) Mahmūd, (3) Zamān, (4) ‘Abbās, (5) Shujā‘, (6) Shāhpūr and (7) Fīrūz. Then Humāyūn had his son Ahmad. Mahmūd’s sons were Nādir Mīrzā and Kāmīrān. Zamān had four sons: Haidar, Qaisar, Nāsir and Mansūr.

Āghā Muhammad Khān, the founder of the Kājār dynasty of Írān, at one time demanded Balkh, but had to give up the idea on account of the Russian invasion of his own country. Zamān Shāh’s advances in India were the cause of alarm to the British in India, particularly when he was at Lāhore in 1797. In 1798 he re-visited Lāhore and appointed Ranjīt Singh to be the rājā of Lāhore to the exclusion of unpopular Afghāns, and returned to Herāt to meet the threat of Fath ‘Alī Shāh Kājār, the successor of Āghā Muhammad Khān Kājār, and installed Shujā‘-ul-Mulk, his own brother, as governor of Herāt.

The policy of Zamān, contrary to that of his predecessors, was to keep the chiefs at his court without consulting them on affairs of state. The chiefs of the Bārakzaīs, of the Qizilbāsh or the Írānian settlers in Afghānistān, and other notables were accordingly alienated. According to Elphinstone, the source of Zamān’s errors was his choice of Rahmatullāh Sadozai with the title of Vafādār Khān for the office of Vazīr (page 568). And Vafādār used his power against Sarfrāz Khān on the allegation that Sarfrāz Khān was plotting against Zamān and working for Shāh Shujā‘,
THE BĀRAKZAI DYNASTY OF AFGHĀNISTĀN

Haji Jamal Khan Bārākzai

Pāinda Khān, on whom Timūr Shāh conferred the title of Sarfrāz Khān, had 21 sons and several daughters. According to the Wāqī‘āt-i-Durrānī they were from several wives. The principal sons are shown as sons of the same mother. According to Pandit Mohan Lāl Kashmiri alias Aghā Hasan Jān, Fath Khān was the eldest and Dūst Muḥammad Khān the twentieth son.

1. Timūr Qulī Khān
2. Asad Khān
3. Fath Khān
4. Muḥammad ʿAzīm Khān

Hābilitullāh
1. ʿAḥdūs Sāmād
2. Amīr Muḥammad
3. Dūst Muḥammad

Afzal Khān
1. ʿAḥdūs Rāhmān Khān

Hābilitullāh Khān

Nādir Khān, who became Nādir Shāh

Zāhir Shāh, the reigning Amir of Afgānīstān

Yaʿqūb Khān
Ayyūb Khān

Nādir Khān, who became

Nādir Shāh

Yaḥyā Khān

1. Yār Muḥammad
2. Pir Muḥammad
3. Saʿīd Muḥammad
4. Sultān Muḥammad
About the close of 1799, a conspiracy was organized in Kābul by the leading chiefs owing to the insolent behaviour of the Prime Minister, Vafādār Khān. The plot was betrayed. The conspirators, including Sarfrāz Khān, the leader of the Bā rakzaīs, were executed. Fath Khān, the eldest of the twenty-one sons of Pāindā Khān, escaped to Khurāsān where he joined Prince Mahmūd, Timūr's second son. Mahmūd, on Fath Khān's advice, advanced against Zamān Shāh. Zamān's chief ally Ahmad Khan Nūrzāī was won over with the result that Zamān had to fly for his life. Vafādār Khān was executed. Zamān took shelter with 'Āshiq Khan Shīnwārī, a staunch supporter of his, in Āshiq Khān's castle, which is located in Shīnwārī area, about 25 miles west of Jalālābād. But 'Āshiq Khān betrayed him. It was in 'Āshiq's castle, Elphinstone says, that Zamān secreted the Koh-i-Nūr in the wall of his apartment whence it was afterwards extracted on Shujaʿī's accession. Asad Khān, Fath Khān's brother, accompanied by a surgeon, caused the destruction of Zamān's eyes in 1801.

"So fell Zaman Shah, the once dreaded Afghan monarch, whose threatened invasion of Hindostan had for years been a ghastly phantom haunting the Council-Chamber of the British Indian Government," writes John William Kaye, the author of the History of the War in Afghanistan (London, 1857, Vol I, page 23). "He survived the loss of his sight nearly half a century and, as the neglected pensioner of Loodianah, to the very few who could remember the awe which his name once inspired, must have presented a curious spectacle of fallen greatness—an illustration of the mutability of human affairs scarcely paralleled in the history of the world. He died at last full of years, empty of honours, his death barely worth a newspaper record or a paragraph in a state paper." Zamān, according to Kaye, came to Lūdhiāna, survived his blindness for nearly half a century, and remained a neglected pensioner of the British. But according to Jamāl-ud-Dīn 'Afghānī, Zamān proceeded to the Amir of Bukhārā where his beautiful daughter was married to the Amir. Fath 'Ali Shāh Kājār of Irān received him in Teherān whence Zamān moved to Baghdād whose Vālī at the time was Dāʾūd, and at last died in the Hijāz. But the fact is that Zamān died at Lūdhiāna as a British pensioner getting Rs. 4,000 per mensem, and is buried close to his wife under a big dome in Sarhind. Shujaʿī was over twenty at the blinding of Zamān.
Shujā'-ul-Mulk.

On the fall of Zamān Shāh in 1801, Shujā'-ul-Mulk who was holding his post at Peshāwar, marched on Kābul in September 1801 after having proclaimed himself king of Afghānistān. Fath Khān defeated Shujā'. Mahmūd, the elder brother of Zamān and Shujā', after seven years of waiting, conflict and misfortune, ascended the throne at Kābul in 1801 A.C. He showed generosity to the army and to his chiefs. Vāzir Fath Khān, whom we have already known as the eldest son of Pāinda Khān (Sarfrāz Khān), was given the title of ‘Shāh Dūst.’ He is the Warwick of Afghānistān or its King-Maker. Sher Muhammad Khān, son of Shāh Valī Khān Bāmīzāi, was named Mukhtār-ud-Daula. Sardār ‘Abdullāh Khān Halokozāi, called by Kāshmiri historians Aīkūzāi and by some ‘Aīkūzāi—father of Yār Muhammad Khān—who had been confined in the Bālā Hisār of Kābul by Shāh Zamān, was released from this fortress, and made governor of Kāshmir. Kāmrán Mīrzā, his own son, was sent out to fight Shujā’, who fled to the fastnesses of the Khybar Pass. Mahmūd’s two rivals, Shāh Shujā’ and Prince Qaisar, Zamān’s son, who had lost Herāt which he held during his father’s time, were now out of the way. Mahmūd ruled in peace. There were, however, riots twice between Ghilzāis and Durrānīs but they were quelled.

Two years and six months after Mahmūd’s accession Shi‘a-Sunni or Qizilbāsh and Afghān clashes at Kābul stirred the country. Mahmūd was indolent and Fath Khān was absent from the capital trying to track out Shujā’. Indifference to the Sunnis on the part of Mahmūd disappointed them. Fath Khān returned to Kābul to find the situation out of control. Shujā’ was endeavouring to subsist himself and a few followers by the sale of royal jewels in the Afrīdī country, when an express was sent to him to come to Kābul. On his arrival the revolution was complete. Mahmūd was imprisoned in Bālā Hisār, Kābul, and Shujā’ was enthroned in the same city on 13th July, 1802. Fath Khān fled. ‘Āshiq Khān Shīrwārī who had betrayed Zamān was executed and thus met the doom he deserved. Shāh Shujā’, in his autobiography* written by him at Ludhīāna in 1826-27, says:

---

“Sháh Mähmu'd . . . . . . after swearing on the Qur’án he would not again be guilty of treachery, sent some of his principal attendants to request the royal pardon, which we granted and had him conveyed from the outer to the inner fort with all due respect to his rank.” Fath Khán likewise sought pardon and was given the same. Shujá' then set out to overawe Kashmir as ‘Abdulláh Khán Halokozai was assuming independence. While Shujá' was so occupied, Fath Khán set on Prince Qaisar to contest his uncle’s throne. Sháh Shujá' naturally returned in haste to meet this new danger, and quelled it. On the intercession of Zamán, Qaisar's father and Mukhtár-ud-Daula who had deserted Mähmu'd to join Sháh Shujá', the young Prince was pardoned. It was about this time that Elphinstone's mission came to Pesháwar and halted from the 25th of February to the 14th of June, 1809.

Finding things unfavourable in Kábul on a repulse at Nimla by Mähmu'd in August 1809, Sháh Shujá' dispatched his harem and his blind brother Zamán Sháh to Ráwalpindi. He made "new efforts to splinter up his broken fortunes." But he met failure after failure. He marched on Pesháwar and took Bálá Hisár or the royal fortresses there from the governor of Pesháwar, Muhammad ‘Azím Khán Bárakzai, but was carried away in 1812 by Jahándád Khán first to the fort of Pesháwar and afterwards to the Valley of Kashmir through the bribery of the Súbadár of Kashmir, Jahándád's brother, ‘Atá Muhammad Khán Bámízai, the son of Mukhtár-ud-Daula. Shujá' appears to have remained in Kashmir for about a year. "When Sháh Mähmu'd heard of the way in which we were treated," writes Shujá', "the latent feelings of fraternal affection were aroused within him and he immediately sent a force into the Bárakzai country. After plundering the whole tribe of ‘Atá Muhammad Khán, he carried men, women and children into captivity. Finding that this had not the desired effect, viz., our release from bondage, he sent a force to Kashmir under Fath Khán." ‘Atá Muhammad advanced to give him battle. But his own men went over to the Vazír. When threatened by Fath Khán early in 1813, ‘Atá Muhammad implored the assistance of his captive. "Seeing his escape could not be effected without our aid, he came," says Sháh Shujá', "to our place of confinement, bare-headed, with the Qur'án in one hand, a naked sword in the other, and a rope about his neck, and requested our forgiveness for the sake of the sacred volume." Forgiveness was given.
Fath Khan had asked for Ranjit Singh's assistance. Mohkam Chand who led the Sikh expedition accordingly advanced on Kashmir. Fath Khan was invading Kashmir from another direction. The rebel Nāzim submitted. Shuja' says: "Mohkam Chand, on the part of Ranjit Singh, informed us that his master was anxious that we should proceed to Lāhore as soon as at liberty, and visit the residence of our seraglio in that city. He also mentioned that his master's fame would be enhanced by our going. According to Fath Khan's petition, we agreed to this and marched towards Lāhore with Mohkam Chand and other Singh's, whilst Fath Khan returned to Shāh Mahmūd in Kābul." Ranjit Singh, it soon became very clear, coveted the possession of the Koh-i-Nūr diamond.

On the second day of arrival in Lāhore an emissary from Ranjit demanded the gem in the name of his master. The fugitive monarch asked for time to consider the request. "We then," writes Shāh Shuja', "experienced privations of the necessaries of life and sentinels were placed over our dwelling. A month passed in this way. Confidential servants of Ranjit Singh then waited on us, and inquired if we wanted ready cash, and would enter into an agreement and treaty for the gem. We answered in the affirmative. Next day Rām Singh brought 40,000 or 50,000 rupees, and asked again for the Koh-i-Nūr which we promised to procure when some treaty was agreed upon. Two days after this Ranjit Singh came in person. After friendly protestations, he stamped a paper with safflower and swearing by the Granth of Bābā Nānak and his own sword, he wrote the following security and compact—That he delivered over the provinces of Kōt Kamālia, Jhang Sīyāl and Kalānau to us and our heirs for ever: also offering assistance in troops and treasure for the purpose of again recovering our throne. We also agreed if we should ever ascend the throne, to consider Ranjit Singh always in the light of an ally. He then proposed himself that we should exchange turbans, which is, among the Sikhs, a pledge of eternal friendship, and we then gave him the Koh-i-Nūr," According to John William Kaye (Vol. 1, pages 110-1), Ranjit Singh stripped the wretched monarch of everything that was worth taking, and "even after this," says Shuja', "he did not perform one of his promises." As a matter of fact, indignities were heaped on the unfortunate Shāh. Spies were set over him. And guards surrounded his dwelling.
"We thought of the proffered friendship of the British Government and hoped for an asylum at Ludhiana," writes Shuja'. "The members of the seraglio with their attendants, all dressed in the costume of the country, found a safe conveyance to the cantonments of Ludhiana." But his own escape was yet to be effected. "Seven ranges of guards," continues Shah Shuja' "were put upon our person, and armed men with lighted torches watched our bed. . . . Several months passed in this manner."

After all, Shuja' foiled Ranjit's efforts. Disguised as a mendicant, he escaped with two followers into the street, and emerged thence through the main sewer which ran beneath the city wall. Out of Lahore, instead of proceeding towards Ludhiana, Shuja' made for Jammu, was joined by some Sikhs discontented with Ranjit Singh, and reached Kishtwar, the raja of which offered hospitality. "Tired of an idle life," Shuja' frankly says, "we laid plans for an attack on Kashmir." The raja of Kishtwar offered help with men and money. But, in Kaye's words, it was not written in Shah Shuja's book of life that his enterprises should result in anything but failure. His attack on Kashmir closed in defeat and disaster. He himself says: "We were only three kos from 'Azim Khan's camp with the picturesque city of Kashmir (viz., Srinagar), full in view when the snow began again to fall, and the storm continued with violence without intermission, for two days. Our Hindustanis were benumbed with a cold unfelt in their sultry regions, the road to our rear was blocked up with snow and the supplies still far distant. For three days our troops were almost famished. Many Hindustanis died. We could not advance. And retreat was hazardous. Many lost their hands and feet from being frost-bitten, before we determined to retreat." At the earnest request of the raja of Kishtwar, Shuja' remained during nine months beneath his host's hospitable roof. Then he marched through Kulū, crossed the Sutlej for a journey to Ludhiana and joined his family in the month of September 1816. He spent two years of quiet. The Durrāni empire was rent by intestine convulsions. The Bārkzai Sardārs were dominant at Kābul. Shāh Mahmūd and other princes threatened his domination. In the meantime, 'Azim Khan invited Shāh Shuja' to re-assert his claim to the throne of Kābul. Shuja', weary of repose, and, as Kaye remarks, unwarned by past experience, flung
himself into this new enterprise, only to add another to that long list of failures which it took nearly a quarter of a century more to render complete.

While Shāh Shujā‘ was in Ludhiāna, Fath Khān had set out to meet the Kājār invasion from the west of Afgānistān. While engaged on this expedition, the foolish behaviour of Dūst Muhammad Khān, Fath Khān’s younger brother, in Prince Kāmrān’s palace by tearing the jewelled waist-band from the person of Taqiya Begum, Prince Kāmrān’s sister, drew an oath from him to avenge this outrage. Dūst Muhammad fled to Kashmir to his brother ‘Azīm Khān for safety, and Kāmrān wreaked vengeance on Fath Khān by first blinding him and then hacking him to pieces. Shāh Shujā‘ does not allude to this outrage. He merely says that Fath Khān grew ambitious and wanted to take the reins of government into his own hands, when Prince Kāmrān ended the minister’s life. Dūst Muhammad resolved to avenge his father’s murder. ‘Azīm did not agree upon the plan, nor did he undertake its execution but gave three to four lakhs of rupees to defray the charges of the expedition. Prince Jahāngīr, the young and beautiful son of Kāmrān, was the nominal ruler of Kābul at this time. But the actual administration of affairs was in the hands of ‘Atā Muhammad Khān Bāmīzaī, ex-governor of Kashmir, who had instigated Kāmrān to kill Fath Khān. Dūst Muhammad Khān advanced on Kābul and encompassed the death of ‘Atā Muhammad Khān Bāmīzaī, and made himself master of Kābul though he put Prince Sultān ‘Ali, one of the sons of Timūr, nominally on the throne. At this Mahmūd and Kāmrān marched down from Herāt and ‘Azīm Khān came from Kashmir. Shāh Shujā‘ in 1818 was again invited from Ludhiāna by ‘Azīm Khān, saying that all Fath Khān’s relations swore to restore him and that ‘Azīm Khān would march to Peshawar to receive him and help him with all the troops and treasury of Kashmir. By a stratagem Mahmūd and Kāmrān were made to flee. Shujā‘ was balked of the crown. Dūst Muhammad Khān retained Kābul and Ghaznī and gave away the other provinces to his brothers. At this stage, we close the connexion between Kābul and Kashmir in 1819 when Sikhs conquer Kashmir.
Khān Ishak Aqāsī, the Afghān governor, ruled Kashmir for six months, but his exactions led no less than eighty big merchants to return to their native towns in India. Trade was much affected. People of the upper classes suffered. Before his departure from Kashmir, ‘Abdullāh Khān appointed Sukh Jiwan Mal administrator, A’zam Khān, paymaster of the Afghān forces in Kashmir, and Khwāja ‘Abdullāh alias Khwāja Kijak (distortion of Kūchak) the administrator’s Nā’īb or deputy. He also made Khwāja Abu’l Hasan Bānde Sukh Jiwan’s adviser. On his return to Kābul, ‘Abdullāh Khān presented his master with a crore of rupees which he had wrung from the exhausted people of Kashmir. He also took to Kābul Abu’l Qāsim Khān Sāfī, the former Mughul Nā’īb, Mīr Firūz-ud-Dīn Nawwāb Abu’l Barakāt Khān Firūz Jang Sūfī’s son, to whom Ahmad Shāh Durrānī showed considerable favour.

On the departure of ‘Abdullāh Khān Ishak Aqāsī from Kashmir, the country was ruled by Sukh Jiwan as Nāzīm or administrator. Khwāja Abu’l Hasan Bānde acted as chief adviser to the Nāzīm. It is unfortunate that, under Afghān rule, several of the total of fourteen governors tried to sever their connexion with Kābul, and to establish themselves as independent rulers of the country because of the preoccupations of Afghān rulers in Irānian or Indian campaigns, or internecine struggles for the throne of Afghānistān. Some of these Nāzīms enjoyed a brief spell of independence but were, at last, reduced to subjection. Sukh Jiwan was the first to assert his independence with the aid of Abu’l Hasan Bānde a Kashmiri notable. The reason, it is said, was a heavy financial demand by Ahmad Shāh Durrānī for his campaigns which Sukh Jiwan felt could not be met with as ‘Abdullāh Khān had already drained off from the Valley as large a sum as one crore of rupees. Khwāja Kijak, Malik Hasan Khān Irānī, A’zam Khān and Mīrzā Khān opposed him, but were defeated at Bārāmūla by Sukh Jiwan who established touch with Ālamgīr II at Delhi. Sukh Jiwan next

1. Shāhghāsī, a Mongolian rank, presumably introduced into Central Asian courts from the descendants of Chingiz Khān, means Lord Chamberlain.
2. The Ta‘rikh-i-Hasan, folio 305.
3. The Ta‘rikh-i-Khalil, folio 292.
4. The Ta‘rikh-i-Hasan, folio 305.
5. Ibid., folio 306.
repelled the attack led by 'Abdullāh Khān Ishak Aqāšī.' Sukh Jiwan was tempted to assert independence of Ahmad Shāh Durrānī on account of his campaigns in the Punjāb and the subjugation of the Marathas in the third battle of Pānīpat that took place in 1759-61.

A severe famine engaged Sukh Jiwan’s attention for some time. Abu’l Hasan Bānde proved himself very capable in alleviating the miseries of the famine-stricken people. He prevented many deaths from starvation by advancing loans of seed grains. These loans were only realized in full as late as 1250 A.H. (1834 A.C.).

Finding the Punjāb in a disturbed condition, Sukh Jiwan Mal attempted the conquest of Siālkot, Bhimbar and Akhnūr. But he suffered a heavy defeat at the hand of Yār Khān, governor of Siālkot, owing chiefly to the jealousy of Ranjit Dev, the rājā of Jammu.

Sukh Jiwan quarrelled with Abu’l Hasan Bānde on account of the machinations of Mir Muqīm a notable, drove him to Pūnch, wreaked vengeance upon his kinsmen and appointed Mir Muqīm himself in his place. But Sukh Jiwan also suffered. The reason is that Sukh Jiwan Mal had a rival in Rāj Ranjit Dev who was induced by Shāh Vali Khān, the Durrānī prime minister, to come to Lāhore, and guide an expedition to recover Kashmir. The Afghān troops numbering about 3,000 supplemented by a contingent of Ranjit Dev were placed under the command of Nūr ud-Dīn Khān Bāmīzāi. This small expedition, led in June, failed as all the passes leading into Kashmir were strongly guarded, and it was found difficult to cross the flooded rivers and swollen streams. The second expedition organized in October 1762 A.C. on a larger scale achieved complete success. The Durrānī army entered Kashmir by the Toshā Maidān. Sukh Jiwan Mal came to oppose the invaders at the head of 50,000 troops but, just at the time of battle, he was deserted by his commander-in-chief Bakht Mal. Sukh Jiwan Mal was, therefore, easily defeated and captured after he had governed for eight years and four months. He was immediately blinded by a lancet and was sent to

1. The Ta’rikh-i-Hasan, folio 306.
2. Ibid., folio 306.
3. Ibid., folio 307, and the Ta’rikh-i-Khalīl, folio 294.
4. Akhnūr, on the Chināb, is 18 miles from Jammu. Its present population is 3,398.
Lahore where Ahmad Shāh Durrānī was then halting. Sukh Jiwan was brought in chains before Ahmad Shāh who caused him to be trampled to death. The severity of this punishment is understandable when we remember that Sukh Jiwan revolted against Afghānistān despite repeated warnings, having kept on defying his master for about nine years. Later, he had entered into conspiracy with Šāh ʿAbbās II to restore nominal Mughal rule in Kashmir and to seek permission to strike his own coin, and resumed all jāgīrs of mansabdārān. Šāh ʿAbbās had conferred the title of Ṛājā on him.

Rājā Sukh Jiwan Mal was a Khātri, born and educated at Kābul. His family traced its origin to Bherā in Khushāb, Punjab. He took service under Šāh ʿAbbās Šāh Valī Khān the vazīr of Ahmad Shāh Durrānī, and rose to the position of governor of Kashmir, having once previously been commissioned to realize tribute from Muʿīn-ul-Mulk the sūbādar of the Punjab. In the beginning of his rēgīme Sukh Jiwan Mal appeared to be a good governor. In fact, he showed great consideration to Muslims. The author of the Khizāna-i-ʿAmīra, Ghulām ʿAlī ʿAzād Bilgrāmī, Sukh Jiwan’s contemporary, writes about him:

‘مشاری الیہ جوائی حوشنے، مُتصف به اوصاف شاکسته’ قریبِ اسلام

بود - جیسے مزارِ یزگر و باغاتِ کنسر را ترمیم کیا و مہر روز بعد

فراغ از دیوان نو سن کس مسلمین را بروئی خود الوائی اطعام میغواڑن- و میں نما نوازدہ و یاد کے طاعم نیاز پائیتے بہ مرزم تقدیم می غوید- وارز و صادرا چہ ناورش و چہ تیران آن’ در خویر حالی هرکس مراداتی می

کرد- و در هر حفظِ یکبارہ مشاہرات مقرر کرده بود- جیسے شعراء کشیر باضر

می شنید- در آخر مجلس شیالی میکسید- و پاک کس از شعراء نامی

را کہ ہر بک اینہا دہ کس از مُستعندان کسی مُسیح کرده بود امر

فرمود کہ تاریخِ کشیر از ایندیا ہے تہائی تا رمان او تحریر غاین- سر

حلقه آن پاک کس حید تخفیق بود کہ تفوق مکان میکن- و نام اصلی او

“He was a handsome youth, possessed of good qualities and inclined towards Islam. After finishing court business, he fed two hundred Muslims with a variety of food every day. On the 11th and 12th of every month, he got sacramental food cooked and distributed among the people. He bestowed favours on every visitor to the court whether he was poor or not. Once in every week he held a poetical conversazione. It was attended by all the well-known poets. At the end of it he gave a dinner. He engaged five (seven?) of the best scholars to complete a history of Kashmir from the earliest habitation to his own time. Each writer was provided with ten assistants. The head of these historians was Muhammad Taufiq with Taufiq as his nom de plume, and was known as Lālajū in Kashmirī. He is a poet unrivalled in Kashmir today”.

Rājā Sukh Jiwan Mal appears to have been the fore-runner of another great Khatri, His Excellency the late Mahārājā Sir Krishn Prashād Bahādur, Madār-ul-Mahāmm of Hydarābād, Deccan, in his love of letters and culture and refined taste. After his quarrel with Abu’l Hasan Bānde, Sukh Jiwan also replaced Mir Muqīm by Pandit Mahānand Dar at whose incitement he became an oppressor, and subjected Muslims to considerable hardships, forbade even the call to prayer and imposed various other restrictions upon them. Before his tragic death, he was blinded when he composed the following verses so full of pathos:

En passant it is interesting to observe that Ahmad Shāh Durrānī had, at one time, offered the governorship of Kashmir to Mughlānī Begam, the governor of Lāhore during 1754-1756. Rājā Sukh Jiwan promised her annual

1. The Ta’rikh-i-Hasan, folio 308.
2. Later Mughal History of the Panjab by Dr. Hari Ram Gupta, Lāhore, pages 144-5.
tribute. This prevented her from accepting the offer of the courtiers of Kashmir who conspired against Sukh Jiwan. The promised tribute never reached Mughlānī Begam from either side.

The re-assertion of Ahmad Shāh Durrānī’s sovereignty over Kashmir is expressed in this couplet:

केशरी गर्दे बार दिखा, सूरतैं अहेड़ बुरौर शमीर
फ्रीमुद रयैं तिले, तारिगै, अयौ फ्रत गुमुड़ बार केशरी

Nūr-ud-Dīn Khān Mūsliḥ-ud-Daulā Bāmīzāī was appointed governor in succession to Rājā Sukh Jiwan. He ruled Kashmir for some time, and endeavoured to restore the exhausted country. The people were, on the whole, happy and prosperous under him. His successor Bulānd Khān remitted unjust taxes, treated Hindus and Muslims alike. In 1765 Nūr-ud-Dīn Khān Bāmīzāī was again appointed governor. Mīr Muqīm Kānṭh and Pandit Kālāsh Dar were his councillors, the latter being responsible for the revenue of the country. Mīr Muqīm induced Nūr-ud-Dīn to demand daily payments of revenue from Pandit Kālāsh Dar who, however, encompassed the death of his antagonist through an accomplice, Hakīm Mīr. When the secret became known, Nūr-ud-Dīn made no attempt to bring the culprit to justice. It was probably due to this neglect that he anticipated orders of his removal. Leaving his nephew Jān Mūhammad Khān in his place, Nūr-ud-Dīn proceeded to plead his case at Kābul. Meanwhile, La’l Khān Khatak displaced Jān Mūhammad Khān, and began a career of terrorism and oppression. Khurrām Khān was dispatched from Kābul to fill Nūr-ud-Dīn’s place, but his entry was resisted by La’l Khān Khatak who was defeated, and retired to the fort at Biru situated to the west of Srinagar, near Paṭān.

Faqīrullāh, Mīr Muqīm Kānṭh’s son, who was seeking an opportunity to avenge his father’s murder, now made his appearance at Sopūr with the army of Sultān Māḥmūd

---

1. There is a difference of opinion about the duration of his first regime. Lt. Newall (J.A.S.B., No. 5, 1854, page 447) states it to be 8 years, the Ta’rīkh-i-Hasan reduces it to only three months. The Ta’rīkh-i-Khalīl and Dīwan Kīpā Rām’s Gulzār-i-Kashmir give two years.


3. The Ta’rīkh-i-Khalīl, MS., folio 298.

KASHIR

Bamba. La’l Khān Khatak opposed him but, on being defeated again, retired to his fort with the loss of an eye. Faqirullah, therefore, suddenly found himself in the governor’s scat in 1767 A.C. His allies among the Bambas oppressed the people. Kashmir knew no authority for a period of eleven months. It is indeed strange how Ahmad Shāh Durrānī could allow such a state of affairs. At last, in 1769 A.C., Nur-ud-Din was, for the third time, appointed governor, as no other person was considered capable of enforcing order in the country. Faqirullah sought refuge with the ruler of Muzaffarābād after an unsuccessful engagement against Nur-ud-Din near the village of Gaurīpōr (or Gandīpōr, population 212) in Tahsil Pulwāma. Faqirullah was intending further resistance when he was seized with a severe malady due to excessive drinking and died at Shādīpōr. Nur-ud-Din ruled for two years, and suppressed the malcontents with a strong hand.

Pandit Kailāsh Dar had induced his patron, Khurram Khān, to try for the sūbādarship of Kashmir during his stay at Kābul. In this project he, at last, succeeded in 1770 A.C., and relieved Nur-ud-Din of the charge. Khurram Khān showed inability to rule, and when he displayed timidity also, Amīr Muḥammad Khān Jawān Sher Qizilbash, his commander-in-chief, drove him out, and installed himself as governor. Rather than seeking help from some outside prince in a future contingency, Jawān Sher organized the Hānjis or boatmen, a sturdy class of people capable of serving his purpose. Amīr Muḥammad Khān Jawān Sher built the fort of Shergaṛhi, till recently the residence of the Mahārājā Bahādur of Kashmir, and also the bridge known as Amīrā Kadal. Kadal in Kashmīr means a bridge. The re-construction of a building on the island called Sona Lānk, and the Amīrābād garden are also this governor’s memorials. But he committed vandalism in pulling down the royal palaces and other buildings including Akbar’s Darshānī Bāgh and the Jharōkahr-i-Shāhi on the Ḍal, which the Mughul emperors and their nobles had built.

1. Shergaṛhi is re-named Narsinghgarh by Mahārājā Hari Singh. Amīrā Kadal, on re-construction, was called “Pratāp Kadal,” but the people continue the old name. The same is the case with Shergaṛhi. It remains Shergaṛhi in popular parlance.

The death of Ahmad Shāh Durranī on 13th April, 1772, A.C., emboldened Amīr Muḥammad Khān Jawān Sher actually to set himself up as an independent ruler. And he was in power for six years. He was cruel both to Hindus and to Muslims, and avenged the murder of Mīr Muqīm by killing Pandit Kailāsh Dar. His rule thenceforth became notorious for oppression and high-handedness, due to his Peshkār or Chief Secretary, Mīr Fāzīl Khān. Srinagar at this time suffered very much owing to a flood in the Jhelum.

At last in 1776 A.C., Timūr Shāh, Ahmad Shāh Durranī’s son, appointed Háji Karimdād Khān Bāmizāi, to the governorship of Kashmir. The Háji hailed from Qandahār. He had taken part in the battle of Pānīpat by leading his cavalry. After defeating Amīr Muḥammad Khān Jawān Sher, the Háji sent him in chains to Kābul, where he remained in prison for a considerable time, but was, at last, pardoned by Timūr Shāh.

“Amīr Khan, a Persian, one of the late governors of Kashmir, erected a fortified palace on the eastern side of the lake” (the Dal), wrote George Forster* in 1783. “He used to pass much of his time in this retreat, which was curiously adapted to the enjoyment of the various species of Asiatic luxury; and he is still spoken of in terms of affection and regret; for like them, he was gay, voluptuous, and much addicted to the pleasures of the table. There is not a boatman or his wife that does not speak of this Khan with rapture and ascribe to him a once abundant livelihood. The governor, like many of his predecessors, trusting in the natural strength of his province, and its distance from the capital, rebelled against his master (Timur Shah, the reigning emperor of the Afghans). The force sent against him was small and ill-appointed, and might have been easily repelled by a few resolute men stationed in the passes. But in the hour of need, he was abandoned by the pusillanimous fickle Kashmirians who reconciled their conduct to the Persian, by urging, that if he had remained in Kashmir, he would have converted them all to the faith of Ali and cut them off from the hope of salvation.” Amīr Jawān Sher was a Qizilbāš, born and brought up inAfghanistan.

Háji Karimdād began his régime by reducing to subjection Mūrūd Khān, the rājā of Skārdū, from whom he

exacted tribute and demanded hostages. For this achievement, Timur Shah conferred upon him the title of Shuja-ul-Mulk. Next, Karimdad defeated Ranjit Dev, the rajah of Jammu, who had invaded Kashmir with an army of 30,000 strong. He further directed his forces against Mahmud Khan, the chief of Muzaffarabad, who had harboured him in his expedition against Amir Muhammad Khan Jawan Sher. In this operation, Karimdad had to suffer considerable chagrin owing to the treachery of Fath Khan, the chief of Kathai (now in Tahsil Ura), who led Tār Quli Khan and his army into a close defile, where he despoiled them of all their weapons and equipment. Tār Quli was at once put to death on his return. In 1195 A.H. (1780 A.C.), Karimdad Khan himself conducted an army against Mahmud Khan, but was beaten back by Bahadur Khan, son of Bira Khan Kakar. Next year, he was more fortunate in conquering Kishtwar.

Hājī Karimdad was rather heartless and killed alike Hindus and Muslims on provocation. His exactions, through Aslam Harkāra1 his unscrupulous tax-collector, exceeded even those of the notorious I'tiqād Khan, the Mughul sibadār, and compelled many to leave the country. Zari-i-Niyāz, a tax on mansabdārs and jāgirdārs, was exacted from officials and landlords, Zari-i-Ashkhās, another tax, from merchants and bankers, Zari-i-Hubūb a tax on grain (hubūb, of which the singular is habb, means grain) from farmers. Certain Pandits who were concerned in a conspiracy with the Bambas against Karimdad were exposed to suffocation by smoke. For liberating them Karimdad realized a large indemnity called Zari-i-Dūd. Dūd means smoke. He was advised by Dilārām Quli to extort dāgh-shāl,2 an anna per rupee on the price of every piece of shawl from the shawl weavers. His good deeds consisted in the repairing of the roof of the Jāmi' Masjid from out of the rents of the mosque waqf, and in visiting the tombs of saints. He avenged the murder of Khwaja Kamal-ud-Din Naqshbandi, the Sajjadānashīn of the Khāngāh-i-Naqshbandiyya (situated in the Khwaja Bāzār of Srinagar), by executing Anwar Malik Shāhābādī and his accomplices who had killed the Khwaja. The Khwaja was murdered during the time of Amir Jawān Sher who was a Shi'a. Karimdad treated the Shi'as harshly

---
1. *Harkāra* literally means a messenger or a process-server.
2. The *Dāgh-shāl*, or shawl marking, has also been the name of the State department controlling shawl trade.
and devastated Amīrābād founded by Amīr Jawān Sher, on the Dāl, near the Nandpūr village in the Mir Bahri pargana. Under Karīmdād’s régime, the country suffered from earthquakes for three months at intervals, and many men were rendered homeless. He died in 1197 A.H. (1783 A.C.), after a term of office of seven years. His son, Āzād Khān, being away on an expedition, his death was kept a secret till the latter’s arrival.

Āzād Khān succeeded his father, Hājī Karīmdād Khān, in 1783 A.C. He was “capable and displayed remarkable energy in establishing his authority.” “Āzad Khan is eighteen years of age,” wrote George Forster in 1783. “He has few of the vices of youth. He is not addicted to the pleasures of the harem nor to wine. He does not even smoke the hookah. But he is ferocious and bad tempered.” It is for his bad temper and ferociousness that he is called the Nādir Shāh of Kashmir. He was capricious in that, while he dressed his slaves and followers magnificently, he himself wore very simple clothes. He frequently went out hunting.

Āzād appointed Dilārām Quli as his Peshkār or Chief Secretary. He employed three thousand Sikhs, and re-organized his army. He turned his attention to extend his influence among the neighbouring chiefs. The rājā of Kishtwār was the first to be made to submit. Rustam Khān of Pūnch, being unable to withstand him, abandoned the city, which was pillaged for a week. But Rustam Khān subsequently appeased him by offering rich presents, and later Rustam’s daughter was married to Āzād. Subsequently a son from this marriage was named Fath Jang Khān. The rājā of Rajauri was also reduced to submission. Āzād Khān tried but failed to make a canal to irrigate the Māyasum plain then outside Srinagar proper. He commandeered the services of the village-folk of Mar-rāj and Kam-rāj for that purpose, but could not complete the work.

Āzād Khān wished to free himself from his allegiance to Timūr Shāh who was occupied with his fourth invasion of India in 1785. Timūr, however, dispatched a state notable Mirzā Muhammad ‘Āli entitled Kifāyat Khān Nusrat to

2. The Ta’rikh-i-Khalil, folios 309-10, and the Ta’rikh-i-Hasan, folio 322.
exact tribute from him. Kifāyat Khān returned with three lakhs of rupees, but his mission was not altogether a success. Timūr Shāh then deputed Āzād Khān’s elder brothers, Murtazā Khān and Zamān Khān, to chastize Āzād Khān. They were, however, defeated after three days’ fighting, and were prevented by famine and cholera from making another attempt. Consequently, Āzād Khān continued his career of independence. Āzād Khān’s cousin Pahlīwān Khān and others made an unsuccessful attempt upon his life, after which they broke out into rebellion, but were, at least, seized and done to death.

During Āzād Khān’s régime, the country suffered from a frightful famine. Even salt could not be had at Rs. 4 per seer. A series of earthquake shocks added to the people’s misfortunes. They complained to Timūr Shāh earnestly entreating him to act promptly for their relief. Elphinstone puts this event during the interval between Timūr’s expeditions to Sind in 1786 and against Bahāwal Khān of Bahāwalpur in 1788. Saif-ud-Daula Madad Khān Durrānī and Pāinda Khān Bārakzāī came with fifty thousand horse and foot. From Muzaffarābād one detachment under Pāinda Khān was dispatched by way of Bārāmūla, where he engaged Āzād Khān. Madad Khān Durrānī himself advanced with the other by way of Kārnā, and effected his entry into Srinagar. Āzād Khān, thereupon, fell back on the Khushpōr Karēwah adjacent to Zāina-kōṭ and Hākursar Lake, where he was deserted by his chiefs. Reduced to hard straits, he fled to Pūnch. When hemmed in he shot himself to death. He was only 27 years of age then. “Though he grievously oppressed the people, the extravagant mode of life of Azad Khan,” says Baron Hügel, caused the money collected from the revenue and taxes to circulate again into the hands of the natives indirectly, who derived also immense profits by the increased exportation of their manufactures.”

Saif-ud-Daula Madad Khān Durrānī then ruled for nine months—likewise badly. A Kāshārī Pandit poignantly put the situation in half the line—

علم آزاد را رسيد مدد

(Madad out-Heroded Āzād)

1. The Ta‘rikh-i-Hasan, folio 223.
2. The Ta‘rikh-i-Khātīl gives the strength of the punitive army as 4,000 horse and foot, folio 311.
Before he could restore order and tranquility, he was relieved by Mir Dād Khān. This nobleman ruled for seven months and imposed unjust taxes. He reduced Mir Ja'far Khān of Kam-rāj to submission. Mir Dād died in 1788 A.C.

Juma' Khān Durrānī Halokozai was the next important governor who held office for four years. The Ahsan-ut-Tawārikh of Qāzī Azīz-ud-Dīn, the Muftī-i-A'zam, Kashmir, notes that Juma' Khān left Kābul on 27th Sha'bān 1202 (1787 A.C.) for Pakhlī, whence he dispatched his nephew in advance. Juma' Khān himself entered Kashmir in Ramazān. He set Mir Ja'far Kanṭh free from his prison. Munshi Bhawānī Dās Kāchru, a poet of note, supplied Juma' Khān with a beautiful monogram for his seal:

Hasan 'Ali Khān Bamu of Kam-rāj, Rustam 'Ali Khān of Pīnch, Karamullāh Khān of Rajaurī all showed signs of restiveness and were successfully defeated. Juma' Khān's chief sin lies in realizing, through contracts, the dues pertaining to the offices of the Qāzī and the Judge. Under his order the Shī'ās were prohibited from observing their "passion week." The parts of the city known as Khānayār* and Rainawārī suffered from a heavy flood caused by the Qāzizādā Dam, now called Sadd-i-Qāzizāda or the Suthu, giving way to heavy rush of water. Juma' Khān Halokozai died of dysentery in 1793, and was buried in the compound of the tomb of Sayyid Qamr-ud-Dīn Khwārizmī (who died in 907 A.H. = 1501 A.C. in the precincts of Shergarhī). Later, however, his body was removed to Qandahār.

Rahmatullāh held the governorship temporarily till the arrival of Mir Hazār Khān in 1792 A.C. In Hazār's tenure Timūr Shāh passed away on 18th May, 1793, at Kābul when he was preparing to invade India for the sixth time. Zamān Shāh, the next ruler, confirmed Mir Hazār Khān in his post.

Mir Hazār Khān, however, set himself up as an independent governor, and imprisoned his father Mirzā Khān who had been deputed from Kābul to advise him to desist from declaring independence. Mir Hazār was hard upon the Shī'ās and the Hindus and imposed jīzā on the latter.

*Khānaya-yr, literally, means the ward or mahalla of the Khāns.
Ahmad Khan Shahinak-bashi, the general, and Rahmatullah Khan were appointed by Zamin Shah to chastize him. It is apparently to this event that Elphinstone refers when he says that the remaining months of 1793 and part of 1794 were occupied in reducing Kashmir (page 566). A number of Mir Hazar's nobles having deserted him, he took sanctuary in the Khanqah-i-Mu'allâ, but was subsequently enticed out and imprisoned. His régime extended over a period of one year and two months.

In 1794 A.C. Rahmatullah Khan ruled for four months, but was recalled for quarrelling with Ahmad Khan Shahinak-bashi. Kifayat Khan succeeded him in 1794. Kifayat was a generous, well-meaning person. During his brief stay of one year, the Sunni-Shi'a quarrels were stopped. He suppressed a rebellion of the Bambas in Kam-râj. He is associated with a garden in Khânayâr. A serious quarrel among his nobles, however, led to his dismissal in 1795. Ārsalân Khan was next invested with the governorship of Kashmir. Following the practice of the later sôbadârs under the Mughuls, he sent Amîr Muhammad Khan Jawân Sher to rule in his place. Some of Muhammad Khan's relatives, who were officers of a body of the Jawân Sher tribesmen, rebelled against him, and besieged him in the Shergarhi fort. A compromise being arrived at, Muhammad Khan shared his authority with them. Soon after this, Ḥâfiz Sher Muhammad Khan Mukhtâr-ud-Daula, the son of Shâh Wâli Khan, the prime minister of Ahmad Shâh Durrâni, having been directed from Kâbul, arrived in Kashmir. He took all the contending parties with him to Kâbul. This Mukhtâr-ud-Daula subsequently became the prime minister of Zamin Shâh.

'Abdullah Khan Halokozaî filled the vacant post of governor in 1795 A.C. He ruled the country for about eleven years. For the first three years of his régime, the country was governed by one or other of his brothers who, it seems, performed their duties sincerely and conscientiously. In 1213 A.H. (1798 A.C.) on returning from Kâbul, he systematically began to strengthen himself and entertain ambitious designs, apparently when he saw that government in Kâbul was changing hands rapidly. He first managed to free the capital from the presence of the chiefs and nobles likely to be inimical to him. Next, he appointed men of humble origin to higher posts. He also enlisted an army of thirty thousand men, and entered into alliance with the
neighbouring chiefs. It was in this connexion that he married the daughter of Fath Khân Bamba, the chief of Muzaffarabad. He ruled the country mildly and justly.

‘Abdullah Khân quarrelled in 1800 A.C. with his Diwan, Har Das who was a protégé of Diwan Nand Ram. Nand Ram was the favourite of Rahmat Khân with the title of “Vafādār Khân” conferred by Zamān Shāh, and was the prime minister at Kābul. Nand Ram rose to be a minister at Kābul in the time of Zamān Shāh and hence gave an occasion to his own people to say.

Nand Ram’s position so emboldened the Kashmiri Pandit as to say, even though secretly, in national pride—

‘Abdullah Khân’s quarrel consequently resulted in his recall, and finally in his imprisonment in the Bālā Hisār at Kābul. Before leaving Kashmir, he set up his brother, ‘Atā Muhammad Khân, in his place and secretly wrote to him as well as to the chief of Muzaffarabad to hold the country for him, and resist the new governor. The vazir of Kābul, Vafādār Khân, appointed as governor ‘Abdullah Khân’s brother, Vākil Khān, who was then in Kashmir, and sent Mullā Ahmad Khān to execute his orders. ‘Atā Muhammad Khān first killed Vākil Khān and then defeated and captured Mullā Ahmad Khān.

In 1261 A.H. (1801 A.C.) Zamān Shāh was seized and blinded, and his brother Mahmūd Shāh, ruler of Herāt, was declared king of Afghānistān. These circumstances encouraged the insurgents all the more. Further, ‘Abdullah Khān conspired, and escaped to Kashmir with Jān Nisār ‘Alī Khān, the commandant of Bālā Hisār at Pešāwar whom he presented with a lakh of rupees. He then attended to his affairs in Kashmir, built a fort in the pargana of Bīru, and finally withheld the tribute, thereby proclaiming his independence. G. T. Vigne’s reference to the working of copper mines in Kashmir during ‘Abdullah Khân’s time may explain the latter’s affluence.

At this stage, Kābul was undergoing a change of rulers. Mahmūd Shāh who deposed Zamān Shāh was himself deposed
by Zamān’s brother Shujā’-ul-Mulk.1 Shujā’ in 1806 a.C. dispatched Hāfiz Sher Muhammad Khān Mukhtar-ud-Daula to bring Kashmir to subjection. Sher Muhammad Khān arrived at Muzaffarābād and pretended negotiations chiefly with the object of taking his adversary unawares. After receiving reinforcements from the neighbouring rājās, he made a sudden attack on ‘Abdullāh Khān’s army which retreated, but offered battle at the village Doāb-gāh below Sopēr at the junction of the Pohur and the Jhelum, whence he fled to his fort at Biru. ‘Atā Muhammad Khān, son of Hāfiz Sher Muhammad Khān, was ordered to besiege that fort. During this siege, in 1807 a.C., ‘Abdullāh Khān died. As Elphinstone says, ‘Abdullāh Khān was a man of good talents and great courage. He was liked by both Afghāns and Kashmiris. “He is commended for his love of justice and his skill in administrating it, for his liberality, his affable manners, and his princely magnificence. He was also a great encourager of learning and poetry. Perhaps no Durrāni has left a character so generally admired” (pp. 595-96). Elphinstone’s mission to Kābul arrived at Peshāwar on the 25th of February, 1809, and left Peshāwar on the 14th of June.

In 1809 Kābul was again a scene of strife and struggle between various claimants to the throne. Mahmūd Shāh was set free, whilst Prince Qaiṣar, Zamān’s son, and Prince Kāmrān, Mahmūd’s son, waged wars against each other. In these internecine struggles, Hāfiz Sher Muhammad Khān Mukhtar-ud-Daula son of Shāh Vali Khān, vazir of Ahmad Shāh Durrānī, was killed, and Shujā’-ul-Mulk was defeated by ‘Azīm Khān and took asylum under Ranjît Singh.

Hāfiz Sher Muhammad Khān Mukhtar-ud-Daula, before being killed, had left Kashmir after a sojourn of five months, appointing his son2 ‘Atā Muhammad Khān as his Nā’īb with the sanction of Shāh Shujā’. The year of his installation, viz. 1221 a.H. (1806 a.C.), is obtained from the chronogram Afzāl-i-Rahmānī.

‘Atā Muhammad Khān’s excellent régime is like a large oasis in the desert patches of the Afghān sovereignty of

---

1. Zamān Shāh and Shujā’-ul-Mulk were from the same mother, a lady of the Yūsufzai tribe.
2. Lt. Newall writes that this governor was the son of the late governor ‘Abdullāh Khān on page 452, while on page 450 he calls him brother of the same person.—J.A.S.B., No. 5, 1854.
Kashmir. The people prospered under him. Considerable advance took place generally. In one year during his rule, one crore of rupees accrued to the treasury owing to the revival of trade. The revenue from other sources also doubled. Many persons came by hidden treasures which they were allowed to keep. Most of the important suits were dealt with personally by him, and in the case of disputed succession, he allocated the share of each claimant. In public and private life, he observed simplicity, and showed due deference to men of learning and piety. His structures at Charār Sharīf are still there.

About 1810 Nidhan Singh Atha, disgusted with Ranjīt Singh, quitted the Punjāb, and entered the service of ‘Ātā Muhammad Khān.

In 1810 ‘Ātā Muhammad Khān declared his independence because Shāh Shuji‘ and Shāh Mahmūd in turn sent expeditions against him. ‘Ātā struck coin in the name of the saint Shaikh Nūr-ud-Din Rishī with a very appropriate legend on it which the reader of Kashīr must have seen on page 101. Akram Khān, ‘Ātā’s successor-designate, and Afzal Khān were dispatched by Shāh Shuji‘-ul-Mulk to divest him of his authority, and to reduce him to submission. They were severely defeated at Shāhdara, in the Rajauri Tahsil. And ‘Ātā Muhammad returned to his capital in triumph. He now built fortifications at Sopōr, Barāmūlā, at the summit of the Kūh-i-Mārān, and constructed several smaller forts and bastions in other strategic localities from Muzaffarābād onwards. He also laid stores of ammunition against future emergency. Through Diwān Nand Rām and his own brother Jahāndād Khān, he played the stratagem of inviting Shuji‘-ul-Mulk from Talamba, a town 60 miles north-east of Multān, in the Punjāb, on the confluence of the Rāvi and the Chināb. Here Shuji‘ was halting having been ousted from Afghānīstān by Mahmūd Shāh—the second son of Timūr Shāh. Shuji‘ came to Kashmīr with Hasan Khān and Mullā Hīdāyatullāh. ‘Ātā Muhammad confined the ex-king Shuji‘ in the Kūh-i-Mārān (Hariparbat) fort, and dispatched his brother Jahāndād Khān to take possession of the Attock fort.

1. Hügel’s Travels, page 369.
2. Shāhdara is a village with a population of 773 at the census of 1941.
How Ranjit Singh was interested in Kashmir.

Fath Khan, the vazir of Shah Mahmud, resolved to punish the governors of Attock and Kashmir for the assistance they had given to Zamun Shab and Shab Shujah. In this manner, from the proximity of the territories, Fath Khan and Ranjit Singh were brought into close communication. In 1813 they entered into an agreement. By this agreement it was stipulated that Ranjit Singh, in consideration of a share of the plunder—a present of eight lakhs—and some prospective advantages, would not only allow Fath Khan a free passage through his territories but furnish him with an auxiliary force of 12,000 Sikhs. "As both parties were adepts in fraud," says Henry Beveridge in A Comprehensive History of India (Vol. III, p. 227), "each endeavoured to turn the agreement to his own sole advantage." Fath Khan, having recovered Kashmir, refused to share the plunder alleging that the Sikhs had not assisted him according to promise. And Ranjit Singh, by means of an intrigue, made himself master of Attock, and refused to part with it. It appears that, though Fath Khan wanted Ranjit to observe benevolent neutrality, he did not like Ranjit’s army entering the Valley. Fath Khan, therefore, hurried into Kashmir ahead of Ranjit’s troops led by Mohkam Chand. But Mohkam too reached by a short cut. Fath Khan refused to reward the Sikhs because they did no fighting. The chief gain to the Sikhs was the securing of the person of Shab Shujah.

For the broad details of this affair let us refer to Ranjit Singh’s historian Kanhayya Lal, the author of the Zafarnama-i-Ranjit Singh,* who writes:—"At this time Fath Khan, who governed the district of Peshawar on behalf of the sovereign of Afghanistan, sent an envoy with presents to Ranjit Singh to inform him that 'Ata Muhammad, governor of Kashmir, had cast off his allegiance to the then ruler of Afghanistan (Mahmud Shab), and had been joined by the fugitive Shab Shujah who hoped to recover his throne by his aid: but that the governor of Kashmir might at once be reduced to obedience if the forces of Ranjit Singh were to co-operate with those of Fath Khan and invade Kashmir. Accordingly, Ranjit Singh ordered his commander-in-chief Diwan Mohkam Chand to march at once to Kashmir;
and when the latter reached the frontier, Fath Khān likewise arrived from the direction of Peshāwar. However, when they crossed the Pir Panjāl they found that all the chiefs and rājās of the mountains had become unfriendly, and being unwilling to meet them had gone out of their way. When the united forces reached Hūrapūr, the first point across the pass in the Kashmir Valley, they first met with resistance at Ballapūr near Shupiān, but defeated ‘Alā Muhammad, who thereupon retreated to the fort of Shergārhi which they beleaguered, and took it only after they had occupied Srinagar and established an Afghān administration. When the fort of Shergārhi was taken, both ‘Alā Muhammad and Shāh Shujā‘ became prisoners, and Fath Khān, who hated them mortally, believed he had them in his grasp, but was disappointed by Mohkam Chand, who took them under his protection.” But according to the Tarīkh Sultānī pp. 233-35) Fath Khān surrendered Shāh Shujā‘ to (Mohkam Chand. Kanhayyā Lāl continues: “The Afghān general immediately dispatched a courier to Ranjit Singh, with a request to order both these exalted prisoners to be given up to him. The question, however, being a knotty one the Mahārājā did not wish to decide it hastily. And whilst Ranjit was considering what answer to send, a messenger arrived from Talamba with presents from Shāh (or Wafā) Begam, the spouse of Shāh Shujā‘, who had taken up her residence in that town. The lady expressed her anxiety and requested the Mahārājā not to surrender Shāh Shujā‘ to his enemy, Fath Khān, but to receive him at the court of Lāhore, in which case she promised to present Ranjit Singh with the famous diamond, Kūh or Koh-i-Nūr, which she described as a gem of priceless value, and indeed a “Mountain of Light.”

The Kūh-i-Nūr or the “Mountain of Light.”

[The diamond Koh-i-Nūr weighing 900 ratis, or 737½ carats, was found in the dominion of Golkanda at a place called Kollur on the Krishna river about 1656, and was presented in an uncut state by Mīr Jumla to Shāh Jahān. When Tavernier handled this diamond in Aurangzib ‘Alamgīr’s treasury in 1665, it weighed 319½ ratis or 269 9/16 carats, having been reduced to this size by a Venetian
impersonator named Hortensio Borgio, it is said, by wasteful grinding instead of cleaning. When in British possession, the Koh-i-Nur was re-cut at Amsterdam reducing the weight to 106½ carats.

The diamond was on the famous peacock throne which Shâh Jahân constructed. When Nâdir Shâh after his conquest of Delhi, took possession of the throne, and broke it up, the Koh-i-Nur could not be found. At last, however, the discovery was made through a woman of the harem of the Emperor Muhammad Shâh that he had concealed it in his turban. Accordingly, Nâdir Shâh one day politely offered him brotherhood by the usual ceremony of exchanging turbans on such an occasion, which the emperor could not refuse. Thus the diamond fell into the possession of Nâdir Shâh who gave it this name in 1739. When Shâh Zâman, who had obtained it, was a fugitive, he concealed the diamond in the chink of a wall, but Shâh Shujâ‘ who had recovered it, was compelled to give it to Ranjit Singh or Ranjit seized it as the price of hospitality. In the end, the Koh-i-Nur came into the possession of the East India Company in 1849 who presented it to Her Majesty the Queen of England when it adorned the British Crown.

The original setting with models of the stones, as then worn, is in the Jewel House, London. The Koh-i-Nur is however, in Queen Elizabeth's crown at present.

The gem was valued at £140,000.

It is on account of the Koh-i-Nur and other diamonds that the word 'Golconda' has come to be a synonym in the English language for "fabulous wealth," as the Concise Oxford Dictionary and Murray's A New English Dictionary have it, an illustration being

—To the lover of poetry 'Paracelsus' will always be a Golconda.

"The Mahârâjâ, delighted with the offer, willingly granted the request of Shâh Begam. Meanwhile a letter arrived from 'Atâ Muhammad, who likewise prayed not to be surrendered to Fath Khân. He further desired to place his services entirely at the disposal of the Mahârâjâ, and offered him the fort of Attock, which was yet held by Jahândâd Khân, the commandant whom he had himself appointed to it. Hereon the Mahârâjâ sent a very complimentary letter to Diwan Mohkam Chand thanking him for what he had done, enjoining him to crush Fath Khân altogether if he should offer further resistance, and then to bring Shâh Shujâ‘ to Lâhore with all due honour, to treat 'Atâ Muhammad with the greatest consideration, and to make arrangements with him for taking possession of Attock, all of which the Diwân undertook to effect.

"In due course of time the commander-in-chief, Diwân Mohkam Chand, arrived with the army in Lâhore, bringing also Shâh Shujâ‘ who met with a friendly reception, and
obtained a provision for his maintenance. Faqir 'Azīz-ud-Din having been dispatched with troops to take possession of Attock, was received with demonstrations of submission by Jahāndād Khān, who at once yielded, and a Sikh garrison having been quartered therein, its works were likewise repaired. The Mahārājā was so pleased with this successful transaction that he made 'Ātā Muhammad a present of a lakh of rupees and a dress of honour. Ranjit Singh now betought himself of the Koh-i-Nūr, promised by Shāh (or Wafā) Begam spouse of Shāh Shujā, and desired to obtain possession of it. She had indeed joined her husband, but the "Mountain of Light" was not forthcoming until the supplies were stopped, whereon Shāh Shujā at last surrendered it. This happy event Ranjit Singh celebrated with a great banquet.

"The carousals of the Mahārājā had not yet come to an end when a courier arrived with the information that Fath Khān was besieging the fort of Attock, and that the garrison, being in great distress for food, expected reinforcements. Accordingly Diwan Mohkam Chand and Ghāzi Khān were immediately dispatched at the head of numerous troops, and reached Attock by forced marches. The Sikhs found that the whole surrounding population sympathized with the besiegers, but it being the hot season, and almost unbearable to the Afghāns, accustomed to their cold mountain climate, they were defeated in the first engagement, chiefly because they suffered from burning thirst, which many hastened to quench in the river even during the battle. The siege having been abandoned, Mohkam Chand entered the fort without meeting an enemy, and after having abundantly provided the famishing garrison with food, returned with all the booty he had gained to Lāhore, where the Mahārājā overwhelmed him with honours. Having made a vow to perform a pilgrimage to Jwālāmukhi in the lower Himālayas after the prosperous termination of the Afghan campaign, the Mahārājā now hastened to fulfil it. After performing his adorations to the goddess, replenishing her treasury, and spending large sums in alms, the Mahārājā determined to surprise the ruler of Kashmir, who was his enemy, and enrolling all the mountain chiefs to aid him with their forces, began the march. But it was autumn. The cold weather had set in. On arriving near the Pir Panjāl Pass, it was found to be blocked up with snow. Therefore Ranjit Singh marched back to Lāhore. It had
been reported to the Mahārājā that Shāh Shujā‘ possessed a great deal of jewellery and precious stones, which he might be induced to part with, and messengers were at once sent with offers to purchase them, but he replied that, being a poor exile, he had nothing for sale and had already given away the priceless Koh-i-Νūr. All excuses were, however, of no avail, and he was forcibly deprived of all his precious stones, which dashingly act exasperated and perhaps also frightened him, so that he planned and executed the flight of his harem.” The author, however, adds that after his harem had escaped, “Shāh Shujā‘ was imprisoned, but succeeded in making, during the night, a hole in the wall of the room where he had been confined, and escaping from it walked on foot and in disguise to the British frontier, where he made himself known, and met with a kind reception.”

It is a serious blot on Ranjit’s character that he should have behaved in this shabby manner towards Shāh Shujā‘, whose elder brother Shāh Zamān had appointed him ruler of Lāhore in preference to an Afghān governor. Moreover, Shāh Shujā‘ was an invited guest, once a ruler, now in distress, under his own wing and shelter and maintenance, and had already robbed him of the “Mountain of Light!”

Vazīr Fath Muhammad Khān Bārakzai was ruling Kashmir under orders of Mahmūd Shāh for some months. Fath Muhammad Khān, Dūst Muhammad Khān and Yār Muhammad Khān and ‘Azīm Khān and several others were brothers as already noted. Fath Muhammad left his brother Sardār ‘Azīm Khān in his place. He himself returned to Kābul. Thence he led a huge army to dispute the possession of Attock, but returned defeated.

In 1813 Sardār Muhammad ‘Azīm Khān assumed charge of governorship. He allowed Pandit Sahaj Rām to continue in the post of Diwān, and at the same time appointed Diwān Hira Dās as Sāhib-i-Kār or administrator.
Ranjit Singh making obeisance to Zamán Shāh on receiving the rulership of Lāhore.

[By courtesy of the Keeper of Government Records, West Punjāb, Lāhore.]
In 1814 Ranjit Singh invaded Kashmir with 10,000 Sikhs to realize the second instalment of eight lakhs of rupees which had been promised him by Vazir Fath Khan. Ranjit Singh himself stayed at Pùnch, while his army reached the village Salh by unfrequented paths. Another detachment reached Rayâr (15 miles from Badgam) by way of Tosha Maidán, which is ten miles south-east of Gulmarg, and is one of the most beautiful marghs or meadows of Kashmir. At first a detachment of the Afghán force was repulsed. The town of Shupián was attacked. But the assault failed. The Sikhs retired to the mountain passes. 'Azîm Khan proved himself equal to the occasion, and confronted the main army. The Sikhs were considerably hampered by adverse conditions caused by heavy rain and intense cold, and Hügel adds, want of supplies. On receiving information that his Hürapör army had perished to the last man, Ranjit Singh himself had to flee almost
alone to Manḍi on 30th July, 1814, after the complete loss of his baggage, and a great portion of his army. 'Abdullāh Khān pursued him up to the Kotli pass in the Mirpur district, and returned with much booty which included Ranjit Singh's favourite horse, the Laili.1 Ranjit Singh's departure unnerved the Sikh army which retreated after fighting for eight days.

[The historical importance of the Tosha Maidān route2 is best illustrated by the fact that it was chosen on two occasions for expeditions aiming at the invasion of Kashmir. Mahmūd of Ghazna, in 1021 A.C., invaded Kashmir when Abū Raihān al-Birūnī accompanied him. Mahmūd failed. Ranjit too failed in this, his first invasion of Kashmir. Hiüen Tsang visited Pūnch by the Tosha Maidān route about 633 A.C.]

Let us hear this campaign from Kanhayyā Lāl, the author of the Zafar-nāma-i-Ranjit Singh.3 "Ranjit Singh's desire of subjugating Kashmir having again become dominant, he determined to attack Muhammad 'Azīm, the Afghān governor of the Valley, and went against him in Samat 1871 (A.C. 1814) with numerous rājās of the mountains, accompanied by their forces. He remained for some time at Siālkōt, till he was joined by his allies, and then marched into the mountains where also 'Az Khān, the chief of Rajauri, came to meet him, paid him homage and tribute. Then Ranjit Singh went on to Dera Bahrām, i.e., Bahrām Gala, near the Pir Panjāl Pass, where he encountered a force of the enemy but routed it, whereon it took refuge

1. "The Maharaja let me know that this horse (Laili) had cost him 60 lakha of rupees and 12,000 soldiers, having been the occasion of several wars. It was the property of Yar Mohammad Khan of Peshawar and Ranjit Singh made the delivery of the animal to him one of the conditions of peace. The cunning Mohammedan, however, who considered this article humiliating to him, evaded it several times by sending another horse under the name of Laili, and it was owing to a plan devised by General Ventura that it was eventually obtained."—Baron Hügel's Travels, London, 1185, page 333.

Moorcroft, when he met Ranjit on 8th May, 1920, at Lāhore, saw such a large body of horses as money alone could not buy. The Mahārājā had obtained from Fath Khān and his brothers of Būkhārā, as presents and by purchase, some of the horses of his stud.—The Journal of the Panjab University Historical Society, April 1933, page 90.

Ranjit's passion for horses amounts almost to insanity, wrote W. G. Osborn in 1840 (page 91).

2. Dr. Stein's Ancient Geography of Kashmir, page 81.

in the fort, which was besieged and surrendered. Then he continued his progress to Pūnch, where he halted several days and sent an envoy to Muhammad ‘Azīm, requiring him to submit. The latter replied that he was not subject to the Mahārājā, but to the Shāh of Kābul, who had entrusted him with the government of Kashmir, which he was prepared to defend. Ranjīt Singh now determined immediately to attack him. Crossing the Pir Panjāl range, Ranjīt marched to Hūrapōr, were he found numerous Afghān and Kashmiri forces collected, and gave them battle. During the fight, so violent a fall of rain took place that it caused an inundation, and, the cold being very intense, disheartened the Punjābis so much, that they were defeated; three of their high officers being killed, namely, Gurū Singh, Mahesha Singh, and Dāsā Singh. Whilst the battle was yet raging, the treacherous ‘Āz Khān, who had joined the forces of Ranjīt Singh only on compulsion, informed him that most of the troops left by him at Hūrapōr had been slain or captured. This news was false. But it was believed by the Sikhs to be true. And Ranjīt forthwith retreated in great haste to Bhimbar on the frontier of Kashmir. But on ascertaining that ‘Az Khān had made a mendacious statement, he desired immediately to return and subdue Muhammad ‘Azīm. The sardārs of his court, however, made strong representations to the contrary, boldly giving him the advice to retreat with his forces to Lāhore which he was ultimately compelled to adopt. They also suggested that in Lāhore preparations might be made for renewing the campaign if necessary, but that meanwhile the Mahārājā ought to send to the Afghān governor of Kashmir a conciliatory letter, mixed notwithstanding with threats, counselling him to abandon the siege of Hūrapōr, and to allow the Sikh garrison to depart. This Ranjīt Singh did, and was in a short time joined by the garrison of Hūrapōr, which had capitulated, and brought a friendly reply from Muhammad ‘Azīm. The march back to Lāhore now began immediately, but Diwān Mohkam Chand, who had already fallen sick in Kashmir, expired on arriving in the capital of the Punjāb. His loss was much deplored by Ranjīt Singh, who appointed his two sons Rām Dyāl and Motī Rām to succeed him as Diwāns, and put them in charge of various military expeditions.”

Colonel D. Ochterlony, * Agent, Governor-General

“Loodeana,” reports Ranjit Singh’s rout to Mr. J. Adam, Secretary to Government in the Secret, Political and Foreign Department, on 13th of August, 1814, in the following dispatch:

“I have this instant received intelligence that Runjeet’s Army, which had advanced beyond Peer Punjal, had been encountered and defeated with considerable loss by the Nāzim’s troops. Runjeet had in consequence ordered their retreat which was conducted so irregularly and in such disorder as to become a disagreeable flight which all his personal exertions could not prevent, and at the date of the letter (28th July), the Kashmirian army and Rohulla Khan, the Poonch Rajah, were pursuing.

“It is probable this, with the distress experienced, will induce Runjeet to abandon his enterprise, and if he succeeds in effecting a decent retreat I am inclined to think he will owe it in some degree to his regular battalions but more to the mismanagement of the enemy opposed to him.”

After this victory, ‘Azīm Khān naturally called to account those leading Pandits whom he considered solely responsible for inducing Ranjit Singh to undertake the invasion of Kashmir. Many Muslims also suffered with the Pandits for their complicity both losing their estates, which were, however, on investigation, afterwards restored. The native soldiery was also dismissed by ‘Azīm. At this time, the inhabitants of Kashmir suffered from a famine, which claimed a heavy toll of human lives.

Shujā‘-ul-Mulk, having freed himself from the grip of Vazīr Fath Khān, found himself involved in trouble with Ranjit Singh, who took from him the Koh-i-Nūr diamond and other precious stones. Afterwards, Shujā‘-ul-Mulk betook himself to British territory and resided at Ludhiana, whence he proceeded to Kishtwār, and made an abortive attempt or two to conquer Kashmir. At last, after obtaining help from Lord Auckland, he re-captured Kābul and Qandahār, but was assassinated after a brief reign of two years.

‘Azīm Khān had entrusted the task of collecting the revenue to three Pandits, namely, Birbal Dar, Mirzā Pandit, and Sukh Rām. The first-named had an amount of one lakh outstanding against him. When called upon to pay it, he addressed ‘Azīm Khān impertinently. But the latter
granted him a respite to pay the arrears on Mirzâ Pandit offering himself as surety. Pandit Birbal Dar utilized the respite in fleeing from the country. Birbal's flight, in midwinter in 1818-19, across the snow-covered mountains, it is said, was made possible on account of the support of Malik Nâmdâr and Malik Kâmdâr of Kulgam. The influence of Râjâ Dhyân Singh, the brother of Gulâb Singh, procured Birbal Dar an easy admittance to Ranjit Singh's court. Pandit Vasa Kâk, the director of communications, conducted Birbal's wife to a place of safety. But those who had aided Birbal Dar in his flight were traitorously betrayed by his own son-in-law, Pandit Tilok Chand. Naturally 'Azîm Khân was hard upon them.

Birbal's wife, Kud Mâl Ded, put an end to her life.

In 1819 A.C. Vâzîr Fath Khân, whose eyes had been put out by Shâh Kâmrân (son of Mahmûd and grandson of Timûr Shâh) ruler of Herât, sent for 'Azîm Khân from Kashmir to assist him in carrying out his ministerial duties and to fight Kâmrân. 'Azîm Khân sent all his property with Sahaj Râm to Kâbul. He handed over the governorship to his brother Jabbâr Khân and started for Kâbul.

1. Inside Kashmir, page 177.
2. In Kashmir people still speak of Birbal's wife having killed herself by swallowing a piece of diamond, some actually assert by licking almâs. K.B. Miyân Afzal Husain, M.Sc. (Panjab), M.A. (Cantah), Vice-Chancellor, Panjab University, drew my attention to the untenability of this theory. On referring the matter to Dr. S. D. Muzaffar, M.Sc. (Panjâb), Ph.D. (Cambridge), Professor of Chemistry, the Panjab College of Engineering and Technology, Mughulpura, Lâhore, I am grateful to him for an expression of opinion on the matter in his letter dated 5th June, 1942. This opinion is as follows:—"You have asked my opinion whether anyone can die of eating a precious stone. The position regarding this question is, that, medically speaking, none of the precious stones acts as a poison in the same sense as arsenic, oxide or opium, etc. They have nothing in them to upset the various chemical processes going on in the body and especially the blood of a person. But if they are powdered in such a manner that they have sharp edges, then their action is the same as that of swallowing chips of glass with sharp edges, which cut the body tissues, and dig into them causing permanent sores which may lead to internal blood poisoning. It is well known that glass powder acts in this manner, and people have been killed by putting glass powder in their food. Therefore, you are quite right if you assume that the lady in question ate a precious stone which was presumably polished and did not have very sharp edges. But if the same stone was powdered and eaten, it could act as a poison." A well-known scholarly Hakim of Lâhore also felt doubtful of the truth of dying by swallowing a diamond.
A large portion of Afghān troops was also dispatched to Qandahār to beat Kāmrān.

Jabbār Khān was the last of the Afghān governors. Several of these governors displayed a strange propensity towards persecution and high-handedness, which finally put an end to their rule. Contrary to his predecessors, Jabbār Khān was, however, extremely mild and just, but was ordained to rule for four months only!

It has already been stated how Pandit Bīrbal Dar had gone to Ranjit Singh’s court. When the Pandit heard of ‘Azīm Khān’s departure for Kābul, he urged Ranjit Singh to attack Kashmir. Remembering his previous failure, Ranjit Singh dreaded the suggested step. At last, Bīrbal Dar held himself responsible for all consequent loss in case of failure. As a guarantee, the Pandit surrendered his son Rāj Kāk Dar, who subsequently held a high administrative post during Sikh rule in Kashmir, as hostage to the ‘Lion of the Punjāb.’ The Mahārājā then agreed to follow Bīrbal’s advice, knowing that a large part of the Afghān army of Kashmir was fighting in Qandahār against Shāh Kāmrān of Herāt.

An army of thirty thousand Sikhs led by experienced generals like Sardārs Hari Singh Nalwa, Jawālā Singh, Hukam Singh, Rājā Gulāb Singh and Diwan Misr Chand accordingly invaded Kashmir. The main body was led to Thanna, and a detachment was conducted by way of the Darhāl pass. Jabbār Khān arrived with his army at Hūrapōr, and also sent a detachment to Pir Panjāl (Pantsāl) to guard the road. The Afghāns repulsed the invaders, and mastered two guns. But they did not improve their success. The rallied Sikhs again attacked the Afghāns, and, in the words of Captain Cunningham, won an almost bloodless victory. Owing to superiority of numbers on the side of the Sikhs, Jabbār Khān’s soldiers lost heart. Their leader himself, however, fought desperately. Jabbār Khān, sustained, it is said, eighteen wounds, and was picked from the battlefield by his adjutant who ordered immediate retreat. It was after many days that Jabbār recovered consciousness. Later on, taking his precious property with him, he started for Kābul by way of Bārāmūla, thus leaving the Sikhs in complete possession of Kashmir.

The two factors that helped Ranjit Singh in the conquest of Kashmir in 1819 were the acquisition by
him of immense booty from the fall of the fort of Multán in 1818, and the withdrawal of almost all the veteran Afghan troops from the Valley to beyond the Indus in the internecine war of Afghánistán. Raw levies left in the Valley were no match against the re-organized Sikh army well provided by the loot of Multán.

Lahore was illuminated for three days in honour of the event. But strange to say, Ranjit Singh himself did not enter Kashmir on account of a superstitious dread.

The version of this victory by the author of the Zafarnāma-i-Ranjit Singh would bear repetition and is reproduced below: “Information having arrived from Kábul that Fath Khán, the vazir of Mahmūd Shāh, had fallen into disgrace and been deprived of sight by the Shāhzāda Kāmrān, Governor of Herāt, and that a civil war was raging in Afghánistán, the Mahārājā considered this a good opportunity for conquering both Peshāwar and Kashmir, the more so as the latter province was now governed by Jabbār Khán, whom Muhammad ‘Azīm had left as his Nā’ib, or lieutenant, when he returned to Afghánistán. Ranjit Singh accordingly marched in the direction of Peshāwar. In a short time he crossed the Rāvī, the Chināb, and the Jhelum. But when he reached the banks of the Indus, he found no boats. Crossing it without any, in an almost miraculous manner, on horseback, with his army, he safely reached the opposite bank, conquered the fort of Khairābād and then the fort of Jahāngīr, whereon Fīrūz Khán, the chief of the Khatak tribe of Afghāns humbly came to pay him homage. When Yār Muḥammad, the governor of Peshāwar, heard of the approach of Ranjit Singh, he forthwith retired to the Yūsuszaī mountains. The Mahārājā took possession of the fort, appointed Jahāndād Khān commandant of it, and departed again after a sojourn of only three days. Whilst encamped near Attōck, Ranjit Singh received the offer of a nazārāna of a lakh of rupees from Yār Muḥammad, who also promised annually to pay a similar sum on condition of being re-installed governor of Peshāwar, and the Mahārājā consented. Meanwhile news arrived that Yār Muḥammad had by the aid of Dūst Muḥammad nevertheless attacked Jahāndād Khān, and expelled him from Peshāwar, of which they took possession. The Mahārājā at once dispatched his son, Khaṇāk Singh, with ten thousand men to reduce the two invaders, but the blow aimed at them was avoided by the arrival of the promised
and long delayed *nazarâna*, and a profession of allegiance on the part of Yâr Muhammad. Having terminated this affair to his satisfaction, the Mahârâjâ, returned to Lâhore with the money he had obtained. But as his heart was bent on the conquest of Kashmir he could not rest long.

"The army having been got ready in St. 1876 (A.C. 1819) it happened at the same time that Jabbâr Khân, who was at that time Governor of Kashmir, had not only dismissed but also disgraced and reduced to penury his Diwân, Pandit Birbar by name. On this the latter hastened to Lâhore, breathing vengeance, and urged Ranjit Singh to subjugate Kashmir. The Mahârâjâ consented to the proposal but apprehended that he would be disappointed in the enterprise, as on a former occasion, unless he could obtain the certainty of being supported by all the chiefs of the country. Accordingly the said Diwân sent letters to the Râjâs, inviting them to make profession of loyalty to Ranjit Singh, and in a short time received satisfactory replies from many. Even 'Az Khân of Bhimbar, who had been an adversary, now promised to support Ranjit Singh, as well as the chief of Rajaurî and the commandant of Pûch. Wherefore the army at once began its march. Devîchand received orders to hasten to the town of Rajaurî and there to await the arrival of the Mahârâjâ at the foot of the Himalayas, but meanwhile to carry on intercourse with the mountain chiefs, and to make sure of their allegiance. Ranjit Singh went from Lâhore first to Amritsar, where he performed his devotions in the temple of Râmâsî, distributed abundant alms among the holy men of that locality, and then quickly marched to Kashmir. Here he met with a friendly reception, because he was accompanied by the fugitive Diwân. He nevertheless thought it convenient not to advance further after reaching Bhimbar.

"Having for some time remained in that pleasant town and concentrated his forces, Ranjit Singh ordered Prince Khârâk Singh, with Devîchand for his lieutenant, to advance. They marched with friendly chieftains till they reached the Pir Panjâl range of the Himalayas, where they encountered the enemy, and an action of several days' duration ensued in which the Sikhs were victorious. Having thus defeated the united Afghân and Kashmir forces, they continued their journey with the intention of conquering Srinagar likewise. Samad Khân and Mihrdil Khân, the two principal Afghân officers of Jabbâr Khân, the Governor of Kashmir, anxious to impede the further progress of the
Sikhs, attacked them, but were again routed, and Mihrdī was slain. Jabbār Khan now took refuge in the fort of Shergarh. At this Ranjit Singh's army meeting with no further opposition, at once entered the city of Srinagar. After having regulated the administration, the Mahārājā intended to attack Jabbār Khān, who had shut himself up in the fort of Shergarh, and found that he had evacuated it, but left all his wealth behind, which pleased Ranjit Singh greatly. Having thus conquered Kashmīr, the Mahārājā appointed Dīwān Devīchand to be Governor of it, spent a couple of weeks at Rajaurī, then took the fort of 'Azīmgarh with its Kashmīrī garrison by a single assault and marched back to Amṛītsar, where he made large presents to the temple of Rāmdās and distributed alms. Lastly the Mahārājā returned to Lāhore, where he bestowed robes of honour and other rewards upon his officers and troops, ordered general rejoicings to celebrate the victory, and dispensed hospitalities in royal fashion."

The date of the Sikh conquest of Kashmīr is contained in their war-cry, the letters of which correspond to the Bikrami year 1876 or 1819 A.C.

The end of Muslim rule in the Valley of Kashmīr.

So ends Muslim rule in Kashmīr. It began with the conversion of Rīnchana in 1320 A.C. The Shāh Mīrās, the descendants of Sultān Shams-ud-Dīn Shāh Mīr or Shāh Mīrzā, ruled from 1339 A.C. to 1555 A.C. The Chāks succeeded them, and ruled till 1586 when Akbar conquered Kashmīr. The Afghāns came in 1752 A.C., and their rule closed in 1819 A.C. From A.C. 1320 to 1819 it is 499 according to the solar calculation. And from A.H. 720 to 1235, it is 515 according to the lunar computation. Thus Muslim sovereignty continued in Kashmīr for nearly 500 years.

The Afghān who applied the lancet to the eyes of Humāyūn the eldest son of Timūr Shāh, and who applied it to those of Zamān Shāh and yet to those of Vazīr Fath Khān applied it also to the relation between Kābul and Kashmīr. Had the Afghān sūbadār followed the

---

*The Indian Antiquary, Volume 17, January 1888, pages 19—21, E. Rehatsek's English translation.
example of the Governor-General of India in his attitude to changes of government in Britain, and been indifferent to changes of Whigs and Tories or Liberals and Conservatives or Unionists and Labourites, he may not have ruined his own line and ruined the relationship between Kabul and Kashmir. The fights of Qaisar and Kâmrân for power brought about powerlessness to the Durranis. The stupidity of the Afghân, his greed and his exactions are responsible for this loss to him. His poplar, his palace, his pulâo or pilaff, his patronage of the Pandit’s ability and the impetus he gave to pashmîna (shawl or woollen fabric), and the effect his contact had on Indian dress are all forgotten. But his intolerance and extortion are still on the lips of those whose ancestors suffered at his hands and who, therefore, say:

پریسیدم از خرابی گلشین ز بانبان
افغان کشید و گفت که افغان خراب کرد

The only defence of the Afghân suggested is his quick disposal of state affairs which, after the soft Mughul, looked rather rough and ready.

As Muslim rule closes in Kashmir, it is appropriate, here, to proceed to discuss the cultural value of the impact of Muslim State and Society in Kashmir. We shall treat the subject as an exposition of Muslim Polity in Kashmir. The following three chapters, viz. VIII, IX and X will, therefore, deal with that subject under three different heads. The thread of the continuity of political history will be resumed in Chapter XI with ‘Kashmir under the Sikhs.’

**Pandit Mohan Lâl Kashmîrî alias Āghâ Hasan Jân.**

A picturesque figure forces itself on our attention here and we digress a little.

Râmnâth alias Pandit Mohan Lâl, born in 1812 a.c., of an offshoot of the Zutshi’s who had migrated to Delhi, was a remarkable man. Mohan’s father was Râi Brahm Nâth whose father Pandit Manî Râm held a high rank at
the Mughul court in the reign of Shāh 'Ālam II (1759-1806), the son of 'Ālamgīr II.*

Mohan Lāl was taught Urdu and Persian at home. He joined the English class opened in 1829 at the Persian College at Delhi that was founded in 1792 during Mughul rule. In 1829 this college acquired a large accession of income by the munificent gift of Rs. 1,70,000 from Nawwāb I'timād-ud-Daula, formerly minister at Lucknow, buried in the premises of the Anglo-Arabic College, Delhi. The English class later developed into the Delhi English College. Mohan Lāl studied here for three years. In 1831, when about 19, he went to Bukhārā as the Persian interpreter to Sir Alexander Burnés on a salary of Rs. 1,000 per annum. The earliest classmate of Mohan was Shahāmat 'Āli, later the author of An Historical Account of the Sikhs and Afghans, who was Persian Secretary with the Mission of Lieutenant-Colonel Sir Claud M. Wade, C.B., to Peshāwar in 1839. Shahāmat 'Āli accompanied Sir Claud in the military expedition on which he was sent to conduct Shāhzāda Timūr, the eldest son of Shāh Shujā'-ul-Mulk, with the Sikh auxiliary force, by the Khaibar Pass to Kābul.

Mohan Lāl was probably the first Kashmirī Pandit to receive English education, and probably the first Indian to educate his daughter in England.

After Central Asia, Mohan Lāl visited Egypt, England, Scotland, Ireland, Belgium and Germany.

Shāh Kāmrān of Herāt was delighted with his Persian. Mirzā 'Abbas of Irān created him, at the age of 20, a Knight of the Persian Order of the Lion and Sun. Shāh Shujā'-ul-Mulk, king of Afghānistān, granted him an Order of the Durrānī Empire. Maharājā Ranjit Singh presented him with Rs. 500 and a robe of honour. The Mughul Emperor Muhammad Aḥmad Shāh conferred upon him a khīlāt with some jewels on a turban which His Majesty tied with his own hands. Mohan Lāl was well received in England and other countries of Europe. Queen Victoria invited him to a royal ball. Frederick William IV of Prussia entertained him at a dinner.

Mohan Lāl published a journal of his tour on his return from Central Asia in 1834. Twelve years later, this work was re-published with the addition of his travels in Europe. At this same time, he published his life of Dūst Muhammad Khān, the Amīr of Kābul, in two volumes. His style of English received a very favourable comment from the editor of the now defunct Englishman of Calcutta.

Mohan Lāl retired at 32 on a pension of £1,000 per annum.

Nawwāb Mīrzā 'Alā-ud-Dīn Khān (1833-1884), ruler of the Lohāru State near Delhi, whose pen-name was 'Alāī calls Mohan Lāl, in a Persian poem, Āghā Hasan Jān. Pandit Jawāhar Lāl Nehrū* says, that 'Mohanlāl became a Muslim and in Īrān married a girl of the royal family, hence his title of Mīrzā. Dr. Hari Rām Gupta says that a grandson of Mohan Lāl is Āghā Hydār Hasan of Hydārābād (Deccan) who states that Mohan Lāl kept a diary from 1831 till his death though strangely enough Dr. Gupta omits to mention the fact of Mohan Lāl's conversion to Islam. Mohan Lāl had in all seventeen wives. Wherever he went he managed to take a new wife. In his later days "he was swept away by the love of wine and women."

At Ludhiāna Mohan Lāl built for the Shi'as what is known as Āghā Hasan Jān's Imāmbāra. Close by it there runs a road bearing his name. Mohan Lāl died in 1877 at the age of 65, and was buried in Delhi in his garden called the Lāl Bāgh, near Āzādpur on the Delhi-Pānīpāt road. There is no tomb, but only a platform, said to contain the bodies of Mohan Lāl or Āghā Hasan Jān and his favourite wife Hydārī Begām whom Mohan Lāl obtained by intimidating some male members of the Begām’s family during the confusion of the Indian Revolt. The platform is in a dilapidated condition. The garden no longer belongs to Mohan Lāl’s family.

The fascinating personality of Mohan Lāl gives us "intimate and revealing glimpses of the early days of British rule in North India, of the Punjāb under Mahārājā Ranjīt Singh, of the British campaigns through Sind and in Afghānīstān, of the disasters in Kābul and of the prevailing conditions in Central Asia in the thirties of the nineteenth

century." Welcoming risk and danger and facing death often enough, Mohan Lâl, in the words of Pandit Jawâhar Lâl Nehrû, "was yet a lover of pleasure and the soft ways of life—a politician and scholar, with something of the poet and the artist in him, which peeps out continually from his Memoirs and Travels."

Major B. D. Basu,* however, reproduces John William Kaye's following remark: "The Moonshee (Mohan Lâl) seems to have been endowed with a genius for traitor-making the lustre of which remained undimmed to the very end of the war" (History of the War in Afghanistan, Vol. I, revised edition, London, 1857, p. 459). The Major adds that the English found in Mohan Lâl "a tool ready at hand to give effect to their nefarious scheme" in creating trouble in Afghânistân.

## IMPORTANT CONTEMPORARY EVENTS IN POLITICS AND CULTURE IN THE WORLD

### DURING THE PERIOD OF MUSLIM RULE IN KASHMIR
FROM 1320 A.C. or 720 A.H. to 1819 A.C. or 1235 A.H.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Date</th>
<th>The World excluding India</th>
<th>India excluding Kashmir</th>
<th>Kashmir</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>A.C.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1320</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1323</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Commencement of the Kashmirī Era which continued till the advent of Mughul rule in the Valley.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>The First Muslim Mosque in Kashmir known as the Rinchen or Rintan Mosque.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Death of Rinchen or Sultān Sadr-ud-Dīn.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Date</td>
<td>The World excluding India</td>
<td>India excluding Kashmir</td>
<td>Kashmir</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>------</td>
<td>---------------------------</td>
<td>------------------------</td>
<td>---------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1325</td>
<td>Ismā'īl of Granada assassinated.</td>
<td>Ghiyās-ud-Dīn Tughluq Shāh crushed to death under the wooden pavilion on the Jumna at Delhi.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Muhammad Tughluq ascends the throne.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Death of Nizām-ud-Dīn Auliyā at Delhi.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>The Jāmi‘ Masjid at Cambay constructed.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1326</td>
<td>Pope John XXII issues bull against the practice of magic.</td>
<td>Transfer of Muhammad Tughluq's capital from Delhi to Devagiri, re-named Daulatabad.</td>
<td>Death of Bulbul Shāh in 727 A.H. Chaos in Kashmir.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Death of Shaikh Najm-ud-Dīn Hasanī Sijzi (or Sijjistānī) known as Mīr Hasan Dīhlavī or the Sa‘dī of India at Daulatābād in the Deccan.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1328</td>
<td>Ibn Taimiyya, the forerunner of Wahhābīsm dies in captivity at Damascus. Invention of gunpowder.</td>
<td></td>
<td>Introduction of token currency in India.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Wali-ud-Din ‘Abdur Rahmān ibn Khaledun born in Tunis on 1st Ramazān, 732 A.H.

Public medico-botanical garden at Venice.

Death of Shaikh Safiyy-ud-Din (of Ardabil) after whom the Safavi dynasty of Iran is named.

Abū ‘Abdullāh ibn Battūtah, the traveller, visits India.

Sayyid Jalāl-ud-Din Ahsan Shāh rules as independent Sultān of Madura.

Muslims seized Anegundi, the old capital of the principality that afterwards expanded into the kingdom of Vijayanagar.

Asbikaga Shogunate begins in Japan.

Timūr (signifying in Turkish ‘Iron’) born at Kash or Shahr-i-Sabz (the Green City) in Transoxiana.

Giotto, the artist of Florence, Italy, died.

Foundation of the Vijayanagar empire in the south, also of the city of Vijayanagar.

Muhammad Tughluq sends an army to invade China but meets with a serious disaster.

Birth of Lalla ‘Ārifa, in 735 A.H. (approximate).

The Nuzhat-ul-Qulūb of Hamdullāh Mustaʿufi (740 A.H.)

Death of the poet Khwājū of Kirman.

Ibn Battūtah leaves the service of Muhammad Tughluq and proceeds to China.

Abu'l Fida becomes Prince of Hamah in Syria.

Accession of Shāh Mir.

Suicide of Kotta Rāni.

Death of Shāh Mir.

Accession of Sultān Jamshīd.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Date</th>
<th>The World excluding India</th>
<th>India excluding Kashmir</th>
<th>Kashmir</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1343</td>
<td>Cities of southern and southwestern Germany form the Swabian League.</td>
<td>Muhammad Tughluq receives the diploma of investiture from the Khalifa of Egypt, Al Hakim III. Poet Badr-ud-Din known as Badr-i-Chach from his native city of Chach (Shash) or Tashqand goes on a mission from Delhi to Daulatabad.</td>
<td>Accession of Sultan 'Ala'-ud-Din. Death of Sultan Jamshid on his deposition in 745 A.H.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1344</td>
<td>Abul Fida, the author of the geographical work <em>Taqwim-ul-Buldun</em> and the Universal History <em>Ta'rikh-i-Mukhtasar</em>, dies. First apothecary shop in London.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1345</td>
<td>The Turks take the Morea. Cannon used at the Battle of Crecy.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1348</td>
<td>Terrible pestilence in London. Board of Health and Quarantine established at Venice.</td>
<td>Muhammad Tughluq besieges Girnar near Junagadh in Kathiawar.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Capture of Girmār near Junāgarh by Muhammad Tughluq.

1351 The Statute of Labourers regulating prices and wages passed in England.

Death of Muhammad Tughluq and accession of Fīrūz Tughluq.

1352 Corpus Christie College, Cambridge, founded.

Ilyās Shāh unites the two Bengal principalities.

1354

1355 Fīrūz Tughluq cuts a canal from the Sutlaj to Jhajjar and later another canal from the Jumna to Hansi-Hisār.

Free hospitals for the poor by Fīrūz Shāh Tughluq.

Death of Ziyā-ud-Din Barni, the author of the Ta'rikh-i-Fīrūz Shāhī, which is a complement of the Tabaqāt i-Nāṣirī, in 758 A.H.

Ibn Battūtah finishes his Travels on 13th December, 1355.

Severe famine in Kashmir, due to untimely rain. ‘Alā’-ud-Din’s generous measures save people from starvation.

The poet Amritdatta flourishes.

1359

Death of Šultān ‘Alā’-ud-Din.
Accession of Šultān Shihāb-ud-Din.

Kashmir starts on a career of foreign conquests, namely, those of the Punjāb, Sind, Kābul, Qandahār and Tibet.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Date</th>
<th>The World excluding India</th>
<th>India excluding Kashmir</th>
<th>Kashmir</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1369</td>
<td>Treaty of Bretigny between England and France.</td>
<td>Accession of Fakhr-ud-Dīn Mubārak in Madura.</td>
<td>Udākpati, the Rāja of Nagarkōṭ (Kāṅgara), submits to Šūktān Shihāb-ud-Dīn after his marauding expedition round Delhi.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1361</td>
<td>The Turks enter Thrace and take Adrianople.</td>
<td>Capture of Kāṅgara or Nagarkōṭ by Šūktān Firūz Shāh of Delhi.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1364</td>
<td>'Allāma Ṭaqīy-ud-Dīn Maqrizi born at Cairo. Murād I of Turkey defeats King of Hungary and Poland and Princes of Bosnia, Servia, and Wallachia on the banks of the river Maritza in Turkey flowing into the Aegean Sea.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1367</td>
<td>Timūr assumed the title of the Great Khān.</td>
<td>Completion of the great mosque at Gulbarga.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1368</td>
<td>Ibn-Yāmīn, the poet, dies. The Mongol (Yuan) dynasty of China fell and the Ming dynasty succeeded and continued till 1644.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1370</td>
<td>Gregory XI proscribed Wycliffe's doctrines. John of Arderne, an English surgeon, writes a surgical treatise.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1372</td>
<td>Šāh 'Alā'-ud-Dīn Sikandar Shāh rules as the last Sūktān of Madura.</td>
<td>The first visit of Šāh Hamadān. Mir Muhammad born to Šāh Hamadān.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
1373

Petrarch, the Italian poet, died.

1374

Extinction of the Muslim dynasty in Madura by Bukka I of Vijayanagar.

Atala Masjid of Jaunpur commenced.

1377

Rome again the seat of the Pope on the return of Pope Gregory XI.

1378


1379

Ibn Khaldun, the Arab historian, proceeds from Spain to Tunis to collect material for his History.

1380

First invasion of Iran by Timur.

1381


Madrasah established throughout the Valley for the teaching of the Qur'an and the imparting of Muslim learning.

Death of Sultan Shihab-ud-Din in 775 A.H.

Accession of Sultan Qutb-ud-Din.

Birth of Shaikh Nur-ud-Din, the patron-saint of Kashmir in 779 A.H. at Kaimuh village in the Advin Pargana. Kaimuh is two miles to the west of Bijbihara, which is 28 miles to the south-east of Srinagar.

The second visit of Shah Hamadan.

Kabir, the Muslim poet and mystic, born at Benares.

Flood in Kashmir.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Date</th>
<th>The World excluding India</th>
<th>India excluding Kashmir</th>
<th>Kashmir</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1383</td>
<td>Moscow burnt.</td>
<td></td>
<td>The third visit of Shāh Hamadān.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1384</td>
<td>Second invasion of Ḫūrūs by Timūr. Ibn Khaldūn appointed Chief Judge at Cairo to administer justice according to the Mālikī Law.</td>
<td>Death of Shāh Shujāʿ of Ḫūrūs, the patron of Hāfiz, the poet.</td>
<td>Death of Mīr Sayyid Ṭāli Hamadānī or Shāh Hamadān in 786 A.H. at Khatlān in Turkistān. He had already introduced industries, spread Islam by his persuasiveness in Kashmir, and given impetus to Muslim learning in the Valley, himself having lived by sewing caps.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1389</td>
<td>Death of Khwāja Shams-ud-Dīn Hāfiz of Shīrāz.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1392</td>
<td>Third and last invasion of Ḫūrūs by Timūr.</td>
<td>Dilāwar Khān, governor of Mālwa.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1393</td>
<td>Timūr occupies Baghdād.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
1394 Timur returns to 'Iraq.
Malik Sarwar Khwaja Jahân founds the Sharqi dynasty of Jaunpur.

1395 Timur's invasion of Russia goes as far as Moscow.
Convocation of Buddhist priests in Ceylon.

1397 Timur confers the kingdom of Khurasân on his son Shâh Rukh. Muzaffar Shâh founds the kingdom of Gujriat.

1398 John Huss, Rector of the University of Prague, preaches Wycliffism.
Invasion of India by Timur: Sack of Delhi.

Sikandar proceeds to Bârâmûla to meet Timur. The meeting, however, does not take place.
Jami' Masjid of Srinagar commenced by Sultan Sikandar.
Persecution of Hindus in Kashmir by Malik Suhabhatâ, prime minister or Regent during the minority of Sultan Sikandar.
Abolition of suttee in Kashmir.
Establishment of the Great college opposite to the Jami' Masjid, Srinagar.
1399 Timūr lays the foundation-stone of his magnificent Jāmi‘ Masjid at Samarqand.

1400 Timūr captures Aleppo and Damascus.
Ibn Khaldūn accompanies the ruler of Egypt to Syria on a campaign against Timūr. Ibn Khaldūn is taken prisoner but soon released.

Chaucer dies.

1401 Persecution of Lollards who were burnt alive in England.
Sack of Baghdaḍ by Timūr.

Hussain ‘Amīd Shāh Dā‘ūd, commonly known as Dilāwar Khān, founds the Ghūrī dynasty of Mālwa.

Birth of Prince Shāh-rukh or Shāhī Khān, afterwards Sultān Zain-ul-‘Abidīn, in 804 A.H.
Completion of the great Jāmi‘ Masjid of Srinagar by Sultān Sikandar.
that Timūr was glad that King Charles was giving a severe hiding to their common enemy Sultān Bāyazīd against whom Sigismond of Hungary was fighting and to whose help Charles had sent an army (805 A.H.).

This letter is preserved in Les Archives Nationales, Paris.

Timūr captures the Ottoman Sultān Bāyazīd called Yildirum (the Thunderbolt) after the Battle of Ankara or Angora.

1403 Sultan Bāyazīd dies in captivity.
1404- The Mosque of Gauhar Shād Āghā, wife of Shāh Rukh, the son of Timūr, builds the noblest mosque in Central Asia (Mashhad) the crowning architectural achievement of the Mongols.
1405 Death of Timūr at the age of 71 (lunar years) after 36 years' reign.
1406 Ibn Khalduń dies at the age of 78 on 26th Ramāzān, 808 A.H., at Cairo.

Alp Khān, known as Hushang Shāh Chūrī of Mālwa, ascends the throne, on the death of Dīlāwar Khān and builds Shādīābād (The City of Joy) known as Māndū. The Chinese eunuch Tcheng Hono visits Ceylon for the purpose of removing the tooth-relic but is plundered.
1407
The World excluding India
France laid under an interdict by the Pope.

India excluding Kashmir
Firuz Shah Bahmani builds an Observatory near Daulatabad.

Kashmir
Death of Sultan Sikandar in 816 a.h.
Accession of Sultan 'Ali Shah

1408

1409

1411

1413

1414
The poet Mullá 'Abdur Rahman Nür-ud-Din Jāmi born in Jām (near Herāt) in Ghurāsān.

1415
John Huss burnt alive for preaching Wycliffism.
Wood engraving introduced into the West.

1416

1417
End of the Great Schism.
Martin V, Pope.

1420
Pope Martin V preaches a crusade against the followers of John Huss of Prague.

1422
Death of Khwaja Banda Nawaz
Gisū Darāz said to have been born in 1321.

Death of Malik Saif-ud-Din (Suhbatā).
'Ali Kadal over the Jhelum built by Sultan 'Ali Shāh.

Death of Sultan 'Ali Shāh in 823 a.h.
Accession of Sultan Zain-ul-'Abidin (Bad Shāh).
Bad Shāh's visit to the Čerada Temple.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Year</th>
<th>Event</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1424</td>
<td>The <em>Zafar-nāma</em> of Sharaf-ud-Dīn ‘Alī Yazdī.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
|      | Ahmad Shāh of Gujrat builds the Jāmī’ Maṣjid at Ahmadābād which town
|      | is later formally founded in 1431.                                   |
| 1425 | Insane Asylum at Saragossa, Spain.                                   |
| 1426 | University of Louvain, Belgium, founded.                             |
| 1427 | Jalāl-ud-Dīn Dawwānī, the author of the *Akhlaq-i-Jalālī*, born in   |
|      | the village of Dawwān in the province of Fars in Iran.                |
| 1429 | Siege of Orleans raised by Joan of Arc.                              |
| 1431 | Joan of Arc burnt at Rouen, France.                                  |
|      | Renaissance architecture.                                            |
|      | Francois Villon, robber, assassin, vagabond and lyrical poet of      |
|      | France, born.                                                        |
| 1432 | Sultān Hushang Shāh of Mālwa dies at Māndū and Chaznī Khān ascends   |
|      | the throne at Māndū.                                                 |
| 1433 | Rānā Kumbha ascends the throne of Chitor.                            |
| 1435 | Chānd Minār in Daulatābād citadel constructed.                       |
1436 Francisco Ximines (1436-1517), a Spanish statesman and Cardinal who, after being Queen Isabella's confessor, became Archbishop of Toledo, Provisional Regent of Castile and Cardinal and Inquisitor-General in 1507, and printed the Complutensian Polyglot Bible. Mahmūd ascends the throne of Māndū, and founds the Khaljī dynasty of Mālwa.

1438

1439 William Byngham erects "God's House" at Cambridge for the training of grammar school masters.

1442 'Allāma Maqrīzī dies.

1443 'Abdur Razāq of Herāt arrives at Vijayanagar as the ambassador of Sultān Shāh Rukh of Samarqand.

1444 The truce of Tours.

Death in 842 A.H. of Shaikh Nūr-ud-Dīn Rishī, the Patron Saint of Kashmir.

Zaina-nagar or Nau Shahr founded by Bad Shāh, near Srinagar.

The Zaina Lānk Palace built in the Wulur Lake by Sultān Zain-ul-ʿĀbidīn.

The Tomb and Mosque of Sayyid Muhammad Madani, a foreign envoy, were built in Srinagar in 848 A.H.
1445 Discovery of Cape Verde by the Portuguese.
Jslâl-ud-Din-as-Suyûtî, the author of the Ta'rikh-ul-Khulafâ, born at Suyût in Upper Egypt.

1446 First printed books—Coster in Haarlem.

1450 The whole of Normandy passed over to the French.
Cardinal Cusanus suggests timing the pulse and weighing blood and urine.
University of Barcelona in Spain founded.

Kûshîk Mahall—the seven-storeyed palace—ordered to be built at Chanderî near Lalitpur (U.P.)

Mosque and Tomb of Shaikh Ahmad Khattûrî at Sarkhej, near Ahmadâbâd, commenced by Muhammad Shâh of Gujrât, and finished five years later by Qutb-ud-Din.

Buhlûl Lodi ascends the throne of Delhi and founds the Lodi dynasty, the first Afgân empire.

Kabîr, a Khalîfa of Shaikh Taqî Suhrawardî and later of Shaikh Bîka Chishtî and the pupil of Râmânand in Hindi poetry and Hindu mysticism, flourishes.

Mahâbhârata translated into Persian by Mullâ Ahmad Kashmirî under the orders of Baq Shâh (approximate).

Death of Shaikh Bahâ-ud-Dîn Ganj Bakhsh in Sînagar in 849 A.H.
Jonarâjâ, the poet and historian, flourishes under Sultân Zain-ul-Âbidîn.

Death of Mir Muhammad Hama-dânî at Khatlân in Turkistân.

Sultân Zain-ul-Âbidîn’s Dogrâ Queen of Jammu—his second wife—died in 856 A.H., having given birth to four sons, one of whom died early.
Bahrâm fights his father Baq Shâh in 856 A.H.
1453 Constantinople taken by the Turks under Muhammad II, which ended the Eastern Roman Empire. It was re-named Istanbul. University of Glasgow founded.

1454 Death of Sharaf-ud-Din 'Ali of Yazd.

1455 War of the Roses.

1456 Greece subjected to the Turks.

1457 The first newspaper in the world was printed in Nuremberg (Bavaria, Germany).

1458 The Jami' Masjid of Jaunpur built.

1459 Accession of Sultan Mahmud Begarha to the throne of Gujarat.

1460 Famine in Kashmir. Sopor bridge over the Jhelum built by Sultan Zain-ul-Abidin.

Jām Nizām-ud-Dīn known as Nanda of Sind routs the army of Shāh Beg of Qandahār.

1464

Construction of the Zaina-dab in Nau Shahr, near Srinagar. Firearms first introduced into Kashmir.

1465 Casablanca, a seaport on its Atlantic coast and second town of Morocco, founded by the Portuguese on the site of the ancient Anfā which they destroyed was the meeting place of the late President Roosevelt of U.S.A. and Premier Winston Churchill of England in 1943.

Death of Bad Shāh’s Queen Baihaqī Begam. Conflagration at Sopūr.

1466

1467 The Venetians and the Florentines at war, for six weeks the respective armies were within walking distance of each other.

Rānā Kūmbha of Chitor is stabbed to death by his son Uda.

Bābā Nānak, the founder of Sikhism, born at Talwandī re-named, according to a statement, by Ranjit Singh as Nankāna Sāhib, now in the Shaikhūpur district of the West Punjāb.

1468 Irān conquered by Turkomāns.

1469

Crops spoilt by excessive rain. Sultān Zain-ul-ʿĀbidin took active measures for counteracting famine.
1470


1472 Madrasa (or college) of Khwaja Mahmud Gawan at Bidar, Deccan.

1473 The Polish astronomer, Nicolaus Koppernick or Copernicus, born at Thorn in Poland.

1474 Edward IV of England invades France.

1475 Khondmir, the historian, born at Herat.

1476 Jami's Nafahat'ul Uns (Breaths of Fellowship) written.

1477 Bulbul Lodi annexes Jaunpur.

1479 First edition of Avicenna printed.

Death of Sultan Zain-ul-'Abidin in 874 A.H.
Accession of Sultan Haidar Shah in 874 A.H.
Death of Adam Khan, eldest son of Bad Shah, in a fight with Mughuls at Jammu in 1472 A.C.

Accession of Sultan Hasan Shah in 877 A.H.
Encouragement of music by Hasan Shah.
Prince Muhammad Shah born in 882 A.H.
Sultan Hasan Shah builds the bridge over the Jhelum at Nauruzpore near Pampar.
1480 Ivan III, Grand Duke of Moscow, throws off the Mongol allegiance. Inquisition established in Spain. Dancing in Italy.

1481 Death of Sultan Muhammad II of Turkey while preparing for the conquest of Italy. Bayazid II, Turkish Sultan (to 1512).


1484 Richard III slain at Bosworth Field in England.

1485 Nimai who became Chaitanya (or Awakened) the founder of Vaishnavism born at Nudha (Navadvip), Bengal.

Great fire destroys half of Srinagar including the Jama Masjid and the Khanqah-i-Mu'alla. Sultan Hasan Shah re-builds the Mosque and the Khanqah.

Execution of Khwaja Mahmud Gawan.

Zahir-ud-Din Muhammad Bubur born in Farghana, Russian Turkistan now called Kirghizia.

Expedition to conquer Baltistan and Ladakh dispatched by the Minister Sayyid Hasan Bihaiqui in the reign of Sultan Hasan Shah in 888 A.H.

Death of Sultan Hasan Shah in 889 A.H. Muhammad Shah a child. Sayyid Muhammad Amin Awaisi, the poet, is killed in a skirmish in 889 A.H., and is buried near Bulbul Lankar.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Date</th>
<th>The World excluding India</th>
<th>India excluding Kashmir</th>
<th>Kashmir</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1486</td>
<td>Diaz goes round the Cape of Good Hope.</td>
<td>The Mahākāli gateway of the Narnāla Fort, near Akot in District Akola, Berar, Central Provinces, was erected by Shīhāb-ud-Dīn Mahmūd Shāh.</td>
<td>Fath Shāh ascends the throne of Kashmir in 892 A.H.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1527</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1490</td>
<td>The <em>Majālisu’n Nafā’is</em> of Mir ‘Ali Shir Nauvā’ī written (1490).</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1512</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1491</td>
<td>Fall of Granada.</td>
<td>Rise of the Ahmadnagar, Bijāpur, Golkanda, Bidar and Berār kingdoms.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1492</td>
<td>The termination of the struggle of 800 years between the Moors and Christians of Spain is celebrated throughout Christendom. Henry VII of England rang the bells of old St. Paul in London in joy.</td>
<td>The great Oriya poet, Din Krishna Dās, author of the <em>Raśakalola</em> flourished about this time.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1492</td>
<td>Discovery of America by Columbus, who sees tobacco smoked for the first time in Antilles or the West Indies.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Death of Mullā Nūr-ud-Dīn ‘Abdūr Rahmān Jāmī at Herāt.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Three months after the fall of Granada, the Jews are offered</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
the alternative of conversion or exile, and about 150,000 leave the country for different parts of Europe and the Ottoman Empire.

1493 Appearance of syphilis in Europe.

1494 Aberdeen University founded. The Bābur-nāma begins.

Death of Amir Daulat Shāh of Samarkand, the author of the TazkiraṭUSH Shu‘arā’ or Memoirs of Poets.

The Akhlāq-i-Muḥsini by Husain-i-Kāshifi, the ‘Preacher.’

1496 Charles VIII of France invades Italy.

1497 Passage to the East Indies by the Cape of Good Hope discovered by Vasco da Gama, who left Lisbon on 8th July 1497. Jesus College, Cambridge, founded.

Muhammad Shāh becomes Sultan second time in 898 A.H. at the age of 16.

Birth of Shaikh Hamza Makhdūm in 900 A.H.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Date</th>
<th>The World excluding India</th>
<th>India excluding Kashmir</th>
<th>Kashmir</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1498</td>
<td>Insurrection of Perkin Warbeck finally quelled in England.</td>
<td>Vasco da Gama, whose pilot from the east coast of Africa to the west coast of Southern</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>India, was an Arab, landed at Calicut on 20th May, 1498. A Moorish Muslim merchant from</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Tangier (or Tunis) introduced da Gama to the Zamorin's court, and acted as an intermediary</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>between the Portuguese, who knew no Indian language, and the people of Malabar who knew</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>no Western language.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1499</td>
<td>Muslims persecuted and finally expelled from Spain after the</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>alternative of conversion or exile had been offered to them.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1502</td>
<td>Swisselzard becomes an independent republic.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Maps of the world.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Isma'il Safavi founded the Safavi Dynasty of Irân after expelling</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>the Turkomans.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Shî'ism established in Irân during Safavi rule.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Budhan, a Brâhman of Kutain (near Lucknow), asserted that</td>
<td>Mirzâ Haidar Dughlât born at Tâshqand, Turkistân, Central Asia.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Hinduism and Islam were both equally acceptable to God, if</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>acted upon with sincerity.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Earthquake in Kashmir.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
The Island of St. Helena discovered by the Portuguese.

1500

Rise of Burmese literature.

1502, 1514, 1524

Peasants’ Wars in Germany.

Cardinal Ximines de Cisneros (1436-1517) burnt the Mualim Library of Granada in the Square of Sivaramla, Spain.

1503

Jalāl-ud-Dīn Dawānī, the author of the Akhlāq-i-Jalālī, died.

1504

Bābur expelled by Shaibānī Khān from Farghāna.

Bābur conquers Kābul.

Bābur’s mother Qutlugh Nīgār Khānam dies.

Husain Wā’iz Kāshfī, author of the Anwār-i-Suhailī (Lights of Canopus) dies.

1505

Christ College at Cambridge founded.

Mahmūd Langāh rules Multān.

Sikandar Lodi fixes his capital at Agra.

Sayyid Muhammad Jaunpurī, born in 1443, announces his claim to the office of the Mahdi. Later, his death.

Death of Qāsim Barīd at Bīdar.

Sultān Fath Shāh builds Fath Kadal (bridge) over the Jhelum.

Pandit Črivara sanskritizes Mullā ‘Abdur Rahmān Jāmī’s Yūsuf-ū-Zulaikhā during the reign of Sultān Muhammad Shāh.

Fath Shāh regains the throne of Kashmir in 911 A.H.

Earthquake in India and Írān.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Date</th>
<th>The World excluding India.</th>
<th>India excluding Kashmir</th>
<th>Kashmir</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1506</td>
<td>Portuguese arrive at Colombo. Portuguese defeated at Chaul by Egyptians and the ruler of Gujrat.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1507</td>
<td></td>
<td>Albuquerque at Goa.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1509-27</td>
<td></td>
<td>Rânâ Sângâ reigns at Chitor.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1510</td>
<td></td>
<td>The Portuguese under Noronha, a nephew of Albuquerque, capture Goa Fort from Mîr 'Ālî.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1512</td>
<td>Sultán Salím of Turkey, who rules to 1520, becomes Khalifa.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1513</td>
<td>Macchiavelli, suspected of treason, leaves Florence and composes <em>The Prince</em>, which he dedicates to Lorenzo de Medici in the hope of employment.</td>
<td>Albuquerque’s attempt on Aden.</td>
<td>Death of Sultán Fath Shâh’s chief minister, Mûsâ Rîna or Raina.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
1514
Sir Thomas More's *Utopia* (Nowhere) published in Latin.

Corpus College, Oxford, founded.

1515
Sultan Salim of Turkey annexes Egypt. He also takes Aleppo. Luther propounds his theses at Wittenberg. He also translates the Bible.

1516
Soares' attempt on Aden.

1517
Ibrahim Lodi ascends the throne.

1518
Kabir dies at the age of 60 at Maghar (in the District of Basti) about 15 miles from Gorakhpur, United Provinces, the shrine being in charge of Muslim Kabir-panthis having been built by Bijli Khan, devotee of Kabir.

Muhammad Shah regains throne third time in 920 A.H.

Babur visits the tomb of Shah Hamadan in 920 A.H. at Khatlana in Turkistan, after 134 lunar years of Shah Hamadan's death.

Sultan Fath Shah third and last time regains throne in 921 A.H.

Muhammad Shah fourth time ruler of Kashmir in 922 A.H.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Date</th>
<th>The World excluding India</th>
<th>India excluding Kashmir</th>
<th>Kashmir</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1519</td>
<td>The poet Bābā Fughānī of Shīrāz dies.</td>
<td></td>
<td>Death of Fath Shāh in exile in 925 A.H., but his dead body is brought to Kashmir for burial.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Magellan's expedition started to sail round the world.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Cortez from Spain conquers Mexico City.</td>
<td></td>
<td>Sikandar Shāh, son of Fath Shāh, revolts against Muhammad Shāh.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1520</td>
<td>Sultān Sulaimān the Magnificent (to 1566) ruled from Baghādād to Hungary.</td>
<td>Battle of Rāichūr (Deccan).</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Height of Ottoman Power, 1520–1566.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Death of Raphael.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Ignatius Loyola wounded at Pampeluna.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1521</td>
<td>Luther ex-communicated by the Diet at Worms.</td>
<td>Shāh Beg Arghūn conquers Sind.</td>
<td>Shaikh Ya‘qūb Sarfī born.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Magellan discovers the Philippines.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1522</td>
<td>Gulbadan Begam, the authoress of the Humāyūn-nāma, born at Kābul.</td>
<td>Khondmīr's Habīb-us-Siyar written.</td>
<td>Shaikh or Mīr Shams-ūd-Dīn 'Īrāqī dies.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1523</td>
<td></td>
<td>Bābūr wins the battle of Pānīpāt, and founds the Mughul Empire</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1526</td>
<td>Turks occupy Buda.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
1527 War with the Pope.
Germans storm Rome.
Death of Machiavelli.

1627 Fall of the Bahlmanī Kingdom of the Deccan.
Barā Sonā Masjid (Great Golden Mosque) at Gaur, Bengal, completed by Nusrat Shāh.
Chaitanya died at the age of 42.
Invasion of Ava by the Shāns.

1528 The Tāzuk-i-Bāburī written by Bābūr. The Bābur-nāma ends.
Battle of Ghāgra. Conquest of Bengal.

1529 Sulaimān of Turkey besieged Vienna.
Sweating sickness spreads over Europe.
The State Bank of Naples, Italy, the oldest Bank, established.

1530 Persecution of Protestants begins in France.
Henry VIII of England begins quarrelling with the Papacy.

Bābūr dies in his 48th year on December 26, 1530, and Humāyūn ascends the throne.
Krisnadeva of Vijayanagar dies.
Bahādur Shāh annexes Mālwa.
Bakshu, a singer, flourishes at the court of Bahādur Shāh.
Goa becomes the Portuguese head-quarters.

Sultān Ibrāhīm Shāh I rules in 934 A.H.
Sultān Nādir Shāh, better known as Nāzuk Shāh, rules for the first time, in 935 A.H.

Sultān Muhammad Shāh ascends the throne fifth time in 936 A.H. and continues for seven years.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Date</th>
<th>The World excluding India</th>
<th>India excluding Kashmir</th>
<th>Kashmir</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1531</td>
<td>The Royal Printing Press established in France.</td>
<td></td>
<td>Mirzā Haidar Dughlāt invades first Ladākh, then Kashmir, and then Tibet Proper on behalf of Sultān Sa‘īd Khān.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1533</td>
<td>Montaigne, the first of European essayists, born in France.</td>
<td>Second sack of Chitor.</td>
<td>Mirzā Haidar Dughlāt returns to Ladākh from his expedition against Tibet Proper.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1535</td>
<td>Sir Thomas More beheaded in England.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1536</td>
<td>Henry VIII of England executes his Queen Anne Boleyn, on a charge of infidelity. The Inquisition is introduced by the Portuguese Church. Wales is united to England in matters of law. The first Poor Law forbids begging in England.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
1537 Bahadur of Gujrát is drowned at Diu.

1538 Death of Al-Mutawakkil, the last of the 'Abbāsid Caliphs.

1539 The Society of Jesus founded.

1539 Dissolution of the greater monasteries in England.
The 'Ardabil Mosque Carpet woven at Kāshān, Iran.

1539 Bābā Nānak dies at Kartārpur, now known as Dehra Bābā Nānak, District Gurdaspur, West Punjab.

1539 A Khattī, Lehna by name, becomes a devoted disciple of Gurū Nānak, and is called Gurū Angad, improves the Gurmukhi script and compiles the first memoirs of Gurū Nānak in that script.

1539 Extinction of the Pegū Kingdom.

1540 Cromwell, Lord Essex, beheaded.

1540 Portuguese settle at Macao in China, 38 miles from Hong-Kong.

1540 St. Francis Xavier preaches Christianity in Japan.

1540 Battle of the Ganges; flight of Humayun.

1541 Marriage of Humayun and Hamīda Bānu Begam.

Death of Sultān Muḥammad Shāh in 943 A.H.
Sultān Shams-ud-Dīn II rules.
Sultān Ismā'īl Shāh I succeeded Sultān Shams-ud-Dīn II in 944 A.H.

Sultān Ibrāhīm Shāh II succeeds Sultān Ismā'īl Shāh I in 945 A.H.
Mīrzā Haidar Dughlāt becomes an adherent of Humayun.

Mīrzā Haidar Dughlāt conquers Kashmir on the invitation of a faction of Kashmiri nobles, and acts as Humayun's governor but sets up Nāzuk Shāh as the Sultān of Kashmir in 946 A.H.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Date</th>
<th>The World excluding India</th>
<th>India excluding Kashmir</th>
<th>Kashmir</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Death of Copernicus. The first Protestant is burnt in Spain.</td>
<td>Sher Khān Sūr ascends the throne.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1543</td>
<td>Death of Martin Luther. Trinity College, Cambridge, founded by Henry VIII.</td>
<td>Francis Xavier lands at Goa.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>The Council of Trent (to 1563) assembled to put the Church in order.</td>
<td>Sher Shāh Sūr builds the fortress of Rohtās (in the Jhelum district of the Punjāb) to hold Gakhars in check.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1544</td>
<td>Beginning of the Sharifs of Morocco. Humāyūn at the court of Shāh Tahmāsab Safavi.</td>
<td>Dādū, poet and reformer, born in Ahmadābād (Gujrāt) preaches against idol worship.</td>
<td>Death of Kājī Chak in 951 A.H.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1545</td>
<td>The first Protestant is burnt in Spain.</td>
<td>Death of Sher Shāh Sūr.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1546</td>
<td>Death of Akbar.</td>
<td>Salimgarh at Delhi first built by Salim Shāh Sūr.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Trinity College, Cambridge, founded by Henry VIII.</td>
<td>Circumcision of Akbar.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1547</td>
<td>Cervantes born.</td>
<td>Tulsi Dās commences his Rāmāyāṇa.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1548</td>
<td>Rebellion in Peru.</td>
<td>Use of tea introduced by Mīrzā Haidar Dūghlāt (approximate).</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Jena University founded in Germany.</td>
<td>Mirzā Haidar invades Kishtwār during the time of its ruler, Rājā Rāi Singh.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
1549 First Jesuit mission arrived in South America.
1551 Anatomical theatres at Paris and Montpellier.

1552 Somerset beheaded in England.
1553 Rabelais, the writer, died.
Death of Edward VI of England.
Michael Servitus burnt for 'the crime of honest thought.'
1554 Queen Mary of England persecutes the Protestants.
Russia annexes Astrakhan.
First tobacco seeds arrive in France from Brazil.

1555 Diet of Augsburg.


The Malik-i-Maidan gun cast at Bijapur.
Prince Hindal killed in a skirmish.
Mizra Haidar Dughlat killed at Khapuri on the Mughal road to Srinagar.
Sultan Isma'il Shah II, ascends the throne in 958 A.H.

Saint Francis Xavier dies.
Death of Islam (Salim) Shah Suri.
Severe earthquake.

Sultan Habib Shah, the last of the line of Shah Mir, is crowned in 961 A.H.
Habba Kadal (bridge) over the Jhelum built by Sultan Habib Shah.
Shah Miris close their rule with the dethronement of Sultan Habib Shah in 962 A.H.

Defeat of Sikandar Suri at Sirhind.
Humayun resumes sway.
Portuguese war in Ceylon.
Ghazi Chak, the first ruler of the Chak line, ascends the throne in 962 A.H.

Khwaja Habibullah Nau Shahri, poet, born.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Date</th>
<th>The World excluding India</th>
<th>India excluding Kashmir</th>
<th>Kashmir</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1556</td>
<td>Death of Ignatius Loyola, the founder of the Jesuits.</td>
<td>Humāyūn dies.</td>
<td>1561 Kashmiri wrote his history called the <em>Tuhfat-us-Sādāt</em> for Sayyid Mubārak Bukhārī, the head of the powerful order of the Bukhārī Sayyids of Gujarāt, Western India.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1557</td>
<td></td>
<td>Akbar succeeds to the throne. Defeat of Hēmu at Pānīpat.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1558</td>
<td>Tobacco brought from America for the first time.</td>
<td>Subjugation of Jaunpur, Mālwa, and Khāndesh by Akbar.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1560-62</td>
<td></td>
<td>Dismissal of Bairam Khān by Akbar.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1560</td>
<td>Tobacco plant introduced into Holland from France. England adopts the smoking habit.</td>
<td>Akbar grants religious freedom throughout his empire. Inquisition established by the Portuguese at Goa.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1562</td>
<td>Witchcraft made a capital offence in England.</td>
<td>Tān Sain, musician and singer, brought to Akbar’s court.</td>
<td>ʿAllāmah ‘Abdul Hakīm, the future pupil of Mullā Kamāl Kashmirī, born at Siālkot, Punjāb (approximate).</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
1563 End of the Council of Trent and the reform of the Catholic Church.


1565 *Parker's Advertisements* for the repression of Puritanism in England issued by the archbishop.

1566 Death of Sulaimân the Magnificent of Turkey. The Royal Exchange founded by Gresham in London.


Husain Shāh Chak rules.


Battle of Talikota: Vijayanagar empire destroyed. Decline of Portuguese trade at Goa.

Agra Fort commenced by Akbar on the site of an older one, constructed by Salim Shāh Sūr, the son of Sher Shāh Sūr.

Faizi presented at Akbar's court. Fall of Chitor.

Akbar re-builds the Dargāh of Khwâja Mu'in-ud-Din Chishti (b. 1143 A.C., d. 1233 A.C.) at Ajmer and issues the first *farmān* for its upkeep by assigning certain villages.
1569
Arabia is reduced by Sinān Pāshā for the Sultan of Turkey who is prayed for in Mecca.
Re-construction of the Ka'ba by Sultan Salim II.
The Pope excommunicates Queen Elizabeth of England.

1570
1571
1572
The World excluding India

India excluding Kashmir

Kashmir

Prince Salim (Jahāngīr) born.
Orders given for building Fatehpur Sikrī.
Humāyūn's tomb at Delhi completed.
Muhammad Qāsim Hindu Shāh Firishta, the historian, born.
Jodhpur was conferred by Akbar on Rāi Singh of Bikāner.
Prince Murād, second son of Akbar, born at Sikrī.
Shaikh Salim Chishti dies.

Abdication of Sultan Husain Shāh Chak in 978 A.H.
'Ali Shāh Chak ascends the throne.
A great famine.
Embassy from Akbar to the court of Sultan 'Ali Shāh Chak.

First invasion of Kīghtwār by 'Ali Shāh Chak.
Ya'qūb Khān Chak, grandson of 'Ali Shāh, married to Shankar Devī (later called Fath Khātūn) daughter of Bahādur Singh.

Cyprus taken by Turkey from the Venetians.
Birth of Kepler, the German astrologer, the pupil of Tycho Brahe the Dane (1546—1601), who was the first in Europe to have attempted to measure the distance between the earth and the sun.
Massacre of St. Bartholomew.
The revolt of the Dutch from Spain.

Tulsī Dās' Rāmāyaṇa completed.
1573 Nobunaga ends the Ashikaga Shogunate in Japan.

1574 Amardās, the third Sikh Gurū, died and was succeeded by his son-in-law Gurū Rām Dās who enjoyed Akbar's patronage. Gurū Rām Dās founded the city of Amritsar and constructed the temple of Har-mandir in the centre of the large tank.

Second invasion of Kishtwār by 'Alī Shāh Chak.

Amardās, the third Sikh Gurū, died and was succeeded by his son-in-law Gurū Rām Dās who enjoyed Akbar's patronage. Gurū Rām Dās founded the city of Amritsar and constructed the temple of Har-mandir in the centre of the large tank.

Abu’l Fazl introduced at Akbar's court.

'Abdul Qādir Badāyūnī presented at the court of Akbar.

1575 The use of tobacco forbidden in the churches of Spanish America.

Gulbadan Begam and Salima Sultāna Makhfī proceed to the Hajj.

Sultān Nāzūk Shāh or Nādīr Shāh's sons Haidar and Salīm attempt an invasion of Kashmir to recover the throne for the Shāh Mīris.

Death of Shaikh Hamza Makhdūm in 984 A.H.

1576 The head Lāma of the chief monastery of Lhussa is made Grand Lāma of Tibet.

Dā’ūd Khān Kararānī, the last ruler of Bengāl, subjugated by Akbar.

Famine due to untimely snowfall.
**Date** | **The World excluding India** | **India excluding Kashmir** | **Kashmir**
---|---|---|---
1577 | Ivan IV (the Terrible) took the title of Tsar of Russia. | Comet. Gurū Rām Dās obtains a grant of the site of the Pool at Chak, supposed to have been the favourite resort of Gurū Nānak, from the Emperor Akbar on payment of Rs. 700 Akbarī to the Zamīndārs of Tung who owned the land. The place was known as Rāmdāspur or Gurū kā Chak.—*The Transformation of Sikhism* by Sir Gokul Chand Nārang, 1912, page 25. But the *Tawārīkh-i-Kkālsa* says it was a jāgīr conferred by Akbar on the Gurū. | Death of ‘Alī Shāh Chak in 987 A.H.
1580 | Portugal united to Spain by conquest on the death of Henry I of Portugal. Montaigne the French essayist's first two books of essays appear. | Formation of the 12 Sūbahs (provinces) by Akbar. | Yusuf Shāh Chak again ascends the throne in 988 A.H. |
1581 The first arrival of tobacco in Turkey and Poland (approximate).

Birth at Gujurāt, in the West Punjāb, of Shāh Daulah, whose Chāhās (or dwarf-headed mendicants) roam about the Punjāb.

Gurū Arjun Dev compiles the Ādī Granth (1581—1606).

Amritsar, called Chak under Muslim rule, becomes the Holy City of the Sikhs when the fourth Gurū Rām Dās dug a large talāo or tank, and called it Amrita Sara. It was called by the Hindus Rāmdāspura—Baron Charles Hügel's Travels in Kashmir and the Punjab, 1845, page 391.

First Jesuit Mission at the court of Akbar.

Din-i-Illāh proclaimed by Akbar.

1582 Death of Nobunaga of Japan.
Hakluyt’s Collection of Voyages.

1583 Galileo discovers the principle of the pendulum.
Edinburgh University founded.
Sir Walter Raleigh's expedition to Virginia.

Habba Khātūn, queen of Yūsuf Shāh Chak, builds the bridge over the Jhelum at Pāndachhuk.
1584
The World excluding India

Akbar establishes the Ilahí era.

Death of Daswanth, the artist.

India excluding Kashmir

Arrangements for the conquest of Kashmir by Akbar.

Kashmir

Murder of Qazi-‘l-Quzat Sayyid Musa by Ya‘qub Shâh Chak.

Deputation of Shaikh Ya‘qub Safi and Baba Da‘ud Khaki to the court of Akbar for intervention to save the Sunnis.

Yusuf Shâh goes over to Bhagwândâs.

Ya‘qub Shâh succeeds his father for a few months.

End of Chak rule after 31 years by the annexation of Kashmir to the Mughul empire by Akbar on 1st Ziqad, 991 A.H. or 4th October, 1586.

1585

1586
Babington (England) Plot.

Battle of Zutphen in Holland.

1587
Shâh ‘Abbâs the Great of Iran begins at the age of seventeen his reign of 42 years (1587—1629), during which he develops the material resources of the country, extends his rule along the Persian Gulf and the Afghan Frontier, recovers territory from the Turks and maintains religious toleration.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Year</th>
<th>Event</th>
<th>Year</th>
<th>Event</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Death of the Irani poet, Muhtasham Kashani.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Dr. Timothy Bright invents shorthand.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1589</td>
<td>The Academy of Kieve, the first educational institution, founded in Russia.</td>
<td>Death of Todar Mal and Bhagwan Das.</td>
<td>First visit of Akbar to Kashmir. Faizi accompanies Akbar and composes the Qasida on Kashmir. Also Urfi Shirazi.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1590</td>
<td>Isfahan made the capital of Iran.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1592</td>
<td>Falkland Isles discovered by Davis. The remains of Pompeii discovered. Francis Bacon’s <em>The Praise of Knowledge</em>. Comenius, the educator, born. The Portuguese build a fort at Mombasa. Montaigne, the French essayist, died.</td>
<td></td>
<td>Second visit of Akbar. Nizam-ud-Din, the author of the <em>Tabaqat-i-Akbari</em>, accompanies Akbar.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
1593 Bakhshi Nizām-ud-Din’s *Tabaqāt-i-Akbari* ends.
Shaikh Mubārak dies.

1594 Subjugation of Qandahār and Balūchistān by Akbar.
Tintoretto, the Venetian artist, dies.

1595 Chānd Bibi successfully defends Ahmadnagar against the Mughuls.
Faizā dies.
Drake and Hawkins lead the last expedition to the West Indies.
Badāyūnī’s *History* ends.
Annexation of Berār.

1596 Publication of Abu’l Fazl’s *Ā’in-i-Akbari*.
The British capture Cadiz from the Spaniards.
The French philosopher, René Descartes, born at La Haye, Touraine, France.

1597 Bodley bequeaths his library to Oxford University.
Francis Bacon’s *Essays* (1597—1623).

1598 Philip III banished the still remaining Moors from Spain. Irreparable damage to the country in agriculture and industry on account of Moors’ banishment.

Kashmir

Shaikh Ya‘qūb Sarfī dies.
Akbar asks Mullā ‘Abdul Qādir Badāyūnī to re-write the *Bahrul-Asmār* of Mullā Ahmad Shāhābādī’s translation of the *Rājatarangini*.

Famine in Kashmir.
The wall around the Hari-parbat. Fort built ostensibly as a relief measure.

Third visit of Akbar.
Laying of foundation of Nāgar-nagar fort on the Hari-parbat.
1598  Death of Hideyoshi of Japan.
      Francis Bacon (Lord Verulam) arrested for debt.
      The first Jewish synagogue in Amsterdam, Holland.

1599  The Royal Faculty of Physicians and Surgeons of Glasgow established.
      Velázquez, the Spanish painter, born.
      Capture of Ahmadnagar.
      Death of Prince Murād in India.

1600  Ieyasu founds the Tokugawa Shogunate in Japan.
      Capture of ‘Aligarh.
      Occupation of Burhānpur.
      English East India Company formed.
      Anārkali’s tomb built by Jahāngīr in Lāhore.

1601  Shintoism revived in Japan.
      The Akbar-nāmah of Abu’l Fazl ends with the account of Akbar’s fortieth year of reign.

1602  Shakespeare’s Hamlet.
      Harvey becomes M.D. at Padua.
      Murder of Abu’l Fazl.
      Gulbadan Begam dies.
      Dutch East India Company formed.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Date</th>
<th>The World excluding India</th>
<th>India excluding Kashmir</th>
<th>Kashmir</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1604</td>
<td>At the Hampton Court Conference, James I of England agrees to the revision of the Bible.</td>
<td>The Sultān of Ahmadnagar grants Poona to Mālojī, the grandfather of Shivājī, in 1604. Tobacco introduced into the Mughul empire having just been brought by Portuguese traders at Bijāpur.</td>
<td>Death of Prince Dānyāl in India. Prince Salīm arrested at Agra.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1606</td>
<td>Virginia Company founded by the English.</td>
<td>Gurū Arjūn disappears in the Rāvī having offended Jahāṅgīr by his assistance to Prince Khusrav.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
1603  Milton born.
      Saint François de Sales publishes his 
      Vie Dêvote.

1609  Independence of Holland.
      Microscope invented.

1609  Logarithms invented.
      Shakespeare’s Sonnets published
      without his sanction.

1610  Final expulsion of the Moors from
      Spain.

1611  Baronets first created in England.

1612  Danish East India Company
      founded.

1613  Prohibition of tobacco in Russia.

Death in Srinagar of the poet,
Mazhari, who wrote in Persian
(approximate).

Hawkins at Agra.

Mulla Wajhi, the author of the
Sab Ras, who wrote, in twelve
days, his masnavi entitled Qutb-i-
Mushtari, the love-story of
Sultan Muhammad Quli Qutb
Shah of Golkunda and a girl of
Bengal.

Death of Muhammad Quli Qutb
Shah, ruler of Golkunda, prob-
ably the first literary writer of
Urdu, as already noted in the
events of 1580.

Jahangir marries Nur Jahân in
Hindustân.

Death of Muhammad Husain
Kashmiri Zarrin Qalam (The
Golden Pen), Akbar’s court
calligraphist.

Stone basin of the Vér-näg Spring
built by Jahângîr.

British Factory established at
Surat by permission of Jahângîr.

Death of the poet Nazîri.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Date</th>
<th>The World excluding India</th>
<th>India excluding Kashmir</th>
<th>Kashmir</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1616</td>
<td>Shakespeare and Cervantes die. The <em>Ta'rikh-i-'Alam Ārā-i-'Abbāsī</em> composed by Sikandar Munshi. Smoking introduced into Switzerland.</td>
<td></td>
<td>Dilāwar Khān, Governor of Kashmir.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1617</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1618</td>
<td>The Thirty Years' War begins between the Evangelic Union under the Elector Palatine and the Catholic League under the Duke of Bavaria.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Year</td>
<td>Event</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>------</td>
<td>-------</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1619</td>
<td>Bacon's <em>Novum Organum</em> declares the experience the starting point and induction the true method of knowledge. First Negro slaves landed at Jamestown in Virginia by a Dutch ship.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1621</td>
<td>Rebellion of Prince Khurram. Death of Prince Khusrav.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1622</td>
<td>The Dutch massacre English traders at Amboyna in Malaya.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1623</td>
<td>War between England and Spain. Tulsā Dās dies at Benāres.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Date</td>
<td>The World excluding India</td>
<td>India excluding Kashmir</td>
<td>Kashmir</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>------</td>
<td>---------------------------</td>
<td>-------------------------</td>
<td>---------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1626</td>
<td>Sir Francis Bacon (Lord Verulam) died.</td>
<td>Ghawwāsī of Golfunda writes, in the Dakhani Urdu, the first work of fiction entitled Saif-ul-Mulūk Shahzāda Misr and Bādī‘-ul-Jamāl Shahzādi Ḥaṣīn; the second work of fiction, the Tūsī-nāma, being written in 1639, both masnavīs.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Madame de Sèvignè, the queen of letter-writers, born.</td>
<td>Prince Parviz dies.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Death of Mālik Ambar.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>‘Abdūr Rāhīm Khān-Khānān dies at Delhi.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Ibrāhīm Hauza built at Bijāpur.</td>
<td>Jahāngīr leaves Lāhore for Kashmir in March 1627.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Death of the poet Tālib Amuli.</td>
<td>Jahāngīr dies at Bhimbar in October 1627, on his way back from Kashmir.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1630</td>
<td>Gustavus-Adolphus of Sweden invades Germany.</td>
<td>Rājā Hirde Shāh, the Gond ruler, makes Rāmnagar (near Mandla, Central Provinces), his capital and builds his palace.</td>
<td>The author of the Dabistān meets Āzar Kāiwān in Kashmir. Mullā Tāhir Ghanī, the great poet of Kashmir, was born (approximate).</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
1631
Gustavus-Adolphus killed at the battle of Lützen, in Saxony, Germany.
The philosopher, Spinoza, born.

1632
Death of Muntāz Mahall at Būrānāpur on the Tāpī, Central Provinces.
Building of the Tāj Mahall begun. Hugli taken from the Portuguese.

1634
Cardinal Richelieu founds the Académie Française.
Wallenstein, German soldier and statesman, is murdered.
Lully, the musician, born.

1635
Zinat-un-Nisā' Begam born at Aurangābād (Deccan).

1638
Japan closed to Christianity and the West until 1665.
The Turks defeat the İrānians and take the city of Baghādād.

1639
The Rāvī Canal completed.
Jahān Ārā completes the Mūnis-ul-Arwāḥ, the life of Khwāja Mu‘in-ud-Din Chishtī of Ajmer.

Dārā Shukhū's bridge over the Jhelum at Bijbihārā.
Shāh Jahān visits the Valley.
Chashma-i-Shāhī Garden laid out.

Nascīt Bāgh laid out.
Nasīm Bāgh laid out.
Bridge on the Jhelum at Pāmpūr.

Building of the Lāl Qala‘ of Delhi commenced by Shāh Jahān.
The Assamese invaded Bengāl but were repulsed by Islām Khān.
Zīb-un-Nisā' Begam born at Daulatābād, Deccan.

The author of the Dabistān meets Sūfī Mullā Ismā‘īl Isfahānī in Kashmir.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Date</th>
<th>The World including India</th>
<th>India excluding Kashmir</th>
<th>Kashmir</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1640</td>
<td>Charles I of England summons the Long Parliament.</td>
<td></td>
<td>The Achabal Spring Garden laid out. Bāgh-i-Iltah laid out near Bachhāpūr which is further up Nasīm.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1641</td>
<td>The first attempt at Parliamentary reporting was made.</td>
<td>The Safinat-ul-Auliya of Prince Dārā Shukūh in 1049 A. H. Death of the poet, Jalāl Āsir. The English occupy Huglī. Hakim ‘Ilm-ud-Dīn of Chiniāt, who became Nawwāb Wazīr Khān and ruler of Lāhore in the time of Shāh Jahān, completed the Wazīr Khān’s Masjid at Lāhore in 1051 A. H. = 1641 A. C. Gurū Hargobind, who was the first Sikh Gurū to enter upon a military career, dies. The Sāfinat-ul-Auliya of Prince Dārā Shukūh in 1052 A. H. Tāj Mahal completed.</td>
<td>Mullā Muḥsin Fānī at Mashhad in Īrān (probable).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1642</td>
<td>Galileo died. Newton born.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1643</td>
<td>Barometer invented. Lewis XIV of France began his reign of 72 years.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1644</td>
<td>Ming Empire succumbs to the rebel Li. Wu San-Kwei opens China to the Manchūs. The Manchūs establish themselves in China by ending the Ming dynasty.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
1647 Death of the poet, *Qudsi* of Mashhad, in Iran.


Transfer of the capital from Agra to Delhi (Shāhjahānābād).
Lāl Qala' of Delhi completed.
Jāmi' Masjid of Jahān Rāi or Ārā Begam, at Agra, completed.
Completion of new Delhi and the Jamuna Canal.

1649 Air Pump invented.
Cromwell Protector (till 1658).
Execution of Charles I of England.

The Jāmi' Masjid at Delhi built.
Nādir-uz-Zamān Ḥamid Lāhorī, the engineer-builder of the Tāj Mahall, dies.
Maunucci, the Venetian physician, arrives at Agra.

Hamnām (bath) and Masjid for his tutor, Akhūn Mullā Shāh, built by Dārā Shukūh at Srinagar.

1650 Death of the French philosopher, René Descartes, at Stockholm, Sweden, where he had gone on invitation from Queen Christina of Sweden.

1651 The English acquire St. Helena. Hobbes' *Leviathan*

English factory at Hugli founded.

Death of Abū Tālib Kalīm, the poet.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Date</th>
<th>The World excluding India</th>
<th>India excluding Kashmir</th>
<th>Kashmir</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1654</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1655</td>
<td>China checks the advance of Russia south of the Amur.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1656</td>
<td>The philosopher, Spinoza, was summoned before the elders of the synagogue on a charge of heresy and excommunicated.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Muhammad Kiaprili, Grand Vazir of Turkey under Muhammad IV (1648–87).</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1657</td>
<td>Cinchona, [after the name of the Peruvian Viceroy of Spain, Del Chinchon, about 1640 a.c.], first introduced into Calcutta during the malaria epidemic of 1657.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Cromwell founds the Durham University which is suppressed at the Restoration and revived in 1837.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>The first shipping paper was published.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1658</td>
<td>Cromwell died.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>The author of the Dabistân is attacked by a disease.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Göl Gumbaz built at Bijâpur.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Aurangâbâd in the Deccan named as such.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Aurangzîb deposes Shâh Jahâu and himself ascends the throne.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
1669 The French dramatist Molière's first masterpiece.
1661 Ahmad Kiuprili succeeds his father as Grand Vazir of Turkey. Turks invade Transylvania. K'ang Hsi commences reign in China.
1662 Descartes' L'Homme, his first treatise on physiology, published. Death of Pascal, French writer.
1664 New York captured by the English. French East India Company established.
1666 The Kaskol (Great Schism) in the Russian Church.
1668 England, Holland and Sweden form the Triple Alliance.


Acquisition of Bombay by the English from Portugal.

Sir Jumla dies before reaching Dacca.

Siváji loots Surat.

Siváji surrenders to Aurangzib. Tavernier in India.


Naukdal (new bridge) over the Jhelum built.

Mulla Tāhir Ghānī, the great poet of Kashmir, dies.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Date</th>
<th>The World excluding India</th>
<th>India excluding Kashmir</th>
<th>Kashmir</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1669</td>
<td>The Turks captured Crete from the Venetians after 20 years' war.</td>
<td>Jât rebellion near Mathurā.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1670</td>
<td>The poet Mîrzâ 'Alî Muharrîm Šâ'îb (born at Tabrîz) dies at Isfahān.</td>
<td>Princess Raushan Râî Begam commonly known as Raushâ Arâ dies.</td>
<td>Sañã Kadal (bridge) over the Jhelum built.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Lachhman Dās, known as Banda Bairâgī, born at the village Golad (Mendhar Tahsîl, Pûnch State, Kashmir).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1671</td>
<td>Milton's Paradise Regained and Samson Agonistes.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1672</td>
<td>Peter I, called the Great, born in Moscow on May 30th.</td>
<td>Satnâmî insurrection in Mewât.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1673</td>
<td>Death of Molière. the French dramatist. St. Helena was recovered from the Dutch by Captain Munden and was granted to the East India Company by Charles II.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
1674  Death of Milton.  
New Amsterdam finally becomes British and is re-named New York, U.S.A.

The Jāmi‘ or Shāhī Masjid, Lāhore,  
built by Aurangzib.

Sivājī enthroned as independent rājā.

Pondicherry founded by François Martin.

1675  The Royal Observatory at Greenwich.  
Dryden’s Aurangzebe produced.

1676  Death of the Turkish Grand Vazir,  
   Ahmad Kiuprili.  
   Mustāfā Kiuprili, his brother,  
   succeeds in the office.

1676  Leibnitz, the philosopher, visits Spinoza.


1679  Aurangzib attacks Bijāpur.  
Re-imposition of the jizya.

1680  Mullā Muhsin Faiz, poet, philoso-  
   pher, and theologian of Kāshān,  
   dies.

Death of Sivājī.  
Qāzī Mahmūd Bahri, one of the  
earliest poets of Urdu, born in  
Gogi village in the Deccan (ap-  
proximate).

1682  The Rye House Plot.  
Peter the Great of Russia (to  
   January 1725).

Sir John Child, Governor of Bombay.

Continuous rain for one month spoils crops.

Fire in Srīnagar.  
The Jāmi‘ Masjid re-built third  
time.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Date</th>
<th>The World excluding India</th>
<th>India excluding Kashmir</th>
<th>Kashmir</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1683</td>
<td>The last Turkish attack on Vienna defeated by John III of Poland.</td>
<td>Aurangzib drives out the English from Bengal.</td>
<td>Farrukh Siyar born of his Kashmiri mother.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1684</td>
<td>Bishop George Berkeley born.</td>
<td>Fall of Bijapur.</td>
<td>Sunnis and Shi'as quarrel.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1685</td>
<td>Bach and Handel, the musicians, were born.</td>
<td>Fall of Golconda.</td>
<td>Khwāja 'Abdur Rahīm Shaikhmān who died in Srinagar in 1786 was born in Tashqand.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>John Locke's <em>Two Treatises on Government</em>.</td>
<td>Pondicherry was established by the French.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1686</td>
<td>Newton's <em>Principia</em> published.</td>
<td>Bombay was constituted a presidency, and made supreme over all the East India Company's establishments in India.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1687</td>
<td>Deposition of Muhammad IV and accession of Sulaimān II of Turkey.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1689</td>
<td>Treaty of Nerchinsk between Russia and China.</td>
<td>Siraj-ud-Dīn 'Alī Khān Ārzū born. Shāh ‘Abdul Latīf of Bhīt (Hyderabad, Sind), whose poetry is a classic of the Sindi language, was born in 1689, and died in 1752.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Year</td>
<td>Event</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>------</td>
<td>-------</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1690</td>
<td>Presbyterianism established in the national Church of Scotland. Locke's <em>Essay on the Human Understanding</em> published.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1693</td>
<td>Locke's <em>Thoughts on Education</em>. The printing press in New York.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1695</td>
<td>Henry Purcell, the musician, died. Death of La Fontaine, the greatest French poet of the 17th century.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1696</td>
<td>English &quot;Assassination Plot&quot; discovered.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1697</td>
<td>George Sale, the first English translator of the Qur'an, born.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Additional Events:**
- Hifzullah Khan hands over charge to Muzaffar Khan as Subadar of Kashmir.
- Khwaja Nur-ud-Din Isbbari or Ashawari Kashmiri brought the sacred hair of the Prophet from Bijapur. This led to the construction of the Ziyarat (shrine) at Hazrat-bal, Srinagar.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Date</th>
<th>The World excluding India</th>
<th>India excluding Kashmir</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1699</td>
<td>Society for the Promotion of Christian Knowledge founded.</td>
<td>Shams-ud-Din Mirzā Jān-i-Jānān Mazhar, poet of Delhi, born.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1701</td>
<td>War of the Spanish Succession.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1703</td>
<td>Leningrad founded by Peter I, and called St. Petersburg, renamed Petrograd in August 1914, and given its present name on January 26, 1924.</td>
<td>Hassan-ul-Hind Mīr Sayyid Ghulām ʻAlī ʻAzād Bilgrāmī, a well-known author, born.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1704</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1705</td>
<td>Moscow University founded by Peter the Great.</td>
<td>Death of Wali-ullāh Wali Dakhani (1118 A.H.) at Ahmadābād.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1706</td>
<td></td>
<td>Jalāl Khān, Sūbadār of Kashmir.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1707</td>
<td>Russia takes Kamaskatka. Fielding born.</td>
<td>Death of Aurangzib at Ahmadnagar.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1708</td>
<td>Influenza in Europe. Permanent Union of the two English East India Companies.</td>
<td>Gurū Govind Singh who had gone to the Deccan on the invitation, and in the service of Aurangzib died at Nāṇed, Deccan, of wounds inflicted by two Pathāns whose father was killed by the Gurū. Sāhū Rājā of Satārā.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
1709 Russian prisoners first sent to Siberia.  

1710 Anglo-Arabic College, Delhi, founded by Nawwāb Ghāzī-ud-Dīn Khān Fīrūz Jang, Father of Āsaf Jāh I, the founder of the Āsaf Jāhī dynasty of the Deccan.  

1711 Pope’s Essay on Criticism.  
Addison and Steele edit the Spectator.  
David Hume, English philosopher, born.  
Death of Bouceau, the French critic.  
The Father of Russian science as well as the Founder of Russian Literature, Michaeľ Lomonosov, born in the village Denisovka, now Lomonosov, Archangel Gubernia. His death occurred on April 15, 1765.  

1713 Peace of Utrecht.  
Frederick the Great of Prussia born.  

Accession of the Emperor Farrukh Siyar.

1715 The Morea re-taken by the Turks. Death of Louis the Fourteenth of France.

1718 The Battle of Cape Passero in Sicily. Voltaire's tragedy (Edipe.)

1719 Defoe's Robinson Crusoe. The Westminster Hospital founded.

1720 The Duke of Savoy becomes king of Sardinia. Muhammad bin ‘Abdul Wahhab born in Najd.

1721 Peter the Great declared Emperor of Russia.

1722 The Safavi dynasty of Iran collapses. Famine in Isfahan. Ostend East India Company set up.

India excluding Kashmir

Bâlâji Vishwânâth Peshwâ.

Bandâ Bairâgi put to death.

Mirzâ Muhammad Rasti Saudâ, Urdu poet, born at Delhi.

Khwâja Mir Dard, poet of Delhi, born.

Nizâm-ul-Mulk becomes Prime Minister of Delhi. Muhammad Mir Sûs, poet of Delhi, born.

Death of the poet Bedîl in 1133 A.H. The Delhi Mughul ruler re-took Ajmer from the Râthor Râjpûts who had seized it in 1719.

The Shahidganj Mosque, Lâhore, erected.

Kashmîr

Adam Smith, English Economist born.

The South Sea Bubble. German Philosopher, Kant, born at Königsburg in Prussia. Compulsory education of both sexes in Saxony.

Expulsion of Christians from Japan. Behring, a Dane, discovers the Behring Straits. Death of Peter the Great of Russia.

Asaf Jâh Nizâm-ul-Mulk established in the Deccan. Muhammad Taqî Mîr, poet, born.

Düst Muhammad Khân Bârakzaí, an officer of the guard in the service of Aurangzib, after thirty years' labour, made himself independent in Málwa, and founded the State of Bhopâl, died.

Oliver Goldsmith born.

Nâdir Quli aids the deposed Shâh of Iran and defeats the Afghâns.

Field Marshall Alexander Suvorov, a Russian soldier, strategist and tactician, born on November 24.
1731 The first French newspaper Gazette de France published in Paris.

1732 Nādir deposes Tahmāsp, the Shāh of Iran, on the ground of incompetence and sets up his infant son, ‘Abbās III.

1733 Death at Birstal (near Leeds) of Dr. Joseph Priestley who discovered oxygen.

1734 George Sale's English Translation of the Qur'ān appeared.

1735 End of the war between Turkey and Nādir Shāh of Iran.

1736 Ch'ien Lung becomes Chinese Emperor.

1736-7 Nādir proclaimed Shāh of Iran, and lays the foundations of Bushire (now having a population of 18,000) on the Persian Gulf.

Hājī Muhammud Muhsin, the great philanthropist, born at Hugīt, near Calcutta, Bengal.

‘Allāmah Sayyid Murtazā Bilgrāmī, known in Arabia and Egypt as Zubāidi (on account of his long residence in Zubai’d, Yemen) born in 1145 a.h.

Earthquake and Flood.

Mīrzā Muhtasham Khān Fidā, poet, born.

Khwāja Muhammad A'zam Mustaghni Kaul (?) Didamarī wrote his Wāqi'at-i-Kashmir or his History of Kashmir called also the Ta'rikh-i-'A'zamī in Persian.
1738  Nādir Shāh captures Qandahār and Kabul.


1740  'Abdul Wahhāb of Najd commences his Puritan Movement.
      Nādir Shāh conquers Bukhārā and Khiwā.

Leipzig acquires fame as the literary capital of Germany. Voltaire's *Mahomet*.


1745  Jacobite Revolt in England.
      Field Marshal Mikhail Kutusov of Russia, who defeated Napoleon in 1812, was born on September 16th.

Nādir Shāh's sack of Delhi.

Bālājī Rāo Peshwā.

Anwar-ud-Din, Nawwāb of Kar- nātic.

Sa'ādat Khān Nawwāb Vazīr of Oudh.

'Ali Vardī Khān Nawwāb of Bengāl.

Nazīr Akbarābādī born.

Husain Dūst Khān known as Chandā Sāhib captured by the Marathas.

Nānā Farnavis born at Satārā.

Khwāja 'Abdul Karim of Kashmir arrives at Shāhjahanābād (Delhi)

10,000 houses swept away by flood.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Date</th>
<th>The World excluding India</th>
<th>India excluding Kashmir</th>
<th>Kashmir</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1746</td>
<td>The Swiss educator, Pestalozzi, born.</td>
<td>Mrzá Muhammad, subsequently known as Siraj-ud-Daula, was married at Murshidabād, Bengāl.</td>
<td>Death of the Emperor Muhammad Shāh of Delhi.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Francisco Goya, the Spanish painter, born.</td>
<td>Shāh 'Abdul 'Azīz of Delhi born in 1139 A.H.</td>
<td>Accession of the Emperor Ahmad Shāh of Delhi.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1747</td>
<td>On the assassination of Nādir, his cavalry-general, Ahmad Shāh Durrānī, founds the kingdom of modern Afghanistan.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Death of Nizām-ul-Mulk Āsaf Jāh.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1749</td>
<td>Goethe born. A.G. Werner, the geologist, born.</td>
<td></td>
<td>Mir 'Abdullāh Baihaqī, a scholar and poet, born in 1163 A.H.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1750</td>
<td>Voltaire leaves for Berlin on the invitation of Frederick the Great of Prussia.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
1751 The Pennsylvania Hospital founded at Philadelphia, U.S.A.

1752 Madame Frances D'Arblay, better known as Fanny Burney, English novelist and diarist, born.

Ghulam Hamadani Mus-haf, poet of Delhi, born at Amroha, U.P.

Salabat Jang succeeds Muzaffar Jang.

The Sunehri (golden) Masjid of Delhi built by Farid Khan.

Clive's defence of Arcot.

Abu'l Fath, Tipu Sultan, born of Haidar 'Ali and Fatima on Saturday. Named Tipu after the Saint Tipu Mastan Vali.

'Ali Vardi Khan cedes Orissa and pays chauth for Bengal to the Marathas.

Chand Sibheb killed by Tanjoreans.

Ahmad Shah Durrani conquers Kashmir.

End of Mughul rule in the Valley.

Famine due to excessive rain.

Sukh Jiwan Mal, Subadar of Kashmir, a patron of literary men.

1754 Recall of Dupleix to France.

King's College (later, Columbia University) founded at New York, U.S.A.

Ghazi-ud-Din deposes the Emperor Ahmad Shah.

Accession of Alamgir II.

Nawab Shujah-ud-Daulah becomes ruler of Oudh.

Sa'adat Yar Khan Rangin, Urdu poet, born.

Kant's Theory of the Heavens.

Moscow State University founded on the initiative of the Russian scientist, Michael Lomonosov, whose name it bears.
Date | The World excluding Indic | India excluding Kashmir | Kashmir
---|---|---|---
1756 | Mozart, the musician, born. | | 
1756-63 | Seven Years' War between Austria and Prussia and their respective Allies. | | ‘Abdul Wahhāb Shā’iţ begins his versified history of Kashmir (approximate).
1757 | Pitt’s ministry formed in England. | | 
1758 | Noah Webster, the lexicographer, born. | | 
1759 | Canadá lost. Battle of Quebec. | | 
1759-1806 | The British Museum in London and the world’s biggest library established in 1759. | | 
1761 | First Treaty between Turkey and Prussia. Resignation of Pitt. | | 
| | The Battle of Plassey. Conquest of India by the British begins under Clive. Ahmad Shāh Durrānī sacks Delhi. | | 
| | Ghāzī-ud-Dīn murders ‘Ālamgīr II. Forde captures Masulipatam. Shāh ‘Ālam is titular king of Delhi. | | 
1761 Rousseau's famous novel, *La Nouvelle Héloïse*, wherein he illustrates the superiority of feeling to intellect.

J.G. Lehman, a German miner, and one of the founders of the Science of Geology, appointed Professor of Chemistry and Director of Imperial Museum, St. Petersburg (Leningrad).

1762

1762-63 War between England and Spain.

The Spaniards and the French invade Portugal which is saved by the English.


1763 Special professional training required of all German teachers.

1764 Rousseau's *Emile*.

Expulsion of Jesuits from France.

1761 Mir Qāsim becomes Nawwāb of Bengāl.

Nizām 'Ali imprisoned Salābat Jang and invested himself with the Sūbadārship of the Deccan.

The Shahidganj Mosque, Lāhore, seized by Sikhs.

Death of Shāh Wālīullāh, divine of Delhi, born in 1159 A.H.

Haidar 'Ali becomes the ruler of Mysore.

Massacre of Patna.

1764 Battle of Buxar. Shāh 'Ālam accepts English protection.

Sikhs besiege Lāhore and compel Kābuli Mal, the governor of Ahmad Shāh Durrānī, to make over the town and fortress to them.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Date</th>
<th>The World excluding India</th>
<th>India excluding Kashmir</th>
<th>Kashmir</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Death of Mir Ja'far.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Najm-ud-Daula succeeded his father Mir Ja'far as Nawwāb of Bengāl.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1766</td>
<td></td>
<td>Saif-ud-Daula succeeded his brother Najm-ud-Daula as Nawwāb of Bengāl.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1769</td>
<td>Napoleon Bonaparte born.</td>
<td>Hyderābād, the capital of Sind before the advent of British rule, was founded by Ghulām Shāh Kalhora in 1768 on the old Naran-Kot, and named after his pīr Sayyid Haidar 'Alī Shāh.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Steam Engine.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>The Infant School movement begins in France.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>William Smith, called “Strata” Smith, the father of English Geology, born.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1770</td>
<td>Beethoven born.</td>
<td>Famine in Bengāl.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Hegel born.</td>
<td>Mubārak-ud-Daula, the third son of Mir Ja'far, became Nawwāb of Bengāl.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Wordsworth born.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1771</td>
<td>John Hunter's treatise on the teeth published.</td>
<td>Shāh 'Ālam goes to Delhi with the Marathas.</td>
<td>Amīr Sher Jawān, governor of Kashmir.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Anquetil du Perron publishes in French the works of Zoroaster.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
1772  First Partition of Poland.  
Warren Hastings governor of Bengál.
George Hodley publishes the first grammar of Urdu or Hindustání.
'Usmán Marwandi of Írán known as Qalandar Lāl Shāh Bāz died in Sēhwān (Sind).

1773  Medical Society of London founded.
Jesuit order suppressed by Clement XIV.

1773  
Death of Ahmad Shāh Durrānī.
Accession of his son Timūr Shāh who removes the capital from Qandahār to Kābul.
Amīrā Kadal (bridge) over the Jhelum river constructed and named after the Nazīm, Amīr Sher Jawān.

Death of Oliver Goldsmith.  
Warren Hastings becomes governor-general of India.
Rohilla war.
Bogle's mission to Tibet.
Rām Mohan Roy born at Rādhānagar in the District of Hugli, Bengál.

Suppression of the Rohillas.
The Regulating Act passed.
Khwāja Kamāl-ud-Dīn Naqshbandi killed.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Date</th>
<th>The World excluding India</th>
<th>India excluding Kashmir</th>
<th>Kashmir</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1775</td>
<td>Jane Austen born.</td>
<td>Shuja'-ud-Daula becomes Naw-wab Vazir of Oudh.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Immanuel Kant reads a German translation of the works of David Hume.</td>
<td>Case of the Begams of Oudh.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Bahadur Shah II, Zafar, born.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Nand Kumar was arrested under a warrant of the Supreme Court at the suit of Mohan Prashad on a charge of forgery and was tried by Sir Elijah Impey, convicted and sentenced to be hanged.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1776</td>
<td>American War. Declaration of Independence by the United States.</td>
<td>Lord Pigot, who had been governor of Madras, was arrested and imprisoned at St. Thomas Mount where he died in the following year.</td>
<td>Häji Karimdād Khān governor of Kashmir under Afghan rule.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>The first volume of Gibbon’s <em>Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire</em> appears.</td>
<td>Treaty of Purandhar.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Death of David Hume.</td>
<td>Mahān Singh, father of Ranjit Singh, married</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1778</td>
<td>Herbart (German educator) born.</td>
<td>First Vernacular work printed in India, Halhead’s Bengali grammar.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Deaths of Chatham, Linnaeus, Rousseau, and Voltaire.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
1780  The twelfth Earl of Derby founded the famous Derby race at Epsom in England. End of the reign of Maria Theresa.


1782  Independence of the U. S. A. recognized by England. Legislative Independence of Ireland granted. Froöbel (German educator) born.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Date</th>
<th>The World excluding India</th>
<th>India excluding Kashmir</th>
<th>Kashmir</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1785</td>
<td>Cartwright’s power-loom. Webster’s Speller. Cowper’s <em>The Task</em>. John Walter adds to the eight morning papers of London by the issue of the <em>Daily Annual Register</em> which, three years later, became <em>The Times</em>.</td>
<td>Death of Khwāja Mir Dard, Urdu poet, at Delhi, at the age of 66, in 1199 A.H. Mir Ghulām ‘Alī Āzād Bilgrāmī, born in 1704, died. <em>The Siyar-ul-Muta‘akhkhirin</em>, in four volumes, is the history of India, written in Persian in 1780–85 A.C., by Sayyid Ghulām Husain Tabātabāī, a noble of Patna, who resided with his father at the Court of the Nawwābs of Bengāl.</td>
<td>Āzād Khān, Karīm-dād Khān’s son and successor, as Sūbadār, visits the Puri Mahall.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1786</td>
<td>Weber, the musician, born.</td>
<td>Building of the Gōl-ghar, a hundred foot dome-shaped structure on the banks of the Ganges, at Patna, for storing grain in times of scarcity. This old granary was</td>
<td>Mīr Dād Khān, Sūbadār of Kashmir.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
1787 The American Constitutional Convention met at Philadelphia, U. S. A.


1789 The French Revolution commences with the destruction of the Bastille. The French Constituent Assembly met for the first time. George Washington, President of the U.S.A.

Uranium (the metallic element of a hard white metal) essential to the construction of the atomic bomb used against the two cities of Hiroshima and Nagasaki in Japan in the World War II, discovered in 1789 but not isolated until 1840.

used in June 1943 for storing rice and other grain on account of prevailing scarcity.
Lord Cornwallis, governor-general of India.
Sayyid Ahmad Brelvi born in Safar 1201 A.H.=1786 A.D.


Ghulām Qādir Rohilla blinds Shāh ‘Ālam. Scindhia masters Delhi and curbs the Sikhs.
Shaikh Ibrāhīm Zauq, poet, born at Delhi.
Mufti Sadr-ud-Dīn Khān, Sadr-us-Sudūr, born at Delhi.

1789 'Abdur Rahīm Shawkhān Naqshbandī of Tashqand died in Srinagar and is buried in Mahalla Sayyidwārī of the city in Jamāḥī 11, 1200 A.H.

Sir William Jones draws the attention of Orientalists to Mullā Muḥsin Ḥānī’s Dabistān-i-Mazāhib.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Date</th>
<th>The World excluding India</th>
<th>India excluding Kashmir</th>
<th>Kashmir</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1791</td>
<td>Dr. Guillotin invents the guillotine.</td>
<td>The Urdu-Translation of the Qur’ān by Shāh 'Abdul Qādir of Delhi, chronologically entitled Mūzīh-i-Qur’ān, completed.</td>
<td>Parmānand, Kashmirī poet, born at Maṭan.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Boswell's <em>Life of Johnson</em>.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Muhammad bin ‘Alī bin Sanūsī born at Algiers, Africa.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Death of ‘Abdul Wahhāb, founder of the Wahābī Movement.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1792</td>
<td>France became a Republic.</td>
<td>Permanent Settlement of Bengāl.</td>
<td>Zamān Shāh Durrānī ascends the throne as the ruler of Kābul.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Mir Taqī Mīr, Urdu poet, born.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1793</td>
<td>The Second Partition of Poland.</td>
<td>Sir John Shore governor-general.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Louis XVI beheaded.</td>
<td>Mirzā Abū Tālib Khān, of Oudh and Bengal, begins his travels in England, Europe, Asia, Africa, 1793-6, after which he wrote his book of travels in Persian.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Hegel graduates from Tübingen.</td>
<td>Babar ‘Alī Khān (Mubārak-ud-Daula II) succeeded his father as Nawwāb of Bengāl, and reigned till his death in 1810.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Cotton gin invented.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
1794 The Reign of Terror in France. National Normal School in France.

Death of Mādhava Rāo Sindbia.
Mr. Jonathan Duncan, Resident at Benāres, endows the Sanskrit College at Benāres for teaching Hindu law and literature.

Nawwāb Asghar ‘Alī Khān Nasīm, poet, born.

1795 Bonaparte goes to Italy as commander-in-chief.
The Third Partition of Poland.
Keats born.
Carlyle born.

Acquittal of Warren Hastings.
The commercial enterprise of Sir John Shore to capture a free market in Nepāl by means of the embassy of Maulavi ‘Abdul Qādir, son of Wāsīl ‘Alī Khān, Qāzī-u’l-Quzāt of Warren Hastings.

1796 Bonaparte’s successful campaigns in Italy.
England takes Ceylon.
Āghā Muhammad founds the Qājār dynasty of Irān. Teherān made the capital of Irān.


Gilchrist’s Urdu Grammar.

1797 Comte born.
Destruction of the Republic of Venice.

Reign of Fath ‘Alī Shāh Qājār of Irān begins.

Death of Āsaf-ud-Daula of Oudh.
Ranjit Singh poisons his mother on account of her misconduct.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Date</th>
<th>The World excluding India</th>
<th>India excluding Kashmir</th>
<th>Kashmir</th>
</tr>
</thead>
</table>
1801 Union of Great Britain with Ireland.
George Bradshaw, English printer and publisher of Maps and Time Tables, born.
India Office Library, which contains some 2,50,000 printed books and thousands of manuscripts principally relating to the East, founded by the East India Company.

1802 Peace of Amiens (with England, Spain and Holland) signed by the French.
Victor Hugo, French writer, born.

The state of the Nawwâbs of Karnâtik was annexed to British India for their sympathy for Tipû Sultan.
Rise of the Bârakzaîs in Afghânistân.
Mîr Amman Dîhlâvî writes the Bâgh-u-Bahâr.

Ranjît Singh acquires Amritsar.
Kharäk Singh born to Ranjit Singh.
Treaty of Bassîen.
The Daryâ-i-Latâfât (Ocean of Eloquence), first Urdu Grammar, written by Inshâ’ullâh Khan Inshâ’ and Mîrzâ Muhammad Hasan Qatîl.
Mîr Babar ‘Alî Anîs, poet, born at Faizâbâd, United Provinces.
Sharî’atullâh of Farîdpur, Bengâl, the founder of the Farâîzî movement of Eastern Bengâl, performs the Hajj. The Farâîzî Movement was partly religious and partly agrarian.

Quarrel between Shi‘âs and Sunnîs in Srinagar.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Date</th>
<th>The World excluding India</th>
<th>India excluding Kashmir</th>
<th>Kashmir</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1804</td>
<td>France made an Empire; Napoleon proclaimed emperor and crowned by the Pope. Francis II assumes the title of Francis I, Emperor of Austria. Hawthorne born. Benjamin Disraeli, the future Earl of Beaconsfield, born. Birth of Ludwig Feuerbach, a German philosopher, the author of <em>Essence of Christianity</em>—proving that the domination of religion over man had come to an end. Nudael Glinka, founder of the Russian National School of Music, born on June 1st. He died on 15th February, 1857.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
1805 Nelson's victory and death at Trafalgar.
Failure of Lord Lake at Bharatpur. Cornwallis dies.
Qāzī Sanā'ullāh Pānīpātī, the Khalīfa of Mirzā Mazhar Jān-i-Jān and the Pir of Sir Sayyid Ahmad's father, died at Sarhind.

1806 Napoleon overhauls the educational system of France.
Prussia overthrown at Jena.
Francis of Austria drops the title of the Holy Roman Emperor.
John Stuart Mill born in London.
Akbar II is titular king of Delhi.
The Vellore Mutiny.
Hājī Muhammad Muhsin of Hugli, Bengāl, draws up the will by which he dedicates his entire property to charity creating the Muhsin Fund.

1807 Scheme of Indian invasion by Emperors Alexander and Napoleon.
Longfellow, poet, born.
Louis Agassiz, the father of Natural Science in America, born.
Lord Minto, governor-general.
Ranjit Singh begins building the fortress of Govindgarh at Amritsar, apparently for the protection of pilgrims, but really for military purposes.
Death of Mir 'Abdullāh Baihaqī, a Kashmirī poet.

1808 Commencement of the Peninsular War.
Goethe's Faust, Part I.
Poet Mirzā Habībullāh Qāānī born at Shirāz.
British Missions to Kābul, the Punjāb, and Sind.
Death of Muftī Muhammad Sadruddīn Wafāī, the author of the Masnavī, Tuhfat-ul-Ushshāq, Persian MS.
Bārāmūla bridge over the Jhelum river built by 'Atā Muhammad Khān.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Date</th>
<th>The World excluding India</th>
<th>India excluding Kashmir</th>
<th>Kashmir</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1809</td>
<td>Tennyson born.</td>
<td>Govindgarh fortress at Amritsar put into the best state of defence by Ranjit Singh.</td>
<td>First English translation of Muhsin Fānī’s Dabistān, published at Calcutta under the name of Francis Gladwin.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Abraham Lincoln born.</td>
<td></td>
<td>German translation of the Dabistān by Dalberg.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Charles Darwin born.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Edgar Allen Poe born.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Gogol, the Russian writer, born.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Mendelssohn, the musician, born.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>W. E. Gladstone born.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Dalton’s atomic theory.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Divorce of the Emperor and Empress Josephine decreed by the French Senate.</td>
<td>Treaty of Amritsar between the British and Ranjit Singh.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Edward Fitzgerald, translator of the Rubáiyát or Quatrains of ‘Umar Khayyám, was born as Edward Purcell, but his father who had married a Miss Fitzgerald, assumed in 1818 the name of his wife’s family.</td>
<td>“Amritsar is a larger city than Lahore. The wealth of the whole Punjab seems collected in it and the great merchants have made it their abode.”—Hügel’s Travels, page 391.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Shāh Shujāʿ expelled from Afghanistan. He enters India.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>The Prem Sāgar of Lallūjī Lāl appears, having been written in 1803.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Berlin University founded.</td>
<td></td>
<td>Mir ‘Abdullāh Bāihaqī, a great scholar and poet, dies in 1226 A.H.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Cavour born.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1811</td>
<td>Independence established by Paraguay.</td>
<td>Rise of the Pindāris.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Thackeray born.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Vissarion Belincky, Russian revolutionary democrat, educationist, philosopher, and founder of the Russian School of Literary Criticism, born in Swaborg, Finland, on June 13th.

1812 War between England and America commenced.
Napoleon's retreat from Moscow.
Charles Dickens born.
Birth of Alfred Krupp, the founder of the Krupp's Works at Essen, North West Germany.

1813 Commencement of the German War of Independence.
The Order of Iron Cross instituted.

1814 Stephenson's Locomotive.
Charles Reade, writer, born.
The Great Ukranian Poet, Taras Shevchenks Shevchenko, born in March.

Hāji Muhammad Muhsin of Huglī dies.

‘Atā Muhammad Khān fortifies the Pir Pantał route against Sikh invasion.

Ranjit Singh obtains the Kuh-i-Nūr diamond from Shāh Shujā'.
East India Company loses trade monopoly.
The Pir Pagārō or Pagwārō gaddī was established in Sind. The seventh successor, Sayyid Sibghatullāh, was hanged on 20th March, 1943.

Muhammad 'Azīm Khān, governor of Kashmir.

Famine.

Ranjit Singh's attempt to get Kashmir fails.

Shāh ‘Abdul Qādir of Delhi, born in 1167 A.H. = 1753 A.C., died at the age of 63 in 1230 A.H.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Date</th>
<th>The World excluding India</th>
<th>India excluding Kashmir</th>
<th>Kashmir</th>
</tr>
</thead>
</table>
| 1815 | Napoleon abolishes Slave Trade.  
Napoleon defeated at Waterloo.  
Napoleon arrives at St. Helena to remain for life.  
The Congress of Vienna.  
Bismarck born.  
Davy invents the Safety Lamp for coal miners. | Vaikrama Singh, the King of Ceylon, was deposed by the British, and Ceylon became a dependency of the British Crown. | Gangā Prashād’s *Samsār māyā* Mohajāl Sukh-Dokh-Charīa, a work in Kashmiri poetry. |
| 1816 | Hegel finishes his *Logic*.  
The Stethoscope invented.  
Independence established by Buenos Ayres and other Provinces in South America. | Hindu College of Calcutta established by David Hare (a watchmaker of Calcutta) and Rām Mohan Roy. This same college is now the Presidency College of Calcutta. | Sayyid Inshā’ullāh Khan *Inshā’* dies.  
Sir Sayyid Ahmad Khan born at Delhi.  
For diffusion of useful elementary knowledge, the Calcutta School Book Society was founded. |
| 1817 | Introduction of the Modern Printing Press into Iran.  
Hegel’s *Encyclopaedia of the Philosophical Sciences*.  
Karl Marx, the author of *Capital*, born in Trier (Treves), Germany on May 5.  
Brevet Major Sylvanus Thayer took over the superintendence of the United Military Academy | |  

at West Point (situated some 60 miles up the Hudson River from New York City, U. S. A.) and "developed it from a secondary school to an excellent technical college."

1818 Muhammad 'Ali Pāshā of Egypt, under orders from the Sultān of Turkey, recovers the Holy Cities of Mecca and Medina from the Wāhhabīs, and destroys Darāyā, the old capital of Nājd, before Ar Riyāz, which is ten miles from the ruins of the old town.

Ivan Turgenev, the Russian writer, born.

The first Bengālī newspaper entitled the Samāchīr Darpana appeared in Serampore under the editorship of John Clark Marshman. Ajmer is handed over to the British by Sindhia of Gwālīār.

Mill's History of British India.

The city of Ahmadābād is ceded to the British Government.

First cotton mills in India.

A body of officers and citizens start performing the functions of the Municipality at Ahmadābād, which is finally inaugurated in 1834.

The Last Marātha war—Bāji Rāo II deposed.

The Calcutta Journal founded by Mr. Buckingham.

1819

Fath 'Ali Shâh Qâjâr continues his rule over Irân till he dies in 1834.
The First Factory Act passed in England through the efforts of Robert Owen.
Queen Victoria born.
Ruskin born.
Manchester Massacre and Disorders in England.
George III of England dies next year (i.e. 1820).
University of St. Petersburg founded by Alexander I of Russia.
Steamship crosses the Atlantic.
Electro-magnetism.

India excluding Kashmir

The Diocese of Calcutta inaugurated.
Swâmijî Mahârâj, founder of the Râdhâswâmi Sat-sang and Dayâl Bâgh, born at Agra, United Provinces.
Ajmer handed over to the British by Mahârâjâ Sindhia of Gwâlîâr.
Ranjit Singh takes Multân.
Capitulation of Asîrgarh.
Deposition of Râo of Kutch.
British expedition to the Persian Gulf.
Mountstuart Elphinstone, governor of Bombay.
Bahâ'ism in India.
A terrible earthquake separated the Run of Kutch from the peninsula of India and a large portion of dry land was filled with water.
A British battalion, while fighting the Marathas, accidentally discovers the caves of Ajanta in the Hydârâbâd State of the Deccan.

Kashmir

Kashmir taken by Ranjît Singh and annexed to the Punjâb.
Diwân Motî Râm, first Sikh governor of Kashmir.
Cholera.
INDEX

Volume I

CHAPTERS I—VII
[Pages 1 to 341]

[Prepared by Mr. V. R. SASHITAL, M.A. (Bom.), and revised by the Author.]

Abbé Huc, on the death of Dr. William Moorcroft, 208 f.n.
Abdāl Baṭ, Commander of Sayyid Mubārak Khān Baihaqi, 228.
Abdāl Chak, ‘Āli Shāh Chak’s brother, killed by Sayyid Mubārak Khān Baihaqi, 227.
Abdālī, Ahmad Shāh, see Ahmad Shāh Durrānī.
‘Abdullāh, Shaikh Muhammad, a leader of the day, his ancestor accepts Islam at the hands of Mīr ‘Abdur Rashid Baihaqi, 116. See also index to Vol. II.
‘Abdullāh Khān Halokzai, his ambitious designs, 320; quarrel with his Diwān Har Dās, 321; recall, 321; escape to Kashmir, 321; defeat by Sher Muhammad and flight, 322; estimate of his régime, 322.
‘Abdullāh Khān Ishaq Aqāsi, Afghān Governor, 309; defeated by Sukh Jiwan Mal, 310.
‘Abdullāh Khān of Kāshghar, passes through Kashmir, 278; mentioned in Moore’s Lalla Rookh, 278-279.
‘Abdullāh Samargandi, an adherent of Mīrzā Haidar Dūghlāt, killed in the Shi‘īte strife, 207.
‘Abdun Nabi Muhtavī Khān or Mahbūb Khān, Mullā, see Muhtavī Khān.
‘Abdur Rahmān, Sayyid, Bulbul Shāh or Bilāl Shāh, see Bulbul Shāh.
‘Abdur Rahim Safāpurī, Shāh, see Shāh ‘Abdur Rahim.
‘Abdur Rashīd Khān, ruler of Kāshghar, 203.
‘Abdus Samad Ahrārī, Governor of Kashmir under the Mughuls, 291.
Abhimanyu I, Buddhism receives a check in his reign, 43.
Abhimanyu II, infant son of Kshemagupta, 58; regency under Queen Diddā, 58; sets fire to his capital, 105.
Abhinavagupta, Čaiva philosopher, 59; life and writings, 59-60, 70.
Abode of Snow, The, description of Mānasbal 4, f.n. 6.
Abu’l Faiz Faizī, see Faizī.
Abu'l Fazl, praises of Kashmir 1, his Akbar-nāma quoted, 1, f.n. 2; description of Kashmir in the A'īn-i-Akbārī, 5; area of Kamrāz and Marāz, 8; reference to the legends of Nilanāga, 10, f.n. 2; on the roads of Kāshmir, 17, f.n. 2; on the death and burial of Shāh Hamadān, 88; records his meeting with Wāhid Sāfi, 96-97; adds music to Mirzā Haidar’s accomplishments, 201; on Mirzā Haidar’s administration of Kāshmir, 203.

Abu'l Hasan 'Ali Farrukhī, poet, gives expression to Mahmūd’s disappointment at not entering Kāshmir, 59.

Abu'l Hasan Bānde, Khwāja, Afghān Governor Sukh Jīwān’s adviser, 309.

Abu'l Hasan Turbatī, Khwāja, father of Nawwāb Zafar Khān Aḥsan, Governor of Kāshmir under Shāh Jahān, 260, 271.

Abu'l Maʿālī, Sayyid, see Bāihaqī.

Abu'l Maʿālī, Shāh, quarrels with Bāirām, 242.

Abu'l Mughīth al-Husain Mānsūr al-Hallāj, Muslim mystic, his saying quoted for similarity of Kāshmir Čaitism with Islam, 72.

Abu'l Qāsīm Khān Sāfī, a Mughul naʾīb, 309.

Abū Saʿīd Mīrzā, King of Kāshghar, deputes Mirzā Haidar Dāghlāt for the invasion of Kāshmir, 197.

Aborigines, as first settlers in the Kāshmir Valley, 15.

Achabal, gushing spring of, 4; village, 4; f.n. 2.

Achala, son of Rāwanchandra, commander under Sultan Shihāb-ud-Dīn, 137; invasion of Kāshmir, 128; repulsed by Shāh Mīr, 129.

Apxa, rules over Kāshmir, 37-39; extent of his dominion, 37; religious toleration, 37; Kāihaqa’s description of, 38; rules Kāshmir through deputy, 38; builds original town of Srinagar, 38; spread of Buddhism, 38.

Adam Khān, son of Sultan Zain-ul-Ābidīn or Bād Shāh by his second wife, 178; disliked by his father, 179; military exploits, 179-80; maladministration of Kāmrāj, 180; stands by his father against Hājī Khān, 180; designs on his father’s life, 183; attempts to secure the throne fail, 183; flight to Hindūstān, 183; conquest of Lādākh, 179-80; raises the standard of revolt against his father, 180; defeat and flight, 180-1; invited by nobles, 181; intrigues for throne, 181; reduces the fort at Sopār in Kāmrāj, 180.

Administratīon, pre-Islamic under Jalaūka, 39; main state officials, 40; correspond to Tīrthas, 40 f.n.; under Muktāpīda, 53; under Sultan Shama-ud-Dīn I, 133; under Sultan ‘Alā’-ud-Dīn, 135; under Sultan Shihāb-ud-Dīn, 139; Islamic, under Sultan Sīkandar, 144-147; under Zain-ul-Ābidīn, 174-75; under Sultan Hasān Shāh, 185, 186, 187; under Akbar, 247-48, 250-51; under Jahangīr, 263; under Aurangzīb ‘Ālamgīr, 275-76.

Affarwat, hill, 4; above Gulmarg, 4 f. n. 8.

Afghān, Jewish admixture in the blood of, 17; rule over Kāshmir, 297-341; Ahmad Shāh Durrānī, 297-99; Tīmūr Shāh, 300; Zamān Shāh, 300-3; Shujā’-ul-Mulk, 304-8; bad rule under the Governors, 308-23; clash with Sikhe, 329-338; end of—rule, 337-38.
Afghānistān, Kashmir annexed to, at the time of Forster's visit, 14; conquered by Kadphises I, 41; comes under Hun rule during Tora-māna's reign, 44; conquered by Shihāb-ud-Dīn, 138; condition of, 138; becomes independent under Ahmad Shāh Durrānī, 138; struggle for the throne of—under the Durrānīs, 297-341; sovereignty over Kashmir of, 297-338.

Āftāh-i-Pinhami, name of a descendant of Shāh Hamadān buried at Kolāb, 116d.

Afzal Bukhārī, Maulānā Muḥammad, see Muḥammad Afzal of Bukhārā.

Afzal Husain, Miyn, draws attention to the statement about the death of Kud Māl Dōd by swallowing a piece of diamond, 333 f.n. 2.

Āghā Muḥammad Khān, founder of the Kājār Dynasty of Iran, demands Balk from Zamān Shāh, 301.

Agriculture, 22; areas reclaimed for cultivation under Muktāpīḍa, 53; conditions during the last years of Kārkota dynasty, 55; Kashmir's waterlogged valley drained under Avantivarman, 55; extensive drainage and irrigation works carried out, 55-56; irrigation under Zain-ul-'Ābidīn, 175; reforms of Zain-ul-'Ābidīn, 175.

Ahkām-i-‘Alamjīri, The, compiled by Mīr ‘Inayatullāh Khān, Governor of Kashmir, 290.

Ahmad Aswad, Malik, commander of forces, appointed prime minister by Sultān Hasan Shāh, 185; increasing jealousy between Sayyid Hasan Bāihaqī and—, 186; tragio end, 186-7.

Ahmad Shāh Durrānī, annexes Kashmir at the time of Forster's visit, 14; invited by nobles to annex Kashmir, 293; Kashmir passes on to the Afghāns under—, 294; early career of, 298; king of Afghānistān, 299; invasion of India, 299; death, 299; meets out punishment to Sukh Jiwan Mal, 311; offers governorship of Kashmir to Mughlānī Begam, 312; reassertion of sovereignty over Kashmir by, 313.

Ahmad Shāh Wāli, of the Deccan, contemporary of Sultān Zain-ul-'Ābidīn, 171.

Ahrārī, ‘Abdus Samād Khān, who defeated Banda Bāirāgī, deputed to Kashmir to punish Mullā Sharaf-ud-Dīn, 291, 292. See also ‘Abdus Samād.

Ahsan, Zafar Khān, Governor of Kashmir under the Mughuls, 3. Also see under Zafar Khān.

Ahsanullāh Khān Ahsan, see Ahsan above.

Ahwat, The, Arabic work containing the tenets of the Nūr Bakhshī sect, 109; Sir Wolsely Haig's views on the doctrines in the—, 109 f.n. 5.

Aiba Chak, referred to by Jalāngīr in his Kishthwār campaign, 264.

Ā‘īn-i-Akbārī, The, on the Sarkār of Swāt, 87 f.n. 1; on Fakhli, 87 f.n. 1; 238; on where Shāh Hamadān died, 88; on the erroneous inclusion of Kābul and Qandahār in Kashmir in the reign of Akbar, 251.

Akbar, calls Kashmir Bāgh-i-Khās, 8; visit of Jerome Xavier to Kashmir under—, 14; orders revision of the Bahr-ul-Asmār, 65; compared with Zain-ul-'Ābidīn, 175-79; extent of empire, 175; religious tolerance, 176; defects and idiosyncrasies, 176-77; family lives, 177-8; general habits, 179; sends embassy to Husain Shāh Chak, 223; Hájī Ganālī's
dsputation to—, 223; Mirzā Muqīm executed for bigotry by, 223; Husain Shāh Chak insulted by, 223; his ambassadors at the court of 'Ali Shāh Chak, 226; his suzerainty acknowledged by 'Ali Shāh Chak, 226; Yūsuf Shāh Chak seeks help from, 229; Kashmir campaign, 231-33; refuses to ratify the treaty between Yūsuf Shāh and Rāja Bhagavān Dās, 233; invades Kashmir to assist Sunnis, 234; interference in Kashmir, 241; dispatches army to put down rebellion, 242-43; treatment of Yūsuf Shāh criticized, 244; administration of Kashmir, 247-48, 250-51; rebellion crushed, 247-48; builds Nāgar-nagar, 248; empire route constructed, 251. See also index to Vol. II.


Akbaras, wrestling pits, 27.

Akhnūr, Sukh Jiwan Mal, conquers, 310; situation on the Chināb of, 310, f.n. 4.

Akhyār-ud-Dīn, tomb in Kishtwār, 115; life and work, 116.

'Alamgir, Aurangzīb, see Aurangzīb.

'Alamgir II, father of Zuhra Begam, 299; confers the title of Rāja on Sukh Jiwan Mal, 311.

'Ālā'-ud-Dīn Khān 'Alāi, Nawwāb Mirzā of Lohārā, on Munshi Mohan Lāl, 340.

'Ālā'-ud-Dīn Simnānī, Sayyid, teaches Sūfī mysticism to Shāh Hamadān, 85.

'Ālā'-ud-Dīn, Sultān, quarrels with and defeats Sultān Jamshid, 134; accession, 134; administration, 135; reforms, 135; public works, 135; builds 'Ālā'-ud-dīnpōr, 135; death and burial at 'Ālā'-ud-dīnpōr, 135.

Al-Bīrūnī, accompanies Mahmūd's expedition against Kashmir, 16; collects information on Kashmir, 17; views on defence measures in Kashmir quoted, 17.

Aldous Huxley, see Huxley.

Alexander the Great, no reference to Kashmir in the accounts of his expedition, 13.

'Allābhād Sarāi, 44 and f.n. 3.

'All Beg, Mirzā Kāmrān's general, penetrates within sight of Srinagar, 196.

Al-Idrīṣī, Muslim geographer, 18.

'All Beg, Mughul noble, officer of the Mughul army aiding Abdāl Māgre, 195; raised by Nāzūk Shāh as Chief Minister, 195.

'All Bukhārī, Mir, Qāzī, see Mir 'All Bukhārī.


'Ali Hamadānī, Mir Sayyid, known as Shāh Hamadān, 84; Sir Muhammad Iqbal's invocation to, 84; date of birth, 85; parentage, 85; boyhood and education 85; his spiritual guides, 85; travels, 86; leaves for Kashmir owing to the rise of Timūr, 86, 116c; peace mission on the battle-field of Ohind, 86; pilgrimage to Mecca, 86; ill-health and death, 87; various accounts of his burial, 88; his mausoleum at Khatlān, now
INDEX—Vol. I 87

called Kolâb, Appendix to Chapter III, pp. 116 a, b, c, d; belonged to the Kubrawî order of Sûfis, 89; missionary activities, 89; prominent co-workers, 89; trial of supernatural powers, 89; Sultân Qutb-ud-Din acknowledges greatness of, 89-90; literary works—The Zakhira- ul-Mulâk, 89; other works, 90-91; his poetry—ghazals, religious and mystical poems, 91; summing up of his life by Sir M. Iqbal, 91; further notices of his life and work, 92; his Khângâh rebuilt during Sultân Hasan Shâh’s reign, 186; his gift of a cap to Sultân Qutb-ud-Din, 193 and 194; f.n. 1; his Avrâd-i-Sharîf, 116c.

‘Ali Koka, appointed prime minister by Husain Shâh Chak, 222.

‘Ali Malik Kashmirî, noted by Jahângîr in his dispatch on the conquest of Kishwâr, 264.

‘Ali Mardân Khân, governor of Kashmir under the Mughuls, 272.

‘Ali Shâh Chak, intrigues for succession, 224; Husain Shâh abdicates in his favour, 224; ascends throne as ‘Ali Shâh, 225; just and wise rule, 225; tolerance to Sunnis, 225; Iranian impostor found out, 225; puts an end to feuds among nobles, 225; rise of the Baihaqîs, 225-226; ministry and wise administration of Seyyid Muhammad Mubârak Baihaqî, prime minister at the court of, 226; marriage alliance, 226; last Shâh Mîr’s invasion repulsed, 226; famine, 226; accidental death, 227.

‘Ali Shâh, Sultân, announced successor by Sultân Sikandar at his deathbed, 147; proceeds to Mecca, 155; entrusts kingdom to Shâhi Khân, 155; persuaded to return by the Jammu ruler, 155; advance against and defeat of Shâhi Khân, 155; accession, 155; fratricidal contest, 155-56; defeat and death, 156; loss of Little Tibet, 156-57.

Al-Kâmil al-Mubarrad, reference from, 263.

‘Allâfî or ‘Allânî, Muhammad, see Muhammad ‘Allâfî.

Allâhâbâd, Sir Tej Bahâdur Sâprü’s family moves from Delhi to, 173; Nehru family of, 289.

‘Allânî, see Muhammad ‘Allâfî.

Alluvial deposits in the Kashmir basin, 9; geologist’s evidence about, 11.

Almâs, Shams-ud-Din, one of the divines who tried Yusuf Mau’dâv, 222; executed by Fath Khân, 223.

Al-Mas’ûdî, Muslim geographer, 18.

Alpine, Kashmir mountain surroundings similar to, 2.

Alwar State, area compared to that of Kashmir, 8.

Ameer Ali, Syed, see Syed Ameer Ali.

American visitor and the climate of Kashmir, 7.

Amîra Kadal, the city vendor around, 21; bridge built by Amîr Muhammad Khân, Afghan Governor, 314.

Amîr-i-Dar, Naurûz appointed to the office of, 185.

Amîr-i-Kabir’s Letters, 90; see ‘Ali Hamadânî.

Amîr Muhammad, Mahmûd of Ghazna’s son, 59.

Amîr Muhammad Khân Jawân Sher, Afghan ruler, see Jawân Sher.

Amîr-ul-Muminîn, title of Mahmûd of Ghazna, adapted to Hamîrâ by Kâlahâpa, 59.
Amir-ul-Umarā, Hasan Khān appointed by Sultan Haidar Shāh, 184.

Anandavardhana, at the court of Jayāpiḍa and Avantivarman, 56; the author of the Dhvanyāloka, 56.

Anantnāg (Islāmābād), district of Jammu and Kashmir, also a tahsil of the same district, 7.

Andarkhā, fort of, 130; Kotā Rānī removes the court to, 130; history and description of, 130 f.m. 1; invested by Shāh Mir, 131; tomb of Sultan Šams-ud-Dīn I at, 133; Mirzā Haidar's wife and sister resided at, 207.

Andijān, former capital of Farghāna, Mirzā Haidar leaves Bābur to go to, 201.

Animals of Kashmir like the dog, the bear, the wolf, etc., 21.

Anschach, identifies Janḍiāla with Çākala, 44.

'Aqil Khān, his couplet on Kashmir quoted, 274.

Aq-Quyunlīs, of Āzarbāijān, contemporaries of Sultan Zain-ul-ʿAbidin, 173.

Arabic, preserved in Bukhārā, 18.

Arabs, Bambas claim descent from, 18; invasion of the Indus Valley by, at times close to Kashmir, 18; inhabitants of the U.S.S.R., 18-19; advance from Sind, 52; Muhammad-bin-Qāsim in Sind, 75; at Multān, 78; advances towards Kashmir, 76; Muhammad 'Allāfī, an Arab mercenary dismissed by Dāhir, 76; Lalitāditya appeals to the Chinese Emperor against, 52, 77; victory over the Chinese, 77.

Architecture and sculpture, in stone, introduced by Aqokha, 38; of Viṣṇu temple at Tāpār, 51 note; of Mārthaḍa temple typically Kashmirian, influence of Gandhāra, 53; ruins at Avantipōr, 56; golden period in the development of Brāhmanical style under Lalitāditya and Avantivarman, 56; under Sultan Sikandar, 146-47; under Sultan Zain-ul-ʿAbidin, 158-161; buildings and towns, 158; palaces and mosques, 158-161.

Arhōm, Stone Age relics found at, 15.

Arnold, Sir Thomas, his Caliphate quoted regarding the Sultanate, 135; his Preaching of Islam quoted in connexion with the spread of Islam in Kashmir, 81; 115.

Arts and Crafts, progress of—under Sultan Zain-ul-ʿAbidin, 161-62. Also see Chapter IX, Volume II.

Atūr Singh, Sardār, throws away idols from the Golden Temple, Amritsar, 153.

Ārya Samājīs, discard idolatry, 153.

Āryans, invasion of India, 15; large element in the people of Kashmir, 19; Nāga inhabitants conquered by, 50 note; "Āryane," Germans, forbidden to have dealings with Jews, 150.

Āṣaf Khān, brother of Nār Jahān, stays next to her in Kashmir, 260.

Ashraf-ul-Wuzarā, title first of Hāji Jamāl Khān, and later of Shāh Wali Khān Bāmīzāī, 299.
INDEX—Vol. I

Ašāl, Mirzā Haidar Dāghlāt styles the first part of the Ta’rikh-i-Rashīdī as the—, 203.

Assessment, under Rāmadeva and his successors, 37; under Shihāb-ud-Dīn, 139; under Zain-ul-Ābidīn, 170-175.

‘Ātā Muhammad Khān, Afghān governor, strikes coins in the name of Shaikh Nār-ud-Dīn, 101; acting governor, 321; Nā’īb under Hāfiz Shīr Muhammad Khān, 322; benevolent rule, 322-23; declares independence and defeats Shujā’-ul-Mulk’s army, 323.

Atharva Veda, The, Carkoṭa, poisonous snake mentioned in, 49 note on Kārkota, Yōdhabhaṭṭa studies, 167; Shankar Pāndurang Pandit relies on Kashmirī manuscript of Yōdhabhaṭṭa for his edition of, 167.

Auji, poet, 273.

Aurangzīb ‘Ālamgīr, ascends throne of Delhi, 14; allowance to Bernier granted, 14; bigotry compared to Sikandar’s, 103; letter to rebel son compared to the couplet recited by Zain-ul-Ābidīn to Ādam Khān, 183; visits Kashmir, 273; unhappy experiences, 273-74; restored to health, 274; administration, 275-76; Qalmaq invasion of Tibet in his time, 277; death, 285-86; Lalla Rookh fastened on—as his daughter, 280.

Avantipura, former name for Pulwāma, 7; commemorating the name of Avantivarman, 56; ruins at, 56; location and temple ruins at, 56, f.n. 2; Sultān Jamshīd defeated at, 134.

Avanti Swāmin, temple ruin at Vāntīpūr, dedicated to Vishnu, 56.

Avantivarman, condition of Kashmir at the accession of, 55; internal consolidation and development of the country under, 55-56; as a builder, 55-56; revival of Sanskrit under, 56-57.


Āzād Khān, governor of Kashmir at the time of Forster’s visit, 14; succeeds his father Hājī Karīmlād Khān, 317, strong rule, 317; attempts at independence, 317-18; famine, 318; defeat and death, 318.

Āzādpur, on the Delhi-Pānīpat Road, Munshi Mohan Lāl builds the Lāl Bāgh at, 340.

A’zām, Didamāri Kaul Mūstaghnī, Khwāja Muhammad, historian and poet, his chronogram on Bulbul Shāh, 83; on the ruins of Rūschāna’s mosque, 126; on Shāh Mīr’s dates, 132; quotes couplets of Husain Shāh Chak, 224. For his life, see pages 373-4, Chapter VIII, Volume II; addition of Kaul by Rico mystifying, see Bibliography, p. xiii.

Āzarbājān, Zain-ul-Ābidīn sends ambassador to, 171, description of 171, f.n. 1; contemporaries of Zain-ul-Ābidīn among Qara-Quyunlus, the Turkmān clan, 172; among Aq-Quyunlus of, 172.

‘Āzīm Khān, Sardār-Muhammad, governor of Kashmir under the Afghāns, 328, 329; his crushing defeat of Rānjit Singh in 1814, 329-332; was sent for by his elder brother Vāzīr Fath Khān on being blinded, 333; handed over charge of governorship to his younger brother, Jabbār Khān, 333, 334.

‘Az Khān’s misstatement to Rānjit Singh, 331, 336.
Bābur, Mughul emperor sends his army to invade Kashmir, 195; Mirzā Haidar Dughlāt related to, 200; Mirzā Haidar treated with consideration by, 201; on Mirzā Haidar’s accomplishments, 201; his Memoirs compared to Mirzā Haidar’s Ta’rikh-i-Rashidi, 203-4.

Bāchh Bāt, priestly class of Brāhmans come into being during the reign of Sultan Zain-ul-Ābidin, 173.

Bactria, Greek Kingdom overrun by Yueh-chi clan, 41.

Badakhshān, Bambas stated to have migrated to, 18; subdued by Shihāb-ud-Dīn, 138; Mirzā Haidar marches by, 202.

Badakhsbān, Bambas stated to have migrated to, 18; subdued by Shihāb-ud-Dīn, 138; Mirzā Haidar marches by, 202.

Badāoni, or Bidayīni, Mulla ‘Abdul Qadir, account of Akbar’s appreciation of Kashmir in The Muntakhab-ul-Tawārikh, 8; revises and completes Persian translation of the Rājataranginī under Akbar’s orders, 65, 163; rewrites the Persian translation of The History of Kashmir by Mulla Shāh Muhammed of Shāhābad, 163.

Baḍgām, tahsil of Barāmula district, 7.

Badiʿ-ud-Dīn or Gauhar Shāh or Bohur Shih Chok, which last see. Baḍ Khū, a well, according to a report known after Zain-ul-Ābidin, 170. Baḍ Shāh, see Zain-ul-Ābidin, as this is the popular name of this Sultan. Badshāh, title adopted by the Chak Dynasty, 136, 218.


Bāhā-ud-Dīn Ganj Bakhsh, Shaikh, prominent saint at the time of Zain-ul-Ābidin, 166; Baihaqī Begum buried in the ziyārat of, 178.


Bahrām Khān, youngest son of Zain-ul-Ābidin by his second wife, 178; appointed minister by Sultan Haidar Shāh, 184; left in complete charge of administration, 184; seeks safety in exile, 185; bid for the throne, 186; flight and death, 186.

Bahr-ul-Asmār, The, or The Sea of Tales, translation of a portion of the Rājataranginī into Persian, 163; revised and completed by Badāoni, 65, 163.

Baihaqī Begum, wife of Baḍ Shāh, 178; sells ornament to erect tomb of Shaikh Bahā-ud-Dīn Ganj Bakhsh, 166.

Baihaqīs, ancestry of, and migration into, Kashmir, 225.

Baihaqī, Sayyid Abu’l Ma‘āli, second son of Sayyid Muḥārak Khān Baihaqī, heads rebellion against Mughuls, 242; serves under Rājā Mān Singh, receives mansāb from Jahāngīr, 242; the anonymous author of the Bahāristān-i-Shāhi a dependant of—, 242.
Baihaqi, Sayyid Hasan, marries Baihaqi Begam’s daughter, 178; Hayāt Khātūn, Sultān Hasan Shāh’s beloved queen, daughter of, 185; appointed minister by Sultān Hasan Shāh, 185; increased rivalry between Malik Ahmad and —, 186; sends expedition to Baltistān and Ladhāk, 187; sets up Prince Muhammad Shāh contrary to Sultān Hasan Shāh’s last instructions, 187-188; regency, 188.

Baihaqi, Sayyid Ibrāhīm, seeks safety with Muhammad Shāh, 193; aids Kājī Chak to regain power, 199; captured by Daulat Chak, 209; released and made councillor by Daulat Chak, 210; aids Ghāzi Chak against the Mughul invader Abu’l Ma‘ālī, 220.

Baihaqi, Sayyid Mubārak, becomes prime minister, 225; wise administration, 225-226; resigns his post under Yusuf Shāh Chak, 227; leads nobles and defeats Yusuf Shāh Chak, 227; accession as ruler and short régime, 228; abdication, 228; marriage alliance with Yusuf Shāh, 229.

Baihaqi, Sayyid Muhammad, Kāndhāmī, 178; his daughter Baihaqi Begam married to Zain-ul-‘Abidin, 178; employs Shams-ud-Din Chak, 189; clash with the Chaks, 190; death, 191; intrigue with the deposed kings Muhammad Shāh and Fath Shāh, 189; defeat of Kājī Chak and Shams Chak, 189-190; Muhammad Shāh regains throne with the help of —, 190; banishes Mir Shams-ud-Din ‘Irāqī to counteract growing Chak power, 190; death on the battle-field of Khāmpōr, 190.

Baird, Dr. Irvine, and Dr. J. C. Batt, expedition to Himalayan region of, 17-18.

Bāj and Tamgha taxes, road dues or duties, remitted by Sultān Sikandar, 145.

Bālāditya, of Magadhā, leader of confederacy against Mihirakula, 44.

Bālā Hisār, fort, of Kābul, 304; fort of Peshāwar, 305.

Balkhī, Sayyid Muhammad ‘Alī, see Muhammad ‘Alī Balkhī.

Baltistān, or Little Tibet, invaded by Mirzā Haidar Dughlāt, 201; geographical description of, 219.

Bambas, come to Kashmir with Dulcha, 18; classed as Rājputs, 18, f. n. 2.

Bāmī, third son of Popal, 298.

Bāmīzais, descended from Bāmī, 298; Afghān vizārat vested in, 298.

Bām-ud-Dīn, Bābā, disciple of Shaikh Nūr-ud-Dīn, 102, originally Bhīma Sādhi (Cāhi), a Hindu, converted to Islam, 102.

Bandīpōr, 4 f. n.

Banī, petty trader, 21.

Banā Umayyā, Bambas claim descent from, 18 and f. n. 2.

Bāqī, Mullā, an adherent of Mirzā Haidar Dughlāt, killed in the Shi‘ite strife, 207.

Baqqāl, Khwāja Fath, see Fath Chak.

Bārak, one of the four sons of Abdāl, 298.

Bārakzais, descended from Bārak, 298, 301, 303.
Bārāmūla, a district of Jammu and Kashmir, and tahsil of the same district, 7; modern name for Vārāhāmūla, 10; location, altitude, population, 10 f.n. 1; gorge, deepened to drain off the lake, 11; Kistwār valley resembles, 67; Ḩāfī Ḩān travels at, 180; 43, 55, 145, 207. See also Varāhāmūla.

Baso, Rājā, referred to in Jahāngīr’s dispatch, 265.

Bastar State, in Central Provinces, ruled by a Nāga dynasty, 49.

Basu, Major D. B., on Pandit Mohan Lāl alias Āghā Ḥasan Jān, 341.

Bāta, Kashmirī form of Bhaṭṭa, a Brāhman or Kashmirī Pandit, 70. See also Bhāṭṭa.

Batot referred to about the Kashmirī-speaking area, 7.

Batt, Dr. Jill Cossley, expedition to the Himalayan region, 17-18.

Bazāz, Pandit, see Frēm Nāth Bazāz.

Begam Sāhiba, Jahān Rāi or Ārā Begam known as, 4 f.n. 2.

Bēgār, the system under which cultivators lived, 29.

Benāres, extent of Kadphises II’s kingdom to, 41.

Bengāl, Nasīr-ud-Dīn Maḥmūd Shāh of, a contemporary of Zain-ul-‘Abīdīn, 171.

Bernier, Dr. Francis, statement on Jahāngīr’s view of Kashmir in his Travels, 8 and f.n. 2; arrival at Delhi, secures monthly allowance from the State Charity Fund, 14; on the Kashmiris’ resemblance to the Jews, 16; on the people of Kashmir, 21; engaged in translating the Rājarangī into French, 164 ; 273.

Beveridge, Sir W.H., quoted in connexion with espionage in Kashmir, 27.

Beveridge, H., translator of the Akbar-nāma, his estimate of Akbar, 176; on Akbar’s cruelty, 177.

Bhagwān Dās, Rājā, overcomes Kashmir, 261.

Bhandārkār, Sir R.G., on the authorship of the Spandaçāstra school of Kashmir Čaivism, 71; on the two systems of Čaivism in Kashmir, 72.

Bhaṭṭa Avatāra, author of the Jaina Vilāsa, a scholar of the time of Zain-ul-‘Abīdīn, 168.

Bhaṭṭa, Brāhman or Pandit, derivation of, from the Samskṛt word bhātar, 70.

Bhavabhūti, poet of Vidarbha or Berār, 52.

Bhīkṣhapa Bhaṭṭa, appointed chief minister by Koṭā Rānī, 128, 130; looks after Bola Ratan, Koṭā Rānī’s child by Udyanadeva, 128; killed by Shāh Mīr by stratagem, 131.

Bhera, Khushḥāb, in the Punjāb, referred to as the original place of Sukh Jiwan Māl’s family, 311.

Bhimbar, political power of Kashmir during the rule of Durlabhāvardhāna extends to, 51, 263.

Bhopāl, area compared to that of the Kashmir Valley, 8.

Bhoṭṭsländ, or Western Tibet, added by Zain-ul-‘Abīdīn to his dominion, 170; prisoners from—liberated by Sultān Ḩasan Shāh, 185.

Bhūlābās pass, referred to by Jahāngīr, 232; see also other names of the pass, 231.

Bhāp Dei, sister of Kirat Singh, married to Farrukh Siyar, 115.
Biblical type, Kashmir peasant referred to as, 16.
Bigotry, in Kashmir under Sultān Sikandar examined, 103; before the time of Sikandar, during Hindu rulers' days, 104-106.
Bilāl, see Bulbul Shāh.
Bilhafla, parentage, education, and travel, 61; romance with the princess of Kalyānā in the Deccan, 61; his works, 61; appreciation of his poetry, 61.
Bira Khān Kakar, father of Bahādur Khān, 316.
Birbal Dar, Pandit, revenue secretary of 'Azim Khān, 332, 333, 334.
Birbal Kāchur, Pandit, historian, 55 f.n. 1; 132 n; date of Shāh Mir's accession according to, 132.
Birbal, Rāja, his invasion of Kashmir, 232; Akbar's great affection for, 232-33; death, 232.
Biru, west of Srinagar, a village, Shaikh Hamza was deported to by Ghāzī Shāh Chak, 113; L'āl Khān Khatak retires to the fort at, 313.
Birūnī, Al, see under Al-Birūnī.
Bodhieatva, NBgfirjuna, 42. See Niigirjuna.
B(imbur, King, Lāla'e lover in popular love-story, 36.
Bosworth Field, Richard III's crown made over to Henry Earl of Richmond at, 212.
Brahmā, Kāyapa grandson of, 9; one of the Hindu Triad appearing in aid of Kāyapa, 10.
Brāhman, aged, thrown into a lake by demons, seeks audience of King Nila Nāga and receives the Nīlamata-Purāṇa, 11.
Brāhmānas, rulers of Kashmir, 35; kingdoms founded, 35 f.n.; killed by Jayāpiḍa to avenge his queen, 55, 105; contributions to literature, 60-61; insulted and plundered by Rājadiya, 66, 106; cultural contribution summarized, 70-71; official class in charge of administration, 77-8; persecuted under various Hindu rulers, 105-6; give undertaking to Zain-ul-'Abidīn not to contravene their sacred books, 173; Kārkun and Bāchh Bāṭ class of, 173; recall of—under Zain-ul-'Abidīn, 173. See also Brāhmanism.
Brāhmanism, Aśoka breaks through the fetters of, 38; revival under Gonanda III, 43; favoured by Mihirakula, 44; clash with Buddhism, 69.
Brahmo Samājīs, discard idolatry, 153.
Buddha, influence of the cult of, on the character of the Kashmiri, 19, 38; Zain-ul-'Abidīn rescues the golden image of, 170.
Buddhism, spread under Aśoka, 38; under Jalaūka, 38 f.n. 1, 39; Kapīshha's faith in, 41; Third Council held in Kashmir, 42; Nāgārjuna and the Mahāyāna system, 42-43; reaction against, and the burning of the vihīras under Nara, 43; hated by Mihirakula, 44; development in Kashmir, 51; clash with Brāhmanism, 69; conversion of Buddhist Dard tribes to Islam, 77; paves the way for mysticism, 94.
Buddhists, number in the population of the Kashmir Valley, 8; influence, 38, and f.n. 1; opposed by Jalaūka but finally friendly to, 39; hated by Mihirakula, 44. See also Buddhism above.
Budhagira, edifice built by Sultan 'Alā'-ud-Dīn, 135; a mahalla of Srinagar, 135.
Budil (Budhil), people of, in the Kashmir army, 137; village and pass, 180 f.n. 3.
Bukhārā, district, Arabs continuous population in, 18.
Bulbul Lānkār, place for converts to Islam, 83; built after the conversion of Rīfchana and his nobles, 83, 125, 126.
Bulbul Shāh, Sayyid 'Abd-rr Rahmān, converts Rīfchana, 81-83; visits Kashmir, 82; his original name, 82; his spiritual guide, 82; Mullā Ahmad his lieutenant, 83; Rīfchana's followers converted by, 83; Bulbul Lānkār, a place of gathering of the followers of, 83; his death, 83; mass conversions by, 94.
Bōliyāsā, old Bōlyāsaka, now Būyār, pass, 231.
Burdawān, in Bengal where Yūsuf Shāh Chak returned the attack of Sher Afgān Khān, 233.
Burjī Mamlāk of Egypt, Zain-ul-‘Abidin sends ambassador to, 171; contemporaries of Zain-ul-‘Abidin, 172.
Burrard, S. G. and H. H. Hayden, discussion of the alluvial deposit of the Kashmir Valley, referred to from A Sketch of the Geography and Geology of the Himalaya Mountains and Tibet, 11-12
Butshikān iconoclast, Sikandar acquires wrongly the surname of, 148, 105; Sir Aurel Stein misspells it as Butshikās, 148.

Cāhīs of Udebhānde, Queen Diddī belonged to, 58 and f.n. 3.
Cākala, in the Pjnjāb, identified with Sīlākōt, 44; capital of Mihirakula, 44. See also Chakla.
Cāktī, manifestation of Čiva, 9; also named Pārvatī, 9.
Cāktī Satī, taking shape of a lake, 9.
Čakuntalā, The, contains evidence to presume that Kālidās was a native of Kashmir, according to Pandit Lachhmidhar, 46; allegory of the tenets of Pratyabhijñā philosophy.
Čaivaism, Kālidās's personal religion, 46; based on the doctrine of Pratyabhijñā philosophy, 46-47; in Kashmir, 71-72; Rīfchana's initiation into—declined, 133.
Čaliphathe, The, quoted, 135. See Arnold.
Cambridge History of India, The, on Shāh Mīr's wise use of power, 133; on Shihāb-ud-Dīn's defeat of the Jām of Sind, 138; on Hasan Khān's raids into the Pjnjāb, 184; views on Yūsuf Shāh Chak regaining his throne, 232; on 'Ināyatullāh, 288 f.n. 2.
Čāmkārapura, built by Čāmkāravaranman, 57
Čāmkāravaranman, oppressive rule of, 57; plunders town and temple of Parihāsparpura, 57, 105; military expeditions, 57; decline and degradation of the court under, 57-58.
Canada, climate compared with that of Kashmir, 7.
Čaṅkarāchārīya, Hindu name for the Takht-i-Sulaimān, 39.
Čaṅkarāchārīya visits Kashmir (?), 71.
INDEX—Vol. I

Çărada script, inscription on stones in the Vishnu temple at Tāpar, 51.
Carus-Wilson, Mrs. Ashley, on the uncleanness of Kashmiri women, 23; on Kashmiri children, 25.
Caste system, rigidity one of the causes of conversion to Islam, 79; weakens with the onslaught of Islam, 80.
Caucasus, Kashmir hills far exceed the summit of, 2.
Česa-nāg, mountain, 4; name of a serpent or Nāg, 4 f.n. 5.
Chach Brāhman, father of Rājā Dāhir, usurps the kingdom of Sāhasī Rāi, 75-76.
Chach-nāma, The, the Persian translation of the extinct Arabic Futūh-us-Sind by 'Ali Kháfi, 75 f.n. 2.
Chādura or Tsūdūr, a village, 10 miles south of Srinagar, 258 ; Malik Haidar belonged to, 258; called Nūr pār, at the request of Malik Haidar, by Jahāngīr, 259.
Chaks, The, conversion of—to Islam, 111; Lankan Chak receives hospitality at the hands of Sahadeva, 118, 217; raised by Sultan Shams-ud-Din I, 133; set fire to the Zaina Dab, 173; Zain-ul-Abidīn punishes the—, 174; Pānpū Chāk who flourished as a feudal lord, was flogged to death, 174, 218; Himmat Chak’s younger brother Husain Chak taken into royal favour, 174; his daughter married to Shams-ud-Din Chak, 189; rise of the—under Fath Shāh, 189; Shams-ud-Din Chak, 189; early career, 189; enters the service of Saif Dār, 189; marries Husain Chak’s daughter, 189; intrigues against Saif Dār, 189; succeeds Saif Dār, 189; intrigue against Sayyid Muhammad Baihaqi, 189, defeat by Baihaqi, 189-192; return from Kamrāj, 190; flight to the Punjāb, 190; Sayyid Muhammad Baihaqi’s measures against the rising power of the—190; history of the—217-218; origin, 217; under Zain-ul-Abidīn, 217; service under the nobles, 217; embrace the Shi’ā faith, 218; take advantage of internecine war between Muhammad Shāh and Fath Shāh, 218; clashes with the Sunnis, 218; patriotism, and martial spirit of, 218; Kājī Chāk, his clash with Sayyid Muhammad Baihaqi, 189; his defeat and flight, 189; retires to the Punjāb, 192; joins Muhammad Shāh, 192; Fath Shāh hands over one-fourth of the country to him, 193; appointed chief minister by Muhammad Shāh, 194; target of faction, 194; defeats his opponents, 194; Maś’ūd Chāk, his son, defeats confederacy, 194; Maś’ūd Chāk’s advance against, and death by insurgents, 195; repulses Bābur’s invading army, 195; reinstalled in king’s favour, 195; forces Kāmran’s army to retreat, 197; deposes Muhammad Shāh and installs his own nephew Ibrāhīm Shāh, 195; defeated by Abdul Māgre, 195; he and Abdul Māgre defeat the invading Kāshghar army, 197; peace with Mushhils, 198; minister under Shams-ud-Din I, 199; controls Chak-Māgre faction fight, 199; establishes matrimonial relations with the ruling family, 199; prime minister under Sultan Iisma’īl Shāh, his son-in-law, 199; loss of influence, return to power, 199; division of Kashmir, 199; imposes Shi’a doctrines, 199; unpopularity and flight, 199-200; defeated by Mushhul-Māgre combination under Mirzā Haidar, 200; seeks help of Sher Shāh Sūr, 200; invades Kashmir, 204; Rigi Chāk approaches Mirzā Haidar Dughlāt.
to conquer Kashmir, rebels against Mirzā Haidar, 205; Daulat Chak, chief commander, beats back the invader, Habat Khan Niyāzi, 209; defeat and disintegration of the ʿIdi Raina party, 209; ascendency of Chaks, 209; deethrones Sultān Nāzuk Shāh, 209; raises Sultān Ismāʿīl Shāh II, 210; imposes his will and Shiʿite tenets, 210; rivalry between Ghāzi Chak and—, 210; flight, capture and death, 210; deeds of personal prowess, 210; Ghāzi Chak, son of Kāji Chak, rivalry between Daulat Chak and—, 210; his soldiers put to death Daulat Chak, 210; deposes Sultān Ismāʿīl Shāh II, 210; installs Habīb Shāh, 211; accuses Sultān Habīb Shāh of misdemeanour, 211; replaces Sultān Habīb Shāh by his own brother Ghāzi Shāh Chak as the monarch of Kashmir, 211; the Chak Dynasty, 217-238; rise to power, 217-18; Husain Chak becomes Shīʿa, 218; Sunnī-Shīʿa clashes, 218; causes of Chak downfall, 235-36.

Chakla, modern Chaklāla, near Rawalpindi, identified with Čakala (?) 44, f.n. 2.

Chakravarman, dethroned several times, 57; assassination, 57-58; struggles with Pārtha compared to those of Muhammad Shāh and Fath Shāh, 190.

Chamba, Rājā of, defeated by Ananta, 59; Kalaca's power felt by, 59.

Chandragupta Maurya, Jalauka's coup de main, compared to that of, 39.

Chandrāpiṇḍa, sends embassy to China, 52; feudatory of the Chinese Emperor, 52.

Charār Sharif, tomb of Shaikh Nār-ud-Dīn at, visited by thousands, 99; description of, 99 n; Bābā Nasr buried at, 102. For monuments at—see pages 514-5, Chapter IX, Volume II.

Charles VII, of France, a contemporary of Zain-ul-ʿAbidin, 172.

Chaugān, in Kishtrwār, 237.

Chenāb, mentioned in connexion with the boundary of Kashmiri-speaking people, 7.

Children, Kashmiri, 25.

Chilāh-Khāna or the place of retreat and devotion of Shāh Hamadān, 89.

China, Kadphises II compelled to pay tribute to, 41; Vincent A. Smith's views on fighting with China, 41 f.n.; dependencies of, conquered by Kanishka, 43; story of Nāgi ancestress, 49; aggressions against Turkistan and Western Tibet, 51; Chandrāpiṇḍa, a feudatory of, 52; embassies to the Emperor of—sent by Chandrāpiṇḍa and Lalitāditya, 52, 77; Lalitāditya appeals to the Emperor of—against Arabs, 52; defeated by the Arabs in 75 a.c., or 134 a.h., 77; earliest reference of the Chinese to Kashmir, 13.

Chinār, the, note on the history of this tree, 252.

Christ, in Kashmir (?), 40; identical with Sassadhimiati (?), 40-41; buried in Srinagar according to a certain class of writers, 40; no proof of his visit to India, 40.

Christianity, religious zeal of Portuguese for its spread in Kashmir, 13; visits of Jesuit Fathers—Jerome Xavier and Francis Xavier, 14; of Father Desideri, 14; 95; Father Hierosme Xavier and Boroist-da-Gois visit Kashmir at the request of Akbar, 250.

Christians, number of—in the population of the Kashmir Valley, 8.
Chronograms, some ten striking

A. H. 727 = A. C. 1327
A. H. 842 = A. C. 1438
A. H. 984 = A. C. 1576
A. H. 743 = A. C. 1342
A. H. 847 = A. C. 1443
A. H. 925 = A. C. 1519
A. H. 938 = A. C. 1531
A. H. 947 = A. C. 1540
A. H. 948 = A. C. 1541
A. H. 951 = A. C. 1544
A. H. 957 = A. C. 1549
A. H. 970 = A. C. 1563
A. H. 1003 = A. C. 1594
A. H. 1221 = A. C. 1806

Ciți Kanṭh, Rājānaka, translates works from Arabic into Sanskrit during the reign of Sultān Hasan Shāh, 186.

Ciiva, Cakti a manifestation of, 9; one of the Hindu Triad, 9, 10; the Triad appear in aid of Kaṭyāpa, 10; worshipped by Jalsuka, 32.

Ciivabhaṭṭa, personal physician of Bād Shāh, 168.

Ciivaita, Kalhana being a—, 39.

Ciivāṃin, one of the gems at Avantivarman’s court, 56; his works, 57; the Kapphinabhuyudaya by—, 57 and f.n.

Cochin State, area compared with that of the Kashmir Valley, 8.

Constantinople, suburbs of Srinagar compared to those of, 48.

Conversion, Rīchana’s—to Islam, 69, 75, 77, 81; one of the causes of the spread of Islam, 75; of Dard tribes, 77; motives for, 79; of depressed castes of Hindus, 80; missionary movement of the Faqirs or Friars for, 81; other reasons for mass—in Kashmir, 81; Bilāl Shāh and the—of Rīchana, 81-83, 123-4; of Rīchana’s followers, 83, 125; activities of the Sayyids for—84; Shāh Hamadān’s and his disciples’ activities for—, 89; Mir Muhammad Hamadān’s, 92-94; mass conversions, 94; the Rishīyān-i-Kashmir’s effort for, 96-98; Sultān Sikandar’s share in, 103-9; Khakhas’ and Hatmāls’—108; Shaikh Shams-ud-Dīn
KASHIR

'Irāqī's effort for, 109-12; of Chaks, 111; of Ādar Sūh Bīhman, 113; Shaikh Hamza Makhdūm's activities for, 112-14; Mughal influence on—, 115; of Rājā Jaya Singh and his subjects, 115; of Rājā Kirat Singh and his subjects, 115; influence of Afghan rule on—, 116; under Dogra rule, 116; work of the Friars or Fuqarā for, 116; discussion about Sultān Sikandar in this connexion, 148-54; campaign under Sūhabātta in this connexion, 155; Mir Shams-ud-Dīn 'Irāqī's religious campaign for—, 192; under Jahangir, 262-63; under Aurangzēb 'Alamgir, 277-78. See also under Islam.

Copper mines, one of the sources of Bād Shāh's income, 175.

Čiçōblā Mahādevi, queen of Sultān Sikandar, 106, 143, 144, 151.

Črī Deva Svāmī, referred to for religious guidance by Rīchana, 123.

Črī Kanta, Pandit, appointed judge by Jahangir, 264.

Čūrapura, ancient name of Hūrapūr, 223 f.n.

Črīvara, Hindu scholar and historian at the court of Bād Shāh, 167; continued Jonarāja's work, 167; his Kathā Kautūka, translating Jāmi's Yūsuf-Zalikha, 167, 191; Bād Shāh repairs and rebuilds temples according to, 173; on the death of Bād Shāh's beloved queen Tāj Khātān Bāihaqī Begam or Voḍha (Boḍ) Khātānā, 178; on the tomb of the Dogrā queen, 178; on the death of Bād Shāh, 181; on Bād Shāh's tomb, 181; on Lūlī the barber, 184, also f.n. 2; Sultān Haidar Shāh poisoned according to, 185; on Hasan Shāh's coronation, 185; and also his study of six philosophic schools, 186.

Čuca, Pandit, on Fath Shāh's death, 194.

Cunningham, Captain, quoted about the Sikh rally in the Kashmir campaign, 334.

Dabīstān-i-Mazāhib, The, quoted on the appointment of Pandit Črī Kanta as judge by Jahangir, 264. See also the Index to Vol. II.

Dachigām, rakhi, the viper in, 21.

Dānir, Rājā, 75; succeeds his father Chach, 76; slain by Muhammad bin Qāsim, 76.


Dāl Lake, the beauty of the, 3-4. See Vol. II, pp. 534-5.

Dakhan referred to in connexion with the lack of the Atharva Veda, 167.

Dāmarās, feudal lords, 53; Muktāpida's instructions against, 53; meaning of the term, 54; rebellion during Ananta's reign crushed, 59; power broken by Ucchala, 62; rebellion against Sussala, 63; Sussala's attempt to break their power without much effect, 63; controlled by Rīchana, 122; commanders under Sultān Shihāb-ud-Dīn, 137.

Damārus, Seistan, 167.

Damāras, feudal lords, 53; Muktāpida's instructions against, 53; meaning of the term, 54; rebellion during Ananta's reign crushed, 59; power broken by Ucchala, 62; rebellion against Sussala, 63; Sussala's attempt to break their power without much effect, 63; controlled by Rīchana, 122; commanders under Sultān Shihāb-ud-Dīn, 137.

Damasus, latitude compared to that of Kashmir, 8.

Dāmodara I, killed by Krishpa, 36.

Dāmodara II, succeeds Jalauka, 40; associated in stories with the Dāmodara Uḍar, 40.

Dāmodara Uḍar, the, plateau associated in stories with Dāmodara II, 40, also f.n. 2.
Dūntagal, a fort, 207 f.n. 2.

Dānī Malik, see under Māgres.

Dānishmand Khān, Aurangzīb’s Foreign Minister, Bernier secures allowance through the intervention of, 14 ; 274.

Dāniyāl, Mīr, son of Mīr Shams-ud-Dīn ‘Irāqī, executed after a year’s imprisonment, 205, 206 ; chronogram of his death Dasht-i-Karbālā, 206.

Dāniyāl, Mughul prince, 271.

Dārāb Jūyā, Mīrzā, born in Kashmir, his Divān, 275.

Dārdic, Kashmiri language belongs to the, 17. See also pages 395-7, Chapter VIII, Vol. II.

Dārīstān, 7. See details on pages 395-7 of Vol II.

Dārhal pass, Sikh army led by way of the, 334.

Dā’ūd Khālī, Bābā, a lieutenant of Shaikh Hamza Makhdūm, his Qasida-i-Lāmiyyah or the Rishi-nāma on Shaikh Nūr-ud-Dīn quoted 100 ; on ‘Alī Shāh Chak, 225. See also index to Vol. II.

Dā’ūd Mīr, a courtier of Sayyid Mubārak Bālhaqī, 228.

Dayā Karan, Rājput king of Jammu, 35 f.n.

De, Brajendranāth, on Sūltān Sikandar’s breaking of idols, 152-3.

Deccan, Ahmad Shāh Wālī of the, a contemporary of Baḍ Shāh, 171.

Delhi, Jāsrāt Gakhār fails to conquer, 170 ; ruler of—a contemporary of Baḍ Shāh, 171.

Desideri, Father, visits Kashmir, 14.

Desu, near the kotal of the Pīr Panjāl, 264.

Dilāwar Khān, Mughul governor, constructed gardens, etc., 263, 264, 265.

Diddā, Kshemagupta’s queen, 58 ; queen consort and regent, 58 ; rules as sovereign, 58 ; nomi nates her nephew Samgrāmārāja, 58.

Līndār Khān, title of Mūllā ‘Abdun Nābi Muḥtávī Khān, see Muḥtávī Khān.

Dīgenes (Diyūjānus al-Kalbi), Shāh ‘Abdur Rahīm’s reply resembling that of, 97.

Diyūjānus al-Kalbi, see Dīgenes above.

Dōghrās, Nāzīr, a governor of Kashmir under the, 3 ; conversion to Islam during Dōgrā rule, 116 ; Baḍ Shāh’s second wife belonged to the family of, 178 ; Kashmir under the—see Chapter XII.

Dōmba girl, Chakravarman assassinated in the chamber of, 58.

Dow, Lt.-Col. Alexander, on women of Kashmir, 22 ; on Aurangzīb ‘Ālamgīr, 275 ; his version basis of the story of Thomas Moore’s Lalla Rookh, 278 f.n. ; on the ability of Mughul princes, 294.

Dowson, see Elliot and Dowson.

Draper, Dr. John William, on western indebtedness to the Saracens, 28 and f.n. 2.

Draupadi, her marriage with the Pāṇḍus, a classical instance of marriage with the husband’s brother, 128.

Dūnjagāgā, the, leaving mountains near the Nilā-nāga, 10, f.n. 2.
Dughlāt, Mihrāz Haidar, observations on the people of Kashmir quoted from his Ta’rīkh-i-Rashidi, 19; on the temples of Kashmir, 107-108; on conversions by Shams-ud-Din ‘Trāqi, 109; accompanying Sikkandar Khān of Kāshghar to Kashmir, 197; details of the campaign, 197-98; sends congratulations to the Sultan of Kāshghar, 198; related to Bābur, 200; his history, The Ta’rīkh-i-Rashidi, 203-4; leads expedition to Kashmir to help the Māgres, 200; defeats Kājī Chak, 200; parentage and early life, 201-2; in the service of Sultan Abū Sa‘īd Khān of Kāshghar, invades Tibet, 201; marches on Lhassa and retreats, 201-2; enters Mughul service in India as governor of the Punjāb, 202, becomes adherent of Humāyūn, 202; conquers Kashmir, 202; regency on behalf of Humāyūn, 202-3; administration of Kashmir, 202-3; literature, 203; his Ta’rīkh-i-Rashidi compared to Biibur’s Menār, 203-4; defeats Kājī Chak, 204-5; territorial conquest, 206; industrial policy, 206; religious policy against the Shi’as, 205-6; faction of nobles against, 206; assault on Muhemmadkot and death, 206-7; date of his death, 207; Shi’a attempts to desecrate his remains, 207-8; Shi’as wreak vengeance on the descendants of, 207; remains buried at Srīnagar, 208; grave repaired at the instance of Dr. Moorcroft and inscription installed by Mīr ‘Izzatullāh, 208.

Dūlcha, Bambas claim to have come to Kashmir with, 18; invades Kashmir, 67; pillages Kashmir, 68; perishes with his army on his return journey, 68; his invasion, 117-18; Mughul desolation under Dughlāt’s Kāshghar army revived memories of, 199; origin, 118; a Hun (?), 118.

Durlabhaka, Pratāpaditya, 51; Chinese aggression over Western Tibet and Turkistān, at this time, 51; builds Pratāpapura, 51 note.

Durlabhavardhana, founder of the Nāga (Kārkoṭa) Dynasty, 49; origin and family of, 49; visit of Huen Tsiang during the time of, 50; prosperity in Kashmir, 51; extent of his empire, 51.

Durra’ni, correct addition to the name of Ahmad Shāh and not Abdālī, 299.

Durrānī and Ghilzai riots in Kābul referred to, 304.

Durr-i-Daurdn (The Pearl of the Age) style preferred by Ahmad Shāh of Afgānistān, 299.

Earthquake, destroys Samdhimatinagar, 37; responsible for the destruction of temples, 108 also f.n. 3.

East India Company, The, George Forster, a civil servant under, 14.

Edward IV, the Wars of the Roses and, 190.

Egypt, Bernier’s visit to, 14; ambassador at the court of Bād Shāh from 40; Bād Shāh sends ambassador to, 171; Burji Mamlūks of, contemporaries of Bād Shāh, 172.

Elīs, Ney, on Bābur and Mihrāz Haidar, 204; on the locality where Mihrāz Haidar Dughlāt fell, 207.

Elliot and Dowson’s History of India ascribes translation of the Rājataranginī to Maulānā ‘Imād-ud-Din, 164; deplores gap of Sind history relating to the period of Sultan Shihāb-ud-Din; reference to restrictions on Jāts and Lohānas of Brāhmanarābād compared to those of Mullā Muhtavī Khān, 292.
INDEX—Vol. I

Elphinstone, Mountstuart, reference to his estimate of the Chach-nāma, 75; according to him Durraṇīs were democratic, 298; his book An Account of the Kingdom of Kabul, 298 f.n. 2; on Ahmad Shāh Durraṇī being a “divine” and an “author,” 299.

Elsingre, Mr., of Volkart Brothers, Karachi, translates from Russian for Kashmir, 116d.

Encyclopaedia Britannica, The, quoted in respect of Sultān Sikandar, 151; in respect of the birth of Ahmad Shāh Durraṇī, 297.

Encyclopaedia of Islam, The, quoted about the date of birth of Ahmad Shāh Durraṇī, 297, about his title, 299.

England, climate compared to that of Kashmir, 6; Henry VI of, a contemporary of Baḏ Shāh, 171.

Europe, first information about Kashmir reaching—through the Portuguese, 13,14; Baḏ Shāh’s contemporaries in, 172.

European, the Kashmiri vendor’s rate of sale of commodities to the, 21.

Eugenius IV, Pope, a contemporary of Baḏ Shāh, 172.

Excavations, at Tājar, 51.

Fahmī, poet, 273.

Faiṣī, Abu’l Faiz, Abu’l Fazl’s brother, quoted, 5; gives information to Abu’l Fazl about the saint Wahid Sūfī, 96, gasīda on Kashmir extracted, 245-6.

Famine, during the reign of Harsha, 62; during Sultān ‘Alā’-ud-Dīn’s reign, 135; during the reign of Sultān Qutb-ud-Dīn, 142; after Mughul conquest of Kashmir by the Kāshghar army, 198; during the reign of Akbar, 250.

Faqīrullāḥ, Mir Muqīm Kanṭh’s son, 313.

Farhānā, a province of Turkistān, 201, f.n.

Farhād and Shirīn, alluded to in the hemistitch of Hafiz, 1.

Farīd-ud-Dīn Qadīrī, Sayyid Muhammad, converts Rājā Jaya Singh and Rājā Kīrat Singh, 115; early life and education of, 115; his tomb in Kīshwār 115; his sons, 115-16.

Farnesian Hercules, see Hercules, 27.

Farrukhī, Abu’l Hasan ‘Alī, his couplet on Mahmūd’s disappointment at the failure of his desire to enter Kashmir, 59.

Farrukh Siyar, Emperor, 287–88; Rājā Muẓaffar Khān subdued by Farrukh Siyar’s governor, 287, his mother a Kashmirian lady, 288.

Fasīḥī, poet, 273.

Fasaḥāt-i-Kubrawiyya, The, MS., written by Shaikh ʿAbdul Wabhāb Nūrī, quoted on the order of Shaikh Nūr-ud-Dīn Rishi’s disciples, 102; on Shihāb-ud-Dīn’s minister, 137; on Baḏ Shāh’s name when young, 147.

Fath ‘Alī Shāh Kājār of Irān threatens Afghānistān under Zamān Shāh, 301.

Fath Chak, surnamed Khān-uz-Zamān, attacks the king’s palace, 222; is defeated and executed, 222.
Fath Khan, struggle for the throne, 188; Muhammad Shâh in close confinement of, 188; ascends throne with the title of Sultan Fath Shâh, 189; intrigues for power by Shams-ud-Din Chak against—, 189-90; withdraws favour in case of Saif Dâr, his prime minister, 189; Shams-ud-Din Chak, prime minister of, 189; downfall and flight to the Punjâb, 190; rejoined by Shams Chak, 190; defeats Muhammad Shâh at the battle of Khânpûr, 190; wreaks vengeance on the family of Sayyid Muhammad Bañhaqi, 191; re-ascends throne second time, 191; power divided into four parts, 193; Ibrahîm Mâgre slain; Muhammad Shâh re-invited, 193; flight of Fath Shâh and death at Naushara, 193; Fath Shâh fana, the satirical chronogram of his death, 193; Pandit Çuka on Fath Shâh's death, 194.

Fath Khatûn, originally Shankar Devi, which see.

Fathpur-Sikri, Akbar's court at, 232.

Fath Shâh, Sultan, see Fath Khan above.

Fâzil Khân, Mir, chief secretary to the Afghan governor of Kashmir, 315.

Feudalism, under Hindu rule, 53-54; rebellion under Ananta, 59; power broken by Ucchala, 52; rebellion against Susela, 63. See also Ðâmaras.

Fergusson, James, on the origin of the Nâgas, in Tree and Serpent Worship, 50.

Fez, in Morocco, Kashmir latitude corresponding to that of, 8.

Fidâ Khân, grandmaster of the Mughul artillery, guarded the pass at Bhimbar on Aurangzib 'Alamgir's visit to Kashmir, 274.

Fire, destroys buildings during the reign of Abhimanyu II, 58.; the Jâmi' Manjîd, Srinagar, twice partially destroyed by fire previous to the reign of Jahângir, 258.

Firishta, the author of the Gulshan-i-Ibrahîmî or the Ta'rikh-i-Firishta, the historian, praises Muslim Rishis, 97; on the spiritual guide of Shams-ud-Din 'Irâqi, 110; on Shâh Mir being called Shâh Mirzâ 130; on Sultan Qutb-ud-Din's zealous attention to public business, 141; on Sûhâbahî's ministry under Sultan 'Ali Shâh, 155; anecdotes about Baq Shâh's sense of justice, 157-8, 174; on Sultan Haidar Shâh, 184.

Firuz Ganâî, Mullâ, a divine who tried Yusuf Mânâv, 223.

Firûz Shâh Tughluq, Sikandar's passion for buildings compared to, 146.

Firûz-ud-Din Abu'l Barsâkâh, Mir, father of Abu'l Qâsim Khân Sâfi 309.

Fleet, identifies Çakala with modern Siâlkot, 44.

Floods, villages protected against, 9; in the reign of Harsha, 62.

Folklore, love-stories of Himâl and Lâlara, 36.

Formosa, referred to in connexion with the legendary sinking of an island in the Wulur Lake, 160.

Forster, George, author of The Journey, visits Kashmir, 14; on the people of Kashmir, 22; on women of Kashmir, 24.

France, women of the south of, 24; Charles VII of—a contemporary of Baq Shâh, 172.
Frederick IV, Emperor, a contemporary of Bad Shāh, 172.
Fuqārā, their work really responsible for the spread of Islam in Kashmir, 116.

Gaddis, Hindu Bakarwāns, raid on Kashmir Valley repulsed by Rāmacandra, Sahadeva’s commander-in-chief, 68.
Gagangir, fort, Rāwanchandra retires to, 120; on Dulcha’s invasion, 120; now a village in Lār, 120 f.n. 1.
Gaggha, his son, is connected with the Vishnu temple at Tāpar, 51.
Gakkhar, Jasrat, misnamed Jasārat Khān, 155; extends influence in the Punjab on release from Timur’s captivity, 156.
Gāndarbal, milky waters of, 4; village 13 miles from Srinagar, 4 f.n. 1.
Gandhāra, Swayamvara held by the king of, 36; conquered by Mihirakula, 44; modern North-West Frontier Province, 127, f.n. 2.
Gāngabal, the glen of, 4.
Gauhar Chak, referred to by Jahāngīr in connexion with the Kishťwār campaign, 264.
Gauhar Shāh Chak, or Lohur Shāh Chak, which see.
Ghāzi Chak, early career, 210-11; conquests, 219; stern rule, 219-20; Chak and Rainā revolts suppressed, 220; Mughul invasion repulsed, 220; abdication in favour of Husain Shāh Chak, 221. See also under Chakas.
Ghāzikōt, in Pakhī, battle of, 192.
Ghilzai and Durrānī riots in Kābul, 304.
Ghulām ‘Ali Āzād Bīlgrāmī, see Ṭāzād Bīlgrāmī.
Ghulām Muhammad, Shaikh, lends his MS. to Dr. Sufi, 102 f.n. 2.
Gīlān, Baḍ Shāh sends ambassador to, 171; description, 171, f.n. 2.
Gilgit, Ghāzi Chak recovers, 219.
Gogji Pathar (Patar ?), village, Nīlā-Nīgā situated in, 10, f.n. 2.
Gompertz, Major M.L.A., author of Magic Ladyak, on Kashmiris, 28 f.n. 1; on civilization, paintings, etc., of Ladākh, 219.
Gonanda Dynasty, the, 43.
Gonanda I, first historical king of Kashmir, 35, 36.
Gonanda II, infant king, 36; killed by Harandeva, 37.
Gonanda III, founder of the Gonanda Dynasty before the White Huns, 43; his revival of Brāhmaṇism and reaction against Buddhism, 43.
Gond chiefs claim descent from Nāgavarmas, 49.
Gondwāna, Suraja Ballāl Singh (Shēr Sāh Ballāl Sāh) of, contemporary of Baḍ Shāh, 171.
Gondolier of Venice, compared to Kashmiri boatman, 21.
Gopāli, old name for the Čaukārāchārya hill or the Takht-i-Sulaimān, 39 f.n. 2.
Gopāditya, rebuilds the Čaukārāchārya temple, 39.
Granada, Spain, Baḍ Shāh’s Nasrid contemporaries of, 172.
Gramm. compared with Mānasbal by Andrew Wilson in The Abode of Snow, 4 f.n. 6.
Greece, Kashmir compared to, 2.
Grierson, Sir George, on the origin of the Khaḍas, in his Linguistic Survey of India, 12 f.n. 1; researches into the Kashmirī language, 17.
Gujrāt, (Punjāb), Gāṁkavvarman’s expedition to, 57; Sultān Mahmūd Begarha of Gujarāt (Kāthiāwār), receives Baḍ Shāh’s ambassador, 171.
Gulmarg, the Meadow of Flowers, 4 and f.n. 8; snowfall at, 6; situation on the Pir Panjāl, 44; name changed from Gaurimarg by Yūsuf Shāh Chak, 229; description, 230.
Gupta, Dr. Harirām. See under Harfrām Gupta.
Gunavvarman, Prince, painter-missionary of Kashmir, visits the Far East, 70.
Gwāliār, Towār Rājā of, love of music a common bond with Baḍ Shāh, 171.

Habīb, makes gun-powder during Baḍ Shāh’s rule, 161.
Habīb Kāfī, his verses on the Pir Panjāl quoted, 45.
Habīb Shāh, Sultān, the last of the Shāh Mīrīs, his accession 211; accused of misdeemeanour by Ghāzī Chak, 211; dethroned by Ghāzī Chak, and imprisoned, 211; this event compared to that of Richard III’s crown presented to Henry, who became Henry VII of England, 212.
Habībullāh Khwārizmī, Sayyid, Qāzī’-qūzāt, wounded by Yūsuf Māṇḍav, 222.
Hāfiz Baghadādī, lecturer at the royal university of Baḍ Shāh at Nau-Shahr, 164.
Hāfiz, Khwāja Shams-ud-Dīn of Shirāz, on the beauty of Kashmirīs and of Turks in his Divān, 24.
Hafiz, of Jālandhar, Abu’l Aṣr, quoted, 1. Also see Index to Vol. II.
Haibat Khān Niyāzi, see Niyāzi.
Hajus de Rebus Japonicis, Indícis, St. Xavier’s remarks on Kashmir published in, 14.
Haidar Hasan of Hydarabād, Āghā, grandson of Pandit Mohan Lāl alius Āghā Hasan Jān, 340.
Haidar Khān, infant son of Sultān Sadr-ud-Dīn (Rifchāna) and Kōsā Rānī, 124, 126.
Haidar Khān, son of Sultān-Nāzuk Shāh, 226.
Haidar Malik Chādūra, brings out an abridged edition of the Rājātangregatedī of Kalhāna, 65; elegy on Sultān Sikandar 153-4; quoted in several places in Kashmir, for instance, on Mullā Nādirī 165; quotes Mullā Ahmad, 168; miracle about Baḍ Shāh, 182-3; on Sultān Hasan Shāh’s rule, 187; reasons for the Chak defection, 191; lines quoted by him from Mahram Beg’s congratulatory poem to Kamrān, 196; version of the death of Mirzā Haidar Dāghlāt, 206; statement on treatment given to Mirzā Haidar’s descendants untrustworthy, 207; note on his life, work and History, 257-69.
Haidar Shāh, Sultan, accession and rule, 184; character, 184; leaves administration in the hands of Bahram Khān, 184; Lūlū, the barber, his favourite, 184; Ādām Khān's intrigue against, 184; on Ādām Khān's death, his son Hasan Khān's bid for the throne, 184; confusion and turmoil, 185; death, 185; Ārīvīra's praise for the love of music and poetry of, 185.

Haidar Muhammad, Maulānā, mentioned in Zafar Khān's Divān, 273.

Haig, Sir Wolsley T., on Shaikh Shams-ud-Dīn Irāqī, 109 f.n. 5, continued on 110; on Shāh-Mīr, 133; on comparison of Bid Shāhī and Akbar, 176.

Hāji Adham, a saint of the time of Baḏ Shāh, 166.

Hāji Bānde, Khwāja, forms a faction against Mīrzā Haidar Dāghlāt, 206.

Hāji Kanāl, leads a Kāshmiri deputation to Akbar against the treatment of the dead bodies of certain divines, 223.

Hāji Karimādād Khān Bāmīzāi, appointed governor, defeats Jawān Sher, 315; military conquests, 315-16; maladministration, 316; death, 317.

Hāji Khān, favourite younger son of Baḏ Shāh by second wife, 178; conquest of Lohkot in Pīnc, 180; revolts against his father, 180; defeat and flight, 180; attack on and defeat by Ādām Khān at Soğdr, 180; welcomed by Baḏ Shāh and declared heir apparent, 181; character, 181; nominated successor, 181; ascends the throne with the title of Haidar Shāh, 184. See Haidar Shāh, Sultan.

Hājī Muhammad Sāhib, Pir, Sultan Qutb-ud-Dīn's tomb near the ziyārat of, 143.

Hājī Paḏar, won over by Sāyyīd Mūhammad Baihaqī, 189.

Hakīm Mansūr, his work on medicine, the Kifāyah-i-Mansūrī, 165.

Hakīm, Mīrzā, Akbar's stepbrother, 232.

Haloko, one of the four sons of Aḥdāl, 298.

Hamadān, native-place of Shāh Hamadān, 85; description, 85 f.n.; 1.

Hamadān, Shāh, see Shāh Hamadān.

Hamīd Qāzī, Qāzī at the court of Baḏ Shāh, 166; author of a history of Kashmir, 166.

Hamīm the Syrian, first Muslim to enter Kashmir, 76; companion of Jaisiya to Kashmir, 76; succeeds him at Shākalāh, 76; founds masjids, 76. Hammīra, Kalhaṇa's name for Sultān Mahmūd of Ghaznah, 59; adaptation of the title Amīr-ul-Mūminīn, 59.

Hamza Makhdūm, Shaikh, birth, parentage and education, 112; deported by Ghāzī Shāh Chak, 112-3; Khwāja Tāhir Ṭāfīq Ashā'ī, his co-worker, 113; builds masjids, 113; death and burial-place, 113; Kashmirīs' veneration for—versified by Mīrzā Kamāl-ud-Dīn Shāhīd and Bābā Dā'ūd Khākī, 114.

Handwāra, tahsil of the Bārmula District, 7, 165.

Hānji, boatman, clever like the gondolier of Venice, 21; rather prolific, 25; most of the evil reputation of the Kashmirī due to the, 28.

Hāpūt, in Kashmirī, the bear, 21.

Harandeva, a scion of the Pāndūs, usurps the throne according to the account of Pir Ḥasan Shāh, 37.
Hargopāl Kaśī, Pandit, his Guldasta-i-Kaśmir quoted about Rīschnā's conversion, 123;
Harirājā, succeeds Samgrāmarājā, 59.
Harīśām Guptā, Dr., on Āghā Haṃsān's (Pandit Mohan Lāl's) grandson, 340.
Harī Singha, Māharājā Bahādur of Jammu and Kaśmir, ridicules the idea of raising a Kaśmirī regiment, 141; re-names Shergaṅghī as Narsinghgarh, 314 f.n. 1. See also index to Vol. II.
Harī Singha Nanvā, general of Māharājā Ranjit Singha, 334. Also Vol. II.
Harsha, deposes Kalaṃa, 59, 61; character 61-62; supports Turushka (Muslim) captains, 62, 77; spoliation of temples, 62, 105; oppressive taxation, 62; Kaśmir visited by many calamities under, 61; revolt against, 62; ignoble death, 62.
Harsha of Kanauj, or its Arabic form Qannauj, related to Mammats, 64; visits Kaśmir, 64.
Hārūt, angel, ensnared by the beauty of women of Kaśmir in legend, 22.
Hārvan, Nāgārjuna's residence, 42; excavations at, 42 f.n. 2.
Hasan, Dilīwar Khān's son, referred to by Jahāngīr in his Kāishtwār dispatch, 264.
Hasan Khān, Sultān Haṃsān Shāh's son, 183; nominated successor and made Chief of the Noblemen, 184.
Hasan Kuchche, treasury officer, Lūlī, the barber, seeks the beheading of, 184.
Hasan Mantiqī, Mir Sa'yīd, with others adorns the age of Baḍ Shāh, 166.
Hasan Shāh, Pir, historian, had a copy of the translation of the Ratanākār Purāṇa, 36, also the f.n.; quotes couplets of Husain Shāh Chak, 224. See pages 374-5, Chap. VIII, Vol. II, for his life and work.
Hasan Shāh, Sultān, accession and coronation, 185; Hayāt Khātūn, beloved queen of, 185; ministers, 185; administration, 185-186; studies the six schools of philosophy, 186; Bahārām Khān's bid for the throne and defeat, 186; power of Sa'yīd at the court of, 187; literary activity during the reign of, 186; failure of expedition to Bāltīstān and Lādākh, 187; Malik Haṃsān Chāṭūra's account of the reign of, 187.
Hastīvanj, ridge, Mihirakula drives one hundred elephants over, 44.
Hatrāl, a Rājput tribe, embraces Islam, 108.
Hauna, Sultān Sikandar's mother, regent during his infancy, 143; suppresses rebellion by her daughter and son-in-law against her own son, Sikandar, 143.
Hayāt Khān, Sardār Muhammad, his Hayāt-i-Afghānī quoted, 299.
Hayāt Khātūn, Sultān Haṃsān Shāh's beloved queen, 185, 188.
Hayden, H. H., and Col. S G. Burreard, see Burreard.
Hazarā, hill state, Çāmkarava'rmān's expedition to, 57; failure of Ananta's expedition against, 59; Kaloṅ's power felt by, 59.
Hazār Khān, Mir, Afghān, governor of Kaśmir, see Mir Hazār Khān.
Hazrat Bega, daughter of the Emperor Muhmmad Shāh of Delhi, married to Ahmad Shāh Durrānī, 299.
INDEX—Vol. I

Hebraic, 16-17. See Jews.

Henry IV of Spain, a contemporary of Baṣ Shāh, 172.

Henry VI of England, a contemporary of Baṣ Shāh, 172; the Wars of the Roses and—, 190.

Henry VII of England, his enthronement compared to that of Ghāzi Chak, 212.

Herāt, 297, 298, 304.

Hercules, Farnesen, Kashmirī physique compared to, 27, f.n. 2.

Himālaya, position of Kashmir in the higher, 2; rainfall in the hill stations of, 6.

Himalayan Ice Age, Kashmir provides first evidence for, 1.

Himāl, heroine in a popular love-story, 36.

Hindal, Sultan Shihāb-ud-Din’s younger brother, afterwards Sultan Qutb-ud-Din, 140; 141-143. See Qutb-ud-Din.

Hindu rule, maintains itself in Kashmir for two centuries after Kalhapa’s time, 66; causes of ruin of, 69; termination of, 117.

Hindu Triad, Čiva one of the Gods of, 9; appearing in aid of Kaçypa, 10.

Hinduism, clashes with Buddhism one of the causes of the failure of Hindu rule, 69; contrasted with Islam, 78-80.

Hindus, number in the population of Kashmir, 8; Nilanāga considered holy by, 10, f.n. 2; not allowed to enter Kashmir according to Bīrānī, 17; in Kashmir, 19; rulers of Kashmir Valley, 35; causes of the ruin of their rule, 69-70; last phase of their rule, 117-123; persecution by Sikandar discussed, 148-153; image-worship comparatively modern, 153; tolerance towards—under Baṣ Shāh, 172-74;—traditions reassert themselves during Baṣ Shāh’s reign, 166.

Hirosoni, (Māh-i-Khurāsānī?), sister of Shāh Hamadān, 116d.

Historians’ History of the World, The, quoted in respect of a lesson from the history of Bulgaria, 236.

Hiuen Tsiang, more than half a dozen forms of his name, 50; visits Kashmir, his description of Kashmir, 50; on the development of Buddhism, 51.

Holland, area compared to that of the Kashmir Valley, 8.

Honigberger, Dr. John, a Transylvanian, visits Kashmir during Sikh rule, 15. See footnote, p. 786, Chapter XII, Vol. II, for a note on him.

Hügel, Baron Charles, on first information about Kashmir reaching Europe in his Travels, 13; visits Kashmir during Sikh rule, 15; on Sikhs being hampered in their first invasion of Kashmir, 329; on Ranjit Singh’s favourite horse, Laili, 330 f.n. 1.

Humāyūn consents to Kāmran’s expedition to Kashmir, 196; Māgres seek help of—against Kāji Chak, 200; Mirzā Haidar’s faithfulness to, 203; a refugee in Iran, 203; intention to invade Kashmir abandoned, 209; Shams Raina seeks the help of, 220; death of, 220.

Hum invasion, puts an end to Kuhāna rule in Kābul and the Punjāb, 43.

Huns, White, 43-44; Toramāna, 43; Mihirakula’s rule, 43-44; place of origin, 44 f.n. 1; Kālidāsa’s reference in the Raghuvamsha to, 46.
Hūrapōr, Achala marches into Kashmir across, 128; Hājī Khān's flight to, 180; Jahānāra's hospice at, 180 f.n. 2; Husain Shāh Chak receives Akbar's embassy at, 223; repair of the—road by 'Ali Mardān Khān, 273.

Husain Marvi, Khwāja, a courtier, interprets the dream to Humāyūn, 209.

Husain Qummi Rizavi or Razavi, Sayyid, theologian and preacher, invited by Baq Shāh to stay in Bāgh-i-Zaina-gī, Tuhāl Handwāra, 165.

Husain Shāh Chak, accession, 221; mild and beneficent rule, 221; rebellion of Shankar Chak and his brothers crushed, 221-22; revolt of Fath Chak, his minister, called also Khwāja Fath Baqqāl and that of his son Bahādur Khān suppressed, 222; Malik Muhammad Nāji's services, 221-22; Mas'ud Nāyak rewarded, but imprisoned later on, 222; trial of Yūsuf Māṇḍava Shi'a fanatic and his death by being stoned, 222-23; embassy from Akbar's court, 222-23; Mirzā Muqīm, leader of the embassy, interferes in Yūsuf Māṇḍavā's affair, 223; Akbar's return of presents sent by, 223; religious tolerance of 223-24; patronage of letters, 224; charity, 224; succession intrigues, 224; abdication in favour of 'Ali Khān, who becomes 'Ali Shāh Chak afterwards, 224; death at Zaifa-pōr, 224.

Husain Simnānī, Sayyid, deputed by Shāh Hamadān to survey the field for the propagation of Islam in Kashmir, 84.

Huṣka, Kushāna king, founder of Huṣkapūra, 10 f.n. 1. See Huvishka.
Huṣkapūra, founded by Huṣka, 10 f.n. 1; 43; modern village of Uṣkārā (Wūskur), near Bārāmūla, 43.

Hussa, burnt alive, 149.

Hussites, Papal bull against the, 149.

Huvishka, succeeds Kanishka, 43.

Huxley, Aldous, on the Kashmiris, 26, 27, 28.

Hydari Begam, Āghā Hasan Jān's (Mohan Lal's) favourite wife, 340.

Ibrāhīm Khān Chak, brother of Ya‘qūb Shāh Chak, deputed by Yūsuf Shāh Chak to Sayyid Mubā‘rak Baihaqī, 228.

Ibrāhīm Māgre, see Māgres.

Ibrāhīm, Qāzī, continues the work on the history of Kashmir by his father, 166.

Ibrāhīm Shāh I, Sultān, installed on the throne by Kājī Chak and succeeds Sultān Muhammad Shāh, 196; Abdāl Māgre's invasion, 196; defeat at Tāpar and flight, 195.

Ibrāhīm Shāh II, Sultān, succeeds his father 'Ismā‘īl Shāh I, 199; unpopularity and flight of Kājī Chak, his minister, 199; Mughul invasion of Kashmir by Mirzā Haidar, 200; untimely death, 200.

‘Idi Raina or Rina, won over by Sayyid Muhammad Baihaqī, 189. See also Rainas.

Idolatry, discussion on the attitude of the Christians and the Hindu reformist movements towards, 153; in the Vedic religion, 163.
illiteracy, effect on the growth of children, 25; effect on the Kashmiri, 27.

'Imād-ud-Din, Muulānā, author of the Rauzat-ut-Tāhirin, 164; Persian translation of the Rājatarangīni attributed to, 164.

Immolation, committed by Jayāpīṣa's Rānī, 55. See Suttee.

'Inayatullāh Khān Kashmiri, Mir, governor of Kashmir. See Mir 'Inayatullāh Khān Kashmiri.

Incest, in England 28 f.n. 1.

Indians, compared to Kashmiri, 21; on Kashmiri women, 24.

Indo-Aryan influence on the Kashmiri language, 17; on the people, 19.

Indo-Iranian group, Kashmiri belongs to, 17.

Indra, the 'thunder god,' annihilates the demons, 10.

Indus, the, Mihirakula drowns lot of people in, 44; Sultan Shihāb-ud-Din encamps on the banks of, 137.

Iqbal, Sir Muhammad, his couplet on Kashmir quoted, 2; quoted on pessimism, poverty and dirtiness of the Kashmiri, 27; on Realization of Self, 72; invocation to Shāh Hamadān, 84; summing up of Shāh Hamadān's life and work, 91; condemns the enervating type of Tasawwuf, 94; on Islam and man, 153; belonged to the Sāfārī family, 173; lines on the fate of a patricide, 183. See index to Vol. II.

Irādat Khān, Mughul governor, constructs gardens, 263.

Irān, beauty of the women of, 24; Baḍ Shāh invites craftsmen from, 161.

Iranian group, Kashmiri belongs to the, 17.

Ireland, resemblance to Kashmir in a number of characteristics, 22.

Irish, Kashmiri cultivator resembles the, 22.

Irrigation, under Baḍ Shāh, 175.

Irvine, William, his Later Mughals referred to, 288 f.n. 1, 3.

'Iṣhāq, Maulānā, Akbar's ambassador to Husain Shāh Chak, 226.

Islam, influence on Kashmiri character, 19; teachings, 20; Kashmir Shaivism very near to, 72; spread of—in Kashmir, 75-116; Rifāchāna's conversion to, 69; 75, 123-126; gradual conversion in Kashmir to, 75; early contact with Sind of, 75-77; state religion under Rīfāchāna, 77; does not effect Kashmir at first, 77-78; comparison with Hinduism by Sir Herbert Risley and Guy Wint, 78-80; motives for conversion to—discussed by Rieley, 79; interaction of the two cultures, 80; missionary activities of Faqirs and Darvishehs, 81; conversions by Sayyids, 84; Sayyid 'Ali Hamadānī's great work for, 84-92; Mir Muhammad Hamadānī's, 92-94; conversion of Malik Shāhbaṭṭa to, 93; mass conversions to, 94; work of the Rishiyān-i-Kashmir for, 96-98; Sultan Sikandar's share in the spread of, 103-9; Shaikh Shams-ud-Din 'Īraqī's, 109-114; Mughul influence on conversion to, 115; influence of Afghān rule, 116; the work of the Fugārā or Friars, 116; suffers a reverse after Rifāchāna's (Sultan Sadr-ud-Din's) death, 127; Sikandar's zeal for religion, 144, 146; Mir Shams-ud-Din 'Īraqī's campaign among the Hindus, 192; Shi'a-Sunni clashes, 218, 277; such clashes in Afghānistān, 304. See also Conversion.

I'tiqād Khān, related to Farrukh Siyar's mother, 288.
Islāmābād, (Anantnāg), 4 f.n. 2, 7, 9. See also Index to Vol. II.

Islām Shāh Sūr, aids faction against Mīrzā Haidār Dūghlāt, 206.

İsmā'īl Shāh I, Sūltān, accession of, 199; a mere stipendiary under Kājī Chak, 199; brief reign and death of, 199.

İsmā'īl Shāh II, Sūltān, accession with the help of Daulat Chak, 210; deposed by Ghāzī Chak, 211.

İsmā'īlian preachers from Alamāt in Irān, among the 'ulamā' in Kashmir, 81.

Israelites in Kashmir 16; evidence of settlements, 16.

İstanbul, compared to Srinagar, 48.

Ivānow, Wladimir, Russian Orientalist of Bombay, translates a paragraph from a Russian work for Kashmir, 18; translates Professor E. Pavlovsky's letters to Dr. Sufi on Shāh Hamadān's Mausoleum at Kolkāt, 116b. See also Index to Vol. II.

İzzatullāh Khān, Mīr, attaché of Dr. William Moorcroft, visits Kashmir in 1812-13, 109; sets up the stone-slab and the inscription on the grave of Mīrzā Haidar Dūghlāt, 209.

Jabbār Khān, last of the Afghān Governors, 334; Ranjit's invasion of Kashmir in the time of, 334; is wounded and retreats, 334.

Jacquemont, Victor, French Naturalist, visits Kashmir during Sikh rule, 15; on women of Kashmir, 22. See Index to Vol. II.

Ja'far Barmakī, passing reference to his epigrammatic style, 263.

Jahān Rāi or Ārā Begām, Sāhibbābād (Achabal) called after, 4 f.n. 2.

Jahāndād Khān, Governor 'Atā Muhammād's brother carries Shāh Shuǰā' to Peshāwar, 305.

Jahāngīr, his appreciation of Kashmir according to Dr. Bernier, 8; Akbar expresses horror at the cruelties of, 176; on Bād Shāh's piety, 177; on the miracle about Bād Shāh, 182-3; visits Kashmir with Nūr Jahān, 251-56; as a builder, 252-53, 263; Justice Shāh Din's delineation of the love-scenes of Jahāngīr and Nūr Jahān, 253; Thomas Moore on Jahāngīr's romantic days, 253-56; Malik Haidār Chādurā's service under—, 257; a Dutch Protestant's view of Kashmir under—, 259-62; suppression of Chaks, 262; reforms, 262-63; administration, 263-64; snubs his governor, Qalīch Khān, in the Barmakī style, 263; conquest of Kisttwār, 264-65; plague and fire, in Kashmir under—, 265-66; famous poets under—, in Kashmir, 273.

Jahāngīr, Prince, son of Kāmrān of Kābul, nominal ruler, 308.

Jainollabhadina, Čri, Jonarāja's name for Sūltān Zain-ul-ʿĀbidīn (Bād Shāh), 166.

Jajja, see Chach.
Jaisiya, son of Dahir, seeks help of the Ray of Kashmir, 76; Shakkalha assigned to, 76; succeeded by Hamin, 76.

Jalal, Dilawar Khans son, mentioned by Jahangir in his Kishtwär dispatch, 264.

Jalal-ud-Din, Sayyid, of Bukhara, known as Makhdam Jahaniyan Jahangalit, arrives in Kashmir for a short stay, 84.

Jalandhara, Kaisyapa reaches modern Jullundar or Jullandhar in the East Punjab, 9; chief of—a feudatory of Lalitaditya-Muktäpida, 52.

Jalauka or Jaloka, power of Buddhists in the time of, 38 f.n.; successor of Açoka, 39-40; unknown in Indian history, 39; builds the Çankaräçärya temple, 39; military conquest of, 39; administration, 39-40.

Jalodhava (water-born), demon, living in Satisaras, crushed to death by gods, 9-10.

Jalusi-Dar-ul-Mulk-i-Kashmir, the chronogram of Mirza Haidar's descent into the Valley, which is the year 947 A.H.


Jamul-ud-Din, Qazi, petition-writer, appointed chief justice, 157-165 early life of, 164; receives Baç Sháh's patronage, 165.

Jain Banhatiya, of Sind, defeated by Sultän Shihab-ud-Din, 138.

James II, of Scotland, a contemporary of Baç Sháh, 172.

Jami'I Masjid of Srinagar, built by Sultän Sikandar, 146; mosaic work in, 146; rebuilt during the reign of Sultän Hasan Sháh, 186; again burnt and rebuilt during Jahangir's reign by Malik Haidar Chádura, 257-58; chronogram illustrating same, 258.

Jammu, State 7; added to Kashmir by Sultän Shihab-ud-Din, 137; ruler converted to Islam by Timur, 155 f.n. 4; assists his son-in-law 'Ali Sháh to recover his throne, 155; Baç Sháh's second wife, daughter of the ruler of, 178. See also index to Volume II.

Jamshid, Sultän, succeeds Shams-ud-Din I, 134; quarrels with and is defeated by, 'Ali Sháh his younger brother, who becomes Sultän 'Alä'-ud-Din, 134-35; builds at bridge at Sopot, 134.

Jandilala, in the Amritsar District, East Punjab, identified with Çäkala (?) according to Anspach, 44.

Jän Muhammad, nephew of the Afghan governor, Nür-ud-Din, 313.

Japan, story of Nagi ancestress in, 49.

Jarasandha, king of Magadha, Gonanda I of Kashmir goes to war on his behalf against Krishpa, 35-36.

Jasarat Khán, Baç Sháh's son by his second wife, probably died early, 178.

Jasrat Khán, chief of Gakhára (or Khakar), assists Sháhí Khán afterwards Baç Sháh, 155; captivity in Samargand, 156; defeats Sultän 'Ali Sháh, 156; fails to conquer Delhi, 170.

Jaswäl, raja of, mentioned by Jahangir in his Kishtwär dispatch, 265.

Jaunpur, referred to as the seat of the Sharq dynasty, 143; Mahmud Sháh of, a contemporary of Baç Sháh, 171.
Jawān Sher, Amir Muhammad Khān Jawān Sher Qizilbash, instals him-
self as governor, 314; builds Shergarhi and Amira Kadal, 314;
pressive rule of, 315; defeated and sent to Kābul, 315; comments
on—by George Forster in his Journey, 315.

Jayāpiṣa, 54-55; expedition to the Gangetic Valley, 54; patronage
of learning, 54; Pandit Birbal Kāchru’s account of the Rāni’s love for a
Brāhman youth, 55; persecution of Brāhmans to avenge his Rāni’s
immolation, 55; 131.

Jayapura-Andarkōt, town, near Sunbal, founded by Jayāpiṣa, 54;
Andarkōt has the grave of Shih Mir, 130, 133.

Jayasiṁha, succeeds Sussala 63; Ṣanjapāl his Senapati goes into camp
with Yāvanas, 63.

Jaya Singh, Rājā, converted to Islam by Sayyid Shāh Farid-ud-Din
Qādiri, 155.

Jerome of Prague burnt, 149.

Jesuits referred to, 14; Father Desideri, 14; Fathers notice the Jewish
appearance of the people of Kashmir, 16.

Jews, in Kashmir, 15-18; similarity of features with Kashmiris noticed
by travellers, 16; allowed to enter Kashmir according to Al-Birini,
17; admixture of Jewish in Afghan blood, 17; affinity to the people
of Kashmir, 19; persecution in Germany and Austria of, 150-51.

Jhelum, Ver-nāg, the reputed source of the, 4, f.n. 3-4; 8; responsible for
the varying relief of the Kashmir Valley, 9; carries away alluvial
deposits, 11; Bambas living on the right bank of the, 16; Srinagar
extends along both the banks of the, 48.

Joad, C.E.M., the well-known psychologist, discussion on the changing
mind of Britain, 95.

Jonarāja, the annalist, on certain kings of Kashmir during the pre-Muslim
period in his Rājāvali, 34; his record refers to nearly two centuries
of Hindu rule, 66; on Rājā Sahadeva, 117; on breaking of Hindu
images by Sultān Sikandar, 108; on Rūchana, 68, 118, 119, 123, 124;
on Shāh Mir, 128, 130, 131, 132, 133; on Achala, 128, on Kọṭa Rāni’s
end, 131; on Sultān ‘Alā’-ud-Din, 135; on Sultān Shihbudd-Din, 136,
137, 138; on his ministers; 137; on Čri Čobhādevi’s children, 144;
anecdote of Bad Shāh’s sense of justice, 174; Baḍ Shāh’s virtues
according to, 179; brings Kalhaṇa’s work up-to-date, 164.

Jullundhur, in the East Punjab, see Jalandhara.

Juma’ Khān Durrānī Halokozaī, arrival and assumption of governorship
of Kashmir, 319; defeats restive nobles, 319; intolerance, 319.

Jushka, or Vasudeva, dies when Kushāna rule comes to an end in Kashmir,
43.

Jūyā, poet, see Dārāb Jūyā.
INDEX—Vol. I

Kabir-panthis, discard idolatry, 153.
Kasyapa, the grandson of Brahma, 9; performs penance, 10; one of the Hindu Triad appears in aid of, 10; Nila, his son, 10-11.
Kadphises I, Kushana chieftain, conquers Afghanistan, 41.
Kadphises II, Eastern Turkistan expedition of—ends in disaster, 41; pays tribute to China, 41; Vincent Smith's view on, 41, f.n.; conquers Northern India, 41.
Kailash Dar, Pandit, councillor of Nür-ud-Din Bāmīzāl, Afghan governor, 313, 314, 315.
Kaimū, old name Katimusha, two miles from Bijbihāra, place of burial of Shaikh Nür-ud-Din's relations, 98-99.
Kadphises I, Kadphises II, Eastern Turkistan expedition of—ends in disaster, 41; pays tribute to China, 41; Vincent Smith's view on, 41, f.n.; conquers Northern India, 41.
Kalinda, patriarch, 59; military conquests, 59; Kshemendra, his teacher, 60; deposed by Harsha, 61.
Kalāl, a saint, exhorts Sundarsena and his subjects to give up dissolute conduct, 159; legend of the Wulur Lake, 159.
Kalānaur, on account of famine corn to Kashmir exported from, 272.
Kalhaṇa, or Kalyāṇa, the Nilamata-Purāṇa one of the main sources of his work, 11 f.n.; 17; chronological basis for Gonanda I, 35, f.n. 2; Pāṇdu dynasty, 36; description of the Emperor Aśoka, 37; admirer of the Buddha though a Cāvāite, 38; refers to Saṃdhimagati, 40; on Mihirakula, 44; on Lalitāditya, 52; on Vajrāditya's relations with Mlechhas or Muslims, 54; criticism of Kshemendra, 60; life and work, 64-65; the Rājanāraṇgini, 65-66; cultural contribution of, 70; Jonarāja brings his work up-to-date, 167; imitated by Črīvara, 167.
Kalidāsa, the dramatist, 46-47; birth, 46; his date, 46; his travels, 46; Pandit Lachhmidihar's arguments about his being a native of Kashmir (?), 46-47.
Kalimū-Čayyibūț, The, compiled by Mīr 'Ināyatullāh Kháń, 290.
Kalī, poet, 273.
Kāli Nāg, Kishṭwar, 237.
Kallata, originator of the Spandaṣṭra, 56.
Kamāl Dūl (not Dūl), challenges and kills Mīrzā Haidar Dughlat at the gate of Muhammadding, 206.
Kamāl-ud-Dīn, Mīr, later Mullā Kamāl, saves his father-in-law Sayyid Habībullāh Khwārizmi, 222. See also pp. 375-77 in Vol. II.
Kamāl-ud-Dīn Shaidā, Mīrzā, see Mīrzā Kamāl-ud-Dīn Shaidā. See also index to Vol. II.
Kāmrān, Mīrzā, Mīrzā Haidar Dughlat enters the service of, 202.
Kāmrān of Herāt, Shāh, delighted with Munshi Mohan Lāl's Persian, 339; wreaks vengeance on Fath Kháń, etc., 308.
Kamarāj, or Kamarāz, one of the two divisions of the Valley, 7; area, 8; misruled by Ádam Kháń, 180; personal estate of Hassan Kháń, 184; flight of Shams-ud-Dīn Chak to, 190.
Kāngra, chief of—a feudatory of Lalitāditya, 52; Čamkaravarman's, expedition to, 57.
Kanishka, his accession, 41; extension of his empire, 41; annexes Kashmir
Kashmir, 41; builds monuments in Kashmir, 41-42; the Third Council meets under his patronage, 42; Nāgārjuna, his contemporary, 42-43; his conquests, 43.

Kanishkapura, built by Kanishka, 42.
Kānispūr, modern village, site of the old Kanishkapura, 42.

Karewa, the plateaus, studied by Oldham, their origin, 12.

Karewa Hills, the Dūdhganga enters, 10, f. n. 2.

Karkhi, Ma'rūf, Wāhid Sāfi's mode of living compared to, 96; note on, 96, f. n. 4.

Kārkun, the class of Brāhmans came into being during the reign of Bād Sahl, 173.

Karmasena, King, his commander, Dūlcha, invades Kashmir, 67.
Karnāh, the valley of, 7.

Karpūrabhāṭṭa, physician of the time of Bād Sahl, 168.

Karchāshab, an ancestor of Sāh Mīr, 130.

Kāsamira, Sātisārās the old name of Kashmir replaced by, 12.

Kash, a Semitic tribe, 12; theories of its origin, 12 f. n. 1; a town in the Bukhārā district, founded by them, 12 f. n. 2; extent of their dominion, 13.

Kāshān, town in Irbān, founded by the Kash, location, population, climate, etc., 12 f. n. 3.

Kāshghar, founded by the Kash, 12; location and description, 12, f. n. 4, 13; conquered by Kanishka, 43; invasion of Kashmir, 197; results of invasion of Kashmir from—, 198, 202, 203.

Kashīr, name given to Kashīr by the inhabitants, 12, 13, 17, 35.

Kāshūr, or Köshūr, the inhabitant and the language of Kashīr, 13.

Kashmir, praised by Abu'l Fazl, 1; description, 1-15; essential data for the study of early man in, 1; comparison with Switzerland, Piedmont, Greece, 2; the beauty of the Dal, 3-5; garden of perpetual spring, 5; other chief attractions, 5-6; variety of climate, 6-7, 11; the Valley, area and population, 8-9; extent, 7-8; lake in pre-historic times (l), 9; the legend of the lake, 9-11; geological evidence, 11; the name, 12-13; foreign references to—13-14; travellers and noted visitors, 14-15, annexed to Afghānistān at the time of the visit of George Forster, 14; Stone Age in, 15; early inhabitants, 15; the Jews, 15-16; expedition of Mahmūd repulsed, 16-17; language, 17; Indo-Āryan influence, 18; origin of the people, 19; character, 19-22; poetry, 20; craftsmen, 20, 21; business men, 21; resemblance with Ireland, 22; women and children, 22-25; criticism of the Kashmir, 25-29; earliest known kings of, 35-37; anarchy and confusion in, 39; administration under Jalauka, 39-40; the Kushāna Dynasty, 41-43; Hun rule, 43-44; Kālīdāsa, a native of, 46; Čaivism in, 46; suzerainty of Vikramāditya Harsha over, 47; conquered by Pravarasena II of Malwa, 47; Srṅagar, 47-49; Kārkotā (Nāga) Dynasty, 49-58; description by Yūan Chwang or Huen Tsiang, 50-51; political power of—extended, 51; glorious rule
INDEX—Vol. I

under Lālitāditya-Muktāpīda, 52-54; Vaijrajāditya and Jayāpīda, 54-55; decline of power, 55; Avantivarman and the Sanskritic revival, 55-57; misrule under Čakravarman, 57; anarchy and confusion, 55; mild rule of Yaçaskara, 55; establishment of the First Lohara Dynasty, 56-62; Kashmirgauda and his successors, 56; Sultan Mahmūd’s invasion, 58; Harirāja and his successors, 66; literature, 59-61, 63-66; confusion under Hārsha’s misrule, 62; and First Lohara Dynasty two centuries of misrule, 62-63; period of decay under Jayasimha’s successors, 66-69; Achala’s invasion, 69; causes of the ruin of Hindu rule in, 69—Gāivism, 71-2; spread of Islam in, 75-116; early contacts of Sind with—75-78; interaction of Hindu-Muslim cultures in, 80; Muslim majority, 80-81; missionary movement under friars and dervishes, 81; other reasons for mass conversion, 81; Bulbul Shāh’s missionary activities, 81-83; the Sayyida, 84-94; the Rishiyān-i-Kashmir, 96-102; Fuzarā, 116; last phase of Hindu rule in, 116-22; Rīchana or Sultan Sadr-ud-Dīn in—, 122-27; Kota Rāni’s reign, 127-31; Sultan Shams-ud-Dīn I, 132-134; his successors, 134-36; Sultan Shihāb-ud-Dīn’s conquests, 136-141; Sultan Sikandar, 143-154; era of peace, prosperity and expansion under Sultan Zain-ul-Ābidin, or Baṣ Shāh, 157-183; arts and crafts, 161; literature, 162-69; peace and prosperity, 162-75; Zain-ul-Ābidin’s successors, 184-212; faction fights for the throne between Muhammad Shāh and Fath Shāh, 187-95; rise of the Chaks, and conflict with the Bahīqis, Māgres and Rainas, 189-95; Sultan Khrāhim Shāh and his successors, 195-200; Mughul invasion, 196-198, 200; Mirzā Haidar Dughlāt’s reforms, 205; end of the Shāh Mīris, 212; the Chak Dynasty, 217-238; Mughul invasions, 231-33, 234; end of the Chak Dynasty, 234; causes of their downfall, 235-36; Mughul rule, 241-295; Akbar, Jahāngīr, Shāh Jahān and Aurangzib Ālamgīr, 244-86; Mughul administration, 247-48, 250-61, 263, 275-76; an outpost of the Mughul empire, 278; riots and internecine struggles under the later Mughuis, 280; benefits of Mughul rule, 294-95; summer resort of Mughul emperors, 295; Afghān rule, 293-34; 297-341; its bad start, 308; misrule under Afghān Governors, 309-313, 316, 318, 323; attempts at independence, by them, 312-315, 317, 319, 322, 323; Ranjit Singh’s interest in—324-23; Ranjit Singh’s invasions, 329-332, 334-37; end of Muslim rule in—337-41.

Kashmiris, inhabitants, different from surrounding races, 15; resemblance to Jews, 16; Kashmirī not the name of the language by its inhabitants, 17; valorous defence against Mahmūd, 17; defence measures adopted in Kashmir according to Al-Biruīni, 17; Arab influence on, 18; strong Indo-Aryan admixture with, 19; character, 19-22; imagination, 20; craftsmen, 20, 21; business men, 21; sense of humour, 22; criticism of, 25-29; classed with the Kambū and the Afghān, 25; boatmen, 25; coward, liar and dirty fellow, 26; coole, 26; professional wrestler, 26-27; Aldous Huxley’s criticism of, 27-28; character vindicated, 29; hopes for the future, 29; traditions, 36; Buddhist influence, 38; Hhuson Kwan, (Hiuon Tsang) on, 50.

Kashmirī era, introduced by Sultan Shams-ud-Dīn I, 133.

Kashmirī language, called Köshur, 1, f. n.; area where spoken, 7; relation with Dardic, not Sanskrit group, 17; belongs to the Indo-Iranian group, affinity with other languages, 17; influence of Sanskrit on, 17,
19; Uttha-Soma’s Jaina-Charita, or Zain-ul-‘Abidin’s life in, 167; literature receives a great impetus under Zain-ul-‘Abidin, 168.

Kashtavār, Kishtwār valley, 67-68; location, 67; Hindu rājās, 67; Rājās Jaya Singh and Kirat Singh, 115; embrace Islam, 67; independence lost owing to conquest by Mahārājā Gulāb Singh, 67; Ya’qūb Shāh Chak takes shelter in, 67; description of the valley, 67; Kishtwār Town, 68; shrines, 68; added to Kashmir by Sultan Shīhāb-ud-Dīn, 137, 226; death of Ya’qūb at, 236; grave of Ya’qūb at, 237.

Kasia Regio of Ptolemy, inhabited by the Kash (?), 13.

Kasii Montes of Ptolemy, inhabited by the Kash (?), 13.

Kaspatyrus, Greek name for Kashmir (?), 14.

Kathā Kautuka, The, sanskritized version of Jāmī’s Yūsuf-Zulaikhā by Crivava, 167, and f.n. 3, 191.

Kaṭimusha, old name of Kaimūh, which see.

Kauravas, or Kurus, Gonanda I, a contemporary of the, 35 f.n.; 36.

Kausar-nāg, mountain lake, 44.

Kāyasthas, their claim to origin from a serpent king, 49; rapacious administration before Avantivarman, 55.

Kaye, John William, on Zamān Shāh’s threatened invasion of India, 303; on Shāh Shujā’s failures, 307; on Munshi Mohan Lāl, 341.

Keith, Sir A. Berriedale, misstates the date of the Sanskrit translation of Jāmī’s Yūsuf-Zulaikhā by Crivava, entitled the Kathā-Kautuka, 167 and f.n. 3; 191.

Khagās, Himālayan hill tribe different from the Kash, 12 f.n. 1.

Khakha, Rājput tribe embraces Islam, 108.

Khā Españ, Bābā Dā’ūd, see Dā’ūd Khā Españ.

Khalīsman, a Muslim Rishi, who, with his two other brothers, lived in the time of Sultān Jamshid, 134.

Khalil Marjānpuri’s history of Kashmir quoted, 287 f.n.; 291; 293.

Khān, title, adopted by rulers of petty provinces, 136.

Khānam, Mirzā Haidar’s wife, 208.

Khandalvan Vihār near Harvan, the Third Buddhist Council meets at, l2.

Khānjī, Mirzā Haidar’s sister-in-law, 208.

Khānpōr or Kāmpōr, a village of 100 souls, 12 miles from Srinagar, Mirzā Haidar killed at, 207, 206.

Khāṇqāh and ziyyārat defined, 125, f.n.

Khāṇqāh-i-Ālā, at Trāl near Vantipor, 146.

Khāṇqāh-i-Kubrawi, in Māṭan, 146.

Khāṇqāh-i-Mu’ālla, in Srinagar, 146; ziyyārat or shrine, 89.

Khāṇqāh-i-Wālla, in Wachī, parganā Shāvara, 146.

Khān-uz-Zaman, title of Fath Chak, which see.

Khānyār, mahalla, of Srinagar, 166.

Khawār, meaning ass-load, 251 also f.n. 1. See also p. 644, Vol. II.
INDEX—Vol. I

Khasta, Hargopāl Kaul, Pandit, which see.

Khataki, La'l Khān, see La'l Khan Khatak.

Khāṣak Singh, Prince, deputed by Ranjit Singh, 335; order by him to advance on the Pir Panjāl, 336. See also index to Vol. II.

Khatlān, the burial-place of Shāh Hamadān, 87, f.n. 2; Appendix to Chapter III, 116 a, b, c, d. See Khuttālān.

Khawānd Māhmūd of Bakhārā, Khwāja, comes to Kashmir, 272.

Khażinatu'l-Asfiyā, The, explanation for Shāh Hamadān's burial at Khuttān, 88.

Khotī, see Khuttālān.

Khūb Nīgar Khānam, younger sister of Bābur's mother, 20C.

Khizāna-i-'Āmira, The, of Mīr Ghalâm 'All Azād Bilgrāmī quoted, 311

Khūrāsān, one of the five great provinces of Iran, 110 f.n., 100.

Khurram Khān, Afghān governor, 314.

Khutan, conquered by Kanishka, 43.

Khunamush, birth-place of Bultān Sikandār's queen, 143.

Khūshāb, Bhera in, 311.

Khybar Pass, the, Shāh Shujā' fled to, 304.

Khuttālān, or Khatlān or Khuttān or Khotī, the burial-place of Shāh Hamadān, 87; location, history, etc., 87, f.n. 2; explanation for the burial at, 88; shrine over the burial-place at, 88; Appendix to Chapter III, 116 a, b, c, d.

Kīf'ayh-i-Mansūrī, The, Hakim Mansūr's Persian work on medicine, 165.

Kījak (distortion of Kūchak) Khwāja, alısı Khwāja 'Abdullāh, the administrator's nā'īş under Rājā Sukh Jiwan, 309.

Kings of Kashmir, dynastic lists according to Kalhana and Jōnarāja 30-34;

Kishangāṅgā, the, watershed, 9. [133A]; 213-16.

Kishtwār, valley, 7; see Kashtavār, 67-68.

Kūh-i-Nūr, the, or the Kūh-i-Nūr diamond, history of, 325-26.

Kolahai, the Matterhorn of Kashmir, 6.

Kōlāb Truth, The, newspaper, containing an article of Mr. Kolpakoff on the Mausoleum of Shāh Hamadān at Kōlāb, 116 a, c.

Kolpakoff, Mr., his descriptive note on Shāh Hamadān's Mausoleum at Kōlāb, 116 a, b, c, d.

Kolāb 87 f.n. 2, appendix to Chapter III, 116 a, b, c, d.

Kōsbur, inhabitant of Kashmir and the language, 1 f. n. 1, 13, 17.

Kōṭā Rāni, Rīchāna marries, 69, 121; Queen-Regent, 127; marries Uḍyānadeva, 69, 128; her religion, 127; invasions of Dūlchā and Urwān or Urdūl (Achāla) 128-29; appeal to her subjects, 129; Achāla defeated, 129; return of Uḍyānadeva and popular resentment against him, 129; her rule, 69, 130; revolt of Shāh Mīr, 130-31; rejects Shāh Mīr's offer of marriage, 131; forced to marry Shāh Mīr, 131; commits suicide (1), 131.

Koṭṭabhaṭṭa, minister, receives many favours from Sultan Shīhāb-ud-Dīn, 140.
Kramarajya, Sanskrit name for Kamaraj, 8. See also Kamraj.
Krishna, Gonada I makes war on, 35; attacked by Damodara I, 36.
Kshemanagupta, raj, marries Didda, 58.
Kshemendra, poet, birth and education, 60; character, 60; works, Darpadalana, Desha Upadesha, 60; Nypaivali criticized by Kalhana, 60; Keith's discussion of the Bhatkathamañjar, 60; his cultural contribution, 70.
Kud Mal Ded, wife of Pandit Birbal Dar, puts an end to her life, 333, also f. n. 2.
Kuh-i-Nur or the Koh-i-Nur, which see.
Kukarnag, gushing spring of, 4, and f.n. 3-4.
Kuhistan, the, Highlands of Kashmir, people from it recruited for the Kashmir army, 137.
Kulgam, Tahsil of Anantnag or Islambad, 7.
Kulah, or Kulata, Be Shah takes the town of, 170.
Kumaraajiva, the, Buddhist, his University in Kashmir, 70-71.
Kunar or Kunar-with-Nar-gal in Kafiristan, Shah Hamadan dies at according to Babur, 87, 88.
Kurus, do not seek aid of Kashmir, 36.
Kushana Dynasty in Kashmir, 41-43; Kadphises I, 41; Kadphises II, 41; Kanishka, 41-43; Huvishta, 43; Vasudeva or Jushka, 43; the dynasty comes to an end in Kashmir, 43.
Ku-shi-h-mi, Chinese name for the Valley of Kashmir, 13.
Kuttaraja, kingdoms founded by Brahmans, according to tradition, 35, f. n. 1.

Lachhum-nagar, built by Sultan Shiah-b-ud-Din, 139.
Ladhkh, Western Tibet, Rishohana belonged to, 68, 81; visited by Shah Hamadan, 66; gold dust in the rivers of, 175; Adam Khan's conquest of, 179-80; Mirza Haidar's march on, 201; geographical description, 219.
Lahore, minarets of, seen from the top of the Pir Panjal Pass, 46.
Lahul, in Kangra, Be Shah returns by way of, 170; addenda to Chapter IV, p. 212.
La'ilai, Ranjit Singh's favourite horse lost in the first Kashmir campaign, 330; Hugel on the story of this horse, 330 f.n. 1.
Lakes of Kashmir, 1, 2, 4, 56, 158, f. n. 3.
Lakshmana, architect of the Vishnu temple at Tapaar, 51.
Lal Bagh, built by Munshi Mohan Lal, near Azadpur on the Delhi-Panipat Road, 340.
INDEX—Vol. I

Lalitādiya-Muktāpīḍa, glorious rule, 52-54, 60; conquests, 52; embassy to the Chinese Emperor, 52; appeals against the Arabs, 52, 77; his feudatories, 52; his city of Parihaṣapura and his additions to the temple at Mārtanda, 52-53; improvement of agriculture, 53, administration, 53, instrument of instruction on the art of governance, 53-54.

La’l Khān Khatak displaces Jān Muhammad as governor of Kashmir, 313.

Lalla, the hermitess, birth during Udyanadeva’s reign, 69; attracts general notice during the reign of Sūltān ‘Alā’-ud-Dīn, 135.

Lalla Rookh, reference to the celebrated poem of Thomas Moore known as the, 278-285; Moore on Lalla Rookh, 279-85; details of the history and romance of the poem, 278-81, f.n.; supposed to be the imaginary youngest daughter of the Emperor Aurangzīb ‘Alamgīr married to the son of ‘Abdullah Khān of Kāshghar, 280.

Lashkar Khān, last governor under Shāh Jahān, 272, Kāshmir prosperous under him, 272.

Lankan or Langar Chak, ancestor of the Chaks, receives hospitality from Sahadeva, 118, 217, 218.

Lauluha or Lōlauv, ancient name of modern Lōlāb, 37.

Latīf-ud-Dīn, a disciple of Sheikh Nūr-ud-Dīn, 102; originally a Hindu, converted to Islam, 102.

Lava, elected king after Sundarasena, 37.

Lawrence, Sir Walter R., description of the Valley, quoted from his book, The Valley of Kāshmir, 8 and f.n. 1; on the Jewish cast of Kāshmiri faces, 16; on the resemblance of the Kāshmiri cultivator to an Irishman, 22; quoted on the shade given by the Kābūl poplar, 97; on Sikandar, 108; date for Shāms-ud-Dīn ‘Īṭāqī, 109. See also Vol. II.

Legend of the Lake, regarding Kāgyapa’s pilgrimage for the destruction of Jalodhbhava, 9-10; reference to the king Nīlā-Nāga and the Nilamata-Purāṇa, 10-11.

Leh, King of Kulū vassal of the king of, 170; 208 f.n.; town of Lādākh, 219.

Loman, Lake, the Wulur, reminds one of, 159 f.n.

Lenin, Sayyid Mubārak Khān Bāihāqī acts socially like, 228.

Leningrad, 116a,b.

Les Lettres Edifiantes, a letter containing observations of Father Desideri on Kāshmir, 14.

Lhassa, Father Desideri’s letter from. 14.

Liddar Valley, contains Česhanāg, 4.

Literature, Abhinavagupta’s writings, 60; Kāshemendra’s studies, 60; Bilhaṅg’s works, 61; Māmata’s contribution, 63-64; Māṅkha’s poetry, 64; Kālhaṇa’s Chronicles, 64-5; the Rājatarangini, 65-66; patronage of Sūltān Sikandar, 145-6; patronage of Zain-ul-’Abidīn, 162-169; Mullā Ahmad Kāshmirī and his works, 163; other scholars and their works, 164-66; patronage of Samskrit, 166-168; Hindu scholars and their works, 167-8; poets and poetry, 168-9; literary activities during the reign of Sultan Haṣan Shāh, 185-6; Črīvara’s Kathā Kautuka, 167, 191; famous poets during the reign of Jahāngīr and Shāh Jahān, 273. See also pages 343-500, Chapter VIII, Vol. II.
Lohara Dynasty (First), 58-62; Kshemagupta, 58; Abhimanyu II, 58; Queen Diddā, 58; Sultan Mahnūd's invasion, 59; Harirāja, Ananta and Kalāga, 59; Sanskrit scholars, 59-61; Harsha and the end of the dynasty, 61-62.

Lohara Dynasty (Second), 62-63; Ucchala, 62; two centuries of misrule, 63; Sussala, 63; Jayasimha, 63; Mammatā and other pets, 63-66; Jayasimha's successors, 66; Sahadeva, 167; Dulcha's invasion, 67-8; Rīchana, 69; Udyanadeva and Koṭā Rāṇī, 69.

Lohāru, Nawāb Mirzā 'Aīs'-ud-Dīn Khān 'Alī of, 340.

Lohur Shāh Chak, Badi'-ud-Dīn or Gauhar Shāh, known as, accession of, 228; Yusuf Shāh Chak's invasion, 229; abdication, 229.

Lolāb, reminding one of Scotland and Wales, 6; see Laulaha.

Lōlare, heroine in a popular love-story, the beloved of Bōmbur, 36.

Lollards, persecution of the—in England, 149; contemporaries with Sikandar's rule, 149.

Los Angeles, Kāshmir climate compared to, 7.

Lost tribe, Kāshmiris considered one of them (?), 16; Dr. Batt and Dr. Baird's theories on, 17-18.

Ludhiāna, Shāh Shujā's journey to, 307, Mohan Lāl's Imāmbāra at, 340.

Lūf Shor temple, Sultan Sikandar buried on the former site of, 148.

Lālī, barber, Sultan Haidar Shāh's favourite, 184 and f.n. 2.

Lālī Lōn, Malik, one of Husain Chak's bodyguard, 222.

Lāristān, province of Irān, Sayyid Muhammad, a mosaic worker for the Jāmi' Masjīd, Srinagar, belonged to, 146, and f.n. 2.


Madad Khān Durrānī, Saif-ud-Daula, governor under the Afghāns, nine months' bad rule of, 318-19.

Madavarājya, Samskrāt name for Marāj, 8.

Madani, Muhammad, see Muhammad Madani.

Māgrea, family raised by Sultan Shama-ud-Dīn I, 33; Sultan Sikandar's minister, Rāy Māggre and his exploits, 144; defeated by Sultan Sikandar, 144; Jahāṅgr Māgre defeats Fatḥ Khān, son of Ādam, Khān, 188; wounded and defeated by Fatḥ Khān, 188; Ibrāhīm Māgre won over by Sayyid Muhammad Bhaiqaqī, 189; becomes Sūnī leader, 192; Fatḥ Shāh seeks the help of, against Mūsā Raina's persecution of Sunnīs, 192; becomes prime minister, 192; vacates his post for Malik 'Usmān after 40 days, 192; reinstates himself, 192; replaced by Malik 'Usmān, 192; joins Muhammad Shāh, 192; Dānī Malik, a Māgre notable, blamed and exiled for Shama Chak's murder, 192; recalled by Ibrāhīm Māgre, 192; installs Sultan Muhammad Shāh on the throne, 193; invited by Jahāṅgr Padar and others, 193; slain in battle against Fath Shāh, 193; Lohur Māgre, leader of a faction of nobles defeated by Kājī Chak, 194; Abd al-Māgre devastates the country, 194; invades Kāshmir with the Mughul army, 195; defeats Ibrāhīm Shāh, 195; pursues Kājī Chak, 196; chief minister of Nāsuk Shāh, 195-196; reinstates Muhammad Shāh, 196; Kājī
Chak and he jointly forced the Kāshgār invaders to sue for peace, 197; peace treaty with the Mughuls, 198; strife with the Chaks during the reign of Sultan Shams-ud-Dīn II, 199; seeks help of Mughuls, 202; defeats Kājī Chak with Mughul help, 200; rules over one-third of the kingdom, 200; Hussain Māgre, intrigue against Rijāl Chak, 205; campaign against Mīrzā Haidar Dughlāt, 205; captured by Daulat Chak, 209; released and made councillor, 210.

Mahābharata war occurs during the time of the infant king Gondanīa II, 35, 36.

Māḥ-i-Khorāsānī, a descendant of Shāh Hamadān, buried at Kolāb, 116 b. Māḥrām Beg, wrongly written Mujrim Beg, Mīrzā Kamrān's general, sends a congratulatory poem to Kamrān, 196.

Mahāpaḍaṇa-saras, ancient name of the Wulur Lake, 158 f. n. 3; continued below page 159.

Māhādev, Pandit, 'Ali Mardān Khān's secretary, profits by his master's generosity, 272.

Māharāṣṭra, Yādhabhaṭṭa studies the Atharva Veda in, 167.

Māhāyāna system, founded by Nāgārjuna, 42; introduced into Tibet, 43.

Māḥmūd I (Khaljī) of Mālwa, contemporary of Bād Shāh, 171.

Māḥmūd Begarha of Gujarāt, receives Bād Shāh's embassy, 171.

Māḥmūd Shāh, of Jaunpur, a contemporary of Bād Shāh, 171.


Mālīk, title adopted by rulers of petty provinces, 138.

Mālik Haidar Chāḍura, see Haidar Malik Chāḍura.

Mālik Sāif-ud-Dīn, see Sūḥabhaṭṭa.

Mālwa, Pravaraṇa II, a prince of, 47.

Māmelladvī, mother of Harsha of Kanauj or Qanauj, 64.

Mammaṭa, a noted litterateur, and his brothers, 63; his works, relation to Harsha, 64.

Māṇiasbal, mountain lake, 4, and f. n. 6.

Māṇḍadeva, referred to in the inscription in the Vishṇu temple at Tāpar, 51.

Māṇdal Bādr, referred to by Jahāṅgīr as the capital of Kīśhtwār, 265.

Māṅglī, between Mānsehra and Abbotābād, 207; annexed by Ghāzi Chak, 219.

Mānakha, poet; director of Dharmaṇtha and foreign minister, 64; his book Crikṣaṇṭhakharita, 64.

Mānsūr al-Hallāj, Muslim mystic, see Abū'ī Mughīthīt.

Mārāj, Mara-rāj, Marāz, one of the two divisions of the Valley, 8.

Mārco Polo, refers to the presence of Muslims in Kashmir, 77.

Marriage of widows, 128; with husband's brothers, 128.

Mārṣar, a lake in the Phāk pargāna, 230.

Mārtanda temple, 52-53; architecture of the Kashmirian style, 53.

Mārti, Pope, issues a bull against heretics, 149.
Ma‘rūf Karkhī see Karkhī.
Mārūt and Hārūt angels, ensnared by the beauty of Kashmirī women, in legend, 22.
Mary, Queen of England, causes people to be burnt at the stake, 149.
Mashrabī, poet, on Kh. Kháwand Mahmūd Naqshbandī of Bukhārā, 272.
Mas‘ūd, son of Sultān Mahmūd, 59.
Mas‘ūd Nāyak, officer of Husain Shāh Chak’s bodyguard, 222.
Mathurā, 35 f.n.; besieged by Gonanda I, 36; country around—a great centre of Nāga worship, 49.
Matterhorn, compared to Kolahai, 6; addenda to Chapter I, p. 73.
Maurya Dynasty, 37-41; Apoka, 37-38; Jaloka or Jalauka, 39-40; Dāmodara, 40.
Mayasūm, island, formerly European quarter in Srinagar, 49.
Mayef, Mr., on Kolāb, 87, f.n. 2.
Mecca, Shāh Hamadān’s pilgrimage to, 86; Mir Muhammad Hamadānī’s pilgrimage to, 94; proposed pilgrimage of Sultān ‘Alī Shāh to, 155; Baḏ Shāh sends ambassador to the Sharif of, 171; contemporaries of Baḏ Shāh among the Sharifs of, 172.
Meghaduta, The, by Kālidāsa, argument of the work points to Kashmir as the home of the poet, according to Pandit Lachhmidhar, 47.
Menander, the Bactrian king of Northern India, delights in controversies with Nāgārjuna, 42, f.n. 2.
Mexico, Northern, warmth of climate compared to that of Kashmir, 7.
Mihirakula, seizes throne of Kashmir, 43-44; his revolting acts of cruelty, 44; defeated by Magadhan confederacy, 44; commits suicide, 44.
Mīra of Ohind, queen of Sultān Sikandar, 143; her son, Shāhī Khān, afterwards Baḏ Shāh or Sultān Zain-ul-‘Abbīdīn, 144.
Mīr ‘Alī Bukhārī, Qāżī, scholar, recipient of Zain-ul-‘Abbīdīn’s patronage, 165.
Mīr Asbātāk, Sultān Shihāb-ud-Dīn’s early name according to the Siyār, 136.
Mīr Dāniyāl, see Dāniyāl.
Mīr Fāzil Khān, see Fāzil Khān
Mīr Hazār Khān, independent Afghan governor, 319; intolerance towards the Shi‘a and Hindus, 319-20; chastized by Zamān Shāh, 320.
Mīr Ilāhī, poet, 273.
Mīr Husain Rishī, a Muslim mystic, 96 f.n. 2.
Mīr ‘Ināyatullāh Khān Kashmirī, appointed governor, 290; character and talents, 290; administration, 291; measures against corruption, 291; riots and rebellion, 291-92; re-appointed governor, 292; ‘Ināyatullāh II (originally, ‘Atfātullāh), the younger son of Mīr ‘Ināyatullāh, later also becomes governor of Kashmir.
Mīr Khān, first son, announced successor by Sultān Sikandar, 147; see Sultān ‘Alī Shāh.
INDEX—Vol. I.

Mir Muhammad Hamadānī, Sayyid, early life and education, 92; literary works, treatise on Sufism and the Shamsiyah, 93; receives great honour from Sultan Sikandar, 93; conversion of Malik Suhabbatṭa, who then becomes Malik Saif-ud-Din, 93; marries Suhabbatṭa’s daughter, Bibi Bari’ā, 93; social reforms, 93-4; present of villages by Sultan Sikandar to, 94; leaves for the Hajj, 94; Sayyid followers, 94; religious and literary works, treatise on Sufism and the Shamsiyah, 93; receives great honour from Sultan Sikandar, 93; conversion of Malik Suhabhatk, who then becomes Malik &il-ud-Din, 93; marries Suhabhatk’s daughter, Bibi Biria, 93; social reforms, 93-4; present of villages by Sultan Sikandar to, 94; leaves for the Hajj, 94; by id followers, 94; death, 94; warns Suhabhatk against persecution of Hindus, 106; respected by Sultan Sikandar, 147; advises Sikandar against violence towards Hindus, 147.

Mir Muqim Kanth, a notable, conspires to drive away Khwaja Abu’l Hasan Bānde, 310, 313.

Mirzā Kamāl-ud-Din Shaida’, on the Kashmiri’s veneration for Shaikh Hamza Makhdūm, 114. See also Kamāl-ud-Din Shaida’. And index to Vol. II.

Missionaries, Buddhist, 42, 51; Christian, 14, 95, 250; Muslim, 81; faqirs, dervishes and the ‘ulamā’, 81; Bulbul Shāh’s activities, 81-83; conversions by Sayyids, 84; Shāh Hamadān and his disciples, 89; Rishīyān-i-Kashmir, 96-102; Shaikh Shams-ud-Din ‘Irāqī, 109-112; Shaikh Hamza Makhdūm, 112-14.

Mlecchas, or Mongolian hordes, harass Aoka’s empire, 39; Muslims, Vajrāditya sells many men to, 54, 77; Lalitāditya seeks aid from China against Arabs, 52; Harsha employs Muslim captains, 62; read Persian translations of Hindu sacred books in Sanskrit, 167.


Mohan Lal Kashmiri, Pandit, parentage, 338; education and travel, 339; honoured by kings, 339; literary works, 340; called Aghā Hasan Jān, 340; critical estimate, 340-41, Major B.D. Basu on, 341.

Mont Blanc, Kashmir hills out-top, 2.

Montgomerie, opinion on the Wulur Lake, 11-12.

Montpellier, in Southern France, Dr. Bernier attached to the Faculty of, 14.

Monuments, Buddhist erected by Kanishka, 41; at Avantipura, 56; ruins at Čānkarsapura, 57; Muslim monuments—see under Sultan Sikandar, Bad Shāh, and under Mughuls and Afghāns. See also pages 505-521, Volume II, about Architecture.

Moorcroft, Dr. William, a noted visitor to Kashmir, 15; on the physique of the Kashmiri, 27; transcript of the Rājatarangīṇī obtained during his visit to Kashmir, 65; Mirzā Haidar’s grave repaired at the instance of, 208; birth, early life and education, etc., 208 f.n.; George Trebeck, his companion, 208, f.n.; Abbé Hue on the death of Moorcroft, 208 f.n.; an intelligence officer (?) according to Mr. H. L. O. Garrett, 208 f.n.

Moore, Thomas, 278 footnote. See Lalla Rookh.

Morocco, Fez in, 8.

Mosaic workers in the Jāmi’ Masjid, Srinagar, 146.

Moscow, in reference to Professor Pavlovsky’s stay at, 116a.

Mount Bisuttān, referred to by Hafiz Jālandhari, 1.

Mount Imaus, Kasia Regio and Kasii Montes of Ptolemy, beyond, 13.

Mubarak Khan, of Khāndesh, a contemporary of Bad Shāh, 171.
Mughlānī Begam, the governor of Lāhore, offered the governorship of Kashmir by Ahmad Shāh Durrānī, 312; offered annual tribute by Sukh Jiwan Mal which prevented her acceptance of Ahmad Shāh's offer, 313.

Mughuls, the, garden ruins on the Mānsabal, 4 f.n.; appreciation of the Valley of Kashmir, 8; hospice at the ‘Allābād Sarāi, 44, f.n. 3; Adam Khān killed by a party of, 184; Bābur sends army to Kashmir, 195; Abdāl Māgre assisted by, 195; Akbar's reign supposed to begin, 231, 241-51; rebellion of the Chaks against, 241-42; Akbar dispatches troops, 242-43; Akbar's reign in Kashmir, 244-51; Jahāngīr's reign, 251-66; Shāh Jahan's visit and rule, 266-73; Aurangzīb 'Alamgīr's reign, 273-86; the Later Mughuls, 286-98; benefits of Mughul rule, 294-95.

Muhammad Afzal of Bukhārā, Maulāna, head of the college during the reign of Sultān Sikandar, 146.

Muhammad 'Āli Balkhi, Sayyid, gives up sovereignty for saintly life, 166.

Muhammad 'Allāfī, or ‘Allāfī, Arab mercenary, dismissed by Dāhir, 76; granted safe passage by Muhammad bin Qāsim, 75; Hamīm, one of the attendants (?) of, 76.

Muhammad bin Qāsim's invasion of Sind, 75; slays Dāhir, 76; erects the Jāmi' Masjid at Multān, 76; proceeds to the boundary of Kashmir, 76.

Muhammad Husain 'Ārif, K. B. Pirzāda, on the uncleanliness of the women of Kashmir, 23; on the ruined condition of the tomb of Bāḏ Shāh, 182.

Muhammad Khān, appointed prime minister by his brother, Bāḏ Shāh, 157.

Muhammad Madani, Sayyid, foreign envoy and scholar at the court of Sikandar, 146. See also index to Vol. II.

Muhammad Murād Kashmirī, early life and career, 288; victim of intrigues and death, 288

Muhammad Nazr, an adherent of Mīrzā Haidar Dughlāt, killed in the Shi'ite strife, 207.

Muhammad Shāh Din, Justice Miyan, on the beauty of the Dāl, 4; on the romantic entry into the Shālāmār gardens of Nūr Jahān and Nūr-ud-Din Jahāngīr, 253.

Muhammad Shāh, Emperor Nādir-ud-Din (Later Mughul), intrigues for the throne, 286; Nādir Shāh's invasion of India, 287; accession, 289; character, 289; riots and internecine struggles in Kashmir, 290; death, 290.

Muhammad Shāh, Sultān, regency of Hasan Bhaihaqi, 187; struggle for the throne, 187; Fath Khān's advance and victory, 187; vacates throne and is imprisoned, 187; regains throne with the help of his uncle Sayyid Muhammad Bhaihaqi, 190; defeat at Khāmpōr and loss of throne, 190-1; Chak defection ascribed to the meanness and parsimony of, 191; Čīlvara samskritizes Jāmi's Yūsuf-u-Zulaiḥā for the edification of, 191; advance against Fath Shāh, 192; victory at Ghāzikōt, 192; Ibrāhīm Māgre and other notables join, 193; seeks help of Sikandar Lodī of Delhi, 193; rewards Kājī Chak for his services, 194; faction fight and rebellions, 194-5; Bābur's invasion repulsed
INDEX—Vol. I.

by Kāji Chak, 195; deposed by Kāji Chak, prisoner at Lohkōt, 190; reinstated by Abdāl Māgre, 195; Māgre domination, 196; Kāmrān’s invasion repulsed by Kāji Chak, 197; invasion of Sikandar Khān of Kāshgār accompanied by Mīrzā Haidar Dūghlāt, 197; plunder of Srinagar, 198; invaders forced to sue for peace by Kāji Chak and Abdāl Māgre, 197; desolation and famine, 198; relief measures, 198; death, 198.

Muhammad-ud-Dīn Fauq, Munshi, historian of Kāshmīr, controversy about the authorship of the lines ascribed to Mullā Ahmad Kashmirī by Malik Haidar Chādūra, 169; his works: the Mukammal Ta’rikh-i-Kāshmīr and the Ta’rikh-i-Bāqshāhī, 169. See also pages 377-8 footnote for his life in Volume II, Chapter VIII.

Mu’izz-ud-Dīn Mubārak, of Delhi, contemporary of Baḏ Shāh, 171.

Muḥtawi Khān or Mahbūb Khān, Mullā Abdūn Nābī, Shaikh-ul-Islām, trouble caused by his attitude to Kāshmīrī Pandīts, 291-2.

Mukhōr-ud-Daula, Sher Muhammad Khān son of Shāh Wālī Khān, so designated by Mahmūd when ruler of Afgānīstān, 304.

Mukhtasār, Mīrzā Haidar Dūghlāt styles the second part of his Ta’rikh-i-Kashīrī as the—, 203.

Muktāpīḍa, 52-54, see Lallāṭidītīya.

Mullā Ahmad Kashmirī, scholar, poet and historian at the court of Sultān Zain-ul-‘Ābidin (Baḏ Shāh), his well-known chronogram on the royal palace of Baḏ Shāh, 160, 163; life and works, 163; the Ta’rikh-i-Waqā’i-i-Kāshmīr, 163; translations of the Mahābhārata and of the Rājāraṅgīnī, 163-64; his poetry, 168; his works, 165; lines quoted by Malik Haidar Chādūra, 168.

Mullā Nādirī, see Nādirī.

Mullā Pārsā, see Pārsā.

Mullā Shāh Muhammad, see under Shāh Muhammad.

Mūmin, Khwāja, poet, 273.

Mūltān, Qutb-ud-Dīn Shāh of, a contemporary of Baḏ Shāh, 171.

Muqīm Jauhari, Muhammad, mentioned in Zafar Khān’s Divān, 273.

Muqarrab Khān, governor of Delhi, in attendance on Jahāngīr in Kāshmīr, 260.

Muqīm, Mīr, see Mīr Muqīm, a notable during early Afgān rule.

Murree, rainfall compared to that of Gulmarg, 6.

Mūsā, one of the four sons of Abdāl, 298.

Musalmān-ī, compared to the Pandītānī in features, 24.

Musalmāna of Kāshmīr and saint-worship, 20; Vajrādītīya sells many men to, 54; troop leaders under Harāsha, 62; under Jayasimha, 63; Riśchana’s conversion, 69; conversion of the people, 75; Hamīm, the first Muslim to enter Kāshmīr, 76; peaceful relations with the Hindus during Baḏ Shāh’s reign, 173-74; majority in the population, 80-81; missionary activities, 81-116. See also Islam and Conversion.

Mūsā Raina, see under Rainas.

Mūsī-ud-Dāwalā Bāmīzān, Nūr-ud-Dīn’s title, 303, see Nūr-ud-Dīn.

Muslim Geographers, al-Mas‘ūdī, al-Qazwīnī, al-Idrīsī, 18.
Muslims, number in the population of Kashmir, 8. See also Musalmāns. Muzaffar, Dr. S. D., his opinion on a person’s death by swallowing a piece of diamond, 333 f.n. 2.

Mysticism of Islam in Kashmir, 19; ingrained in the nature of the Kashmiri, 19; stimulation under the Sayyids, 94-95; under the Rishiyān-i-Kashmir, 96-102.

Nādir, poet, 273.

Nādir, Mullah, Malik Haidar bases his authority on—in respect of ‘Ali Shāh’s father-in-law being the ruler of Jammu, 105 f.n. 3; poet-laureate at the court of Baq Shāh in succession to Mulla Ahmad, 165; controversy regarding the authorship of the lines ascribed to Sultan Qutb-ud-Din and Khwāja Qutb-ud-Din Bakhtiyār Kāki of Delhi, 169.

Nādir Khān, a pawn in Abdāl Māgre’s game, 195; ascends the throne as Sultān Nāzuk Shāh, 195. See also Nāzuk Shāh.

Nādir Shāh of Iran, effects of his invasion on Kashmir, 203; Afghan revolt, 298; murdered, 293.

Nāga, name of the capital of a province in the Philippines, 49.

Nāga Hills, a district in the Surma Valley of Assam, 49.

Nāgām, Bahrām Khān’s jāgīr, 184.

Nāgarāja Kārkoṭa, in epic literature, 49.

Nāgārjuna, the great Bodhisatva, 42-43; presides over the Third Buddhist Council, 42; birth, parentage, and education, 42; becomes a monk, connexion with the Nāgas, 42; Menander’s delight in controversies with, 42 f.n. 2; founder of the Mahāyana system, 42-43.

Nāgar-nagar, the wall around the slopes of the Kāh-i-Mārān or the Hari-parbat, built by Akbar, 248; tomb of Bahā-ud-Dīn Gauj Baksh outside the—178.

Nāgas, 11 f.n.; relations with Nāgārjuna, 42; note on, 49-50; worship of, 49-50; dynasty established, 49; of Nopāl, 49; origin, 50; mixed up with the cult of Čaivism, 50.

Nāga worship, prevalent in Kashmir before the Buddhist period, 15, 226.

Nāgī, ancestress, story in the Far East of the, 49.

Nāgrāi, Himal’s lover in popular love-story, 36.

Nājī, Malik Muḥammad, forms a faction against Mirzā Haidar Dughlāt, 206; advises Yūsuf Shāh Chak to be generous to his opponents, 227.

Nālanda, Nāgārjuna arrives at, 42.

Nand Rām, Divān of Vafādār Khān, prime minister of Zamān Shāh, 321.

Nara, sixth in the line of the Gonanda Dynasty, burns Buddhist vihāras, 43.

Nārāīn Singh, prince of Kishāswār, offered as hostage to ‘Ali Shāh Chak, 226.

Nāran Nāg, Stone Age relics found at, 15.

Narkōṭ, a Kishāswār stronghold, 264.
INDEX—Vol. I

Nārwān, on the road by the Būdil pass, Ḥājjī Khān’s flight from Hūrapōr to, 180.

Nasīr-ud-Dīn Khānyārī, Sayyid, entrusted with ambassadorial duties by Baḍ Shāh, 166.

Nasīr-ud-Dīn Muhammad Shāh, see Muhammad Shāh Emperor.

Nasīr-ud-Dīn Muhammad Shāh of Bengāl, a contemporar of Baḍ Shāh, 171.

Nasrids of Granada, in Spain, contemporaries of Baḍ Shāh, 172.

Nasr-ud-Dīn, disciple of Shaikh Niir-ud-Dīn, 102; remembered as Bābā Nasr by the Kashmiris, 102.

Nasrullāh ‘Arab referred to by Jahāṅgīr, as partaking in the Kishṭwār campaign and guarding Kishṭwār, 264, 265.

Nau Shahr, near Srinagar, like New Delhi, capital of Baḍ Shāh, 161.

Naushahra, Fath Shāh’s exile to and death at, 193; Kāmrān leads an expedition from, 196; town, 196, f.n. 2.

Nāzīr, Chaudhāri Khushl Muhammad, Governor of Kashmir under the Dogrās, his couplets on the Dal quoted, 3; on the romantic days and scenes of Nūr-ud-Dīn Jahāṅgīr and Ḵūr Jahan versified, 266.

Nāzīz, persecution of Jews in Germany and Austria, 150-1.

Nāzuk Shāh, Sultan, accession, 195; appoints Abdāl Māgre prime minister, 195; dethroned by him, 197; Mirzā Haidar Dughlāt carries on the government in the name of, 204-207; elevated to the throne as titular king under Mirzā Haidar Dughlāt, 204-207.

Nehrū, Pandit Jawāhār (Jawhīr ?) Lāl, produced by the Nehrū family of Allāhābād, 289; his Autobiography referred to, 288 f.n. 4; on Mohan Lāl who became a Muslim, 340, 341.

Nehrū, Pandit Motilāl, Ranjit Pandit’s translation of the Ṭājataraṅgiṇī entitled River of Kings dedicated in affection to his Kashmirī father-in-law, 66; produced by the Nehrū family of Allāhābād, 289.

Nehrūs, leave Kashmir for Delhi in Farrukh Siyar’s time, 288; migration from Delhi to Allāhābād, 288-289.

Neapolitan of the East, Kashmirī called by the traveller G. T. Vigne, 21.

Nepāl, Karkoṭa and Nāges of, 49.

Nevé, Dr. Arthur, on climate of Kashmir more suitable than that of England for chest cases, 6.

Nikrāz, Shāh Mīr a descendant of, 130.

Nilāb, Kashmirī name of the Indus, 181.

Nilamata-Pūrāṇa, The, King Nīla-Nāga’s gift to the aged Brāhmaṇ, 11; source for legends regarding origin of Kashmir, used by Kalhaṇa, 11 f.n.

Nilamāga, Lake, Vār-Nag, also known as, 4 f.n. 3-4; aged Brāhmaṇ carried to, 10; location, Abu’l Fazl’s reference to its legends, 10 f.n. 2.

Nīla Nāga, Kaṭyapa’s son, 10; king presents the Nilamata-Pūrāṇa to the aged Brāhmaṇ, 11.

Nishāpūr, Iṭrān, Bāhāq north-west of, 166.

Niyāzi, Haibat Khān, attacks Kashmir, 209.
Nizām-ud-Dīn Ahmad, Bakhsī, Akbar's historian, on the ancestry of Shāh Mīr, 130; appreciation of Shāh Mīr, 134; case illustrating Bād Shāh's sense of justice, 157; on Bād Shāh's austere life, 177; on the nobles' advice to Haidar Shāh, 184; broad details of his life and works, 249-250.

Nizām-ud-Dīn (Nanda), Jām of Sind, receives embassy of Bād Shāh, 171.

Nūr Bakhsh, Sayyid Mu'tin-ud-Dīn 'Ali known as Shāh Qāsim Zurbakhsh, the son of Sayyid Muhammad Nūr Bakhsh of Khurāsān, 110.

Nūr Bakhshī sect, 109 and f.n. 5.

Nūr-ud-Dīn Ja'far al-Badakhshī, Shāh Hamadān's pupil, 91; deputed to Timūr by Sultān Sikandar, 145.

Nūr-ud-Dīn Khān Mualah-ud-Daula Bāmirai, appointed governor, 313; prosperity of the people, 313; intrigues and journey to Kābul, 313; appointed governor again, 314; strong rule, 314.

Ohind or Udabhāṇḍa, Čahīs of, 58; f.n. 3; Sultān Shihāb-ud-Dīn's expedition against, 86-138; subdued by Sultān Sikandar, 143.

Oldham, R. D., abandons the idea of Kashmir as a prehistoric lake, 12.

Orissa, Kapilēçvara or Kapilendra Deva of, contemporary of Bād Shāh, 171.


Ou-k'ong, or Wu-k'ong, Chinese pilgrim in Kashmir, 104; vihāras in Kashmir during the time of, 104.

Oxus valley, settled by the Yuch-Chi, 41.

Pach Bahā Kākāpūrī, another name of Bhikshaṇa Bhaṭṭa, Koṭā Rānī's minister, 128.

Pādar valley, 7.

Pahalgām, or the 'Shepherd's Village,' 60 miles from Srinagar, 4.

Pānda Khān or Sarfraz Khān, father of Vazīr Fath Khān, leader of the Brāракālī, 300, 302, 303, 304.

Pakhli, or Pakī, Shāh Hamadān's halt at, 87; location, etc. 87 f.n. 1; also 238; once a dependency of Kashmir, 87, f.n. 1; a sarkār according to Abūl Fazl, 87, f.n. 1; Sultān of, marries Baihaqī Begam's daughter, 178; 192; annexed by Gāzi Chak, 219.
Palestine, in reference to Christ, 41.
Pallācīla, in Bādgām Tahsil, battle between Hāji Khān and Ādam Khān, 180.
Pancāhāyat, for settling disputes between Hindu and Muslim subjects under Bād Shāh, 173-4.
Pāndavas, or Pāṇḍus, Gonanda I, contemporary of the, 35, also f.n. 2; 36.
Pāṇḍavārih, or Pāṇḍu edifice, 36.
Pāndit, influences the Kashmiri character, 19.
Pāndit, Shankar Pāṇḍurang, relies on the Kashmiri Manuscript for his edition of the Atharva Veda, 167.
Pāndit, Ranjit Sitārām, presents his book River of Kings to Motilal Nehru, 66; on Črī Čobhā, 106. See also Index to Vol. II.
Pānditānī, compared to the Musalman-nī, 24.
Pāndrēthan, Stone Age relics found at, 15; another name for Pravarapura (Srinagar) founded by Pravarasena I, 47.
Pāṇḍu Dynasty, 36-37; Harandeva, 37; Rāmadeva, 37; Sundarasena, 37.
Pāṇḍus, do not seek aid of Kashmir, 36.
Pānipat, defeat of Marathas at, 299; Hāji Karimdād takes part in the battle at, 315.
Pānīkkar, K. M., part of a false tradition added by a Kashmiri Pandit referred to in Gulab Singh by, 35, f.n.
Paradise, Kashmir had the reputation of being the, 1.
Paradise Lost, of Milton's Book IX, lines 115-118, referred to in connexion with the beauty of the Dal, 5.
Parakkama-Bāhu VI, ruler of Ceylon, contemporary of Bād Shāh, 171.
Paribāsāpura, of Lalitāditya-Muktāpīda, fourteen miles from Srinagar, 52; Čaṁkaravarman plunders temples of, 57.
Parṇotasa, now Pūńch, political power of Kashmir extended to, 51. See also Pūńch; note on—in Chapter XII, Vol. II.
Pārsā, Mullā, a scholar, who spent his life in the royal university at Nau Shahr, 164.
Pārsīs, their population in the Kashmir Valley, 8.
Pārtha, King, builds temple at Pāndrēthan, 39; dethroned several times, 57; his struggles with Chakravarman compared to those of Sultān Muhammad Shāh and Sultān Fath Shāh, 190.
Pārvatī, another name of Čakti manifestation of Čiva, 9.
Paṭān, ancient Čaṁkarapura, 57; ruins of the temples at, 57; Ghāzi Chak defeats Abūl Maʿālī near, 242.
Pātiāla, area compared to that of the Kashmir Valley, 8.
Pavlovsky, Professor E., Member of the Academy of Sciences, Leningrad, his letter to Dr. Sufi on the Mausoleum of Shāh Hamadān, 116 a,b,c,d.
Peasantry, robust and muscular physique of the Kashmiri—, 27.
Pelsaert, Francisco, a Dutch Protestant, his glimpses of Kashmir under Jahāngīr's rule over Kashmir, in his commercial report entitled the Remonstrantie, 259-262.
Peshāwar, the capital of Kaniakha, 41.
Persian poetry compared to Kashmiri poetry, 21; words in the Lokaprikāpa, 78. For Persian Poetry see pp. 446—491 of Vol. II.

Philosophy, extensive field for research in— in Kashmir, 5; Pratyabhijñā, 46-7; 70; Čaivism, 71-72; Yoga-Vaçishta, Hindu Philosophy, studied by Baḏ Shāh, 166.

Piedmont, Kashmir the Indian, 2; addenda to Chapter I, p. 73.

Pir, influence on the Kashmiri character, 19.

Pir Hāji Muhammad Sāhib, see Hāji Muhammad Sāhib.

Pir Hasan Shāh, see Hasan Shāh.

Pirie, on the boatmen of Kashmir, 21.

Pir-Panjāl or Pāntsāl, Kashmiris resembling Jews on crossing the mountain of the, 16; the range, 44; some details of, 44-45; Habīb Kaifvi and the Pādshāh-nāma of Hāji Jān Muhammad Ḏudā on the, 45; the route, 193.

Pir-parvati, saint-worship, blocking the real advance of the Musalmāns of Kashmir, 20.

Plague, visits Kashmir during the reign of Harsha, 62; during that of Jahāngīr, 265.

Popal, one of the four sons of Abdāl, 298.

Pope, the, see under Eugenius IV.

Population of the Valley of Kashmir, 8; of Bārāmūla, 8 f.n.; of Kashmir at present, 19; of Srinagar, 48; Muslims of the Valley of Kashmir, 80; Muslim majority, 81.

Portuguese, information about Kashmir reaches Europe through the, 13; enter Kashmir, 14.

Porus, King of Kashmir marches to the aid of (?), 13.

Poverty, its effect on the growth of children, 26; of Kashmiris in general, 25, 26, 27.

Prakrit, name Kashmir a compound of, 12.

Pratāpaditya I, brought from abroad by discontented ministers of Kashmir, 51.

Pratāpaditya II, 51; see Durlabhaka.

Pratāpapura, built by Durlabhaka, 51; excavations at, 51.

Pratyabhijñā philosophy in Kālidāsa’s Çakuntalā, allegory of the tenets of, 46; date of the origin of this philosophy, 47; Somānada the originator of, 47.

Pravara-pura, ancient name of Srinagar, 47; built by Pravarasena II, 47.

Pravarasena I, Čṛeshṭhasena, also called Tunina II, 47.

Pravarasena II, conquers Kashmir, 47; builds Pravara-pura, 47; constructs for the first time bridge of boats, 47.

Preaching of Islam, The, by Sir Thomas Arnold, quoted, 81; 115. See Arnold. See index to Vol. II.

Prēm Nāth Bazzāz, Pandit, on harm done by misreading of history, 103-4.

Prithvi Rāj Chauhān, the Rajastrāṇigīni written 50 years before the time of, 65.

Prohibition, under Sultān Sikandar, 146, 149.
Prophecy of Islam, the, his wonder-working rests on the truth of his teachings, 20.

Prostitution, banned under Sultan Sikandar, 146.

Ptolemy, his Kasia Regio and the Kasii Montes, inhabited by the Kas (¿), 13.

Pulwama, a tahsil, in the Anantnag (Islamabad) district, 7.

Punjab, the, 9, 11; Kushana dynasty in—swept away by the Hun invasion, 43; conquered by Shahb-ud-Din, 137, 146; sweep by Bad Shâh, 170, 192.

Qâsâr, prince, Shâh Zaman’s son, 304, 305.

Qâli Khân, governor under Jahângir, suppresses the Chaks, 262.

Qanauj, Arabic for Kanauj, Farrukh accompaniies Muhammad’s expedition to, 59; BilhaNa moves to, 61; Harsha of, 64.

Qarâ Bahâdur Khân, cousin of Mirzâ Haidar Dughlât, 206, also f.n. 1; marches to Muhammadkot, 206; warns Mirzâ Haidar against the Kashmîris, 206; captured by Kashmîris, 206; allowed to repair to Kashghar, 207.

Qaranî, Uwais al, see Uwais.

Qarâqul, to’luqa, of Bukhârâ, Arab inhabitants speak Arabic in, 18.

Qara-Quyunlis of Azarbâijân, contemporaries of Bad Shâh, 172.

Qâsim, Mullâ, an adherent of Mirzâ Haidar, killed in the Shi’ite strife, 207.

Qatâqurghân, in the Samarqand province, Arabs continuous population in, 18.

Qaur Shâh, grandfather of Shâh Mir, 130.

Qâzi-zâdah, Qâzi Muhammad Qâsim, poet, 273.

Qizilbash and Afgân clashes in Kâbul referred to, 304.

Qudsî, poet, 273.

Qutb-ud-Din Bakhtiyâr Kâkî, Khwâja, of Delhi, wrongly suggested as the author of the two lines of Mullâ Ahmad Kashmîri, 169.

Qutb-ud-Din Shâh, of Multân, a contemporary of Bad Shâh, 171.

Qutb-ud-Din, Sultan (Hindal), acts for his brother Sultan Shihâb-ud-Din, 86; the ziyârat of Shâh Hamadân built by, 89; acknowledges the greatness of Shâh Hamadân and divorces one of his wives, 90; succeeds Shihâb-ud-Din, 141; invites Prince Hasan Khân to become the heir apparent, 141; revolt of Lohara, 141-142; conspiracy of Udayagri, 142; generosity to the famine-stricken people, 142; death, 143; his tomb, 143; founds Qutbuddinpôr, 142; his two infant sons, 143.

Qutbuddinpôr, or Langarhâtpa, built by Sultan Qutb-ud-Din, 142; his tomb in, 143; Adam Khân raises the standard of revolt at, 180.

Qutlugh Nigar Khânam, Babur’s mother, 200.

See also: Parrotas; note on—in Vol. 11.
Rafi'-ud-Din Ahmad Ghāfīl, author of the Nawādir-ul-Akhbār, quoted, 236 f.n.

Raghuvaṁsha, by Kālidāsa, reference to the Huns, in 46.

Rahimdad Khān, brother of Pāinda Khān, 300.

Rahmatullāh Sadozai, had the title of Vafadār Khān, which see.

Rainaa, Abdāl—(Achaladeva) commander under Sultān Shihāb-ud-Dīn, 137; Halmat Raina and Ahmad Raina, commanders under Bād Shāh, 157; Sarhang and Mūsā Raina won over by Shams-ud-Dīn Chak, 189; death of Sarhang in the faction fight with Saif Dār, 189; Malik ʿĪdī Raina won over by Sayyid Muhammad Baḥāqī, 189; Mūsā Raina's services to Muhammad Shāh go unrewarded, 191; invested with authority by Fath Shāh, 191; Shams Chak's intrigues against, 191; Shams Chak killed by the armed men of, 191; lays blame for murder on Māgare nobles, 192; becomes prime minister, 192; religious persecution of the Sunnīs, 192; Ibrāhīm Māgare, Kājī Chak and Jahāngīr Paḍar join Muhammad Shāh, flight and death, 192; ‘Alī Raina’s clever coup, 192-193; Sunkar Raina, Fath Shāh hands over one-fourth of the country to, 193; revolt against Fath Shāh, 193; welcomes Muhammad Shāh, 193; Nusrat Raina, leader of the faction killed by Kājī Chak, 194; ‘Īdī Raina’s effort to secure the throne for Sikandar Shāh, 195; alliance against Mīrzā Haidar Dūghlāt, 206; comes to power after Mīrzā Haidar’s death, 209; conflict with Chaks and death, 209.

Rājatarāṛghiṇī, The, Nilamata Purāṇa, one of the main sources of Kalhaga, 11 f.n.; date of composition, 65; translations into Persian, 65; French translation, 65; Bādāoni’s translation, 163; Bernier engaged in translation into French, 164; abridged translation into Persian by command of Jahāngīr, 164; Sir Aurel Stein’s translation criticized, 66; Ranjit Sitarāṇ Pandit’s translation, 66; its affectionate dedication to his Kashmirī father-in-law, Pandit Motilal Nehru, 66.

Rājak, Panclit, returns notice of the Emperor Farrukh Siyar, migration of the family to Delhi, 288; thence to Allāhābād and produce the noted Nehrua, 289.

Rājadeva, succeeds Jayasimha, 66; insults and plunders Brāhmanas, 66.

Rajaurī or Rājapuri, political power of Kashmir extended to—under Durlabhavardhana, 51; 336. See Rājapuri below.

Rājapuri, or Rajauri, 51; Çaṁkaravarman’s expedition to, 57; people of—in the Kashmir army, 137; raja of—assists Sultān ‘Alī Shāh to recover his throne, 155; Sundaresana, the chief of—sends his eldest daughter to Bād Shāh, 177; 206. See Index to Vol. II.

Rājkaul, Pandit, attracts notice of the Emperor Farrukh Siyar, migration of the family to Delhi, 288; thence to Allāhābād and produce the noted Nehrua, 289.

Rājpūts, Daya Karan from Jammu called in to restore order in Kashmir, 35 f.n. I; Akbar’s matrimonial alliances with, 176.

Rajya Devi, eldest daughter of Sundaresana, sent to Bād Shāh, 177; embraces Islam, 177; builds the Rajaurī Kadal, 177.

Rākh, the, of Dachigām, 21.

Rākṣas, a demon, mentioned in the Legend of the Lake, 9.

Rāmachandra, hero of the Rāmāyaṇa, said to have conquered Kashmir, 35 f.n. I.
INDEX—Vol. I

Rāmachandra, commander of Sahadeva, defeats Gaddis, (Hindu Bakarwāns) 68; retires to the Gagangir fort on Dulcha's invasion, 120; refuses to acknowledge Rīchana's authority, 120; Rīchana's stratagem against, 120-121; slain by Rīchana, 122.

Rāmadeva, vanquishes many kings, 37; extent of his empire, 37; his assessment of land, 37.

Rāmananda, a chemist and scholar, author of an exposition of Mahābāṣya, 168.

Rāmban, a place in the Jammu territory, 7.

Rangil, Stone Age relics found at, 15.

Ranjit Dv of Jammu, his contingent placed under the command of Nūr-ud-Dīn Khān Bāmīzāl, 310.

Ranjit Singh, William Moorcroft, the traveller, reaches Srinagar by permission of, 65; loss of boats in the storm over the Wulur Lake to, 159; sends emissary to Shāh Shuja, 306; dishonours agreement with him, 306-7; escape of Shāh Shuja, 307; interest in Kashmir, 324-5; invasion of Kashmir, defeat and retreat, 329-32; Birbal Dar seeks help from, 334; second Sikh invasion, 334; victory over the Afghāns, 334; causes of victory, 335; some details of the account of the victory, 335-7.


Qasum-i-Faujdarī, vexatious tax, abolished by the Emperor Jahāngir, 262.

Ratnākara, a writer, at the court of Jayāpiḍa and Avantivarman, 56; his work Haravijaya in fifty cantos, 56.

Ratnākara Purāṇa, The, manuscript discovered written on birch-bark, 36 f.n.; Persian translation made under Baḍ Shāh's orders, 36 f.n.

Rauza-bal, the area of the grave of Yūz Āsaf known as, 166.

Rauzul-ut-Tāhirin, The, a general history of Kashmir by Maulānā 'Imād-ud-Dīn, 164.

Rāwanchandra, Rāmachandra's brother, captured by Rīchana, 121; appointed commander of the army, 121; embraces Islam, 125.

Rāy Māgre, minister of Sultān Sikandar, 144; poisons Haibat Khān, 144, 151; invasion of Little Tibet and revolt, 144; defeated by Sultān Sikandar, 144.

Realization of Self, Islamic way of, 72; Kashmir Čaivism nearer to Islam, 72; Sir Muhammad Iqbāl on, 72.

Relics, of the Stone Age in Kashmir found, 15.

Rhetoricians of ancient India, sixteen in all, fourteen from Kashmir alone, 70.

Remonstrantie, The, the commercial report of the Dutch Protestant Francisco Pallaert of Antwerp, 259.

Riāsī, Kashmiri-speaking area around, 7.

Richard III of England, Wars of the Roses and, 190; his end compared to that of Sultān Habib Shāh, the last of the Shāh Mirīs, 212.

Rieu, Dr. Charles, his Catalogue of Persian Manuscripts in the British Museum quoted in connexion with the Persian translation of the Rājatarangini, 164; about the Bahāristān-i-Shāhī, 242.
Riśchana Bhōtā or Bāhuṭa, comes to the scene for the first time, 68-69; becomes ruler of Kashmir, 118-119; joint invader with ḏulcha, according to Jonarāja, 119; details about his name, 68; 119; marries Kōṭā Rāṇī, 69; details, 121; stratagem against Rāmchandra, 120; becomes king, 69, 120-121; sense of justice, 121-123; Ḍāmaras brought under perfect control by, 122; quest for religion, 123; conversion to Islam, 69, 123-126; assumes the name of Sadr-ud-Din, 69, 124. See also Sultān Sadr-ud-Dīn.

Riś Bahā, a Muslim mystic, 69 f.n. 2.

Riśiyān-i-Kashmir, the, Riśīs, Muslim mystics, 96-102; some well-known Riśīs, 96, f.n. 2; admired by Abu'l Fazl, 96-97; mode of life, 96, 97; Emperor Jahāngīr's appreciation of, 97; ziyyārāt constructed by, 97; their example and precept smooth the way of conversions to Islam, 98; Shaikh Nūr-ud-Dīn's life and work, 98-99; venerated by Kashmīris, 191; his disciples, 102.

Rogers, Charles J., numismatist, on Śūhabhat's persecution of Brāhmans, 149; generosity of Sikandar, 152; appreciation of Bad Bahī, 179.

Rome and Carthage, engaged in the Punic War when Aūkōka ruled in Kashmīr, 38.

Rom Rишī, a Muslim mystic, 96, f.n. 2.

Royal Asiatic Society of Bengāl, the, publishes an edition of the Rājatarāṅgini, 65. See also Index to Vol. II.

Rupyabhaṭṭa, astronomer during the reign of Baḥ Shāh, 168.

Rūqaʿāt-i-ʿAlamgīri, The, or the Letters of Aurangzib ʿAlamgīr, quotation from, regarding the Kashmīrī's ability, 275.

Sābir Shāh, Muhammad, pîr of Ahmad Shāh Durrānī, 299.

Sabīr Rишī, a Muslim mystic, 96, f.n. 2.

Saʿdī, on the beauty of the Turk, 24; couplet from his Bustān quoted, 98. Sādozals, one of the branches of the Pāpalzals of Afghānistān, 298.

Sadr-ud-Dīn, Qāzi, ambassador of Akbar to Husain Shāh Chak, 226.

Sadr-ud-Dīn (Riśchana), Sultān, 69; 124; builds Bulbul Lānkār and the Jāmī Masjid, 125; palace and mosque for private use, 126; death, 126; survivors of his family, 126-27.

Safavi Kings of Irān, forestalled by Baḥ Shāh in building sarāis, etc., 158.

Sahadeva, condition of Kashmīr under, 67; ḏulcha's invasion, 67; flight to Kāshrays, 67; Gaddis raiding expedition repulsed by his commander-in-chief, 68; called rākshasa by Jonarāja, 117; generosity and hospitality of, 118.

Sāhasī Rāṇī, his throne usurped by Chach Brāhmān, 75-76; extent of his dominions, 75; government by Malīks or governors, 76.

Sāhiba Niṣwān, a Kashmirian lady, mother of Farrukh Siyar, 288.

Sāhibabād, another name for Achabal, on account of Jahān Rāṇī or Arā Begam known as Begam Sāhiba, 4, f.n. 2.
INDEX—Vol. I

“Saidas”, Çrivar’s name for Sayyids, 178.

Sa’id Khān, Sultan, ruler of Kāshghar dispatches Mirzā Haidar Dūghlāt to Kāshmīr, 203.

Saif-ud-Daula, see Madad Khān Durrānī.

Saif-ud-dīnpūr, Malik Saif-ud-Dīn (Sulhabhātta) buried at, 155.

Salīm Khān, son of Sultān Nāzuk Shāh, 226.

Salt Range, the, included in Durlabhavardhana’s kingdom, 51; 76.

Samdhimatnagar, old capital of Kāshmīr submerged in an earthquake, 37.

Samgrāmarāja, nominated king by his aunt Queen Diīdā, 58; founder of the First Lohara Dynasty, 58; Mahmūd of Ghazna’s invasion of Kāshmīr in the time of—59; Kashmir troops defeated, 59; but Mahmūd retires without entering Kāshmīr, 59.

San Francisco, climate compared with that of Kāshmīr, 7.

Sāngala Hill, identified with Čākala (?), 44.

Saṅgārī, rājā of Jammu, 265.

Sanskrit or Samskṛt, influence of—on the Kāshmīrī language, 17, 19; revival under Avantivarman, 56; influence on Musalmāns, 78; Sanskrit jargon of the Lōkaprakāṣa, 78.

Sanyāsins, two leading men embrace Islam with their followers, 89.

Sapru, the Right Honourable Sir Tej Bahādur, his family migrates from Kāshmīr to Dēlī, 173.

Sapru, believed to be first Brāhmans to take up the study of Persian and Muslim learning in Kāshmīr, 173.

Sarcon, Western indebtedness to, for many of modern comforts, 28.

Sārdar Muhammad ‘Aẓīm Khān, Afghān governor of Kāshmīr, see ‘Aẓīm Khān.

Sarhang Raina, see Rainas.

Sarkār, Sir Jadu Nāth, on the Emperor Muhammad Shāh, 289; on six gifts of the Mughul Empire to India, 294.

Sarfrāz Khān, the title of Pāinda Khān, which see.

Sati, a Čaktī manifestation of Čiva appearing in the form of water, 9; daughter of Dāka, 9 f.n. 2.

Satisaras, the place where Čaktī Sati took the shape of a lake, 9; name supposed to be replaced by Ka-Samfira, 12.

Sayyid Hasan, commander under Sultān Shihāb-ud-Dīn, 137.

Sayyid Muhammad, of Lūtstān, a mosaic worker, 146.

Sayyidpūr, or Saidahpūr, name of the Bāgh-i-Zainā-gīr, after Sayyid Husain Quṭbūl Rizāvī or Rāzāvī, 165.
Sayyid Sadr-ud-Din, of Khurāsān, a mosaic worker, 146.

Sayyids, the, their missionary activities, 84; prominent Sayyids; Sayyid Jālāl-ud-Dīn of Bukhārā, Sayyid Tāj-ud-Dīn, Sayyid Husain Simnānī, 84; sent to Kashmir by 'Alī Hamadānī, 84; Timūr contemplates massacre of Sayyids, 84; Mir Sayyid 'Alī Hamadānī, known as Shāh Hamadānī, 84-92; Mīr Muhammad Hamadānī, 92-4; emigration into Kashmir, 94; mass conversions by, 94; effect on Kashmiri thought, 94-96; stimulation of mysticism, 94-95; Bahāqī Begam belonged to the family of, 178; powerful at the court of Sultān Hasan Shāh, 186-7.

Scotland, Lołāb reminding one of, 6; James II King of, a contemporary of Bādur Shāh, 172.

Sculpture, see Architecture, also pages 522-3, Chapter IX, Volume II.

Sehyār, tomb of Prince Ādām Khān at, 184. See also Sūhyār.

Semenov, Mr. A., photographs of Shāh Hamadānī's Mausoleum taken by, appendix to Chapter III, 116a.

Serpent worship, 49-50; see also Nāgas.

Shāhābād, modern name for the pargana of Vēr, 4 f. n. 3-4; Shāh Muhammad of, 163-164.

Shāh 'Ābdur Rāhīm Safāpūrī, his reply to Māhārājā Pratāp Singh reminding one of Diogenes (Diājānās al-Kalbī), 97.

Shāh 'Ālam, brief reign, 287; practice of governors sending representatives, 287; revolt of Rājā Muzaffar Khān Bamba during the reign of—, 287.

Shāh 'Ārif, impostor from Irān, found out, 225.

Shāh Dīn, Justice Miyān Muhammad, see Muhammad Shāh Dīn.

Shāh Dūst, title of Vāzīr Fath Khān, 304.

Shāh Fārīd-ud-Dīn Qādirī, see Fārīd-ud-Dīn Qādirī.

Shāh Hamadānī, saint, names the Valley of Kashmir 'Garden of Solomon' 16; see 'Alī Hamadānī for details.

Shāh Jahān, Emperor, Bernier's visit at the time of—'s sons contending for the Mughul throne, 14; Sultān Zain-ul-'Ābidīn called the— of Kashmir, 158; enchanted by Kashmir, 266; administration, 266-273; Zafar Khān's conquest of Tibet, 267; removal of hardships of people, 268-70; famine and relief measures, 272; famous poets, 273.

Shāh Vāli Khān Bāmīzāi Ashraf-ul-Wuzūrā, Ahmad Shāh Durrānī's prime minister after Ḥājī Jamāl, 299, 304, 310, 311.

Shaibānī Khān or Shāhī Beg Khān, Uzbek leader, 201.

Shaikh Abu'l Barakāt Taqī-ud-Dīn 'Alī Dūsti, Shāh Hamadānī's preceptor, 85.

Shaiyism, see Śaivaism.

Shākulhā, a dependency assigned to Jaisiyya by the king of Kashmir, 76; possibly Kuller-Kahar in the Salt Range according to General Cunningham, 76; Jaisiyya's death at, 76; Hamīm succeeds Jaisiyya, 76.

Shakundhra, Jonarājā's name of Sultān Sikandar, 142.
INDEX—Vol. I

Shāh Mir, receives hospitality at the hands of Sahadeva, 118; Rīchana's Vazīr, 69-81; commander under Kōtā Rānī, 128, 129, 130; defends Kasmīr against the invader Achala, 69; superseded by Bhikshapa, 130; revolt against Kōtā Rānī, 130-131; ancestry, 130-131; his marriage proposal rejected by Kōtā Rānī, 131; entrusted with the up-bringing and tutelage of Sultān Sadr-ud-Din's infant son, 127; imprisons Kōtā Rānī and the children, 128; invests Andarkōt and kills Bhikshapa, 131; marries Kōtā Rānī, 131; ascends the throne as Sultān Shams-ud-Din I, 69, 131; founds the Kashmirī dynasty, 133; his reign, 132-134; buried at Andarkōt, 130 f.n. 1; Col. Haig on—Bakhshāt Nizām-ud-Din Ahmad's appreciation of—, 134.

Shāh Mirzā, descendants and successors of Sultān Shams-ud-Din Shāh Mir or Shāh Mirzā, 65, 132, 211, 212, 218. See Sultāns of Kashmir.

Shāh Muhammad, Mullā, of Shāhābād, a learned man, author of the history of Kashmir, revised by Badāyūnī, 163-164.

Shāh Nazir, armour-bearer, kills Mirzā Haidar by mistake at Khānpōr, 207.

Shams-ud-Din Almās, see Almās.

Shams-ud-Din ‘Andrābī, scholar of the time of Bād Shāh, 166.

Shams-ud-Din ‘Irāqi, Shaikh, or Mir, 109-112; birth and parentage, 109; belonged to the Shi‘a sect according to the Shi‘a (?) 109; an orthodox Sunnī according to Sir Wolsley Haig, 108 f.n. 5; conversion of Chaks, 111; death, 111; gift of confiscated lands by Fath Shāh to, 111; finds asylum in Kashmir, 190; Chaks embrace his doctrines, 190; banished by Sayyid Muhammad Baihaqi, 190; returns to Kashmir from exile, 192; religious campaign and persecution of the Sunnīs, 192; Kājī Chak imposed on Kashmir Shī‘ite doctrines promulgated by, 199; his son, Mir Dāniyāl executed by Mirzā Haidar on the ruling of two Qāzīs, 206; his grave desecrated, 206; conversion of Chaks by, 218.

Shams-ud-Din I, Sultān, Shāh Mir or Mirzā, see Shāh Mir

Shankar Devī, daughter of Bahādur Singh, married to Ya‘qūb Shāh Chak, becomes Fath Khatūn, and takes her husband to Kishiwār, 226; 236; 237.

Sharī’at, the law of Islam, 19; Qutb-ud-Din marries two sisters contrary to, and divorces one at the bidding of Shāh Hamadān, 90; Shāh Hamadān’s and Mir Muhammad Hamadān’s work for the enforcement of, 92; Sikandar puts an end to practices contrary to, 146. See also Vol. II, pp. 599-628.

Shaikh Sharaf-ud-Din Mahmūd Muzdaqānī in Ray, the capital of Iranian ‘Irāq, Shāh Hamadān’s preceptor, 85.

Shams-ul-‘Arifīn or ‘the Sun of the Pious,’ the chronogram of the death of Shaikh Nūr-ud-Din Rishi, 99.

Shaikh-ul-Islam, head of the ecclesiastical department, Maulānā Kabir appointed, 162. See also Vol. II, Chapter X, pages 604-5.

Sharaf-ud-Din, Mullā, Shaikh-ul-Islam, son and successor of Muhtāvi Khān, 292.

Sharaf-ud-Din ‘Ali Yazdi, the historian of Timūr, 152. Also see Index to Vol. II.

Sharif of Mecca, Sultān Zain-ul-‘Abidīn sends ambassador to, 171; contemporaries of the Sultān, 172; names of Sharifs detailed, 172.

Shāhshāh, an ancestor of Shāh Mir, 130.
She1 (pronounced Shē), or Sayā-desha, above Leh, on the Indus, famous for large Buddhist images, 170.

Sher Afgan Khān, Yūsuf Chak's bravery in returning the attack of, 233.

Shergarhi, built by Amir Muhammad Khān Jawān Sher, Afghān Governor of Kashmir, 314, also f.n. 1.

Sher Muhamad Khān, son of Shāh Valī Khān, Bāmīzāi is named Mukhtar-ud-Daula, 304, which also see.

Shi'as, 109, 111, 112; Sayyid Muhammad Baihaqi's measures against, 190, 192; imposition of—doctrines by Kháji Chak, 199; persecution under Mīrzā Haidar Dughlāt of, 205, 206, 207; imposition of Shi'a doctrines by Daulat Chak, 210; clashes with the Sunnis, 218; trial of Yūsuf Māndāv, a Shī'ā fanatic, 220-223; tolerance to Sunnis under 'Ali Shāh Chak, 225; persecution of Sunnis, 234; clashes with Sunnis, 277.

Shihāb-ud-Dīn of Baghdad, Sayyid, shrine at Achabal of, 4 f.n. 2.

Shihāb-ud-Dīn, Sultān, formerly known as Siyāmūk, 135; Shāh Hamadān enters Kashmir in the reign of, 86; expedition against Ohind, 86, 138; accession, 135-5; glorious reign, 136-141; conquests, 137; reorganizes military power, 137; a builder, 139; Lachhminagar and Shihāb-ud-Dīnpūr, 139; cantonment and barracks for soldiers, 139; campaign in Sind, 137-38; subjection of Kāshghar, Badakhshān and Kābul, Tibet, Kishytwār and Jammu, 137-138; generosity, 139; placed along with Lalitāditya-Muktāpīḍa, 136; tolerance, 139-40; Sir Muhammad Iqbal's couplet referring to the Kashmirī of the days of—, 139; critical estimate, 140-1.

Shihāb-ud-Dīnpūr, modern Shādīnpūr, built by Shihāb-ud-Dīn, 139; Akbar's visit to, 139; appreciation by 'Abu'l Fazl and Jahāngīr, 139.

Shir-āshāmak, 'the little milk drinker,' early name of Sultān Shihāb-ud-Dīn, 136.

Shinsawbu, Queen, of Burma, contemporary of Sultān Zain-ul-‘Ābidīn, 171.

Shirshātaka, Jonārāja's early name of Sultān Shihāb-ud-Dīn, 136.

Shirin and Farhād, reference to the stream of milk drawn by Farhād, 1.

Shōnberg, Baron Eric von, visits Kashmir during Sikh rule, 15; extracts from his Travels quoted in Chapter XI, Volume II.

Shujā'-ul-Mulk, proclaims himself King of Afghānīstān, 304; defeat and flight, 304; enthroned at Kābul, 304; expedition to Kashmir abandoned, 305; trouble at home, unsuccessful attempts, 305; prisoner in Kashmir, 305; Sikh-Afghān invasion of Kashmir, 306; agreement with Ranjit Singh, 306; hands over the Kōh or Kāh-i-Nūr, 306; imprisonment and escape from Sikh custody, 307; unsuccessful attack on Kashmir, 307; assault on Kābul fails, 308; baulked of the throne, 308; seeks British help, captures Qandahār and Kābul, 332; assassination, 332.

Shupiyān, 7 miles S. W. of Hūrapur, 180; town attacked by Ranjit Singh, 329.

Siālkot, identified with Çākala, Mihirakula's capital according to Fleet, 44; Shāhī Khān flies to, 155; Sultān 'Ālī Shāh successful at, 156; Sir Muhammad Iqbal's family migrates to, 173.

Siddhapuri palace, temples rebuilt by Bād Shāh in the, 173.
Sikandar, Sultân, Jonarâjã calls him Shakandhara, 142; share in the spread of Islam, 103-109; bigotry discussed, 103-6; wrongly called But-shikhan (iconoclast), 103; criticized for his attitude to temples, 103; persecution of rival religions before the time of, 104-105; a false charge against responsibility for Sūhâbâta's actions against Hindus, 106; charges discussed, 108; early life, 142; accession, 143; his contemporaries, 143; under his mother Haura's regency, 143; subdues Ohind and marries Mira, daughter of its chief, 143; Minister Râj Mâgre's ambition, 143; defeats Râj Mâgre, 144; invasion of Little Tibet, 144; exchanges courtesy with Timûr, 144; proceeds to meet Timûr, 145; sends ambassadors to Timûr, 145; remits taxes, namely, the Bij and the Tamgha, 146; zeal for religion, 146; architecture, 146; builds mosques, madrasas and hospices, 146; regard for Sayyid Muhammad Hamadân, 147; death, 147-148; persecution of Hindus discussed, 148, 153; religious policy discussed, 151-52; prosperity in Kashmir under, 152.

Sikandar Khân, Sultânzâda, a second son of Sultân Abû Sa'id of Kâshgâlar accompanies Mirzâ Hadiar Dughlat to invade Kashmir, 197.

Sikh rule, visits of certain travellers referred to during, 15; invasions, 329-337. See also Chapter XI, Kashmir under the Sikhs, Volume II, pp. 699-750-A.

Sikh, number in the population of the Kashmir Valley, 8; restore old name of Srinagar in place of Kashmir, or as locally known Kâshir, 47; discard idolatry, 153.

Simha, astrologer of the time of Baḏ Shâh, 168.

Simhadeva, condition of Kashmir under, 67.

Simhâpura, political power of Kashmir extends to, 51.

Simnân, village, 145 miles east of Teherân, Írân, 84, f.n.

Sîrkoṭ, tank, in Kâshâwâr, 237.

Sinha, Dr. Sachhidananda, quoted on Mughul visits to the Valley of Kashmir, 295.

Siyâmuk, nickname of Sultân Shihâb-ud-Din, 136.

Siya-ûl-Muta'akkhirin, The, on Sultân Shihâb-ud-Din's early names, 136; Akbar draws lots about the leader of the Kashmir campaign according to, 233.

Sîstân, Baḏ Shâh sends ambassador to, 171.

Skârdu, Mîr Shams-ud-Din 'Irâqi returns from, 192; reference to 'Ali Mîr, chief of, 219.

Smith, Dr. Vincent A., his assertion on Akbar, 177.

Smuts, General, on revival of religious faith, 95.

Snakes, of Kashmir not poisonous, 21. See also Serpent-worship.

Société Asiatique, Paris, French translation of the Râjataraṅgini by Captain A. Troyer under the auspices of, 65.

Somanânda, originator of Kashmirî Çâivism, 71.

Somanâtha (Sômnât), Mahmûd's expedition to, 59.

Sonamarg, glacier valley of, 4.
Sopor, headquarters of Kamraj during Muslim rule, 8; village, seat of Suyapura, commemorating the name of Suya, the great engineer, 56; population, 56; residence built by Sultan Haran Shah, 56 f.n. Bad Shab built a bridge over the Jhelum at, 56 f.n. 1; Adam Khan's march against and reduction of, 180; Hazir Khan's reverse at, and Adam Khan's flight to, 180.

South Carolina, U.S.A., latitude corresponding to that of Kashmir, 3.

Spain, Kashmiri women would be called brunettes according to George Forster in, 24; contemporaries of Bad Shab among the Nasrids of Granada in, 172.

Srinagar, 4 and f.n. 1, 6; described as Venice in the heart of Switzerland, 6; a tahsil and district of Anantnag (Islamabad) 7; chief city of Maraj during Muslim rule, 8; road from Baramulla, 10 f.n. 1; distance from Nila-naga, 10 f.n. 2; built originally by Agoka, 38; present city built by Pravarsena II, 47; descriptive note on, 47-49; references in Buddhist literature to, 50; described by Bilhana, 61; 'Ala'-ud-dinpor and Budhagira now mahallas or quarters of Srinagar, 135; Shihab-ud-dinpor a mahalla of, 139; Qutb-ud-dinpor a mahalla of, 142.

Sripratap Singhpor, another name for Badgam tahsil in the Baramula district, 7.

Stalinabad, reference to—in Professor E. Pavlovsky's letter to Dr. Suji about Shah Hamadan's Mausoleum at Katlan in Kolab, 116a, b.

Stein, Sir Aurel, English translation of the Rajaotarangini, 7 f.n.; on the derivation of Kama-raj and Mara-raj, 8; on the name Kashmir, 13; his exhaustive exposition of the pre-Islamic period, 35; his method of translation of the Rajaotarangini criticized, 66; life and work, 72-73.

Stone Age relics found in Kashmir, 15.

Stuti Kusmanjali (Offering of Prayer Flowers) the, written during the reign of Sultan Hasan Shah, 186.

Subhsa, or Cobha, queen of Sultan Sikandar, 143, 144.

Safs, mystics, 19. See Sayyids and Tasawuf.

Sugandha, queen of Cakkaravarman, builds temples at Patan, 57.

Sahaba's conversion to Islam, 93, 106, 148; adopts Islamic name of Saif-ud-Din, 93; his daughter married to Mir Muhammad Hamadan, 93; buildings commemorating his name, 93; destroys temples, 106; regency of—during Sikandar's childhood, 147, 149; persecution of Hindus, 148-9; minister under Sultan 'Ali Shah, 155; death, 155.

Subraward, town, 82 f.n. 1.

Suhayr or Sohuyr, Masjid, landing place, and mahalla, built by Suhabhatta, 93. See also Soheyr.

Sukh Jiwan Mal Khatri, originally of Bhera, Khushab in the Punjab, Nizam, declares independence, 309; defeats Kashmiri nobles and the former Afghan governor, 309-10; military disasters, 310; Afghan invasion repulsed, 310; defeated in second invasion, 310-11; tragic death, 311; career, 311-12; religious intolerance, 312; Azad Bilgrami's note on, 311; his pathetic verses, 312.

Sulaiman Rishi, a Muslim mystic, 96 f.n. 2.
Sultan, title adopted by the Sháh Mírís, 135; Mahmúd of Ghazna first to adopt this title, 136; dignity of the title, 136.

Sultan Muhammad, a poet of the time of Baḏ Sháh, 166.

Sultánate, the, note on its origin and application, 135-36.

Sultáns of Kashmir, the, territory under, 7; Sultan Sháms-ud-Dín I, 132-34; Sultan Jamshid, 135; Sultan ‘Alá’-ud-Dín, 134-35; Sultan Shiháb-ud-Dín, 136-41; Sultan Qub-ud-Dín, 141-3; Sultan Sikandar, 143-54; Sultan ‘Alá Sháh, 155-7; Sultan Zain-ul-Abidín, 157-83; Sultan Haidar Sháh, 184-85; Sultan Hasan Sháh, 185-7; Sultan Muhammad Sháh, 187-9, 190-1, 193, 194-5, 195-8; Sultan Fath Sháh, 189-90, 191-3, 193-4; Sultan Ibrahim Sháh, 195; Sultan Názuk Sháh, 195-6, 204-10; Sultan Sháms-ud-Dín II, 198-9; Sultan Ibrahim Sháh II, 199-200; Sultan Ismá’il Sháh II, 210; Sultan Habíb Sháh, 211-2.

Sultán ‘Umarov, of Táshqand, see ‘Umarov.

Sundarasena, twenty-second in the line of the Pându dynasty, perishes in the earthquake along with his subjects, 37.

Sundarasena, the chief of Rájápurí, modern Rajaúrí, sends his eldest daughter to Baḏ Sháh, whom he calls his mother, 177.

Sunnís, Arabs in the U.S.S.R., 19; Sháms-ud-Dín ‘Iráqí an orthodox Sunni, 109 f.n. 5; alarmed by spread of Shi‘aism, 112; persecuted by the Shi‘as, 192; clashes with Shi‘aism, 218, 270; Sunní divines executed, 223; tolerance under ‘Alí Sháh Chák, 225; persecution under Ya’qúb Sháh Chák, petition to Akbar for help by, 234.

Superstition, ingrained in the nature of the Kashmíri, 19.

Súr Sultáns, forestalled by Baḏ Sháh in building caravanserais, 158.

Súraj Ballál Singh of Gondwána, a contemporary of Baḏ Sháh, 171.

Súraj Mal, son of Rájá Baso, referred to in the Kíshítwár campaign by Jahángír, 265.

Súrat, Bernier’s visit to, 14.

Súryamati, queen of Anánta, 59; her character and ability, 59; Anánta abdicates on her advice, 59.

Sussala raises the standard of revolt against Harsha, 62; accession, 63; Dámára rebellion and flight to Fúñch, 63; restoration, 63; murder, 63.

Suttee, prohibited by Sultan Sikandar under Mir Muhammad Hamadání’s influence, 93, 146, 149; under Akbar and Jahángír, 262-63.

Suyya, engineer under Avántivarman, 55, 56.

Swayámvara, held by the king of Gandhára, 36.

Switzerland, compared with Kashmir, 1, 2; climate compared, 6, area compared, 8.


Syria, Damascus in, 8; Bernier’s visit to, 14.
Tabagät-i-Akbari, The, on the failure of Jasrat Khán Gakhkhar’s conquest of Delhi, 170; on Bad Sháh’s allowing treasuries of conquered countries to be plundered, and assessing the revenue on them on the same scale as that of the country round the capital, 170; on Sultán Hasán Khán’s conquest in Hindustán, 184; on educational foundations by Husain Chak, 224; note on the history and its author, Khwája Nizám-ud-Dín Ahmad Bakhshi, 249-250.

Tähir, father of Sháh Mir, 130.

Tähir, Mir, Akbar directs him to Yusuf Chak, 232.

Tájik, or Uzbeg, population of Arabs in isolated groups in Turkistán among the, 18.

Tájikistán, the Academy of Sciences in, in reference to Mr. Semenov, 116a; Koláb, in—, 116b.

Téj Khātún, Baihaqi Begam, Sultán Zain-ul-Ábidín’s beloved Queen, 178, called by Ārīvāra Voúha Khātonā, 178.

Táj, the, Sháh Jahán’s dream in marble, 3.

Táj-ud-Dín, Sayyid, and his disciples, 84; cousin of Sháh Hamád-Ád, arrives in Kashmir in the reign of Sultán Shihiáb-ud-Dín, 84.

Takht-i-Sulaimán, the, view from, 3; Stone Age relics found at, 15; religious edifice on, 39.

Tálikhán (Tolikón), a town in Afghanistán, 116d.

Tambha, tax, remitted by Sultán Sikandar, 145, 146.

Tápar, ancient Pratápapura, 51; excavations at, 51; the Vishnú temple of, 51.

Tárápiša, his cruel rule, 52.

Tarbiyat Khán, governor of Kashmir under Sháh Jahán, 272.

Taríqat, the ‘True Way,’ comment by Mirzá Haidar Dughlát on, 19.

Társar, a lake in the Phák pargana, 230.

Tosowoof, mysticism of the Súfis, Sháh Hamád-Ád studies, 85;—of the enervating type not countenanced by Islam, 94. See Súfis and Sayyids.

Tashkent or Tashqand, Mr. Sultán ‘Umarov, Rector of the University of, 116a.

Tázig Baṭ, aids Faith Khán against the Sayyids, 188.

Taxila, Takkasíla or Takshačíla, political power of Kashmir extends to, 51.

Teachings of Níla, or the teachings of the sage Níla, the chief of the Nágas, the oldest extant written record dealing with the legends about the origin of Kashmir and its sacred places, 11 f.n.

Temples, of Pándrethán, built by King Pártáka excavated, 39; Çankar-áchárya, built by Jáluka and rebuilt by Rájá Gopaladitya, 39; Vishnú temple at Tápar, 51; Mártaṇḍa, 52-3; Avání Swámín and Avántiçvara, 56; ruins at Çánkara-púra, 57; converted into mosques by converts to Islam, 89; destroyed by Sultán Sikandar, 103-109; destroyed by Hindu and Buddhiát kings, 105; destroyed by Dúlcha, (? 106; destruction of, by Malik Súhábhátta, 106; accounts of Mirzá Haidar Dughlát and Jahāngír, 107-8; chief temple in Kíshtwár converted into a mosque, 115; temples converted into mosques, 150; demolished temples rebuilt and new temples erected during Bad Sháh’s rule, 173.
INDEX—Vol. I

Terra Dr. H. De, and T. T. Paterson, essential data for the study of early man contained in Kashmir, in studies on the Ice Age in India and Associated Human Cultures, 1; comments on the terraces of the Valley, 9.

Tibet, Mahāyana system introduced by Nāgārjuna, 43; into western part annexed to the Chinese Empire, 51; Lalitāditya’s victory over, 52; Rīfchana in Kashmir from Western—, 69; conquered by Sultān Shihāb-ud-Dīn, 137; Bhotṭalanda or Western Tibet added to his dominions by Sultān Zain-ul-Ābidīn, 170; ruler sends gift to Zain-ul-Ābidīn, 171, 175; invaded by Mirzā Haidar, Dāghlāt, 201; conquered by Ghāzī Chak, 219; final conquest by Zafar Khān, when governor under Shāh Jahān 267-8.

Timur, intolerance towards the Sayyids, 84, 94, 96; disagreement with Shāh Hamadān, 116c; graves of one of—’s descendants at Kolāb, 116d.; invasion of India by, 144; exchange of courtesy with Sultān Sikandar, 145; Sikandar’s ambassadors and presents to, 145.

Timur Shāh, son and successor of Ahmad Shāh Durrānī, ten years on the throne at the time of Forster’s visit to Kashmir, 14; accession, 300; transfers capital from Qandahār to Kābul, 300; conquests, 300; death, 315; appoints Hājī Karimdād Khān Bāmīzāi, governor of Kashmir, 315; confers the title of Shujā’-ul-Mulk on Hājī Karimdād, 316.

Tolikon, 116d. See Tālikhān.

Tonwār Rājā of Gwāliār, love of music, a common bond with Baḍ Shāh, 171.

Toramāṇa, establishes the Hun empire, 43-44.

Torrens, Lieutenant-Colonel, H. D., his Travels quoted, 25; comparison between the suburbs of Srinagar and Istanbul quoted, 48.

Tosha Maidān, 10 miles south-east of Gulmarg, 141, 329; note on, 330, 310.

Trade routes, Srinagar a terminal of, 48.

Trāgabal, heights of, 4 and f.n. 7.

Trebeck, George, accompanies Dr. William Moorcroft, 208, f.n.

Travellers’ visits to the Valley, 13-15; comments on the terraces of the Valley, 9, 14. See also Index to Vol. II.

Troyer, Captain A., Principal, Calcutta Sanskrit College, translates into French the Rājatarangaṇi, of Pandit Kalyāṇa or Kalhaṇa, 65.

Tsam-i-kol canal, forms the Māyasam island of Srinagar, 49.

Tuberculosis among Panditāṇa, 24.

Tūghrā, poet, 273.

Tunina II, 47; see Pravarasena I-Creshṭhasena.

Tūrān, Baḍ Shāh invites craftsmen from, 161.

Turānian stock, the, Nāgas belonged to, according to James Fergusson, 50.

Turk, bracketed with the Kashmirī in comeliness, 24.

Turkey in Europe, area compared to that of the Kashmir Valley, 8; Baḍ Shāh sends ambassador to the Sultān of, 171.
Turkistān, Eastern, expedition by Kadphises II, 41; annexed to the Chinese empire, 51; Baḍ Shāh invites craftsmen from, 161; sends ambassador to, 171.

Turkman, republic in the U.S.S.R., isolated groups of Arabs living in, 18. Turushka, captains of hundreds supported with money by Harsha, 62, 77.

Uchala, raises the standard of revolt against Harsha, 62; accession, 62; breaks down the power of the Dāmaras, 62; conspiracy and death, 62.

Udakpati, Rājā of Nagarkot’s excursion into Firuz Tughluq’s territory, 138; acknowledges fealty to Sultān Shihab-ud-Dīn, 139.

Udayāçri, prime minister of Sultān Shihab-ud-Dīn, 139-40; a Muslim (?), 140; Sultān’s indignation at the suggestion of—for melting Buddha’s brass image, 139.

Udhaṭa, the teacher of the theory of three Vṛttis, 70.

Udyāndeva, succeeds Rīnchna (Sultān Sadr-ud-Dīn), 69; flees to Swāt or Gandhāra before Dulcha, 128; invited by Kōṭa Rāni, 127; marries Kōṭa Rāni, 128; raised to the throne by Shāh Mīr or Mirzā, 128; his character, 128; flight before Achala’s invasion, 69; popular resentment, 129; a mere cypher: Shāh Mīr all powerful, 69; nominal rule, 129; character, 128; death, 130.

Ujjain or Ujjayini, Kālidāsa halts at, 46; Vikramāditya Harsha, king of, 47.

‘Umarov, Sultān, Rector, Central Asian University of Tashqand, 116a.

United States of America, South Carolina situated in, 8.

University, Kashmir of the age of Prince Gupavarman a seat of, 70. Baḍ Shāh’s, 162. See also Index to Vol. II.

Urāğā, (Hazāra) political power of Kashmir extends to, 51.

Urdu culture, emerges in Northern India owing to interplay of Hindu and Muslim cultures, says Mr. Guy Wint in India and Democracy, 80.

Urfī, 7, 155.

Urwan or Urdil, invades Kashmir, same as Achala (?), 128.

Uṣkara, (Uskur) village, site of ancient Huṣkapura, 10 f.n. 1.

‘Usmān Uchchap Ganaī, Makhdūm Bābā, led the burial prayers of Shaikh Nūr-ud-Dīn, 99.

Utpala Dynasty, founded by Avantivarman, 55.

Uttar-machaipūr, another name for the Handwāra tahsil in the Bārāmula district, 7.

Uttha-Soma, Hindu scholar of the time of Baḍ Shāh and author of the Jaina-charita in Kashmirī, 176.

Uwais-al-Qaranī, a saint, Abū’l Fazl compares Wāhid Sūfi to, 69; Shaikh Nūr-ud-Dīn compared to, 100; also f.n.

Uzbek, republic in the U.S.S.R., isolated groups of Arabs living in, 18.

Vafādār Khān, title conferred on Rahmatullāh Sadozāi by Shāh Zamān, 301.

Vajrāditya Bappiyaka, sells men to the Mlechhas, 54, 77.
Valley of Kashmir, width 2; altitude, climate, districts and taksila, 7; number of villages, 7; Kashmiri-speaking area, 7; divisions, 7-8; area compared with other states and countries, 8; latitudes compared, 8; uniqueness, 8; population, 8; shape of the Valley, 9; conspicuous features, 9; a vast lake in pre-historic times (?), 9; not known to Alexander the Great, 13; discussion about the name, 12-13; Chinese name of, 13; the Kashmiris' name Kashmir, 13; material prosperity fading under Jayasimha's successors, 66-68; 624, 55, 68.

Valley of Kashmir, The, by Walter R. Lawrence, quoted for description of the Valley, 8. See index to Vol. II.


Vāmāna, the founder of the Riti School, 70.

Vantipōr, modern name of Avantipura, 56; location and ruins, 56 f.n. 2.

Varā ha mihirā's Brhatsamhitā referred to, 35 f.n. 2.

Varāhāmīla, Vishṇu as Varāha strikes the mountains of Kashmir, at 10; modern Bārāmīla, 10. See also Bārāmīla.

Vasishka, predeceased his father Kanishka, 43.

Vasudevā or Jusheka, last Kusāna ruler, 43; Kusāna rule in Kashmir comes to an end, 43.

Vedānta, influence on the character of the Kashmiri, 19; mysticism, 94; influence on idol-worship, 153.

Vendrabōm, Stone-Age relics found at, 15.

Venice, gondolier of—compared with the Kashmiri boatman, 21.

Vēr, spring of, 4 and f.n. 4.

Ver-nāg, the, gushing spring of, 4 and f.n. 3-4; 10 f.n. 2, 259; Jahāngīr builds a garden at, 263; also had a picture gallery there, 263.

Vidarbhā (Berār), Nāgārjuna's birth-place, 42.

Vigne, G.T., views on Kashmir, 2, 5 f.n. 3; a noted visitor to Kashmir, 15; the Kashmiri called the Neapolitan of the East by, 21. See Vol. II, p. 724, footnote on—.

Vihāras, Buddhist, destroyed after Ou-k'ong or Wu-k'ung, a Chinese pilgrim, 104.

Vijayanagar, Devarāya II of, contemporary of Bād Shāh, 171.

Vikrama era, not called after Vikramādityā until the tenth century, 47.

Vikramāditya Harsha, rule over Kashmir, 47; no indisputable proof of the existence of, 47; Vikrama era, 47.

Villages, number of, in Kashmir, 7; on the terraces of the Kashmir Valley, 9; inhabitants of frontier villages resemble Jews, 16.

Vishṇu, one of the Hindu Triad, appearing in aid of Kaṇṭā, assumes the form of Varāha and strikes mountains, 10; ruins of the temple at Tāpār, 151.

Visitors to the Valley, noted, 15.

Vīśālī (the Jhelum), the, Valley of the, 7.

Vrees, Dr. K. De, edits the Nīlamata, 11 f.n.

Vular, Lake, see Wulur.
Wàhid Sùfí, a saint, Abu'l Fazl on—, 96-97.
Wà'im, also called Woin, or Wùñu, a petty trader, 21.
Wales, Lolàb reminding one of, 6.
Warwick of Afghanistàn, or its King Maker, Vâzîr Fath Khàn, 304.
Wars of the Roses, struggles of Muhammad Shàh and Fath Shàh compared to, 190.
Wàza, considered an excellent cook in Kashmir, 21.
Wells, H.G., on the Council of Constance, 149.
Widows, re-marriage, 128; deprived of husband's property if childless, 135. See also Suttee.
Wilson, Andrew, description of the Mānasbal in The Abode of Snow, 4 f.n. 6; on the Wulur Lake, 158, f.n. 3.
Wint, Guy, contrasts between Hinduism and Islam, 79-80; on the interaction of the two cultures, 80.
Women of Kashmir, outsiders' impressions, 22; uncleanness, 23-4; Panditání and Musalmán-ní compared, 24; compared with Turkish, Iranian or Afghan beauty, 24; health and enlightenment, 25; widow re-marriage, 128.
Wulur, Lake, 4 and f.n. 7; last relic of the great expanse of water according to Montgomerie, 11-12; 56; Baë Shàh builds his palace in, 158-161; legend of, 159-60; location, name, description and appreciation, 158; f.n. 3; Baë Shàh engaged in sport on, 177; Zaina-lànk on the, 161.
Wu-k'un, Chinese pilgrim in Kashmir, 104; see Ou-k'ong.
Wùskur (Váskara), village, site of ancient Huṣkapura, 10 f.n. 1.
Wycliffe, his bones burnt, 149; Papal bull against—, 149.

Xavier, St. Francis, Apostle of the East, 14.
Xavier, St. Jerome, first European in Kashmir, 14.

Yaçaskara, mild rule in the midst of anarchy and confusion of, 58.
Yaçovarman, of Central India, leader of the confederacy against Mihirakula, 44.
Yaçovatì, installed on the throne by Krishpa on Dàmodara I's death, 36.
Ya'tûb Shàh Chak, accession, 233; misrule and rebellion, 234; persecution of the Sunnis, 234; Sunni petition to Akbar and Mughul invasion, 234; flight, 234; end of the Chak Dynasty, 234; attempt to recover Kashmir fails, 236, 241-43; death, 236-7.
Yàr Muhammad Khàn, son of 'Abdullah Khàn Halókoza, 304; Lailì, Ranjit Singh's favourite horse originally belonged to, 330 f.n. 1.
Yàrqand, 113 f.n.; conquered by Kanishka, 43.
Yàsman Rìshì, converts Sàlàr-Sanz (Shaikh Sàlàr-ud-Dìn), 98; life in the forest, 98; Sàlàr-ud-Dìn's visit during illness of, 99.
Yàvanas, Jayasaîha's commander goes into camp with, 63.
Yàzdi, Sharaf-ud-Dìn 'All, see Sharaf-ud-Dìn.
Yàdhabhàta, r. noted scholar of the time of Baë Shàh, 167.
Younghusband, Sir Francis, compares Kashmir with Switzerland in his book, Kashmir, 1 f.n. 7; comparison with Greece quoted, 2; on the Jewish cast of the Kashmiri face, 16; on the character of the Kashmiri people, 21; on Martanda, 53; on two centuries of misrule following Uchala's death, 63.

Yüan Chwang, or Huien Tsang, the Chinese pilgrim, having more than half a dozen forms of his name, 60. See Huien Tsang.

Yudhisṭhira, Pāṇḍava hero, 35, f.n. 2.

Yudhisṭhira I, last of the Gonanda line, 49.

Yueh-chi, their origin, early history, 41; Kusana section extinguishes Greek kingdoms of Northern India, 41; welded together by Kadphises I, 41.

Yūsuf Māndav, a Shī'a fanatic, assaults Sayyid Habībullah Khwārizmî, 222; sentenced to be stoned to death by a jury of aivines, 222-3.

Yūsuf Mirzā, an adherent of Mirzā Haidar Dāghlāt, killed in the Shi'ite strife, 207.

Yūsuf Shāh Chak, crowned king before the death of his father 'Ali Shāh Chak, 227; accession, 227; estrangement with his minister Sayyid Mubāraḳ Baihaqī, 227; lack of diplomacy, 227; Sayyid Mubāraḳ Baihaqī accepts the challenge of, and defeats, 227; revolt of nobles, 227; loss of throne and flight, 227; unsuccessful attempt to regain throne, 228; seeks help of Akbar, 229; marches on Sīnagār and regains throne, 229; conspiracy and revolt, 230; Mughul invasion, 231-3; death of Birbal and peace terms, 233; prisoner at the Mughul court, 233; critical estimate, 233; command in the Mughul army in Bihār, 243; death, 243; Dr. V.A. Smith's comment on the treatment of the ex-ruler of Kashmir, 244; Yūsuf Shāh corrects Akbar's great singer Miyān Tān Sen, 244.


Yūz Āsaf Hazrat, misunderstood for Christ, 40; Egyptian ambassador at the court of Baḏ Shāh, 40; one of the scholars at Baḏ Shāh's court, 166.

Zafar Khān Ahsan, Nawwāb, his couplets on the Dal quoted, 3; parentage, patronizes the poet, Mirzā Muhammad 'Ali Sā'i'b of Írān, early career, 271; reappointed governor, 267; final conquest of Tibet, 267; removal of the hardships of the people of Kashmir about saffron-plucking, etc., 268-70; plants gardens, 270; his Persian masnavīs: the Haft Manzil, the Jalwa-i-Nāz, and the Maikhāna-i-Rāz, 270-1.

Zafar-nāma, The, of Sharaft-ud-Dīn 'Ali Yazdī, referred to for Timūr's envoy to Sultān Sikandar bringing him a robe of honour, 149; 152.

Zafar-nāma-i-Ranjīt Singh, The, of Kanhaiyā Lāl, quoted about the Sikh campaign, 324-325, 335. See Index to Vol. II.

Zai Deo, married to Shaikh Nūr-ud-Dīn Rishī, renounces the world and is buried at Kaimūl, 100.

Zaina Kadal, tomb of Baḏ Shāh at, 181.

Zain-ud-Dīn, Bābā, disciple of Shaikh Nūr-ud-Dīn, 102; original name Zivā Singh, 102; a convert to Islam, 102; contemporary of Sultān Zain-ul-Ābidīn, 166.
Zain-ul-Abidin, Sultan, Bag Shāh institutes a search for ancient manuscripts, 36, f. n.; orders the translation of the Rājarāstraṅgini, 65; contrasted with Sultan Sikandar, 103; conversion of Khakha and Hatmāl tribes during the reign of, 108; second son of Queen Mira, 144; known as Shāh Rukh or Shāhi Khān (sometimes wrongly written as Shādi Khān) before accession, 144, 157; entrusted with the care of the kingdom by his elder brother, Sultan 'Ali Shāh, 155; defeated at Utī by 'Ali Shāh, 155; fratricidal contest, 156; early education and accession, 157; sense of justice, 157-8; passion for architecture and town-planning, ruins of townships, 158 and f. n. 1; Zain-I-nāk on the Wular Lake, 158-61; Mūlla Ahmad Kashmirī on this structure, 160; builds palace at Nau Shahr and Suratānpūr, 161; patronage of arts and crafts, 161-2; medical facilities and maternity welfare, 162; patronage of letters, 162-169; student and patron of Sanskrit, 166-8; his compositions, questions and answers, and on the preparation of explosives, 168; his Shikayat (Plaint) treating of the vanity of all objects, 168; love of poetry and poets at his court, 168-9; translation of the Mahābārata by his command, 168; collects a library, 168; loves music, 171; his army and conquests, 170; statesmanship and foreign relations, 170-1; contemporaries in India, 171; European contemporaries, 172; Muslim contemporaries, 172; benevolent attitude towards Hindus, 172-4; as a law-giver, 174; his prison reforms, 174; agricultural reform, 174-5; sources of income, 175; compared with Akbar in the extent of empire, 174; their family lives compared, also general habits, 175-179; closing days and death, 179-182; burial, 181-182; attitude towards women, 177; grief at the loss of the beloved Queen Taj Khātān Baihaqi Begam, 178, his children, 178; jealousy among his sons, 179; like Jahāngir, Bag Shāh’s eldest son rebels and is defeated, 180.

Zaitī Chak, known as Zait Shāh, disciple of Shaikh Hamza Makhdūm, 226.

Zamān Shāh, ruler of Afghānistān, accession and invasion of India by, 301; conspiracy discovered, 303; rebellion and flight, 303; critical estimate and last days, 300; chastizes Mir Hazār Khān, 320; Divān Nand Rām, Kashmirī Pandit, a minister at Kābul, 321.

Zangi Chak for Rigi Chak in Rose’s English translation of the Ta’rikh-i-Rashidi, 202.

Zowar, village in Kishtwār, 237.

Zigarāt, shrines, beauty of those constructed by Muslim Rishīs, 97, the Khānqāh defined, 83 f.n.

Zeji Lā Pasa, the, Dulcha enters Kashmir through, 117; Rihchana, 119; Mirzā Haidar Dāghlāt, 119; connects Kashmir with Ladākh, Tibet and China, 119. See Index to Vol. II.

Zoroastrian, Kashmirī once a Zoroastrian country according to Sir J. J. Modi, 15, f.n. 2.

Zuhra Begam, the daughter of ‘Alamgir II, married to Timūr, son of Ahmad Shāh Durrānī, 299.

Zuhri, famous poet of Bijāpur, on Kashmirīs’ beauty, 23, 24.

Zulchā, see Dulcha.

Zulfāqr or Zulāqīr Khān, elder brother of Ahmad Shāh Durrānī, 298.